

Pure Love x Insult Complex

Part 3

by thirty silver and (Judah)

[Novel Updates](#)

Translator: [Machine Sliced Bread](#)

Epub: [TrolloWN/LN EPUB](#)

◇Megumi Arc

106. Rumors and eyes

After taking a quick shower and changing to my uniform...Everyone's in the dining room drinking tea.

It's already past 4:30.

「I'd like to offer you some tea but there's no time」

Katsuko-nee mutters apologetically.

Katsuko-nee has changed her clothes too.

It's a black business suit. The lower isn't a tight skirt but pants.

She looks active and cool...

「Nei will be looking after the house...okay?」

Sensei's on her usual black dress.

Or rather, it's the same clothes she wore at the school earlier this morning.

The students at the school doesn't know that Yuzuki-sensei's living on a place that's just nearby the school.

If she comes back with different clothes, they'll have strange misunderstandings....

「...Okaaay~ I'll look after the mansion!」

Nei-san is still wearing the Greek style clothing.

When she's the only one wearing it, it looks very lewd...

「Onii-san, you look better with that kind of hairstyle...!」

Maika said when she saw my head after bath.

「Eeeh, Misuzu likes it a bit wilder however」

...Hmmm

The girls wearing uniforms from the two of the most famous Ojou-sama school in Japan touches my head.

「Well...I'm going to school」

I told the two.

「I was there earlier this morning...if I change my hairstyle suddenly, everyone would be surprised, right?¹」

Actually...There's probably nobody going to notice that I changed my hairstyle.

「...Then it can't be helped.」

Misuzu seems to have agreed somehow

「Then, let's go...!」

Sensei stands from her seat

「Let's go to the car...!」

Katsuko-nee bowed

「Nei...Turn the security of the mansion to the Maximum level」

Sensei told Nei-san...

「Maru-chan has already done all of that!」

...Margo-san's thinking about the possibility that Cesario Viola has already come to Japan.

...And that he'll come to attack the mansion.



At the entrance, Katsuko-nee comes with a green minivan.

「...Katsuko will be the driver. Sit next to Misuzu-san and Maika-san」

Sensei said.

Maika-san will be sitting on the backmost. In case that there's some gloomy feelings coming up in Maika-san, you can cling on Katsuko or Misuzu. You two, if you feel something's bad, then hug her immediately...!」

That's assuming that she gets a psychological flashback from being raped. In any case, there's a possibility that Maika's attacked by a strong fear... Therefore, the two Onee-san will stay next to Maika. The rapist, me...should seat apart from Maika.

「I'm on the passenger seat」

When I tried to go to the passenger seat which is the farthest from the backseat...

Yuzuki-sensei...

「Yoshida-kun will seat on the second row. We'll be going in the school so it would be bad to see the female teacher being intimate with a schoolboy」

...Certainly.

The car has smoke glass panels starting the second row but...it would be troublesome if someone misunderstood that Yuzuki-sensei and I are alone in the car.

「...Got it」

Misuzu, Maika, and Katsuko-nee are seating on the third row of the minivan. Second row is me on the left seat.

It's only Sensei on the first row...

「...We have to hurry」

Sensei started the engine.



The green car we're in immediately enters the school.

「...This is Onee-chan's school isn't it?」

Maika looks outside the window and said.

「...Y-Yeah」

I try to be evasive.

How should I explain about Megumi and Yukino to Maika?

Sensei goes to the track and field club's room instead of the usual school personnel parking lot.

Sensei stopped the car on the back of the physical education warehouse which is hardly used.

「We don't have much time. Yoshida-kun, can you bring her here?」

Sensei spoke to me through the mirror.

「...That girl?」

Maika makes a suspicious face.

「Didn't I tell you earlier? He has another sex partner who's going to the same school as him」

Katsuko-nee told Maika with a smile.

「She's a very gentle person. Misuzu likes her. I'm sure that Maika-san will get along with her」

Misuzu told Maika.

Maika looks at me in worry.

「Onii-san...There's no way it's my Onee-chan, right?」

Maika's clever. She's very sensitive.

I raised my ass from the seat and turned to Maika on the back row.

「...It's not. It's a different girl」

I told Maika.

「There's no need to worry Maika」

I smiled at Maika.

「...Really?」

「Yeah」

「...Then that person will also be Maika's 『Sister』, right?」

「That's right」

「...Got it. Maika will try to get along with her」

「Thanks」

I stretch out my hand and pat Maika's head.

「Then, I'm bringing her immediately...!」

I got off the car alone...

I go towards the girl's track and field team...



「...Oh, Yoshida-kun!」

The first years have gathered in front of the track and field room, they're fixing their equipment.

Of course, everyone's still on their training wear.

The one who called out to me is Koujou-san.

「...I-I came here to get Megumi as told by Yuzuki-sensei」

Shit. I should've recovered, but...

I'm still stuttering in school.

「Megumi's in shower right now. We had her go first in order for her to leave at 5...

Takeshiba-senpai comes from the clubroom and told me.

「...T-Thank you very much!」

Senpai smiled at me.

「You don't need to be that nervous. You're a pair of lovers I approve. You can be more bold...!」

Saying that...She then spoke to the first years.

「Someone tell Yamamine...『Your husband has come to get you』!」

The girls shouted 『Kyaaa』in joy

「Ah, I'll call her out!」

Koujou-san stood up and responded to Captain Takeshiba.

「...Okay」

Saying that, Senpai disappeared to the clubroom.

「I'm going then...!」

「Ah, please」

Koujou-san comes to the gym from the clubroom.

The shower room for the girl athletic club is next to the gym.

By the way, the men's are just at the back of the clubroom.

The shower room for men and women are separated to not let them take a peek...

No...There's probably a hidden cameras in the showers because of Yuzuki-

sensei.

Sensei's searching for prostitution candidates in this school...

She'd put cameras in the stall showers so they can check their naked bodies...

What an outrageous thought...

「...hey hey, Yoshida-kun!」

The first years from the track and field team gathered around me.

The voice who called me out was perhaps my classmate.

I remember her face but not her name.

「...Err」

「No way, name's Ogino. Aren't we in the same class?」

「Well, I know...」

「Well fine. Yoshida-kun doesn't get along with anyone after all...!」

...Well

I can't reply to that.

「But, that surprised me. Who would've thought that Yoshida-kun and Megumi are raburabu²」

...Yup

Even I am surprised.

Who would've thought that it'll be like this...

「Aren't you completely crazy on Shirasaka-san? Though it often changes to Megumi...!」

...Change?

「Ogino-chi, you shouldn't say that!」

The other girl's scolded Ogino-san.

「Ah, Sorry. But, everyone in the class knows that Yoshida-kun is madly in love with Shirasaka-san. As expected, you woke up when Shirasaka-san dated Endou-kun?」

...As expected, everything about me is leaked to everyone.

Hey...I woke up my eyes when she dated Endou?

「Well, of course you will. No matter how good looking Endou-kun is...even a

hundred year love will wake up!」

Ogino-san laughs calmly.

「Eh...Endou's not that popular with girls?」

I asked instinctively...

「That's just a small portion. They went kyaa kyaa over what bastard is saying. They just have big voices so they may think so but...most of the girls hate Endou-kun」

I-Is that so?

「Speaking of which...Did you see it Yoshida-kun?」

Ogino-san laughs.

「...What?」

「Ah, you don't know. Endou-kun came to school with a terrible face. His face is swelling so hard and there's a big plaster on his nose...!」

...That's.

Margo-san beating him up on the night park the day before yesterday...!

「...Endou-kun said that he was attacked by a hooligan in a town」

Ogino-san laughed.

「Everyone's saying that he might've attacked Shirasaka-san by force and Yukino retaliated...!」

...Yukino retaliated?

「You see...the people in the baseball cub are betting on when Endou-kun would take Shirasaka-san's virginity. Then, Endou-kun attacked Shirasaka-san in the night park as he's getting impatient...then she repulsed him with all her might...!」

...So that's the rumor?

「Ah...My bro is a second year baseball club member. When I saw bro during lunchtime, he said that」

Another member of the club told us.

「Endou-kun's acting bossy because his father has a connection with the coach of the baseball club? Even though he's just a first year. That's why he's isolated in the baseball club

「I heard it from my bro, he seems to be giving out sports drinks, supplying protein, and bringing them to some other place...in the end, that's all his parent's money. The seniors are being friendly with him on the outside but they're making a fool of him in the back」

...Therefore, there's the rumor of Yukino retaliating him going around.

「Yoshida-kun should take a look at it later. It will make you feel refreshed...」

Ogino-san told me.

「Y-Yeah...」

「Huh...Yoshida-kun was beaten up by Endou-kun because of Shirasaka-san right?」

「...Well」

「That was horrible isn't it? You see, Yoshida-kun is just staring at Shirasaka-san however...that's all. He's not a stalker, and he doesn't even approach her within three meters」

So I was like that.

「Ogino-chi, isn't that enough. He already has Yamamine-chan after all.」

「That's right...It's not like he's going out with Shirasaka-san. It would make him feel sorry!」

The other girls are supporting me.

「Ah...Sorry, sorry. But, it was a surprise. It was so sudden」

「But...Yamami has become so wonderful. And bright too」

「Yeah She's just an overly serious and obstinate girl but...」

「I've never thought that she's such a playful child...」

...Eh?

「Look...earlier this morning...she said 『I'll definitely bear Yoshida-kun's child』 I've never thought that she's a girl without common sennse」

「That's right, it was surprising」

「But, she's gotten more human and cute!」

「Just a bit of a fool though」

「Yeah, she can't even concentrate on today's practice」

I got surprised on what Ogino-san said.

「...Megumi wasn't able to concentrate?」

「Well, the usual Megumi don't do a lot of mistakes. She misheard Senpai's instructions. So she ran a lap on the ground alone」

「Yet she's strangely bright. She's smiling at random times」

「That's inevitable. Love makes you an idiot right? Her head is in happy mode so let's leave her alone for a while」

The members say that however...

As expected...Megumi's overdoing it?

About dating me.

「Oh right, I heard it from Yamamine-chan...Yamamine-chan's the one who confessed?...」

...Eh?

「...No way she did, right?」

「She said that she confessed during lunch break」

「I heard it too. She said that she likes Yoshida-kun since the entrance ceremony. Then, when she and Yoshida-kun suddenly became class representatives...Megumi confessed when you two were alone」

...Wait a moment

「Right...Megumi's the one who asked to date Yoshida-kun」

...That means?

「After asking so many times, Yamami finally got her approval. She said that she loved Yoshida-kun all this time」

Megumi made another story.

Rewriting the story from reality so she can accept it.

...Shit.

Or rather, this might be a dangerous situation.

「I can't see what's so good with Yoshida-kun though」

Ogino-san said.

「Hey hey, Ogino-chi That's rude to someone else's husband!」

「That's right, don't be stingy on someone else's taste」

「...Ah, sorry」

Ogino-san stick out her tongue and apologized.³

No...I think the same thing.

There's no way someone like Megumi would suddenly like a human like me...!

「Yamami's a serious girl so she goes full speed once she's sure...!」

「Yeah. That's why, treasure her...Yoshida-kun」

「Don't make Megumi cry!」

「That gentle girl is quite rare you know. You'd be beaten up if you do something unreasonable」

All of the girls are telling me.

Megumi...you're loved this much by everyone.

「I thought that Yoshida-kun as a strange shadow person in the class all this time...」

Ogino-san told me.

「But, I see you in a new light...You confronted captain and Yuzuki-sensei upfront」

「Yeah...It was so manly」

「We got juice as treat」

As expected of the man Megumi fell for...! He maybe vague but, he's core is reliable」

Ogino-san says that however.

I...

I don't have confidence in myself.

「You should stick out your chest more even in the classroom」

「That's right, Yoshida-kun has to get himself together or Yamamine-chan would be made fun of...!」

If I don't get it together...Megumi would be laughed at...?!

「Well yeah. That's what means to be 『Boyfriend girlfriend』」

...I

I was naive.

I've never thought about it.

Since I'm going out with a girl...I must not let her be ridiculed.

I have to become a wonderful man whom my girl can be proud of.

「...Thank you everyone. I'll do my best to be a man suitable for Megumi...!」

I bowed to the girls.

「...W-What are you saying Yoshida-kun!」

Ogino-san panicks.

「No, I really thank you. I'm still no good but...I'll become a man who won't be strange being next to Megumi. I'm not good for now. I'll do my whole best」

The girls are looking at me with admiration.

「...So Yoshida-kun's this serious」

「As expected of Yamami's boyfriend」

「...I want to be told by those words too」

Ogino-san looks at me.

「...By the way, are you really going with Yuzuki-sensei and Megumi to her house?」

「Yeah, I will. I'm going to greet Megumi's parents」

There's nothing embarrassing anymore.

I said it fairly with confidence.

「Uwaa...He's serious」

「Yeah, I'm serious...You can tell everyone in the class that I'm going out with Megumi」

...That's right

I cannot pull back anymore.

I'll make Megumi happy.

I'll put my life on it...!

「...Yoshida-kun's so cool!」
「I'll support you!」
「Invite all of us in your wedding!」

My determination is transmitted to the girls.
Everyone's laughing happily.
Therefore, I ready myself...
I'll definitely invite all these girls.
...At Megumi's wedding.

「...Ah, Yamami's here!」

When I turned to the voice of the girl...
Koujou-san and Megumi on her uniform has come from the gym.
Megumi ran towards me when she confirmed my figure.

「...Yoshida-kun!」

She pulled my hand and separate me from the crowd.
She pulled me to under the iron stairs on the clubroom...
Then she asked me in whisper...!

「...How did it go with Maika-chan?」

I answered in a small voice.

「...For the time being, it settled peacefully」
「...Eh?」

「Maika became our ally... She's with Yuzuki-sensei in the car」

「...Really?」

「A lot happened but...she understands it now. She's getting along with Katsukonee and Misuzu...Sensei also accepted Maika as an ally」

「...I'm glad!」

Megumi embraces me!

「...Wow!」

The girls shouts in joy again.

「Yamami, it's okay to be raburabu, but...!」
「Well, isn't that fine? We're seeing something that's rare too...!」

「Eh, won't they look like that everyday?」

「You said it」

「If it becomes annoying, then I'll complain」

「Well, let's forgive them for now!」

We can hear those voices from the girls.

「...Anyway, let's go to Sensei's car」

「...Yup」

Megumi separates from me.

When she finally noticed the girls' eyes, she felt a bit embarrassed...

「Then, I'm going to say goodbye to my seniors...!」

She went to the track and field team's room.

She knocked on the door.

「...It's Yamamine」

「...Enter!」

It was Captain Takeshiba's voice.

Megumi opens the door.

「...Then, I'm extremely sorry but I'll be going ahead!」

Megumi bowed her head deeply.

「Yeah...I don't get it but do your best!」

「...Yes?」

The seniors from inside the room calls out to the absentminded Megumi one after another.

「Introducing one's boyfriend to the parents is a big event for women...!」

「They're going to check the man's look...and if he's going out with Yamamine-chan properly!」

「The father would take a look at the clothes first」

「If the man's face can't be fixed...his clothes should be decent, right?」

「Eh, you have such experience?」

「No no...What about you?」

「When I was dating with my previous boyfriend around the station, Dad came

home from work by chance...!」

「Ooh...Then what happened?」

「It was super-bad! I'm wearing a red miniskirt and a frilly blouse...and the guy's wearing a very flashy clothing...!」

「...Then, what happened?」

「Then you see, Dad calmly took photos of our appearance with his phone...」

「...What?」

「Then, we had a family meeting because of that photograph at night...Mom, and bro, and my elementary lil sis gathered...『What do people think when they see couples with this appearance』They kept nagging me」

「...That's harsh」

「Certainly, when I saw the photo...I can't see us as an interesting couple...」

「...Did you reflect on it?」

「...I soul-searched!」

「With that thing happening, you should take care of how you look too. When you're alone, you can go for the fashion that's a bit loose but...when you're a couple, you need to consider the impact of it to the society」

Captain Takeshiba brought the talk into an agreement somehow.

「Thank you for the advice! I will keep it in mind!」

The serious Megumi bows to her seniors again.

「Anyway...Do your best. We'll also support you」

「...Thank you」

「Later then. Thanks for the day」

「...Thanks for the day. I'm going ahead!」

Megumi said that and closed the door.

「Then, bye Yamami!」

「Yoshida-kun」

The members from outside the room called us out too.

「Sorry for going ahead...I'll be paying for this debt」

「You don't need to do that, Megumi. We had juice earlier too」

「That's right...You don't need to mind it. In exchange!」

「...Don't break up easily!」

Megumi bowed her head to the other first years...
And finally she comes back to me who she left behind.

「...Yoshida-kun」

Megumi grabs my hand.

「...Megumi」

Megumi grips my hand powerfully...
She must be nervous meeting up with Maika.
...Her hand is cold.
We went to the physical education warehouse where Sensei stopped her car...
while holding hands.

「Look...It's there」

「...Yeah」

Megumi's tension is transmitted...
We approached the car...
I opened the door from the back...
In the middle of the rear seat...
Katsuko-nee and Misuzu has Maika sitting in between them...
She looks up at Megumi in surprise...!

「...Eh, Megumi-chan?」

Megumi talked to Maika with a forced smile.

「...It's been a while. Maika-chan.」

107. Slave girl Yamamine Megumi

Maika cannot hide her bewilderment from the sudden appearance of Megumi.

「...Misuzu-san, go to the second row, Megumi can sit next to Maika-san」

Sensei instructs them

「Okay」

Misuzu moves away from her seat.

In exchange, Megumi sat next to Maika.

Maika clings hard to Katsuko-nee.

Not Megumi who's her distant relative but Katsuko-nee.

Lastly, I step in the car and closed the door.

「Then...Let's go」

Sensei starts the car...

The strained atmosphere in the car continued for a while 「...Megumi-chan, are you Onii-san's sex partner?」

Maika asks Megumi timidly...

「...Sex partner?」

Megumi seems to not understand what she means.

「Katsuko-san, Nei-san, Misuzu-san are all Onii-san's sex partners. Also...Maika became one too...Maika's Onii-chan's 『woman』...!」

Maika talks to Megumi.

Maika's hand is holding into Katsuko-nee's arm tightly.

Katsuko-nee is holding Maika's shoulder gently...

Megumi answered.

「...I'm not. I'm Yoshida-kun's sex slave¹」

「...eh?」

Maika's stunned.

Misuzu looks at Megumi in surprise.

...I'm also shocked., 「I'm fine being next to Misuzu-san and Katsuko-neesan I'm the least existence for Yoshida-kun. Maika-chan shouldn't mind me and be loved by Yoshida-kun a lot...」

Megumi smiled kindly...

「But, I'm glad...Maika-chan's accepted by everyone」

Saying that, Megumi talked to everyone in the car²

「...Thank you everyone.. Please take care of Maika-chan from now on. I ask of you all」

Megumi bowed...

「...Megumi-san, what do you mean by that now?」

Misuzu asks Megumi

「...What?」

「Saying that you're Danna-sama's sex slave?」

I can't understand that too

Megumi answered...

「...Because, a girl like me is only suited as a sex slave」

...Eeeh?

Megumi looks at Maika.

「...Maika-chan, how much do you know about me?」

「...How much?」

Maika is at loss...

「...You do know that your father is my father too, don't you?」

Maika clings to Katsuko-nee

「...Un」

「...Where did you learn it from?」

「...Onee-chan」

Of all the people...Yukino talked about it?

「...What did Yukino say?」

...Maika

「Megumi-chan was a daughter of Papa from a hostess. Papa was deceived by that person...then when she gave birth to Megumi-chan, she took a lot of money. But in the end, she threw Megumi-chan and ran somewhere...Unable to stand it, Megumi-chan was sent to Yamamine-ojisan」

...What the hell?

...Isn't that entirely different from the truth!

「...That's a lie」

Yuzuki-sensei muttered from the driver's seat.

The car's about to reach outside the school soon 「...Eh?」

Maika looks at Sensei in surprise.

Sensei looks at Megumi over the mirror 「Megumi...I didn't tell Maika what happened to myself. I think it's a breach of manners to talk about that other than myself...」

Sensei used that reason to warn Megumi to not to tell Maika about 『Kuromori』

「...Maika-san. I told you about me and my little sister being raped by your father and being sold into prostitution, isn't that right?」

「...Yes, I heard it」

「My mother's the same」

Megumi continues what Sensei is talking about

Maika looks at Megumi in surprise.

「...My mother was the same. Raped forcibly by Shiraska-san...became pregnant with a child...and was sold into prostitution...!」

Megumi talks indifferently

Sensei's eyes from the mirror is gloomy.

「...No way!」

Maika's surprised...!

「...That's true. My real mother was a prostitute」

Sensei proves Megumi's story

「Megumi's mother...Keiko-san became a prostitute at the same time as me. I know that well. We keep company the same men after all...I'm really indebted with Keiko-san...!」

Sensei's words are heavy.

「I raised Megumi until she was six When the prostitution house lost Keiko-san...Shirasaka Sousuke pushed Megumi to Yamamine-san who has a weak standpoint」

Maika looks at Megumi.

「Megumi-chan's real mother is dead?」

「Yeah...well, a lot of things happened」

Megumi spoke vaguely

She must be thinking that it's harsh to talk about the evildoings of one's father in one go.

But...Sensei continued to talk.

「When Keiko-san died, Megumi became Yamamine-san's adopted daughter for ten years. But...That's not the end. ...Shirasaka Sousuke plans to contact Megumi this year. He told Megumi to stop school and become a prostitute...!」
「...Papa did?!」

Maika receives shock.

...Megumi is.

「Yes, that's true...I was told『I'm going to take you from Yamamine house when Golden Week ends』」

「...That's!」

Megumi took out her phone...

「...Look」

Megumi opens the mail.

「...『I'll meet you at the end of holiday. I've already finished the business talk.

I've already sold your virginity for 3M, get your body clean ready!」

Katsuko-nee reads out the contents of the mail Megumi showed Maika...

「This is Papa's address...!」

Maika confirmed that the sender of the mail was her father...

「...She sold Megumi to a Yakuza and a politician I know who he's scheduled to sell her. I've examined all of it!」

Sensei said

「...That's cruel. That's too cruel...Papa

Maika spilled tears

Katsuko-nee embraces Maika tightly and pats her back.

「It's okay...Minaho-san has saved me. I don't need to be a prostitute」

Megumi smiled at Maika.

「...Really?」

Maika looks up.

「In exchange, I have to get out of Yamamine house. Yamamine house cannot go against the head of Shirasaka house」

「...Why?」

Maika who's a member of Shirasaka house cannot understand the house problems Megumi is talking about 「A family with a good social standing needs to give birth to a prodigal son by all means. Shirasaka Sousuke is exactly that. Normally, a child who's bad will be disposed out of the family but...The actual head of Shirasaka house, Shirasaka Moritsugu is Shirasaka Sousuke's uncle. He's Maika-san's grand-uncle...!」

The head of Shirasaka house...The owner of the newspaper publishing?

「Moritsugu-san cherishes Shirasaka Soueuke. Even if he's like that, he's his brother's son. He only thinks of protecting him」

That famous newspaper company defends Shirasaka Sousuke?

「Also...If it was discovered that Shirasaka's own illegitimate child is being sold

to prostitution by the society, it'll become a huge scandal. Shirasaka house would be the target of the mass media. Therefore...If we tell the current situation to the head of Shirasaka house, they will erase Megumi...」

Sensei...That means?

「She won't be immediately killed however...She'll be brought to some distant place and be watched all the time. Won't be allowed to go out freely...and sooner or later, she'll be made to marry someone from the instructions of Shirasaka house...That's how it will be」

That's Shirasaka house's way of doing it...!

「Therefore...I'm going to take Megumi from the Yamamine-san's house. If I take her away by force, Yamamine house won't be blamed for it. I feel sorry for it but I'll have Yamamine-san severe connections with Megumi. That's for the sake of both sides...!」

...Severe connections.

She'll separate from the foster parents she lived with for 10 years...

「Maika-chan...I'm going to say my goodbye to Yamamine house. Thus I will completely separate from the blood of Shirasaka. I'll become Minaho-san's ally. That's what I decided...!」

...Yuzuki Minaho's ally.

That means becoming a member of the crime organization 『Kuromori』

「Then...I don't need to sell myself anymore...」

Megumi shows her best smile.

「That's why I decided...I'll become Yoshida-kun's sex slave!」

...Eh?

...That means?

...Hey

...What do you mean by that?

「...Maika-chan, you already had sex with Yoshida-kun?」

「...I did」

Maika answered Megumi with a frightened expression.

「Then you know it. Yoshida-kun is a very gentle and sincere person...!」
「...Un」

Maika nodded.

「I trust Yoshida-kun very much and I'm grateful to him. When I was embraced by Yoshida-kun, I was able to cut off with a lot of things. I have given up completely. I was a daughter of a prostitute so I thought it's inevitable for me to become a prostitute too. My life has always been miserable and shameful that I thought I can no longer come back...!」

...Megumi?!

「But...Yoshida-kun embraced me. He really embraced me gently like a lover. I...even though it's someone like me, he accepted me as someone living. It's not just me...He also recognized all the people who brought me up. He thanked them. That made me very happy...!」

Tears pile up on Megumi's eyes.

「That's why I decided...Since I don't need to sell myself and serve lots of men...I'll dedicate my life to Yoshida-kun. I'll become his sex slave」

Misuzu butts in without break!

「Why sex slave?! Shouldn't it be a lover?!」

Megumi answers.

「Because, Yoshida-kun has Katsuko-neesan and Misuzu-san before I was embraced...³」

..... ! ! !

...Oh right!

...Before Megumi experienced her first time.

...I've shown Megumi my sex with Katsuko-nee and Misuzu!

「I don't need to barge in. I'm not as beautiful as Katsuko-neesan or Misuzu-san...!⁴」

「Megumi-san, what are you saying!」

Misuzu strongly protests against Megumi!

...But

「I'm a daughter of a prostitute⁵ I've seen my mother being embraced by various men since I was born. She's bought with money. Therefore...I thought that I would become a prostitute someday. That I cannot escape that fate...!」

Megumi lived with and was raised by the prostitutes until she was six
Megumi's mind is deeply pierced by the memory of those days...!

「I was taken care by my foster parents. I'm very thankful of them. They were gentle to me who was a daughter of a prostitute...⁶ That's why...I thought that I must not be a shameful daughter for my foster parents at Yamamine house」

Therefore Megumi was an honor student all this time?
As she's an adopted daughter, it adds additional shadow to character development of Megumi...

「I'm that kind of trivial woman. I'm different from Misuzu-san. I don't have the qualification to be loved by Yoshida-kun unlike everyone」

...Megumi looks at me.

「I don't have to end on prostitution...therefore, I swear」

...What?

「I'll become Yoshida-kun's sex slave for my entire life. I don't need to be loved...I'm just fine being a slave. I'll do anything. Yoshida-kun will be the only one who can have my body. I want to bear Yoshida-kun's child. I'll even sell myself for Yoshida-kun's sake...!」

...Megumi announced.

「I love Megumi though」

Megumi shook her head and laughed slightly.

「I don't need to be loved.⁷ I'm not a woman that should be loved by you⁸
Isn't there a lot of women that should be loved by Yoshida-kun?⁹ Just think of me as a slave. I'll devote myself to you forever. I'm fine being your sex slave...!」

In the end...I didn't understand anything.
I should've understood it from Sensei's talk of Lee Miller.

Lee Miller was raped when she was eight...to remove that trauma, the adults around her gave her an idea that romantic feelings and sexual desire are different.

As a result, Lee Miller has become a woman too rampant in sex...!

...In Megumi's case.

She was raised in a brothel until she was six...Furthermore, it was the time where Shirasaka Sousuke does whatever he wants in the mansion, she saw her own mother and other girls forced to compel on perverted sex.

She was convinced that she'll do the same...

Furthermore, when she was received in Yamamine house as a adopted daughter...She always felt indebt thinking 『My existence has always been a trouble』

Therefore...Megumi has become distorted.

She assumes herself as a woman who's not qualified to be loved by someone...!

...What the hell!

「But, what about the commotion you made earlier this morning?...You declared that you're going out with Yoshida-kun in front of everyone in the track and field. 『High school student-like relationship within school』」

Sensei asks Megumi.

「That's...If I don't do that, I think that Yoshida-kun won't part from Yukino」

Maika reacts from Megumi's words.

「...From Onee-chan?」

Megumi answers calmly.

「I'm in the same class with Yukino and Yoshida-kun... Yukino is Yoshida-kun's first love...!」

Megumi makes a frank follow up.

「Therefore...I chose Yoshida-kun as one of spy's for Shirasaka Yukino」

「...Could it be, Onee-chan's already...?」

Sensei answered Maika's sharp question.

「The plan is still in progress...It's not complete yet. I can't tell Maika-san

anything other than that...!」

Maika looks at me.

「Onii-san...You said that your first love looks like Maika right? Was that Onee-chan?」

「...That's right」

I admitted it obediently.

「I've been in an all male's middle school so when I entered high school and met Yukino...I've admired her all this time」

「I'm using that feelings of Yoshida-kun」

Sensei adds.

While perfectly hiding it in 『Present progressive』that Yukino's already been violated...[1 Yukinoがすでに犯されていることを、『現在進行形』の絶妙な表現で隠しながら.....。]

「I don't like that Yoshida-kun's attracted to Yukino. I definitely don't want that. Therefore I want to pull Yoshida-kun's eyes away from Yukino That's all」

Megumi looked at me once again.

「...I'm sorry. Yoshida-kun might hate having a girlfriend like me. Endure it for a while. Please」

Megumi...What are you saying?

「...If ever you like someone in the school other than Yukino, just tell me. I'll bring her to you., I'll do anything for Yoshida-kun's love...!」

...Megumi

「It's okay, I'll just tell everyone in the school that I like Yoshida-kun so much that I forced him to go out with me. Yoshida-kun's reputation won't go down even if you abandon me. I'll definitely make it like that. Yoshida-kun can just think of me as his sex slave okay...」

Why are you so servile?

You're trying to alter your memory for that sake?

...!!

「I promised to the members of the track and field team earlier. I promised to invite them at my wedding with Megumi」

「...Wedding?」

Megumi mumbles.

「That's right...Our wedding」

Megumi's in blank surprise.

「...That's impossible. I'm just a slave. I would be cursed if we hold a wedding ceremony」

Misuzu who's sitting on the second row spoke heavily.

「No...Megumi-san, please marry Danna-sama...!」

...Misuzu?

「I can't do that. Misuzu-san wants to marry Yoshida-kun, didn't you?」

Misuzu...

「I want to!...But, the reality won't allow that」

...Reality

「We were scolded by Margo-sama a while ago. 『If you really want to be happy, then you have to face reality and think concretely』she said」

That's right.

Margo-san said that.

「Misuzu is Kouzuki's daughter. If Misuzu pushes her own ideas and marry Danna-sama forcibly, Misuzu's grandfather will disinherit me. And, it won't just be me...Yuzuki-sama, Nagisa-sama and the others would be affected by it badly as a result...」

Certainly...If Misuzu forces it, Misuzu's house will be hostile to 『Kuromori』

「Misuzu has to think how to be loved by Danna-sama for all the time. Misuzu thinks that she should build a firm position in the clan first. I think of being a researcher in the National University or a high ranking official like my father. Then, I'll continue marriage talks backed by my social power. Then, I'll become Danna-sama's 『Mistress』for my entire life so it won't be a disgrace for my

grandfather and my clan...!」

Misuzu will take an exam at Tokyo University for that sake?
So that she won't part from me...!

「Misuzu cannot register as Danna-sama's wife. Kouzuki house will never allow that. Therefore...I'll leave the lawful wife role to Megumi-san」

Misuzu's eyes are serious

「...Is it okay for me to marry Yoshida-kun?」

Katsuko-nee smiled at the surprised Megumi.

「I cannot marry him. My past doesn't allow it. I want a cute bride for him.
Someone like Megumi-chan」

「...」

「Nagisa surely thinks the same. We're the same as Misuzu-san...We're okay
being his 『Mistress』for the rest of our lives. We won't wish for the seat of legal
wife. No...We can't wish」

Katsuko-nee and Nagisa-san's past...
That's them being prostitutes of 『Kuromori』
Is it that heavy?

「But...Nei-san's there too. Nei-san's very beautiful... and I'm sure that
Yoshida-kun likes Nei-san more than me...!

Megumi sees through me.
No...I can't hide secrets anyway.

「I'll become Nei-san's 『Little brother』」

I told Megumi.

「I'll enter Nei-san's family register and become her real brother. That's what
we decided」

Nei-san wants a 『Little brother』
She wants to be my 『Sister』

「Therefore...I cannot marry Nei-san」

I said it clearly.

「Yuzuki-sensei, I'll do that. Can you contact my father and adopt me as soon as possible?」

Yuzuki-sensei is.

「Yoshida-kun's father is in Fukuoka right now...」

...As expected.

Sensei examined it.

「...Are you really sure about it?」

「Yes, please」

「Got it...We're quite busy right now so I'll contact your father once we reach a point where we can pause」

When the revenge on Shirasaka Sousuke and the matter with Mr. Viola ends... I'll formally become Nei-san's 『Little brother』...

「What about Maika-san? Do you want to marry Yoshida-kun?」

Sensei asks Maika

「...Maika doesn't understand marriage yet」

The 14 year old girl answered.

「But...If Onii-san and Megumi-chan marries, he'll become Maika's real Onii-san...」

...Maika!

「Maika-chan...do you think of me as your sister?」

Maika smiled at Megumi.

「Isn't that obvious?...Megumi-chan is Maika's Onee-chan!」

Maika holds out to Megumi.

Megumi holds Maika's hand.

「...Ever since childhood, Megumi-chan has always been so gentle with Maika. You always think of Maika. Maika-chan wants Megumi-chan as her real sister instead...!」

「...Maika-chan」

「I'm fine being Onii-chan and Megumi-chan's little sister. Megumi-chan, marry

him. I'm sure Megumi-chan needs Onii-san the most...!」

Maika said.

「I...Yoshida-kun...?」

Misuzu spoke to the surprised Megumi.

「That's right. I also understood that I depended on the word 『Danna-sama's pet』for a while. Megumi-san wants to depend on Danna-sama. Therefore, you're trying to run to the word 『Sex slave』...!」

「...I」

Megumi tries to reflect on herself.

「Megumi-chan might be the one who wants to monopolize him the most...!」

Katsuko-nee said.

「Am I like that?」

Katsuko-nee told Megumi who's looking down.

「You're the one who knows your feelings the best...!」

Once again, Misuzu asks Maika.

「...Maika-san. Maika-san is also fine being Danna-sama's 『Mistress』?」

Maika...

「Yes. Maika will become a 『Mistress』 Maika's already Onii-san's 『woman』 ...!」

Hey hey, Maika...!

「Maika...There's no need to force yourself. Even Maika might find someone better than me someday...Shouldn't you just marry that person...!」

Maika laughs innocently and shook her neck.

「Onii-san...Did you listen to Misuzu-san's talk earlier?」

...Eh?

「Maika...can no longer marry properly. Maika's Papa will surely be in trouble won't he? He was that bad after all...It can't be helped」

...Maika, you

「Maika can no longer stay on Shirasaka house, can she? Even if Maika meets some other men, what Papa did will always follow Maika」

Maika's too clever.

Even though she's just a 14 year old girl...

She's holding her feelings and she has the strength to analyze reality calmly.

「Maika...Perhaps, will never be able to marry for her entire life. I can't give unnecessary troubles to the person I will marry and his family」

Maika looks at me.

「...Onii-san. Can you take Maika as your 『Mistress』and love her for the rest of your life?」

The second grade middle school girl is entrusting me with her future.

「Yeah...I promise. Maika will forever be my 『Woman』...!」

「...Will you do the same to Katsuko-san, Nei-san and Misuzu-san?」

「Yeah. I'll never differentiate. I'll love you all the same. I'll offer my whole mind and body for it...!」

I look at Megumi.

「Megumi's the same... Even if I marry Megumi, I won't treat her better than other girls. I'll love everyone fairly. As all are my 『women』」

「...Yoshida-kun」

Megumi looks at me.

「...I'm glad」

Maika mutters in relief.

「Maika...doesn't love just Onii-san. I like Katsuko-san, Nei-san, and Misuzu-san...I like everyone. I want to be everyone's『Ally』 Maika also loves Megumi-chan...!」

From Maika's smile...Megumi...!!!!

108. Passionate girl Yamamine Megumi

「...Megumi-san, do you like having sex with Danna-sama?」

Misuzu suddenly throws a question to Megumi.

「I...still don't understand it」

Of course.

Megumi just lost her virginity yesterday.

There's still the pain and she didn't experience pleasure in sex yet.

「But...I'll do anything as long as Yoshida-kun wishes for it. I'll do my best to become a lewd girl...!」

「You don't need to do your best on that!」

Misuzu scolds Megumi.

「I understand...Megumi-san. You're misunderstanding that you should merely serve Danna-sama」

Megumi's puzzled by Misuzu's words.

「In sex...It won't end with just you giving your mind and body. You have to give it to your partner and you should receive too...!」

...Give and receive?

「Misuzu finally understood it recently. Or rather...I discover various things every time Danna-sama embraces me. I'm learning. And...Misuzu comes to love Danna-sama even more」

You understood from having sex with me? You learned?

...I

It's not that I didn't learn anything.

Misuzu's body feels so soft, warm, and pleasant...

That's all.

「Misuzu recently thinks about Eros and Agape」

...Eros, what?

「Misuzu-san What is that?」

Maika asked.

Great, nice follow-up!

「Well, it's not something taught as early as middle school...」

Misuzu told Maika.

No...I'm a high school but I don't know it either.

I may learn it somewhere however...

「It's an ancient Greece word however...In Christian philosophy, 『Love』is greatly divided into 『Eros』and 『Agape』」

C-Christian philosophy...?!

W-What's philosophy...?

「『Eros』is general lust. Sexual love with body. It is considered to be the want to be rewarded by the partner」

Eh...It wasn't just 『Ero』?

It's that isn't it?

『Keep the Eros within bounds』that kind of『Eros』, right?

「On the other hand 『Agape』is a philanthropy given unconditionally to everyone. Mental love. A love that doesn't ask for rewards. It can be translated to『Neighborly love』」

...Shit

Could it be that Misuzu's a smart girl?

She said that she'll take Tokyo University exam.

「In Christianity, the spirit is higher than body so Agape is assumed as the highest class of love. Saying that the『love』God gives to men is the same as 『Agape』」

...Hee

「But...Misuzu had a doubt since then. Is 『Eros』really inferior to 『Agape』...?」

...Eh?

『Mental Philanthropy』and 『Lewd feelings』is incomparable isn't it?

Or rather『Lewd feelings』is very personal...

Or rather, what's most strange is comparing the two.

「Misuzu thinks that 『Eros』 is very important」

...Misuzu?

「...Katsuko-sama, can I ask you something?」

Misuzu talks to Katsuko-nee.

「Sure, ask me」

Katsuko-nee answered cheerfully

「Katsuko-sama...do you intent to have sex with any other man than Danna-sama?」

「No...I won't have sex with anyone but him. If I can't have sex with him then I'll just masturbate throughout my life. I don't need any other men...!」

Katsuko-nee smiles.

「...Why can you say that?」

「Because...His sex is truly wonderful. I can reveal my body and mind in front of him. He also shows me everything. There are no secrets. We throw our desires and greed at each other. I don't think I can find another ideal sex partner for a second time」

Katsuko-nee said.

Misuzu continued asking.

「But, if ever...Danna-sama dies right now...what will Katsuko-sama do?」

「...I'll kill myself」

Katsuko-nee answered immediately.

「I'm already as good as dead before I met him. A world without him is meaningless for me」

...Katsuko-nee!

「Then...If Danna-sama encounters an accident and lost his penis...what will Katsuko-sama do?」

If my penis is cut off?

「Let's see...Even if he lose his penis, I'll love him as long as he still has his fingers and mouth. No...even if he lose his mouth or hands, it's fine as long as he's here. As long as we can have our skins touch...I'll masturbate while embracing his body closely. That will satisfy me. I'll live with him forever」

「...But, you can't have sex with him anymore?」

「I already had enough sex. Katsuko's mind and body has firmly memorized the wonderful sex with him. Of course...I want to have sex with him a lot from now on but...I'm okay as long as he's living. I have the memory of our happy sex. I'm fine doing it by myself while he watches me. I'll be satisfied enough...I can live happily with that!」

...Katsuko-nee answered.

「Misuzu thinks that Katsuko-sama's feelings is actually 『Eros』」

...『Eros』

「This is also 『Love』...Moreover, if there is no 『Sex』as mediation, it's a 『love』 that doesn't come into existence」

Misuzu said.

「Misuzu feels 『Eros』for Danna-sama. For example, if Danna-sama goes comatose...It's a bit imprudent isn't it? I'm sorry...But still, Misuzu will love Danna-sama forever. I'll take care of him forever. I'll never leave him. That's because I have the memory of a 『Wonderful sex』with Danna-sama. I have the memory of loving and being loved so...Misuzu will embrace Danna-sama not with only love and affection but also with trust and respect. I feel a deeper love towards Danna-sama than my blood relatives right now...!」

Misuzu said that, but...

I... I don't get it.

I just love everyone I have sex with and think of them as precious.

If they ask『Do you love these girls?』...I'll answer 『I do』confidently

But...

If Katsuko-nee or Misuzu became human vegetable¹...Can I still love them until I die?

...I don't know.

I can't answer right now.

「...That's wonderful. Katsuko-neesan and Misuzu-san」

Megumi told the two.

「Will I be able to feel that way too?」

Misuzu smiles at Megumi.

「You will, if it's Megumi-san...!」

Megumi thinks for a moment.

「I trust Yoshida-kun. I respect him as a person. Therefore, I am resolved to offer my body for my entire life. Is that insufficient?」

Katsuko-nee answers.

「...Yes, that's not enough」

...Katsuko-nee

「Megumi-san is saying 『I'll dedicate』but...you don't reveal everything to him」
「I don't reveal?」

「If you really want to dedicate everything to him...You have to ask him 『What do you want?』properly」

Megumi looks at me.

「Yoshida-kun...What do you want with me? What should I give you?」

...I

I look at Megumi's face.

Long and narrow eyes...a beauty.

What do I hope from Megumi...?!

「...I want to date Megumi properly」

Those words come out of my mouth.

「...Eh?」

Megumi's surprised...

「Megumi...No, Yamamine Megumi-san. Please go out with me... !!!!」

I bowed to Megumi.

「That's...Yoshida-kun. Even if yo don't say that...I'll have sex with Yoshida-kun. I'll do anything Yoshida-kun wants. I promise that...」

「...That's not how it is!!」

I shouted.

「I want to know more about Megumi. I want Megumi to know about me. I thought that I understand Megumi this far but...actually, I don't know anything Sorry, Megumi...!」

The way of thinking Megumi has since she was born...
What are the worries of Megumi she had all this time...
I never knew that...

「I'm an idiot so...I've never understood Megumi's feelings...No, I think I still wont. No matter how much I try to understand, I'm different from Megumi so I might never understand you forever. We might reach the deep trench. But...I won't stop putting an effort to understand Megumi. I'll never stop...!

「...Yoshida-kun?

「And...I want Megumi to try to understand me too...!」

Those words are naturally overflowing from the bottom of my heart.

「...Not stopping the effort to understand one's partner That's 『Love』too」

Katsuko-nee muttered.

「...But, how?」

Megumi asks me.

「Isn't that obvious...It's sex! Have a lot of sex!」

Misuzu answered instead of me.

「We're not Gods. We cannot understand our minds so we have to use our whole body to feel it. Have lots of sex. You might clash, hurt, or fight each other. But, pile your bodies together and understand each other. Feel it...Hey, Megumi-san!」

...I

I stretched my hand to Megumi.

「...I can't say it well but... I don't want Megumi to be my 『Sex slave』 I want Megumi to be my lover...!!!」

Megumi's eyes open wide...!

「Let me say it once again...Yamamine Megumi-san, please become my girlfriend. Please...!」

...Megumi

「Is that okay for me to become Yoshida-kun's girlfriend?」

「It's fine...That's what I want」

「But...I don't know what should I do being a girlfriend.」

Megumi's eyes have tears collecting on it.

A first year high school girl.

She has never experienced love until now.

Raised by prostitutes...as a backlash, she became an extreme honor student on the house that adopted her as a daughter...

A girl who lost her virginity before she has her first love.

A beauty that walks on a different road than normal girls.

「Even I don't know」

That's right, even I...

I raped Yukino without even experiencing normal love experience...

The frequency of sex only increases and I can't do a proper love.

I still don't know anything.

「Therefore...Let's try it」

「...Us?」

「Yes. Let's confirm it...examine it...test it...and do things lovers do」

I talk to Megumi who has moist eyes.,

「...Can I do it?」

Megumi asked in worry.

「...It'll be fine. I'm here with you」

Tears spill from Megumi's eyes

It drops like crystal...

「...Got it. I'll try it. I'll become Yoshida-kun's lover. 」

Megumi holds the hand I hold out to her...

「If you're fine with me...I gave you my best regards...!」

...Megumi and I

...Became lovers.

Not for mere form's sake but in truth.

「...You're so interesting」

Yuzuki-sensei mutters from the driver's seat.

「You don't know whether you should take a shortcut or do it on a roundabout way. But...You finally saw each other's existences already...」

...Certainly

I feel that we took a very roundabout way.

Then ran past through a shortcut in a dash...

But, what's important is that Megumi and I are holding hands.

That means that Megumi and I are here...

「Man and woman...are like two cars that dashes in the dark without turning on the lights... Thinking that the other is on the opposite side without feeling properly the other's existence, and before they noticed, they have been separated. On the contrary, they might crash against each other... Thus you cannot stop being cautious」

Yuzuki-sensei said.

「Keiko-san told me that before. 」

Keiko-san...Megumi's lost mother.

「...My mother did?」

「Yes. Keiko-san had experienced love...I was very envious of that」

Sensei said.

「Now that you're lovers, you should tell each other whatever you think! You must not hold back. You should point out what you don't like and what's bad with your partner. Your relationship shouldn't be broken with such things

anymore after all...!」

Katsuko-nee told us.

「Yoshida-kun...Uhm, I...」

Megumi looks at my face as if she remembered something.

「...What is it, Megumi?」

When I answered her.

「I don't like it that much when I'm called 『Megumi』」

...Awawa

Is that so?

Certainly...I'm being so arrogant calling her by her first name.

Or rather...Didn't Maika tell me the same thing?

「...Call me 『Megu』」

...Megu?

「Then I want to call you 『Yoshi-kun²』...!」

...Un

I should begin here to let her be slip out of the slave sense.

「...Got it, Megu」

「...Thanks, Yoshi-kun」

Megumi smiles...

I raised my body from the seat.

Megumi brought her body close

Inside the minivan...

We kissed.

「...Yoshi-kun, I want to have sex right now」

「...Later. I'll do you a lot, Megu」

「...Un」

We kissed each other repeatedly

「Megumi-san...please get loved by Danna-sama for Misuzu's fill too」

Misuzu told Megumi.

「...Misuzu-san, are you sure?」

Megumi who feels sorry for Misuzu has asked.

「Misuzu cannot date Danna-sama outside. I'm the daughter of Kouzuki after all. I cannot be seen by people flirting with Danna-sama. I would be receiving scolding from grandfather if I bring shame to my house」

...Misuzu.

「Misuzu will endure so she can be with Danna-sama. In exchange...Please love me a lot on the bed. Is that okay?!」

Misuzu smiled at me. With amorous eyes.

「Yeah. Let's have lots of sex!」

I promised Misuzu.

「Katsuko doesn't have that kind of bond so...I can flirt a lot even outside! You can take me on places where non-adults can't enter!」

...K-Katsuko-nee?

「But...I agree with you having a healthy high school love with Megumi-san. Nagisa and I can teach you nothing but a too strong sex. You can still go to school properly so I'd like you to experience what normal people does」

...That's right.

Katsuko-nee and Nagisa-san has dropped out of high school because they were turned to prostitutes...

They weren't able to go to school.

Of course...They weren't able to experience love for high school students.

「I will not interfere in the school at all. Flirt a lot okay?!」

Katsuko-nee said while laughing.

「...What should Maika do?」

Maika's a bit troubled.

「My...is it not stimulating for your Oneechan to do lewd things with her

boyfriend?」

Katsuko-nee says that but.

「Does Maika-chan want to be Yoshi-kun's lover too? I won't be jealous at all」

Megumi told Maika.

「Hmm...Maika's fine being Onii-san's 『Mistress』 I'll leave the lover to Megumi-oneechan」

...Maika.

「Look, Maika feels like a 『Woman in shadows』?」

...I wonder

「But...please do lots of lewd stuff. Maika wants to feel the 『Eros』towards Onii-san too」

Saying that, Maika smiled.

「I'm okay with it being only at school. Yoshi-kun, you can date Maika-chan, Katsuko-neesan and Nagisa-neesan outside」

Megumi said.

「My...Megumi-chan should date him. We'll properly set times for the four of us in the 『Sister's club』!」

Katsuko-nee declares as the chairman of 『Sister's club』

「...Hey, what about Nei-san?」

Maika asks in wonder.

「Nei-san...cannot date Onii-san?」

...Err

How should I answer this?³

「...Nei has a lot of things with her right now」

That's my answer for now.

「Oh right...let's talk about Danna-sama and Megumi-san's wedding!」

Misuzu changed the talk forcibly.

「Misuzu will be doing the speech as Megumi-san's bridesmaid」

...Misuzu?

「I will bless that day with all my heart!」

Misuzu seems to have decided already.

「Should Maika-chan and I sing a song?」

Katsuko-nee jokingly said.

「Maika will dance! It's Megumi-chan's wedding after all!」

Maika-chan answers laughingly

...Megumi.

「Thank you everyone. I'll sit next to Yoshi-kun in the ceremony. But, that marriage won't be for just me. Let's all spend the wedding night together. Yoshi-kun and all of the 『Sisters』」

「Megumi-san...are you sure?」

Misuzu asks Megumi.

「Yes. I'm just sitting as a bride representing the 『Sisters』 I think that we all 『Sisters』marry Yoshi-kun That way's better」

Megumi said.

As usual, they're talking without my approval...

My future's decided already.

Well...I'm okay with that though

I love this 『Sisters』after all.

「Ojou-sama should attend too...Would you?!」

Katsuko-nee talks to Yuzuki-sensei.

「I'm fine...you can enjoy it yourselves」

Sensei...doesn't seem to enjoy parties.

「I won't let that. Ojou-sama will sit on the 『Relative seat』...」

「...Katsuko」

Sensei hesitates.

「You can chose your role, it's either his『Mother』or 『Sister』」

Katsuko-nee smiled.

「If you want, should we make a floral tribute of the bride and groom for Ojou-sama?『I appreciate your kindness, mother』」

「...Enough. Don't do that」

Sensei's troubled.

「...No, Sensei will sit not on the 『Relative seat』」

I told Sensei

「...A different seat?」

「Yes...Sensei is Megu and my 『Teacher』」

That's right.

Sensei is our teacher.⁴

「We'll give a floral tribute to our 『Teacher』...!」

I look at Megu.

...Megu is.

「Un. I also want Minaho-san to attend as our teacher...!」

Sensei answered.

「Thank you two...I'm going then. As your 『Teacher』...!」

109. Crossroads / First resolution

「...By the way, Maika-san...do you have a class tomorrow?」

Yuzuki-sensei asks Maika.

Today's May 1.

This year's golden week has May 1 and 2 in weekdays.

「Maika's doesn't have school until Golden Week ends. There's a lot of children who travels abroad in the consecutive holidays...which is mostly the reason」

As expected of an Ojou-sama school...they're drastic.

「Misuzu's school will be closed tomorrow. May 1 is the founding anniversary of the school. May 2 will end after the medical checkup by morning」

I see...during consecutive holidays, you must still have motivation to go to the usual class in school.

「Our school's the same. It will end after the medical examination and fire drill. On May 2, it will do the usual class however...」

Sensei said.

Hee...So there's no lessons tomorrow.

「...Endou-kun's baseball practice match would be tomorrow lunch」

...Oh

So that's what's scheduled.

I completely forgot about Endou.

Didn't they say that his face is plastered?

「Then, I will visit by lunch tomorrow」

Misuzu said.

It seems that it has already become natural for her to come to the mansion.

「If I go out too early, mother would be suspicious. Also, Misuzu has a traditional dance practice tomorrow starting evening...」

Misuzu's dance symposium at May 2 Night...

Tomorrow is likely the dress rehearsal for the next...

「Give me a call before you come tomorrow? I'll meet you up tomorrow」

Katsuko-nee tells Misuzu.

「No...I would feel sorry for being received by your car. I'll come to the mansion by foot from the station」

「You don't have to mind that. It's been dangerous here lately. That's why I will come to get you. Okay?」

「...But」

I interrupt Misuzu and Katsuko-nee's talk.

「Misuzu, let Katsuko-nee come for you」

「...Danna-sama?」

「Everyone's worried about you」

Misuzu looks down...

「Misuzu doesn't want to have preferential treatment」

「I'm not treating you specially」

Katsuko-nee smiled at Misuzu.

「It's not just Misuzu-san...I will come to pick up Megumi-chan and Maika-chan too. Everyone's equally important」

「...Katsuko-sama」

「Therefore...Let her come and pick you up」

I ordered Misuzu.

「Understood, Danna-sama...Katsuko-sama thank you in advance」

Misuzu bowed to Katsuko-nee.

「By the way...Maika-san. Can you stay at our mansion today?」

Sensei asks Maika.

「...Stay over?」

Maika looks at me and Megu with a perplexed face.

「You want to talk to Megumi don't you? Megumi will stay in the mansion as

well. Katsuko too of course...Yoshida-kun, you're going to stay over for today, will you?」

We still haven't told Maika that I've been in staying in the mansion for all this time.

「If I recall, your mother is in the countryside, is she?」

「Yes...Mama won't come back home because of business」

「Then, that's great」

Sensei invites Maika.

「...Hmmm」

Maika's hesitating.

「I want to talk a lot with Maika-chan」

Megumi smiles at Maika.

「Maika's the same...but」

Maika's worry is...

「...I don't think that Onee-chan will allow it」

As expected, it's Yukino

「Without Mama...Onee-chan is very bossy in the house」

「Huh...Maika's house?」

I instinctively asked.

His father is in hell at Australia.

Her mother is on the countryside for business.

Is there someone else that's living with them?

「Ah, there's a maid that goes in our house」

Maid...?¹

「The maid does the cleaning and washing. When Mama's not there to make meals, the Maid will make it」

...So rich people's house

Are putting out cash to depend on people?!

「But...Onee-chan's always so selfish. They all stop immediately. 『The meal's not delicious』or 『The way you fold laundries are bad』she says. Onee-san calls to the maid agency directly to complain. Therefore, we change three to four maids in one year...」

If you can complain then you should just do it yourself...
Yukino's already a high school student.
It's not my place to say that however...

「Maika's house...has Onee-chan acting like a Queen...」

She was spoiled and raised in such a way...
Yukino became that kind of woman.
And...because she's such a sister.
Maika grew up to be a decent girl...
Of course, her being apart from her sister and grew up in Shizouka since infancy is a big influence too.
The thought of her being suppressed by her sister changed her feelings to
『wanting to be a grown up sooner』
Anyway...Yukino is so sinful.

「Therefore...even if Maika calls saying 『I'll stay over my friend's house today』
...Onee-chan will surely not allow it」

Maika said sadly.

「Well fine...We'll be arriving at Misuzu-san's rehearsal hall. Afterwards, we'll go to Yamamine-san's house...and to Ikeda clinic. We'll do that order」

Sensei told us.
The car runs in the town at a very high speed...



「Yes...It's there. Please stop at the next signal」

Misuzu told Sensei.
...Here?

「Yes. That's the rehearsal hall of the head of school」

Since we're talking about a traditional Japanese dance rehearsal hall of the

head of the school...I thought that it would be a Japanese style building.
There's a seven story building before my eyes
It's around the size of a department store around the station...!
It's a first class site facing the main street.
There are big buildings around it.
It's lined up with stylish restaurants and dressmakers.
This area...if I recall, it's a famous upper class residential area.

「During pre-war, there seems to be all residential quarters in this hilly section of a city but...It feels like it has been completely developed now」

Misuzu explained.

「This has been the residence of the head of the school since old times...Then, the building was rebuilt around thirty years ago. Therefore, the head of the school has this building rounded. The fourth floor is the office and the fifth floor is the rehearsal floor. The rehearsal room is separated into a big and small room. The sixth floor is has her apprentice living and the seventh floor is the house of the head of school」

...Haa

「So they're lending the floors below?」

Katsuko-nee asks Misuzu.

「Yes. A relative of the head of the school does a sports gym. There's a heated swimming pool on the underground and the second and third floor are offices. The first floor is a tea lounge and a restaurant」

「...What about the rooftop?」

「The rooftop has been greened and it is the garden of the head of the school. It's a very beautiful Japanese garden. There's tea room too」

「...I see」

Katsuko-nee stares at the building.

「What's wrong, Katsuko-nee」

「Look...My dream in the future is a bakery but, I thought that it would be nice to have such a complex building」

「...Eh?」

「For example...Nagisa and I bought a building as one house...then have both the flower shop and bakery at the same location would be nice. Then live inside the building. Then, we can help each other...it would also be convenient on taking care of the children and dropping off and picking up the children on the kindergarten」

Katsuko-nee has various plans coming up it seems...

「What do you think?」

...Me?

「That's right. You're also going to live there too」

K-Katsuko-nee...?

「We'll also have Megumi-chan's room...and Maika-chan's welcome too. Oh, we need Nei-sama and Margo-sama's room too. When it comes to it, buying a whole building might be the right choice. In my case, I'd like a spa on the rooftop...!」

Katsuko-nee says that, but...

「Right...That's an interesting idea. Should I search for a site?」

Yuzuki-sensei told Katsuko-nee.

「I ask of you Ojou-sama」

「Katsuko's assets can buy a small building Katsuko-nee...You earned that much?!

...But

Katsuko-nee answered Sensei with a laugh.

「No...What Katsuko wants is a slightly bigger building」

...Eh?

「Therefore...please invest on it Ojou-sama. We'll have the best room as Ojou-sama's room」

「...Katsuko」

「Katsuko-wants Ojou-sama to eat Katsuko's meal!」

Katsuko-nee and Yuzuki-sensei looks at each other's eyes.

「...I'll think about it」

「Yes, thank you in advance」

Margo-san said...

『Before you talk about your dream, confront reality and think of a concrete plan』

That certainly penetrated everyone's mind.

Everyone's thinking of the 『Future』concretely and begin to act.

「...Then, Misuzu will be going soon」

Misuzu brought her face close to me

We kissed in a position that cannot be seen from the outside.

「Thank you for giving me your love for today as well. I love you. Danna-sama」

Misuzu looks at me with moist eyes.

「...Me too. I love you, Misuzu」

We pile our lips once again.

「...Please love me tomorrow too」

「...Yeah」

「I'll call later tonight」

「Okay...I'll wait」

Misuzu looks at Megu.

「Megumi-san...Please take care of Danna-sama」

「Ah...Yes」

Megu's cheeks blushed

「Maika-san...later」

Misuzu smiled at Maika.

「Yes...Misuzu-san」

「Let's have sex with Danna-sama tomorrow as well」

「Misuzu-san's licking felt very good」

Oh right, Maika had her clitoris licked by Misuzu while having my penis inside her...!

「I can do it again anytime」
「Next time, Maika will be the one to lick Misuzu-san」
「My...Are you sure?」
「...Please take care of Maika from now on」
「That's natural...It's not just Megumi-san but, Misuzu is also Maika-san's
『Onee-chan』 I'll cherish you a lot...!」

Megumi's smile feels so fascinating.

「Yuzuki-sama, Katsuko-sama...Thank you for everything. Please guide Misuzu from now on」

Misuzu bowed to the two ladies.

「I should say that as well...Thank you Misuzu-san. I'll ask you to take care of Yoshida-kun and the other girls」

Sensei responded.

「Yes...It's for my beloved Danna-sama and 『Sisters』」

Misuzu smiled.

「...Then, excuse me」

Misuzu opens the car door
Before she steps out of the car, she looks at me.
Then she handed me a white cloth from her pocket.

「This is a souvenir」

Saying that...When Misuzu got off the car, she flipped her skirt on purpose.
I see her naked ass under her skirt...!
So Misuzu handed me her panties?

「Please don't worry, I've prepared a change in the locker at the rehearsal hall as we'll change to Yukata for the practice...! I'll never show this to any other man but Danna-sama!」

Saying that...Misuzu closed the door.
We keep waving our hands until she enters the rehearsal hall.

「...She has really changed within just three days」

Yuzuki-sensei says while watching Misuzu disappear in the building.

「Yes, she's stabilized greatly...somehow, she also has some dignity」

Katsuko-nee said.

Stabilized...?

...That?

Certainly, I think that she has settled down, but.

「...She was a very childish girl before but...she became a good woman, didn't she?」

Katsuko-nee looks at me...

...Yeah

I certainly think that as well.

「At any rate...It's great that she's our ally」

「Right. We need the help of Kouzuki-sama on our confrontation with the head of Shirasaka house」

...I see

To complete the revenge with Shirasaka Sousuke...

We need the head of Shirasaka house to abandon Shirasaka Sousuke

We also need to liberate Megumi.

The treatment of Yukino and Maika is needed to be talked about too.

Shirasaka house is a clan that founded a major newspaper...they have quite the social power.

It is a dangerous opponent for 『Kuromori』to take upfront.

If so...obtain a bigger power from the financial world...having Misuzu's grandfather enter won't be a bad hand.

「But, Ojou-sama...Would Kouzuki-sama help?」

...Eh?

Misuzu's grandfather was a former customer of 『Kuromori』...

Won't he sympathize with the prostitutes of the residence...?!

「Kouzuki-sama has been friendly with us until now but...I don't think that he will permit his relationship with Misuzu-san」

...I see

Him favoring the prostitutes...

And Misuzu being my 『Woman...』

Is completely different.

Misuzu's grandfather might not allow her own granddaughter becoming a
『woman』of a man from 『Kuromori』

In the first place, Misuzu has a fiancé he has decided on.

As a daughter of a noble family...she's planned to marry a man with a good
standing.

And I...

I stole her virginity and made her my 『woman』

And...I'm just a commoner...

No, more than a commoner...I'm someone who's abandoned by my parents and
doesn't have a support.

I'm obviously not suitable as a groom of a Kouzuki house's daughter...

「There's the case where instead of lending us power, he'll try to separate
Yoshida-kun and Misuzu-san」

Sensei analyzes.

...No way!

「Yoshida-kun...answer me honestly. Do you hate separating from Misuzu-
san...?」

If I break up with Misuzu...Misuzu's grandfather will help 『Kuromori』
If that happens...

Sensei and others will be saved from the trouble.

It would be an advantage for 『Kuromori』

...But 「...I don't want that. I promised Misuzu that I'll protect her. I cannot break
up with her.」

I answered clearly.

「...I'm indebt with Sensei but I'm sorry」

Sensei laughs.

「...That's fine., I know that you're like that」

...Sensei?

「That's why Misuzu-san has become your 『woman』from the bottom of her heart...I don't have that intention this late」

Sensei looks at me.

「But...Remember this. That is why you have no choice but to have your relationship with Misuzu-san be accepted by Kouzuki-san. You have to confront Kouzuki-sama directly...!」

...Directly.

I will settle it with Misuzu's grandfather...

「Misuzu-san's dance presentation tomorrow...will of course have Kouzuki-sama there as well」

I'll meet with Misuzu's grandfather there.

No, not just her grandfather.

Misuzu's fiancé her grandfather has decided will be there too...!

「Think about how you will talk with Kouzuki-sama from now on」

Sensei told me.

...I

「Got it. I'll think about it」

I look at Misuzu's panty at my hand.

Misuzu's surely ready for it.

Then...I should steel myself too.

As Misuzu's 『man』

「You have changed...Yoshida-kun」

Sensei looks at my face.

「...Eh?」

I don't know.

「You've changed...You're making a good face. A very manly face」

...Manly?

I'm always a man though?...

「Before, you didn't have anything to protect. You never thought of yourself as

important」

Katsuko-nee tells me.

「But...Right now, you have a lot of people you treasure. You're brining good tension of the feeling of 『Want to protect』 Right now, you're making a good tensed face」

Katsuok-nee praises me.

「...Now, you should value yourself even a bit more」

Sensei sighs.

「...That's okay」

Megumi mutters.

「Yoshida-kun treasures us. He's our beloved 『Danna-sama』after all...」

Megu borrowed Misuzu's words...

「Right...we only have to take care of him」

Katsuko-nee smiled.

「Then...Maika will pat pat his head!」

Maika pats my head.

「Isn't that great...Yoshida-kun?」

Sensei says so then steps on the accelerator.

The car has began to run again...

Next destination would be Yamamine house This time...I have to meet Megu's foster parents

110. Marriage declaration / Second resolution

「...That is my house」

Megu points at a house.

The sun has already gone down...

The cloudy night sky comes.

On the corner of the low-lying residential area...entering a compact shopping district, right at the back of the alley.

An old small house was built there.

「Waa...Small」

Maika says.

Perhaps, there's only one or two rooms on both floors.

The first floor is the parent's living room and the second floor is Megumi's room and the storage?

The glass door has a crack and is patched by a brown packing tape.

The lamp in the front door is burning darkly.

The paint on the wooden wall has faded away considerably.

It's a rag house with poor light inside.

By standards...You can't think that they're relatives of the famous family Shirasaka.

「Right...It's smaller than Maika-san's house」

Yuzuki-sensei told Maika.

「Ah...Sorry. I didn't mean it like that」

Megu smiles at the apologizing Maika.¹

「It's fine. Yamamine house is being aided by Shirasaka house on the livelihood...」

Megu said.

「The head of Shirasaka house...the second wife of the founder of the newspaper company was coming from Yamamine house」

「Yes, she's originally a daughter of an employee of the company. The founder

fell in love with her then...as far as it goes, they put her in the family register and made her a concubine」

Megu answers Sensei question

「Yamamine house has become Shirasaka house's relative like that but... because other marriage proposals other than Yamamine house has been on the distinguished families...they've become a complete luggage of the clan」

Yamamine house who came from commoners has been looked down by the people of Shirasaka house all this time.

「My foster father, and all of his brothers are all employed in a company affiliated to Shirasaka house」

「Did any of them enter the newspaper company?」

Megu shook her head?

「...People from Yamamine house will never be hired in the newspaper and big companies. They're appointed at the place that is the subsidiary of the subsidiary of the company group. Even if they work for that company for years, they cannot get anything higher than section chief. They're driven to the standpoint where they can't go against the people of Shirasaka house」

They're such a clan who do such things without concern...

「They're like idiots...Even Shirasaka house was just a commoner until the founder made the newspaper company succeed. Mistaking that they have risen to such nobles, they justify such foolish things, but...!」

Sensei speaks out.

「Maika-san...Misuzu-san will have her symposium the day after tomorrow. Go with Yoshida-kun and Megumi. That's where the genuine nobles of the country gather」

Sensei tells Maika.

「Take a look at the genuine first class people. You will understand that Shirasaka who's an upstart isn't the real one」

Misuzu's learning the Konpeki style traditional dance from the headmaster²
The headmaster's class would be performing the day after tomorrow.

It's just a presentation of a traditional dance class and yet, they're using the 『National Theatre』

The girls dancing with Misuzu are all students of the headmaster...They must all be daughters of prestigious families.

Naturally...Their family would come to see the presentation.

Japan's...wealthy socialites.

「Right, I think it would be a good study for you. You should go there」

Katsuko-nee says so, however...

「Nei-sama and Margo-sama will be coming too...If I recall, Nagisa will do the same?」

「Huh, Katsuko-nee won't come?」

I asked instinctively.

「I cannot go to such places.... Nagisa is already 『Retired』for years so she can pass...But I'm still in 『Active service』 There's a lot of people I would be troubled to face」

Katsuko-nee chooses her words carefully in front of Maika.

...I see

Katsuko-nee will have lots of her guests coming in there too...

「I will be alright but...those people」

The guest would be coming with his wife and daughter and yet, he would see Katsuko-nee's face...That's certainly hard.

「Therefore, I will be just a support on the day after tomorrow...!」

...Eh?

Not 『House watching』...But 『Support』

That means that there's something scheduled to be executed at that day...

As 『Kuromori』...

「...Katsuko, how's the rear?」

Sensei has been observing the state outside the car since a while ago. She's been staring at the darkness where the street lights doesn't hit.

「There's no abnormality on the rear as well. There's no lookout or ambush it

seems...」

Katsuko-nee is also checking the outside through the rear window.

「It seems that Shirasaka's head doesn't begin to move yet...」

「Yes. Shirasaka Sousuke from Australia cannot contact Japan...the clan and the company still thinks that he's on a normal business trip」

Sensei turned to us.

「Okay...We're about to go. Megumi and Yoshida-kun will be with me. Katsuko and Maika will wait inside the car」

「...Okay」

Megu's nervous...

「I've brought a hidden microphone so Maika-san will be listening with Katsuko in here」

Sensei tells Maika.

「...Maika-san, you still don't trust us from the bottom of your heart, don't you?」

...Eh?

Maika swallows her saliva.

「Therefore...I'd like you to listen to my talk with Yamamine-san. You don't think that Yamamine-san is also conspiring with us just to fool Maika-san, do you?」

「Well...Yes, I think that uncle Yamamine won't do that」

Sensei looks straight at Maika...

「Then...Listen. I want Maika-san to understand the truth about Shirasaka house」

「Yes...understood」

Maika replied.

「...Bring this」

Katsuko-nee handed me a small digital camera

「Take photos of Megumi-chan's family and her room as well」

...Take photos

「Megumi-chan will be parting from this house today...take a commemoration photo」

Megu can no longer return to this house
The house she lived for ten years.
She'll part from her foster parents.

「I'll quote a famous photographer I respect...『Take as much photos as possible. We'll forget about it anyway』...Human's are quite forgetful. Therefore, you should leave it as a photos as much as possible so you won't forget it³」

...Katsuko-nee

「Got it...I'll take photos」

I hold the camera firmly.

「Yoshi-kun...I」

Megu's trembling.

「It's okay...I'm here with you」

I kiss Megu.



「...I'm home」

The glass door opened with a rattling sound...And Megu calls out.
Footsteps can be heard from the house
A middle aged man and woman with an age around fifty shows up.

「...Megumi」

Megumi bows to the two.

「I'm sorry for staying overnight yesterday...Father, Mother」

Megu's parents...doesn't look like Megu at all.
That's obvious however.
Megu's foster parents have a third of their hair white. They look like decent people. They must've been back just from work. He's still wearing a necktie on

his gray suit. A shabby worn out suit. It feels like he's wearing an RTW from a bargain sale for very long.

The mother is just a usual simple mother. Short hair and no makeup. She looks at Megu in worry.

「I'm Kuromori...the one who contacted you the other day」

Yuzuki-sensei greeted Megu's foster parents

「You...?」

「Yes...I'm the current head of Kuromori」

Sensei answered with her usual cold eyes.

「Well...whatever it is, let's talk inside...dear」

Megu's foster mother talked to her husband.

「Y-Yes...we should. Kuromori-san...please come in」

「...Excuse me」

Sensei took off her shoes...

「Uhm...This person?」

Megu's foster mother looks at me

「...Megumi's friend?」

...I

「Yes. I'm Megumi-san's classmate. And...A person of 『Kuromori』house」

Megumi's foster parents might not know the name 『Kuromori』as a crime syndicate.

That's why I answered like that.

「He's not a suspicious guy...He came with us to help Megumi-san carry her luggage」

Sensei explains.

I see...if we're going out of this house

We have to take Megumi's luggage.

「It's okay, father, mother...he's a trustworthy person」

Megu told her foster parents with serious eyes

「Understood...please come in」

I took off my shoes as well

「This way...」

The room next to the door is the living room

There's a low table in the Japanese style room.

Megu's foster mother puts out a floor cushion.

When everyone sits on a 8.42 square meter room⁴, it's narrow.

There's a Kokeshi, and a wooden bear on the cupboard.

There's a simple calendar on the wall.

Somehow, this looks like Showa era.

When tea was distributed to everyone, the foster father started the talk.

「Megumi...Are you sure that they're the people you stayed with before?」

「Yes father. There's no doubt. I've been indebt with Kuromori-san before I came to this house. I was small back then but I remember it well」

「Megumi-san's mother...Keiko-san has been kind with me. I think that this is the time to repay the kindness she has given me」

Sensei talks to Megu's foster mother...

「I think that you already know this but...Megumi's real father, Shirasaka Sousuke will make her a prostitute. I will never allow that to happen. I will take custody of Megumi. And, I'll protect her at a place where Shirasaka house cannot reach」

「But...Kuromori-san. Weren't you managing the prostitution organization with Sousuke-san?」

Megu's foster father seems to hold clear distrust.

「I've already stopped the operation of the prostitution organization already. At the same time, I've already banished Shirasaka Sousuke from our organization. We're currently separated completely from Shirasaka Sousuke」

Sensei answered clearly.

「...You say that but...I cannot trust you」

The foster father declared so.

「To be honest...I don't want to hand Megumi to Sousuke-san. There's no parent who wants to make their treasured daughter a prostitute. But... Kuromori-san and Sousuke-san are in the same prostitution organization, weren't you? There's no guarantee that if I leave Megumi to you, she won't become a prostitute」

For normal people...There's no difference between Shirasaka Sousuke and Sensei.

Both of them were managers of the prostitution organization 『Kuromori』... It must be unreasonable to trust them...

「...Shirasaka Sousuke has already been caught in a trap」

Sensei declared with cold eyes.

「He's captured by our people in Australia. His trouble with the gangs will be found out soon. Shirasaka Sousuke will lose his position certainly. Shirasaka house will banish him」

Megu's foster mother is startled.

「If that happens...Megumi-san will be taken over by the head of Shirasaka house. For the head of Shirasaka house, Megumi-san is Shirasaka Sousuke's shameful child. She'll be likely to be hidden from the world. I think that she'll be separated from Yamamine-sama too. I think that she'll be entrusted to someone in the province that's under Shirasaka house and she'll be kept there until she dies」

「That's better than her being a prostitute!」

Megu's foster mother shouted.

「Megumi-san should be the one to decide which is better and what life she'll live. Megumi-san...what do you want to do?」

Sensei looks at Megu.

Megu...spoke to her foster parents.

「Father, Mother...Megumi will be going to Kuromori-san」

Megu bowed to her parents.

「I don't want to live being dragged around by Shirasaka house anymore. Megumi wants to leave Shirasaka house no matter what result it gives me」

Her foster parents look at each other.

「But...Megumi」

The foster mother tries to persuade Megu somehow.
But, Megu is...

「I'm sorry, Mother...I've already decided. Megumi right now has been living, obediently following fate. But, not anymore. I'll fight my own fate. I want to be happy...!」

...Megumi

「I will get out of this house without your permission. If I ran away from home...that way, the head of Shirasaka house won't be blaming father」

...I see

Her parents would be suffering...

If they handed Megumi to Sensei, Yamamine house would be erased by the head of Shirasaka house.

「Megumi-san...you don't get it. If you do that, Shirasaka house won't be forgiving Yamamine-san. I think that they will attach various false charges and make Yamamine-san suffer」

Sensei said.

「...That's」

Megu is at loss.

「...Therefore, I will take Megumi-san by force. Please report to the head of Shirasaka house 『Megumi-san has been kidnapped by Kuromori』 We have already restricted Shirasaka Sousuke so it's okay to tell the head of the house」

...Sensei

「I understood the feeling of Yamamine-san not being able to oppose Shirasaka house. Yamamine-san's brother, kinsmen...are all working on companies related to Shirasaka house. I can understand that you cannot betray

Shirasaka house by all means」

Sensei...said with a strong tone

「...No, I」

Megu's foster father tries to object but he can't speak.

「Kuromori house is a genuine criminal organization. Because we've committed such crimes multiple times, Shirasaka house will surely believe Yamamine-san's report」

『Kuromori』kidnapped Katsuko-nee and Nagisa-san.
And...turned them to prostitutes.
It's not just the two of them.
A lot of women...

「...The young lady has been kidnapped by a crime syndicate. Yamamine-san's a victim...not our a cooperator. Please contact Shirasaka house at the moment we bring Megumi-san out of this house. And, there would be no more worry about the sparks falling to Yamamine-san」

...In exchange.
『Kuromori』will confront the head of Shirasaka house...

「...Then, Kuromori-san and Megumi」
「There is no need to worry...We are prepared to fight Shirasaka house. We've already taken a hold of Shirasaka Sousuke himself」

Saying that, Sensei took out her phone.
She pushed the call button.

「...Katsuko, Phase 3」

That's the only line she told over the phone.

「With this, Shirasaka Sousuke on Australia will be imprisoned to a place we only know. We will negotiate with Shirasaka house in exchange for Shirasaka Sousuke...!」

「...That's unreasonable. Kuromori-san doesn't know the terror of Shirasaka house!」

Megu's foster father muttered.

「I agree that it's unreasonable. And, Yamamine-san should know this too... we're a group of people who knows true hell」

Sensei...smiles coldly

「We've fought existence far more frightening than Shirasaka house. We don't intend to lose...!」

And, she took out a white package from her back.
She puts it on top of the low table.

「Of course, we won't just tell Yamamine-sama to give Megumi for free...This is 10 Million in cash」

Sensei presented the package to Megumi's foster father.
Megu's foster parents are at loss.

「You want me to sell my daughter?」
「This is a reward for reporting a lie to Shirasaka house. We will be kidnapping Megumi-san in paper however. It's regardless of Yamamine-san's will...」

Sensei looks at Megumi's foster parents.

「...Check would be traced by banks. We've prepared bills that's not in the circulation. It would be dangerous to leave the full amount on the same bank. Subdivide it little by little and put it in different accounts with your name」

Megu's foster father looks at the package silently.

「I'm asking you father, please take it」

Megu spoke powerfully.

「That's saying that you want to sever connections with us?」

Her foster father says sadly.

「...That's not it. Whatever the situation becomes, Megumi is father and mother's daughter」

Megu told her foster parents

「.....Please think of Megumi being sent off as a bride」

Megu looks at me.

I nodded.

「...Father, Mother...I really thank you for loving and raising me until now」

Megumi takes off the cushion, puts her hand on the floor and bows to her parents 「Megumi...will marry this man...!」

Megu looks at me.

Megu's foster parents look at me in blank surprise...

...I

I removed the cushion, imitating Megumi.

Putting my hands on the mat...I bowed to Megumi's foster parents.

「...I'm Yoshida. Please let me have the privilege to marry Megumi-san」

I said clearly.

「...I'll make Megumi-san happy. I will never let her feel sad...Please let me have your young lady...!」

I...

I don't like saying『Please let me have your young lady』

Megu...is already at the age where she can decide her own future.

Someone who's will is being controlled should be liberated.

From Shirasaka Sousuke...

From Shirasaka house...

And...from her foster parents.

I look at Megu once again.

「...Megu, marry me...!」

...Megu

「...Yes」

She answered.

「We will hold a proper ceremony when the time comes. At that time, please attend as Megu's parents. Please...!」

I promised Megu's foster parents.

「...You're serious?」

Megu's foster father asked me.

「Yes, I'm serious」

I answered clearly.

「Father, Mother...I'm also serious. I love this person. I believe him. I will be with him throughout my life...!」

Megumi bowed to her foster parents again and again.

「Dear...What do you think about them?」

Megu's foster mother asked her husband.

「I think we should give Megumi as a bride」

The foster father turns to his wife.

「...Are you sure?」

The foster mother nodded.

「It's much more better than being taken and becoming a prostitute or being kidnapped... It's a celebration as well...」

Her foster father sighs.

Then, he looked at me.

「...Yoshida-kun, was it?」

「...Yes?」

「I leave Megumi in your care」

The foster father bowed to me.

...I

...I steeled myself.

「I'll protect Megu with all my best...!!!」

I created another big resolution.



「This will be a slightly adult talk so...get the luggage」

Sensei told me and Megu.

「Right...I think it'll take at least half an hours, pack everything by that time.
Just pack up the minimum necessities」

「...Okay」

Megu answers Sensei.

「Yoshi-kun My room's on the second floor...」
「Ah...Okay」

Coming out of the living room, we climb the narrow and steep stairs...
We can hear Yuzuki-sensei's voice from the living room.

「...As for the contents that Yamamine-san have to report for the head of
Shirasaka house...」

Sensei didn't blame Megu's foster parents but instead...it seems that she has
prepared the minimum information that would be the content that they would
report to the head of Shirasaka house.

「This is my room」

...Megu's head.

A six-mat Japanese style room...A study desk, bookshelf, and a bed...
There's nothing else.
There's nothing that looks girlish...

「My luggage has already been packed」

There's two travel bags in line on side of the bed.

「Look...I should be taken by Shirasaka-san⁵ after the golden week. That's
why...I've already finished preparations」

...Megu

She was prepared for it.
His biological father making her fall to prostitution.
That's why, Megu is...
She has given up on her life...

「Wait. I'll gather my school stuff. I thought that I cannot go to school anymore
after all. Therefore I didn't pack my school stuff」

Megu said...

All of the books and notebooks are piled up on Megu's desk.
Her uniform and spare gym suits are stuffed in a sports bag...
The packing ended in just a minute.
I took photos of Megu's room.

「...What are you doing Yoshi-kun?」
「Well...This is the room Megu has lived since she was six, right?」
「Yeah...I lived here for ten years...」
「Then...I have to take photos」
「Right...I cannot go back here after all」

Megu said sadly.

「...The room you've lived for ten years is really clean」

Or perhaps should I say there's nothing but the minimum.
There's no magazines or manga or even a novel on her bookshelf either.
Other than old textbooks...It's empty.
There's not a single stuffed toy, poster, or something that's like a high school girl would own.
And, the windows are cleaned beautifully and there's not a single dust on the floor.
It's perfectly cleaned.

「I think that I'm just borrowing this room from Yamamine-san...」

When we were alone in the room...Megu calls her foster father 『Yamamine-san』
In short...She never heartily think that her foster parents are her own parents.
They're just the people who raised her. She wasn't thinking that they're living together.

「It's just a borrowed room so you must not let it become dirty, right?」

Megu said seriously.

「Also...I thought that somebody would come to pick me up someday」

...Megu?

「...Someday, I'll come back to the mansion and become a prostitute. Ever

since I was a child...!」

...That's.

「Therefore...I was prepared to get out of this house since I was a child. I've been prepared all the time. Someday, someone will come to get me so I put my things on two bags and have it next to my bed」

These two bags have been prepared all this time.

「This is the bag that I brought when I was taken from the mansion to this house. Mama's bag...!」

Megu's mother...Keiko-san's bag.

「I came here with just two bags...so I thought that I should just have two bags when I will leave as well」

Megu's two old bags.

Somehow, I remember my cardboard boxes.

My private properties are collected in just one cardboard box...

Megu and I are same existence.

「Because the bag I use in school was added...It became three」

Megu smiles wryly.

「I'll take all of it」

I'll carry it out of the house with Megu's thoughts.

「It's okay...let me have half of it」

Megu said bashfully.

「I want to be Yoshi-kun's half」

Megumi and I want to share the sorrow and the harsh memories.

「...Got it」

I answered.

「But, I'm glad. Thanks to Minaho-san...I will be able to continue going to school」

...Eh?

「...I've always thought of it. I'm able to live just like a normal child for now...I have to do all of my best while I'm living on Yamamine house. Thus...I do my best in study and sports. My foster parents are very pleased when I give good results...!」

Thus...The honor student, Yamamine Megumi was made.
Megu believes that her life ahead has the hell of prostitution waiting for her...

「...Megu doesn't need to become a prostitute anymore...you'll be my bride」

I embraced Megu.

「Un...I'm glad I met Yoshi-kun...I'm happy」

I kissed Megu.

Megu returned a kiss to me...

「It feels strange...I never thought of kissing a boy in my own room」

Megu said laughingly.

「Speaking of which...It's my first time in my life entering a girl's room」

「Sorry...My room's just a dull one」

「That's not true...This room has Megu's scent in it」

Yup...This room definitely has Megu's scent soaking in it.

「Yada~...Don't say embarrassing things」

「It's true...look」

I lay down on Megu's bed.

I sniffed Megu's smell from the futon...

I spread my arms and legs and shoved my face on Megu's futon.

「It smells good...I feel like Megu's wrapping me up...」

...Then

I can hear rustling sounds from the back...

When I look up...Megu's taking off her clothes...?!

「...Megu?」

Megu then said.

「Take a nude photo of me in this room」

Megu's eyes are serious.

「Then...I want to be embraced by Yoshi-kun in this room...!」

...Megu?!

「...I want to have sex here...!」

111. I want you to violate me in my room...

「...I was allowed to live in this house so...I cannot do anything bad...Therefore, I never did lewd things in this room」

Megu on her underwear told me.
I took the half-naked photo of Megu inside the room where she lived for ten years...

「I've never masturbated since I was born... All of the first lewd stuffs were Yoshi-kun's. That will be the same in the future...!」

...Megu?

「You do know that I've been watching men embrace my mother and the other ladies in the mansion since I was born, don't you? Therefore I thought that I would be doing the same thing someday...for always」

Megu was born in the brothel.
The young Megu saw sex that's not normal love.
It's sex of prostitute who sell themselves to men...
Furthermore, it was the time when Shirasaka Sousuke is completely holding the real power of 『Kuromori』
Perhaps...most of them are abnormal sex.

「...I remember all of it. How the ladies in the mansion were violated. Remembering that, my heart feels pain...!」

...Megu's slightly trembling...

「I saw it in dreams when I came to this house. Inside the dream...men always were rough on me. I'm being violated absurdly...when I open my eyes, my heart is beating so fast and my whole body is sweating」

The memory of the brothel when she was young...has deeply eaten into Megu's heart...!

「It's not sex of lovers where they gently love each other...In my dream, I'm always forcibly violated...! I always thought that sex means that kind of rape...!」

Megu looks at me with moist eyes.

「Yoshi-kun...what should I do? I think I'm abnormal.¹ I'm a helpless perverted girl...!」

...She's looking at me with teary eyes.

「I'm scared of such delusions on myself. Therefore, I... I never approached men when I was in elementary and middle school. I desperately concentrate on sports and studies...I forbid myself from love or lewd stuffs...because, if someone like me begins to do that...I feel that it would be impossible for me to get out of sex anymore」

On one side...her interest in sex has risen to a threat.
On the other hand...there's the sense of fear and unease for herself.
Two contradicting feelings have always clashed within Megu all this time...

「If I experience even just a slight lewdness for once...I thought that I would become a perverted girl」

This girl had sex with me.
Megu's sexual feelings has awakened!!!

「...I'll tell only Yoshi-kun about this. Megu is actually a lewd and indecent girl. A pervert. I had interest in lewd stuffs all this time...!」

Megu talks to me like she's confessing.

「Also...It's not just the usual lewdness. Since I was a child, I saw all of the men who were doing mother...! I want my body to be made a mess of...!!!!」

...Megu!

「That's why...I was serious about what I told you in the car. I'll be a prostitute only for Yoshi-kun.² I'll give my true self to only you. I want to be your sex slave forever. Misuzu-san and Katsuko-san said that just because they're considerate of me, but... Megu actually wants to be a doll violated by Yoshi-kun...!

Megu wants to be violated the same way as her mother.
That must be her thought of atonement from being unable to save her mother.
The gloomy sex deeply twines around Megu's heart.
I must know how to untangle that thread...!

「...Just listen Megu. That's enough...I get it already」

I embraced Megu

I embraced Megu tightly.

「...I will take all of Megu's naughty emotions...!」

I promised Megu.

「...But...Megu's my girlfriend. You're my bride」

「...Un, on paper. I'm in charge of being Yoshi-kun's girlfriend on paper...!」

Megu thinks that her marriage with me is just her taking the official position as a member of 『Sister's club』

「That doesn't matter. Megu's my girlfriend. That's for sure...!」

「...Yoshi-kun」

「...We're a real couple so we're allowed to do whatever sex it is. No matter how embarrassing it is, how perverted it is, it's all lover's sex. It's a『Pretend play』」

I'll accept all of Megu's desires.

I will not reject whatever it is!

「We'll do anything, even if it's 『Rape play』or 『Slave play』 I'll do anything if it's for Megu...No, let's enjoy it together...」

I look at Megu's eyes...

Megu...

「...Are you sure, Yoshi-kun?」

「...In exchange, we'll never break up」

...Megu nodded.

「Yoshi-kun. I want to part away from the 『Honor student Yamamine Megumi』right now...!」

「...That's why you want to have sex in this room?」

「Yes...On the bottom of this room...even though my parents are there...Megu and Yoshi-kun will have sex. Raped. I want to be a messed up『bad girl』」

「Got it...I'll make you a『bad girl』」

Megu turned her back to me...

「...Yoshi-kun, remove Megu's bra」

「...Okay」

I removed the hook of Megu's bra³
Her cute breasts jumps out...!

「...From now on, Yoshi-kun will always take of Megu's bra. And put it on too...!」

Megu's fawning on me...

「...Even at school?」

「Baka...School's different. I'll leave it to Yoshi-kun other than that place...!」

「...Got it」

「You see...I want to be restrained by Yoshi-kun」

...Restrained?

「...Saying that I must not talk to other men」

「Megu...don't talk to any other men but me」

「Yes...Megu won't talk to anyone but Yoshi-kun. I'll never show my naked body. I won't have sex with anyone but Yoshi-kun...I'll become Yoshi-kun's slave forever!」

「...It's not slave」

「I want it...I'll become a wife that's like a slave...!」

Megu lets my hand touch her own panty...
Megu's already wet there...

「Megu's aroused... What should I do, Yoshi-kun? Megu's a real pervert...!」

I trace my finger on Megu's crotch...!

「...It's fine being perverted...Megu won't show her perverted face to anyone but me, right?」

「Yes. Megu won't have sex with anyone but Yoshi-kun...Yoshi-kun...!」

Megu's breathing turned hot...!

「...Yoshi-kun...Don't stop with just Megu. Give the other 『women』lots of sex too」

「...Megu?」

「That's for the better...Have lots of sex with Misuzu-san and others. Megu will watch...!」

「...You want to watch?」

「Yes...Megu will watch...!」

Megu's violently aroused...!

「...You see, when I heard Yoshi-kun raped Maika-chan...I was actually super aroused. I feel unpleasant on the other hand. It feels really painful that Yoshi-kun's having sex with other girls. But, on the other hand...I want to see it. When I saw Yoshi-kun having sex with Misuzu-san and Katsuko-san, I felt very aroused...I'm a really lewd girl.

「...I raped Maika forcibly at start. When it rained in the courtyard, we were filled with mud...!

「...Outside?」

「Maika run away so I chased after her, pushed her down on the lawn and held her down...!」

「...Maika-chan cried?」

「Yeah...Maika cried when her hymen was torn forcibly...!」

「...It must've hurt?」

「Yeah...She cried out and screamed. But I violated her until the end」

I unfastened my belt and lowered my pants.

My erection is already flourishing...!

「...Maika-chan's so pitiful!」

「Then...I ejaculated inside Maika-chan three times...!」

「...Oh!」

Megu's panty is completely wet...!

「I feel sorry for her and yet...I'm so aroused. I'm a bad girl. Maika-chan's my little sister, and yet...!」

Megu's looking at me with enchanted eyes.

「Yoshi-kun...punish this bad girl...!」

I then told Megu.

「Megu...suck it!」

Megu smiles bewitchingly.

「Yes dear!」

Megu kneeled in front of me and puts my penis in her mouth.

The room she has lived for ten years...

The room she has never done lewd things until now...

Megu's giving me a fellatio...

The room below has her foster parents...!

「I'll take photos so look up the camera」

「...Okay」

Megu looks up at the camera

Her cheeks are dyed red in shame...

She's smiling happily.

I captured that face.

I captured Megu's naked upper body...her pink nipples.

Megu separates her mouth from my penis...

「...Not enough...please violate Megu!」

I look at the watch.

...If I recall, Yuzuki-sensei told us to pack up within thirty minutes.

It's already been 12-13 minutes.

It would take five minutes to fix our clothes...!

「...Don't think about me, Yoshi-kun should just violate me to feel good. I want to be ravished in this room...be made a mess of...!」

Megu pleads.

「...Got it...I won't worry about Megu's body. I'll thrust it in and feel good by myself...okay?」

「...Un!」

Megu looks up at me...

...Megu!

I stripped my lower half in a hurry...

Meanwhile, Megu laid a blanket on top of the tatami mat.

「...It would be making creaking sounds on top of the bed so ravish me on top of the blanket, please!」

Oh...we cannot let the people downstairs know that we're having sex...!
We should make as less noise as possible...
I need to ejaculate inside Megu in short time...!

「...Go on. Violate me」

Megu lies down on the blanket...!
I violently pulled down Megu's panty.

「It's the second time so I think it will still hurt...!」
「It's fine...It's better if it hurts. That way, I would feel that Yoshi-kun's ravishing me...!」

...Megu!
I let the naked Megu spread her legs wide in front of me...!
I open Megu's dripping wet vagina.

「...Here we go!」

...I!
Thrust in my penis in Megu's slit!
...Ngugugu!!
Megu who's vagina just lost it's virginity resists the invasion of a foreign object!

「...O-Ouch!」

Megu leaked out her voice...!
I pulled my penis unintentionally.
My penis came off...!

「...Yoshi-kun, take this handkerchief」

Megu points at the white handkerchief coming out of her uniform pocket.

「...O-Oh」

When I hand her the handkerchief...

「I won't be able to leak out my voice with this...!」

Saying that, Megu bites into the handkerchief...!

Megu's eyes is telling me 「Now, rape me!」

「...I'm putting it in, Megu!」

I thrust inside Megu once again!

「...Nnn, Nnnnn!!!」

As expected...Megu seems to be in pain.

But...I can no longer stop!!!

「...I'm going to thrust it in deeply!」

I pushed my penis deeply to her uterus in a dash!!!

「...Nnnnn! Nnnnn!!!」

Megu's eyes spill tears...it must hurt, it must be painful.

Still, Megu's eyes...is staring at me.

...I!

I move my waist back and forth...!

I thrust inside Megu violently!

The hot penis stirs the unripe vagina of Megu...!

「...Nnn...N...Nnnn...Nnnnnn!!!」

Megu...I'm violating Megu...!

While her tears are spilling...!

Still, Megu's pleased...!

「...Megu, Megu, Megu!!!」

I grab Megu's nipples while moving my waist.

I massage her breasts while sucking her nipple.

「...Nnnn! N!...Nnnnn!!!」

Megu's breathing roughly...

Megu's whole body sweats profusely and reddens from the sexual arousal...

Megu's sweat smells like sweet milk.

Megu's room...Megu's blanket...Megu's body...

Wrapped in Megu's scent...I violate Megu intensely...!!!

...Aaaaaaah!

Megu's insides are hot and moist...!

A vagina unaccustomed to sex...Is squeezing me out with all strength that screams harshly...!

「...Nnnn! NN!...Nnnnnnn!!...Nnnnnnn!!」

Biting to the white handkerchief...Megu endures the man's cruelty.
But still...Her eyes are looking at me.
She's pleased being raped by me from the bottom of her heart...!!!

「...M-Megu!」

The pleasure is rising up!!!

「...I'm cumming! I'm going to pour in my semen inside Megu...!!!」

Megu appeals me with her eyes...!

『...Come inside me』She says!

「...Megu, Megu, Meguuuuuu...Aaaaaaah! Cumming!」

I leaked my cloudy liquid in the deepest part of Megu...!
I ejaculated violently like I'm peeing!
I pour in my liquid inside Megu's womb!!!

「...Nnnnn! Nn! Nnnnnnn!!」

Megu...feels the heat inside her womb...!
Her body trembles...
I-I'm being sucked out!!!

「...Megumi, Yoshida-kun...are you ready?!」

I can hear Yuzuki-sensei's voice from downstairs...!
...S-Shit.

I'm still ejaculating inside Megu.
My ejaculation doesn't stop!!!

「...Just a bit more, Minaho-san. Please wait five more minutes!」

Megu took the handkerchief from her mouth and replied to Sensei...
While being impregnated by the naked me...!

「...Hurry up...!」

「Okay...We're coming!」

Megumi answers Sensei with her 『Honor Student』voice.
I finally ended my long ejaculation.

「...It felt good, Megu」

I kissed Megu.

「Now...Let's hurry and put on our clothes」

When I say that...Megu.

「...Wait, Yoshi-kun. Take photo of it」

「...Eh?」

「I want to take souvenir a photo」

Megu's eyes were serious.

「...Got it」

I took photo of me connected with megu.
Then...I pull out my penis...
White semen drips from Megu's vagina spread wide.

「Ah...don't put it away」

Megu stops me from pulling my pants

「...Megumi will clean it up」

Megu licks up my penis that's wet with love nectar and saliva.
I also take photo of that spectacle too.

「That's enough...let's hurry」

「...Un」

Megu took out a spare underwear from the bag.
She put the panty that was dirtied by our sex just now and placed it in her bag.

「We cannot leave this in the house...」

I take Megu's bra.

「...Turn your back」

As promised...I put up Megu's bra.

While we're at it, I also put on her panty...

「Thank you...Yoshi-kun's really gentle...」

Megu bashfully told me.

「Enough with that...let's hurry up and put on our clothes!」

Megumi smiles happily.

「Yes...dear」

We fixed our clothes in a hurry...

「...how is it?」

Megumi changed from her high school uniform to a white dress.

...A beauty was there.

It's a pure and innocent girl that you won't think that she just had sex with a man a few minute ago.

「Un...Beautiful」

Compared to that...the clothes I'm wearing looks languid.

「Geez...Yoshi-kun, stand here」

Megu adjusts her clothes.

「...Okay, we're done!」

Megu smiles.

That face no longer has the gloom.

「...Megu's beautiful」

That's what I honestly thought.

I think that Megu's becoming more beautiful every time we have sex.

「Thank you...I'll do my best」

「...Eh?」

「Among Yoshi-kun's 『woman』...I'm the one being in charge of being Yoshi-kun's 『girlfriend』...I'll do my best to become even more beautiful. If not...I would feel sorry for the other 『Women』...!」

Megu promised me.

「I'll carry the luggage...!」

I lift Megu's three bags...

Megu looked around the room once again...

「...It's strange」

Megu laughs.

「I'm going to part from this room, and yet」

She looks at my face and smiled.

「I should be sad but...I'm unbearably happy...」

...Megu

「This will be the last so I thought that I should take a look at my room firmly but...I can't remember anything but Yoshi-kun's face」

Megu embraces me who's holding the luggage with both hands...then kissed me.

「This is fine. I don't need anything as long as I'm with Yoshi-kun...!」



Coming to the floor below.

Sensei and Megu's foster parents are already waiting in the door.

「...Are you sure that's all?」

Megu's foster father is surprised that Megu doesn't have anything but three bags.

「Yes, Father...This is enough」

Megu answered with a smile.

「Megumi's room has been kept intact all the time」

Megu's foster mother said so.

「Thank you very much. I've been taken care for these ten years. Father, mother...!」

Megu bowed to her parents...

「I won't forget this favor throughout my life...I thank you from the bottom of my heart...!」

Megumi's foster father holds back his tears.

「...Sorry. I don't have the strength」

Yamamine house cannot go against Shirasaka house...
Her foster father really felt mortified.

「Then, as I told you a while ago...at the same time we leave with our car, please contact the head of Shirasaka house」

Yuzuki-sensei gives the last reminder.

「Yes...『Megumi was forcibly taken by a woman named Kuromori Minaho. We were told that Shirasaka Sousuke's life would be in danger if we contact the police. What should we do, please order us』...Was it?」

The foster father repeated the contents of the report.

「As long as you report that...Yamamine-san won't be pursued by Shirasaka house. They will have their hands filled with a lot of things...」

That's...

Searching Shirasaka Sousuke in Australia...!

Naturally...Yuzuki-sensei and us would be a target.

「Then...Let's go」

Megu bowed to her foster parents once again.

「Megumi has been really happy as father and mother's daughter」

Heavy air drifts in the door.

「Megumi...please forgive us」

The foster father may think that he should send Megumi out of the house for the sake of Yamamine clan.

The adopted daughter they raised for ten years...will be entrusted to the head of the prostitution organization...

「No, Father, This is what Megumi wants. Mother, please send me off with a smile」

Megu...holds to my arm.

「Megumi will be happy with this person from now on...!」

...I

「...I'll protect Megumi-san throughout my life」

I swore to Megu's foster mother...!

「...Please take care of Megumi」

The parents that will part from their adopted daughter bowed to me...

「...I'll definitely make her happy」

I don't have any answer but that.



We returned to the car stopped outside the house...

Mr. and Mrs. Yamamine was about to see of the car but Sensei stopped them. Their daughter was being taken forcibly on the setting so it would be strange to see them off.

We don't know if there's someone watching from the outside.

「...Katsuko, are there any observers outside?」

Taking the deiver's seat, Sensei asks Katsuko-nee that's on the back seat.

「There's no sign of it for now...」

Katsuko-nee answered.

「Then...It will start at the moment Yamamine-san reports to the head of Shirasaka family...!」

Sensei rev up the engine on purpose and drives off the car...!

With that sound as the signal...Megu's foster parents will make the call.

Megu's kidnapping and...Shirasaka Sousuke's scamper will come to light.

The head of Shirasaka house and 『Kuromori』...Will confront each other!

「...Maika-san, what do you think?」

Sensei asks Maika.

Right...Sensei holds a hidden microphone when she came to the Yamamine

household.

The negotiation with Megu's foster father and the meeting afterwards...are all heard by Maika in the car.

「Yuzuki-san told Maika earlier to『Stay for tonight』...But that's actually wrong. Maika cannot go home today, can she?...!」

「...Sorry but, that's how it is」

Sensei answers through the mirror.

The car comes to the main street.

「You would be antagonizing the head of Shirasaka house so...Maika should better be a hostage, right?」

Maika answers Sensei with a smile.

「...Maika, are you sure?」

When I asked, Maika...

「Well, Maika's already Onii-san's 『Woman』 isn't she? It may be painful to antagonize Shirasaka house but, it can't be helped. Maika's already a member of 『Sister's club』...!」

Maika's completely prepared for it.

「Right. I'd like you to stay in my mansion until the consecutive holidays end」

Sensei tells Maika...

「Understood...But, please let me come back home after this. Maika wants to bring her change of clothes...I want to have those at hand too」

「...Yes, we'll make an opportunity from the situation」

「...Maika also have to get out of the house like Megumi-san」

Maika's being 『Kidnapped』 just like Megu...?!

As a card to be used against the head of Shirasaka house.

「Onii-san should come with me when I come back of the house!」

Maika looks at me.

「Yeah...Got it」

I remembered the night where we were in front of Yukino's house.
Stopping the car in front of the house...I raped Yukino.

「We're going to have sex in Maika's room...!」

Eh...?

M-Maika?...

「...You had sex with Megumi-san on the room upstairs, didn't you?」

Maika laughs 'ehehen'

「...W-Why?」

How do you know?

We've been careful not to make noises or speak...!

「Everyone would notice if the ceiling creaks that much!」

What...Katsuko-nee...?!

「That's right...It was really embarrassing for me to talk with Yamamine-san because of that...!」

...S-Sensei?

「『Those two really love each other』and 『Young people can't have their passion restrained』...Yamamine-san has been holding back and just tells what's suitable...!」

Well...I'm seriously sorry.

Or rather...I want to die.

Someone kill me...

「I-I'm sorry...Minaho-san!」

Megu apologizes to Sensei with a red face...

「But...I wanted to do it by all means!」

M-Megu?

Why are you speaking like that...

「...I thought so. It can't be helped!」

Sensei told Megu.

「Well, if I was in that situation, I'll definitely have sex too...!」

...Katsuko-nee too.

「Therefore...Do it with Maika too! In Maika's room...!」

M-Maika?!

Maika's fawning on me...

...Eeei!

It can't be helped if it's found out.

I promised that I will be fair to all my 『women』...

「G-Got it...I'll do it with Maika too」

I promised.

「I love you Onii-san! Then, Maika has a task to do too!」

Maika took out her phone.

She pressed the buttons...

「...Ah, hello, Onee-chan? It's Maika. Maika will stay on her friend's house for today? I don't need dinner...Eh? Come back? What are you saying Onee-chan, didn't you also go spent the night outside without Mama's permission because she won't be coming back just the other day?」

Maika called Yukino?

「In the first place, Onee-chan has been breathing noisily recently! Your voice reaches the next room! It's so noisy I can't sleep! Onee-chan's voice roars through the windowpane! Onee-chan's voice shrills like a supersonic wave!」

The panting voice vibrates the window pane...Y-Yukino...

「Onee-chan you're a masturbation maniac! If you love masturbating that much then marry Onani⁴! Pervert, lecher, hentai...!!!」

M-Maika-san?

「...With that said, Maika will be staying over her friend's house!...Eh? Who's friend...?」

Maika looks at my face and smiled.

「...Of course, it's a man's house!」

Maika then cut off the call...

Her phone rang immediately after...

Yukino's redialing it...

「Geez...you noisy!」

Maika then turned off her phone...

112. Various women kaleidoscope

The car takes us in the night town...
From the residential area to the shopping district.

「...Minaho-san. About the money that you handed to father」

Megu asked sensei in worry.
Earlier, Yuzuki-sensei gave the Yamamine couple 10 Million Yen in cash as
『Hush Money』...

「I'll pay for it with my whole life」

Megumi said with a serious face.

「That's okay...That's Yoshida-kun's money」

Sensei answers lightly while driving the car.
...Eh?
My money?

「Yoshida-kun. Do you remember Iwakura-san having to pay 10 Million Yen as
compensation for aiming at your life?」

Speaking of which...there was that...!

「For the time being...Iwakura-san pulled out 7 Million yen. The remaining 3
Million will surely be collected so don't mind it...!」

When 『Kuromori』prostitution organization closed down, Yuzuki-sensei
handed 『Dividend』on all of the prostitutes in the mansion.
Naturally...Iwakura-san should also have money.
Did Sensei pull from her account?

「Yoshida-kun won't mind using it for Megumi's sake...would you?」

Cool eyes looks at me through the mirror.

「...Yes of course!」

I answered flatly.

「No way...I would be troubled」

Megumi looks at my face.

「There's no problem using money for one's own 『woman』」

「But...That would make me look like I was bought by Yoshi-kun...!」

...She's right.

If you look at it on a different perspective, it looks like I bought Megu from the Yamamine family for 10 Million Yen.

「My...Don't you like it that way, Megumi?」

Sensei asked laughingly.

「Doesn't Megumi want a reason to have it impossible to separate with Yoshida-kun for the rest of your life?」

Sensei sees through Megu's true nature.

The true nature that's hidden from the clean face of the honor student Megu. Megu thought for a moment then answered Sensei.

「...Yes. You're correct, Minaho-san」

Megu affirmed Sensei's words.

「I...have to live my whole life devoting myself to Yoshi-kun now...!」

Megu happily smiled.

「That's right...You'll devote yourself to him throughout your life」

「...Yes!」

W-Wait a moment.

「But...That's not my intention...!」

I...

「...I like Megu. I truly want to treasure you forever」

There's no lie on that sentence.

「But...I don't have confidence in myself. The confidence on being a man suitable for Megu's love... Therefore...If Megu came to love a man other than me in the future, I want you to leave me and become happy with that person. I'm okay as long as Megu's happy...!」

When I say that...

「...Onii-san, are you still saying that?」

Maika leaks a sigh.

...Eh?

「...That line has already crossed the things we cannot allow...!」

...Maika?

「All of us 『Sisters』share the same fate...we don't have any other choices but to live with Onii-san forever...!」

...No other choices?

Maika looks at Megu with sad eyes...

「Megumi-chan can no longer return to Yamamine house...Maika's the same. Maika has already betrayed Shirasaka family so...Onii-san, are you thinking of what are you going to do with Maika after Golden Week ends?」

After Golden Week...

「I can stay with Yuzuki-san until the holiday ends but...Where should Maika live after that?」

...That's right.

Shirasaka Sousuke will perish...

And Maika's family will collapse.

If ever the world knows the evildoings of Shirasaka...Maika can no longer come to her school.

Maika's daily life will all be lost...!

「...I'll make Maika's place to stay. I'll never leave you alone」

「...Is it okay for me to believe that?」

「...Yeah」

I really have to steel myself.

At anything.

I have to do something.

I have to do something even if I offer my life...

What should I do...

...What should I do?!

「...Yoshida-kun, you need to learn the thing about bonds with people even a bit...!」

Sensei looks at me then said.

「Humans are creatures that cannot live alone. For example...does Yoshida-kun really understand the suffering of the Yamamine couple?」

...Eh?

「...Those people whose lives are grasped by the Shirasaka house...If they anger the head of Shirasaka house, they might lose their job. They might be erased socially. Furthermore, it's not just themselves, the harm might even reach their relatives...」

...People's bonds.

...Human cannot live alone.

「How do you think Yamamine-san will use that 10 Million yen?」

「...I don't know」

I cannot imagine it.

「...I think that she'll pass it to their relatives. As an 『Apology money』for this matter...」

...『Apology money』?

「With Megumi being kidnapped...Shirasaka house will be blaming the Yamamine clan one of these days. Even if it's not big...they would be harassed even for a bit. Therefore...Megumi's father will have to apologize to his relatives」

...That's.

「There's not a single yen going to be left for Yamamine-san. That's how adult society works...!」

...That's the adult's method.

「Since Yoshida-kun's so simple...You're thinking of stopping school right now and working to support Megumi and Maika-san's life, don't you?」

「...Yes」

「Stop thinking stupid stuff...Yoshida-kun's no longer alone」

...Sensei?

「You already have us with you...!」

Katsuko-nee holds my hand...

「I have 70¹ Million yen deposited in my bank. I can use all of it for your sake. I will feed you, Megumi-chan and Maika-chan... You don't need to worry about money, go to school without worries...!」

「...Katsuko-nee, but...That's the money Katsuko-nee will use to start the bakery, right?」

Katsuko-nee smiles gently...

「We can just save money again...! I'm your 『woman』...Megumi-chan and Maika-chan are my s『Sisters』 What's bad on using money for your 『family』 ...?!」

「...But!」

「Geez...don't you get it? Didn't you say the same thing a while ago...What's wrong using money for the sake of one's own 『woman』...?!」

...That's right.

It's the same logic I used a while ago.

If I can pay 10 million yen for Megu's sake...

I cannot criticize Katsuko-nee for using her money for me and the 『Sisters』...!

「...I'm definitely going to return the debt!」

Katsuko-nee bursts out laughing when she heard it.

「Isn't that the same response as Megumi-chan」

...Oh

Standing on the same position...I finally understood Megu's standpoint.

Megu no longer has choices but to live with me throughout her life.

And I swore to never betray Katsuko-nee...

I'm sure...Maika too.

「...It's not just Katsuko. Nagisa will surely pull cash out for your sake. Of

course...Me too...!」

...Yuzuki-sensei?

「I'll be frank...You three should graduate high school. Decide your course afterwards by yourself. If you want to go to a university, I can sponsor you. You can live in my mansion for as long as you can. If you don't want that, then I think you can live on Nagisa's house. But...I will never allow you to rent a room...!」

Maika's surprised.

「...Is it okay for Maika to be with Onii-san and Megumi-chan?」

Sensei spoke.

「When you ask me to be honest, I have complex feelings towards Maika-san. But, I will protect you as long as you're Yoshida-kun's woman. I can assure you that. But if ever you betray Yoshida-kun, I will dispose you on the spot...be careful with your actions...!」

...Sensei.

That means that Maika is not allowed to like any other men...!

She'll be bound to me forever...!

But, Maika is...

「...Yes! Understood! Maika will be Onii-san's 『woman』 forever. I will never betray Onii-san...!」

The second year middle school beauty declares...

「.....Maika, Are you fine with that?」

Maika had a blank look on her face.....

「Does it matter if I'm fine or not? Because, isn't this our fate?」

...Fate

Ours...

「Yoshida-kun, you're already tied by the 『bonds』 You can never get away alone. If you accept fate...you should learn to depend on your 『Family』...!」

...My

...『Family』

「You told me...we're already 『Family』...Didn't you?!」

...That's right.

I told sensei that.

「Then depend on us all you want...I'm also your 『Sister』」

Yuzuki...Sensei

「Can I call Sensei 『Minaho-neesan』?」

「Do what you want...You still have to call me 『Sensei』in school however」

「Got it...Nee-san」

「Is it okay for me to stay calling you 『Yoshida-kun』?」

Sensei asked bashfully.

「If I try to call you something else...I might call you that in school...!」

「Un...Got it. Nee-san」

I answered.

「...Katsuko」

Minaho-neesan talked to Katsuko-nee.

「What's wrong, Ojou-sama?」

「...It's bad for the heart to be suddenly called 『Nee-san』 My heart's tightening...!²」

Katsuko-nee laughs 'Kukuku'

「It's good for the heart. When Katsuko's called 『Katsuko-nee』by him, my womb aches!」

...Katsuko-nee?!

「Uhm...Me too, when he calls me 『Megu』my heart tightens!」

Megu also reports with a blushing face...!

「That's nice...How should Maika be called?!」

...Err

W-W-W-W-What's with this atmosphere...



While we continue that talk...Our car arrived at a high quality flat close to the downtown.

A big flat with red outer walls.

The car slides to the basement parking area...

「...This is Ikeda-sensei's clinic」

Megu told Maika.

「I was brought here yesterday...She's a very gentle doctor so don't worry」

「Eh...Then Megumi-chan lost her virginity yesterday?」

「...That's right. I was embraced by Yoshida-kun」

「Then the one on your room earlier was the second time?」

「...That's right」

Megu's puzzled by Maika's questions...

「Was the second time still painful?」

「Hmm, it still painful but not as much as the first time」

「Misuzu-san said that it felt good for her on the second time however...」

Katsuko-nee intervenes the two.

「Women have different constitutions...there seems to be girls who doesn't feel any pain at their firsts」

「Wow, is that so?...That's envious. Maika wants that to happen to her too...!」

「For me, I'm glad that it did hurt」

「Eh...Megumi-chan, why?」

「It makes me feel like I've really given my virginity to Yoshida-kun...!」

「Err, do men prefer to hurt women?」

Maika looks at me.

「No, It would be troublesome if it hurts so much...it would make me worry... but, it would be great if one's a virgin and yet she's feeling it great...!」

What am I saying?

「Haa...In the end, the balance is hard to get」

Maika's dumbfounded.

「But...It's still hurts now but...I can find a bit of pleasure in it...I really like having sex with Yoshi-kun. The feelin of loving and being loved...!」

...M-Megu.

「Wow, Megumi-chan's making a lewd face...!」

「Is that so?...I just remembered our sex a while ago」

Megu blushes and smiles to Maika...

「Maika-chan will also feel good soon...whoever it is, if they have sex everyday for two weeks, they'll feel ecstatic」

Katsuko-nee still blows unnecessary information again...!

「Katsuko-san, is that true?」

「Yes...I've read it on a report of an American Sexologist before...!」

「...Two weeks」

Err...M-maika-san?!

「Then, let's do it everyday until it feels good...Onii-san!」

S-Seriously?!

「But...Won't that place become oversized and loose if Maika have sex everyday?」

Maika asks Katsuko-nee once again.

「Oh...That's fine. As long as Maika-chan trains that place properly...!」

「Train that place...?!」

「Women's entrance have muscles...don't you hear this a lot『Your pussy's clamping my penis』...!」

「...That's Maika's first time hearing it」

「Women's hole have that function. Therefore, if you just keep having sex nonchalantly without training it, it would certainly be oversized and loose...But if you train it, it'll become an amazing pussy...!」

「Wow, is that so?!」

「That is the same for the inside...If you train it, it would be able to tighten no matter what phase the penis is inside. When a male felt impressed by a female genitalia, then he'll say that it's an『excellent article』...If it's trained well, any

girl's genital will become an 『excellent article』...!³」

Katsuko-nee...a middle school girl being an 『excellent article』...

「Hey, Onii-san, what do you want? Maika should be an 『excellent article』?!」

...Well, yeah

...If you ask me.

「Then, Katsuko-san...how can you train to be an 『excellent article』?!」

Maika clings to Katsuko-nee like a puppy wanting food...!

「First would be getting used to sex...I'll teach you the later steps when having sex!」

「Okay! Thank you in advance...!」

...awawawawa

Maika has become Katsuko-nee's disciple...

「...The road to『excellent article』is steep!」

「Maika will do her best!」

That's when Megu speaks out.

「...Uhm, Katsuko-neesan」

「What is it, Megumi-chan?」

「I also want to learn about it...!」

...Megu!

「...I also intend to forcibly instill it on Megumi-chan!」

Katsuko-nee told Megu gently.

「You don't want to be bad at sex and be hated by him do you?」

「Yes...Katsuko-neesan and Nagisa-neesan too are skilled...Misuzu has the talent it seems. If Maika-chan becomes better in sex...I might be hated by Yoshi-kun...!」

...!!

「No, that won't happen! Everyone has different pleasure when I embrace! Nagisa-san feels soft wrapping me up...Katsuko-nee feels like she's jam-packed inside. Misuzu's soft and slippery...Maika's embracing me tightly...and Megu

is...!」

「I...?!」

I told Megu who's worried.

「Megu's body is clamping tight...But, it feels soft and pleasurable. I love it!」
「...I'm glad」

Megu sighed in relief.

「...Then...Let's train ourselves to be suitable for our characteristics. That is to make him feel even more and more pleasure...!」

Katsuko-nee ends the talk nicely.
Or that's how it should be...

「Huh, what about Nei-san...?」

...Maika
Why are you so sharp at strange places.

「How long are you going to chat?...!」

Minaho-neesan interrupts on a good timing.
As expected of our neesan...!

「We're about to reach the reservation time. Maika-san will go with Katsuko to Ikeda-sensei...!」

...Eh?

「Eh...we're not all going there?」

Minaho-neesan looks at me with an amazed face.

「Ikeda-sensei is an illegal doctor...we cannot go with such great number of people you know?」

...Illegal
Oh...She's a doctor connected to 『Kuromori』
As expected, she'll be an underground doctor.

「Don't worry, her skills are certain...」
「Also...if you bring Maika-chan, Sensei would scold you!」

Katsuko-nee says.

「Eh, why?」

Katsuko-nee looks at me with mean eyes...!

「Misuzu-san the day before yesterday, Megumi-chan yesterday, and Maika-chan for today...I think a female doctor will have a complex feeling for examining three day consecutive loss of virginity 」

I-I see

Or rather...I

Shouldn't I be hit with divine punishment soon?

「...Ojou-sama, will it only be me accompanying her?」

「Sorry but...I'll leave it to you Katsuko」

「Katsuko won't be telling any sarcasm to Ikeda-sensei...Never, never...!」

「Sorry but...deal with her alone...!」

Minaho-neesan pushed the female doctor to Katsuko-nee...!

「Sure sure...Got it...!」

Of course...Katsuko-nee isn't seriously dissatisfied.

She's just messing with Minaho-neesan...

Katsuko-nee smiled and looked at Maika.

「Let's go...Maika-chan」

「...What will be examined?」

「She's going to check if the hymen is torn properly, if there are wounds in your vagina, and if the hemorrhage stopped already. Well, I think you'll be fine. Just think of it as a periodic inspection for sex. Then, she'll give you medicine to prevent conception...it's the type taken everyday so that the influence to the body will be few...!」

「Got it...if so, then it's better to get examined!」

Maika looks at me.

「Then, I'm going! Onii-san!」

「...Oh, get yourself examined」

「Got it!」

Maika and Katsuko-nee gets off the car...

They walk into the basement parking area of the dark flat.

「Then...are we going to wait here until the examination ends?」

Sensei turned to us.

「No...You two will go to the town」

「...What?」

...Town?

「There's no other timing to go shop than now」

Minaho-neesan said seriously.

「Even if Shirasaka house is a noble family...they're just an owner of a newspaper company in the end. Even if Yamamine-san called Shirasaka house earlier...they cannot move immediately」

...Cannot move?

「First, they will start by confirming if Shirasaka Sousuke has been caught by us, don't you think so? But, Australia is far...and since we did various works, they won't be able to obtain information by today」

...I see

If he's scheduled to go to a region where phones won't connect from the start... they cannot confirm it.

「Well, they will mobilize the employees of the newspaper company on the Australia for the time being but...They won't easily catch the tail there」

Minaho-neesan works out her plan thoroughly.

「Megumi being kidnapped has a lower priority for the head of Shirasaka house than Shirasaka Sousuke...Well, he'll have someone he knows from the underground to investigate however. They will begin to move precisely around tomorrow」

「...Why?」

「The underground people's work are costly. Furthermore, once you requested for a job, it'll take huge money to cancel the job... Until they're able to get a positive proof that Megumi was really taken by 『Kuromori』, Shirasaka house

won't request on the underground」

I see...Megumi's kidnapping might just be a farce.

First...they have to concentrate on Shirasaka Sousuke's safety...

About Megu...Even if they contact Yamamine house tomorrow morning and even if they really confirm that she's not coming home, they will respond slowly.

「If the Shirasaka house is greatly pleased with Megumi, it would be different however...」

「That won't happen...I'm a disgrace in the clan」

Megu answered.

「Therefore...You don't have time to go to town but only today...!」

Minaho-neesan told us with a laugh.

「But...Shopping? What are we going to buy?」

There's nothing that I need though...

「First...there would be a medical examination tomorrow」

Minaho-neesan said.

「Megumi...have Yoshida-kun decide your underwear」

「O-Okay」

「After that...Megumi will pick Yoshida-kun's underwear...!」

C-Chose my underwear?

「W-Why?」

I don't get it.

「First year's medical examination have girls check each other's underwear. Choose an underwear where she won't be embarrassed when compared to other girls...!」

I-Is that so?

「Also...At May 2, we're going to Misuzu-san's traditional dance presentation...!」

「...Yes, that's right, but」

「Yoshida-kun...you have to chose Megumi's dress」

Megu's dress...?!

「Minaho-san...I'm going there in my uniform...!」

Megu refuses Minaho-neesans proposal...

...But

「Megumi...Do you intend to embarrass Misuzu-san?」

Minaho-neesan harshly scolded Megu.

「I don't intend to do that」

「Then...go with a dress suitable as Misuzu-san's friend」

...That's right.

The presentation Misuzu will come from is a presentation of the headmaster's Japanese traditional dance...

There's a lot of wealthy socialites coming to see it.

She can't go in front of Misuzu in her uniform.

「...Megu, let's buy you a dress」

I said.

「...Yoshi-kun...But I」

Megu wasn't able to dress up beautifully because of Yukino's obstruction. She always attended in her school uniform wherever it is...

「It's fine. Megumi's no longer on Yamamine house...No, You don't need to be considerate of Shirasaka house」

I embraced Megu...

「...Go with your most beautiful dress...okay?!」

Megu muttered in a small voice.

「...Un!」

113. Dress and ring.

「...Take this」

Minaho-neesan handed me an envelope.

「...That's 200,000 yen, use it to shop」

...Eh?

「Yoshida-kun, didn't you do your job on 『Kuromori』for Nagisa's sake, did you?...1.5M yen is your pay for the work. I deposited 1.3M yen on the account I made for you...I'll hand you the passbook and the card when we come back the mansion」

Minaho-neesan said it like it's natural.

「No...But I didn't do anything...」

「You sandwiched your body between the Yakuza and Nagisa and you had your life aimed by a hired gun, weren't you? Just accept the money. Margo, Nei, and Katsuko are being rewarded too...」

「...But」

「You need money don't you? I will be taking care of you, Maika-san and Megumi's expenses, but...Yoshida-kun will be paying for the others」

「...Others?」

「Yoshida-kun will be giving Maika-chan and Megumi's pocket money and clothes...」

「M-Me?」

「Obviously...Both of them are your『women』」

...Now that she said it.

I cannot rely on Minaho-neesan for everything.

「Either way, you're going for a part time job for Megumi and Maika's sake won't you? I'll find the job for you...」

「...My job?」

「...『Kuromori』isn't just a prostitution section」

...Eh?

「My grandfather, Kuromori Kounosuke used the 『Prostitution section』for the sake of expanding business so it wasn't all just a brothel」

...Is that so?

「It seems that before, it was a trade and entertainment business. When my father took charge, he disposed all of it however...」

Sensei says sadly.

「My father had an inferiority complex from my grandfather...wanting to exceed grandfather as a businessman...he failed in business. Thus, what remains for 『Kuromori』is the brothel. My father had such character that's why he's been taken advantage by Shirasaka Sousuke...」

Minaho-neesan makes a pained face whenever she talks about her father.

「When I participated the management of 『Kuromori』...I began starting other business. Right now we have 『Investment Section』and 『Real Estate Section』...」

Oh right...Isn't Minaho-neesan a big shareholder of the hotel that has a contract with Nagisa-san?

「I'll start business for Katsuko's 『Bakery』...and for Margo and Nei's sake too」

...Minaho-neesan?

「『Kuromori』prostitution section is no more, so we have to find another job...!」

Minaho-neesan thins about what's ahead all this time.
She's really our...『Nee-san』

「If Yoshida-kun and Megumi has something they want to be in the future then just tell me. I'll get it prepared whatever it is...!」

To be honest...I'm very grateful.

「Anyway...I'll think about Yoshida-kun's part time job. Okay?

「...Yes I replied in a loud voice

「Minaho-san...I'll also work part time」

...Megu?

「I feel bad to let Yoshi-kun do all of it...I'll work for the money I need」

Megu said that, but...

「Don't. Megu should have the track and field as priority...!」

...That's right.

We promised Captain Takeshiba and the other members...!

「...But」

Minaho-neesan talked to the worried Megu.

「Megumi has days where she doesn't have practice...So she can work for two days a week at least」

「...Yes, I think that will be fine」

Minaho-neesan smiled at Megu...

「Then, go and work at Nagisa's flower shop. In exchange of Misuzu-san...!」

...In exchange of Misuzu?

「Misuzu-san...won't have time to work part time anymore. She's seriously thinking of taking Tokyo University exam...!」

Right...She said that as well.

Misuzu needs to study seriously for the exam since she's in second year high school already.

「Talk about it with Misuzu on phone later. I'll be the one to talk to Nagisa」

「Yes...Thank you very much」

Megu bowed to Minaho-neesan.

「With that said...I'm handing you this 200k yen. Buy Megumi's dress for the symposium with your money...okay?」

There's no actual feeling that it's my money however...

Anyway...I'll buy Megu's clothes with this money...

「50k yen or more for the dress and 20k or more on the shoes」

Minaho-neesan said strongly.

「Minaho-san...that's too expensive! And I'm going to wear that?!」

Minaho-neesan...

「The other girls would buy much more expensive dresses...Actually, I would tell you to get 100k yen for shoes and 200k yen for the clothes. But...The two of you won't look for things with that amount, would you?」

「...Yes」

Where do they sell that astronomical price of a clothing?

「I think that this time, it will have meaning if you buy with only the two of you. Therefore, you're going without Katsuko or Nei accompanying you」

Minaho-neesan...is making us pile up our experience...?

「Megumi's sense of clothing is so decent so...buy cute dress with an approximate price of 70k yen. Buy shoes that goes along with the dress. If you don't get it then ask the assistants. You just have to say 『Please show shoes appropriate for this dress under 30k yen』」

Minaho-neesan advised us.

「Uhm...Minaho-san. What about Yoshi-kun's clothing...?」

Megu asked.

Certainly...I intend to go on my school uniform as well...

If Megu's school uniform is no good...I'm the same.

「Katsuko's currently fixing Yoshida-kun's clothing」

...Katsuko-nee's fixing?

「Yoshida-kun had your clothes measured yesterday, didn't you?...Our mansion has quite a lot of suits of my dead grandfather. I had Katsuko look for clothes for Yoshida-kun and have it fixed. It won't make it in time if we had it custom tailored...and ready to wear would be too big...」

Katsuko-nee...

...She's fixing the size for my sake...

「Katsuko likes doing that so let her be」

「...O-Okay」

「Ah...Keep it a secret that I told you about it. Feign ignorance until Katsuko tells Yoshida-kun」

「...Got it」

Minaho-neesan...Katsuko-nee
Everyone's thinking of me.

「Also...Yoshida-kun」

Minaho-neesan smiled.

「...Yes?」

「Buy Megu a ring on the way...Get something with the price of 10k for the time being」

「...Eh?」

R-Ring?

「You have your student pocketbook, don't you?」

「Ah...Yes」

I took out my school pocketbook from my pocket.

「Take a look at the school regulations...schoolgirl's dress code」

I turn the page as told by Minaho-neesan
Megu looks into my pocketbook from the side...

「What's written on the item concerning accessories?」

...Err

「...Gaudy accessories. Earrings, necklace, pendant, brooch, bracelets are forbidden in the campus...However」

...The hell?

「...Chokers and engagement rings without jewels are allowed when acknowledged by the school staff」

Eh...Even though accessories are prohibited?
Rings and chokers are allowed?!

「...Before, there are girls who go to the high school at day and prostitutes in the mansion at night...!」

Minaho-neesan answered.

「Choker is a collar symbol...it's a sign for the teachers to be careful of the students that are prostitutes of 『Kuromori』」

That's right.

Our school...is a camouflage of the brothel 『Kuromori』that Minaho-neesan's grandfather bought.

Actually, it's a prostitute candidate hunting ground...The prostitutes kept going to school before...

「The ring is a warning for men that says 『This girl has a fiance so don't make a move on her』」

...I-I see

「Therefore...Buy Megumi a ring」

To let the other men know that Megu is mine.

「Yes...Got it」

I answered.



Megu and I come out of the flat.

Minaho-neesan remained in the car and opened her laptop.

It seems that she wants to take a look at Shirasaka house and the state at Australia.

「...Do you know this place?」

From the underground parking lot to the outside world.

The night town...It's past 6 o'clock

I know the neighborhood downtown, however...

For me who doesn't go out usually...I don't have the feel of the place.

「I know...I think that's JR station」

As expected of Megu, she's reliable.

「...Can we hold hands?」

Megu muttered.

「Ah...Sure」

We go towards the station holding hands.

「...Ufufu」

Megu laughs...

「What's wrong?」

「It's my first time going on a date with a boy」

Megu said bashfully.

「...I'm the same」

「Yoshi-kun's the same?」

「...Yeah」

Megu suddenly draws me to the shadow of the vending machine.

「...What?」

Megu kisses me before I can ask.

「...I love you, Yoshi-kun. I'm really happy1」

Megu embraces me and mutters.

「...Megu」

Megu has lost the house she had lived for ten years...

She no longer has a place to return to.

On the contrary...She'll be chased by the Shirasaka house from now on...

But still...Megu is.

「Let's be together forever...!」

「Un...I know」

This time, I kissed Megu...!

「Let's go somewhere for the time being?」

She asks, hiding her embarrassment...

「I don't know clothes with the price higher than 50k yen so...let's go to the department store around the station with a lot of brand shops?」

Megu suggested.,



...Err

There's luxury brand stores lined up in the department store.

We pass through and come in...

We're in front of the shop but we don't have the courage to enter.

The stores with foreign brands seems to be dazzling strangely...

The clerks feel like they're glaring at us saying 「What's with them?」...

Megu and I...

Are completely scared...!!

「...Megu」

「...Un」

「...We don't suit this place, don't we?」

「...I think the same!」

「...Should we escape?」

「...Un, let's stop this...!」

Holding hand, we tried to escape out of the building...

After coming outside, Megu and I looked at each other.

A natural smile spilled...

「...Getting nervous on such things...we're no good」

「Yeah...we're no good」

Both of us are laughing...

This is somewhat fun.

「...Ahn!」

Suddenly, Megu holds down her ass.

「...What's wrong?」

Megu's looking at me with a troubled face.

「It's dripping」

「...What is?」

「...Yoshi-kun's」

...My what?

「Yoshi-kun's semen...!」

Oh right...I came inside Megu earlier...

「Un...It's fine already. Let's go」

Megu takes my hand again and begins to walk...

My semen is inside the womb of the girl walking next to me.

Thinking about that...it somehow made me aroused.

「Yoshi-kun...you're thinking lewd things, weren't you?」

Megu looked at me smilingly.

「Ah...Sorry」

「It's fine...I'm thinking the same thing...!」

...Megu

「I want to be filled by Yoshi-kun all the time...!」

「...Eh?」

「Sorry for being a lewd girl...」

「No...I'm glad that you're a lewd girl」

I embraced Megu's waist...

「Ahn...it's dripping again...!」

Megu whispered in my ears...



「...We should've gone here in the first place」

We moved to a little bit more popular department store.

We go the women's clothing section through the escalator.

「Mother bought me clothes in this department store...」

「Is that so?」

「I'm slightly taller than other children. Children's clothes don't fit me so I have to wear adult clothes」

I look at Megu's whole body while we're in the escalator.

Yup...Megu's figure is tall and slim, she's like a model.

「Sorry for having children's size breasts however...」

Misuzu and Maika too...women are conscious about the size of their chest.

「...I like Megu's breasts」

「...Really?」

「Yeah...It's Megu-like, it's cute」

「I also love having Yoshi-kun licking my breasts」

...Megu looked down.

「Let's do it again.」

「...Yeah」

I tap Megu's ass.

「...Ahn! Geez!」

Megu raised her voice.

「Sorry...you don't like it? Did it drip out again?...」

Megu spoke bashfully

「I'm already fine...I don't hate being touched...Megu's body is Yoshi-kun's after all, so touch it as much as you want...!」

Megu refers herself as 『Megu』when we're alone...

The look that's a bit embarrassed is very cute for me.

「Here...I think it's there」

Coming to the women's section...Megu chose two clothes.

One is a tight and decent looking set of skirt and tunic and skirt.

The other one is a bit showy dress.

That said, it's Megu's sense of clothing so it's not too gaudy.

Both of them are colored vivid green.

「...You like green clothes?」

「Yeah...I want to go with green clothes」

Now then...Which should we pick?

The price...the decent one is 58k yen and the showy one is 73k yen.

The expensive one has less cloth...

I don't get women's standard on clothing...

「...Let's go with the cheaper one」

Megu said.

「Let's stop that way of thinking」

I said clearly.

「But...What should we do?」

The decent one is Megu-like so I think it'll suit her.

I think that the showy one changes the image of Megu. I want to see this.

「...How about you try it on?」

「...Okay」

According to Megu, there seems to be a fitting room for couples when it comes to young children clothing.

It seems that the boy can take a look at the girl changing on that spot but...this is a normal department store so there's no such facility.

I wait outside the fitting room.

「...How does it look?」

First, the decent one.

「...Looks good. You're very cute」

When it's just the clothing, it looks simple but...when the real class chairman, Megu wears it, it looks very clean and beautiful. This clothes enhances Megu's cuteness.

「Un...Then I'll wear the other one」

Megu goes in the fitting room once again...

There's not much people walking around the women's corner at the department store.

Having to wait absentmindedly outside...I feel asking myself what I'm doing.

I tried to take a look from the gap of the thick curtain.

I see Megu's naked back...

「Geez...Yoshi-kun no Ecchi!」

Ah, she noticed.

「You could've just told me if you want to take a look...!」

Megu shows her pink nipples

「That's all for now...The rest is for later...!」

Megu smiles from the gap of the curtain...

...Yeah.

I'm looking forward for tonight.

「Okay...Thank you for waiting」

She opens the curtain.

The showy dress...

This looks good too

So Megu's this beautiful.

Usually, she looks so simple...so her impression is simple as well...

When she wears a showy clothing...with her tall height and good style, and facial looks looking sharp...You'd notice that she's actually a beauty...

I understood the reason why Yukino would rather die than let her wear good dress.

「This is a bit embarrassing」

「Why?」

「It's my first time wearing clothes that shows my shoulder and legs」

「Eh, I think it's very cute though」

「But...It's embarrassing」

The embarrassed Megu looks cute

「I'd like the docile clothing from a while ago. That's cheaper too」

「I like the showy one however」

Now then...Our opinions don't match.

「Should we buy both of them instead?」

I said boldly.

「Eeeeh, that's a waste...!」

「It's not...It's Megu's clothes after all」

「It's a waste because it's my clothes!」

Why is Megu belittling herself...
Even though she's this cute.

「Yoshi-kun, which clothes looks better?」

Megu asked me.

「This dress shows Megu's legs clearly」

I answered what I was thinking

「My legs?」

Megu's showing a surprised face.

「Yeah. Megu's legs are thin and long...It's very beautiful. I like the legs of a girl that does sports. With this dress showing your legs, I like this dress better...!

Megu looks at me.

「...What's wrong, Megu?」

「Yoshi-kun's really a good person」

「...Eh?」

「You never say something halfhearted whenever it is」

「...Isn't that obvious?」

「Hmm...Not everyone's like that. Not everyone thinks and answers everything seriously」

「...Is that so?」

「...Un, that's right...Therefore I like Yoshi-kun...」

Megu smiled at me.

「...I'll buy this dress!」

...Megu?

「Yoshi-kun said that he wants to see my legs more after all...!」

Megu said calmly.

「I'm going to Misuzu-san's symposium, be compared to other girls so I cannot wear shameful clothing, that's what I always thought」

No...Isn't that right?

「But, that's wrong...With that kind of thinking, whatever clothing I wear coming to the symposium, it would be shameful」

...I see.

The other girls might wear much more expensive clothing...

If you compare it to simple clothes...Megu cannot have the advantage.

「I'm Yoshi-kun's 『woman』 I should wear clothes that Yoshi-kun likes...isn't that right?」

Megu needs me...

「Yeah...That's right. It's fine as long as I think that Megu's 『Cute』...other people's glance doesn't matter」

I now understand why Minaho-neesan made us buy clothes with just the two of us.

That is to destroy Megu's inferiority complex when it comes to clothing...

If Megu herself consents the clothing that I think is better, whatever clothing it would be, it'll become the『Best clothing』

「Yoshi-kun...are you sure with this dress?」

Megu asked me one last time.

「Yeah...this dress will do」

No...That's not it.

「I'd like Megu to wear that dress...!」

Megu's face bloomed like a large flower...!

「...Thank you.... Yoshi-kun!」



Buying the dress...we also bought shoes that suits it.

We had 200k yen...but half of it already has vanished.

Women's clothing are really expensive...¹

Maybe I should earn a lot.

Megu's a commoner so it's fine, but...

Misuzu and Maika prefers high class...

Nei-san seems to look good with flagship goods...²

I have to give Katsuko-nee and Nagisa-san gifts too...

Living without trying to spend money until now made me think that money's trivial.

But I cannot say that anymore...

I have to work a lot...

「Yoshi-kun...how about this?」

Continuing...we're at the ring section.

Somehow...This is much more embarrassing than the female clothing section.

Buying a ring with a girl is telling the world that she's my 『woman』

The shoppers walking around are all looking at me.

Aaah...It's so embarrassing I want to die.

Or rather...someone kill me.³

「Instead of that, this is a popular item recently...」

The clerk onee-san shows an expensive ring casually...Megu's eyes only look at the rings 10k or less.

...Seriously.

「Megu...I won't buy it unless it's a 30k yen ring or more」

I said.

「Why? Minaho-san said that we should get approximately 10k」

...That's.

Or rather...Is that why you're looking at the 10k yen less corner?

「Minaho-neesan's opinion seems to be that it should be a bit more expensive since it's the first ring...!」

...Un.

Somehow, I understand the difference of thinking of each women...

People are different from each other even a bit.

「But...Megu's going to wear that ring for the rest of your life, won't you?」

Megu looks at me.

「...Un」

Look...

「Then...Let's go with a bit more expensive. Something that won't break that easily...」

「...Right, got it」

Megu turns her eye to the 30k yen or more...

Yup...This is good.

Though, the strength won't change that much from 10k yen to 30k yen...

It's just good that Megu's choices are widened...

To be honest...the rings priced 10k yen or less doesn't have much varieties.

「...Is platinum okay?」

「Yeah, anything's fine」

I don't get what's platinum however...

It's unrelated to Plasma, isn't it?

Megu's choosing seriously.

「Which is better, this, this, or this?」

Megu tags ring after ring.

「You should stop that.」

「...Why?」

「There's the difference in purity of the platinum. Shouldn't we pick the high purity instead of the high quality?」

「Ah...That's amazing, Yoshi-kun」

「No...I don't get it too but...maybe」

「I've heard about it...when the ring has low platinum purity...it becomes distorted...」

「...Where did you hear it from?」

「My senior」

As usual...Megu has a lot of superficial knowledge.

「With that said...It's this or this...!」

...Megu chose the ring with a simple design in the end.

「...Let's do with this」

The clerk Onee-san comes to us.

「I will fit the size then」

Then...Megu...

「Please match the size to the ring finger!」

Megu smiled satisfied.

「This will be our wedding ring...!⁴」

I'm astonished of course.

Because...We're still high school students.

We're in our school uniforms too...

But...The clerk is used to such developments?...

「Yes...Understood!」

Fortunately...Megu has thin and long fingers.

It entered her ring finger perfectly without resizing it.

「It suits you very much」

Hearing the clerk, I...

「SOLD!⁵」

I paid the price for the ring.

32k yen...

「Ah...You don't need to wrap it. I'll wear this」

Megu told the clerk...

She presented me the platinum ring...

「Yoshi-kun, put it on me...!」

...I

「...Okay」

I hold Megu's fair hand...

I fit the ring on her ring finger...!

「...Ahn!」

Megu raised a small voice when the ring reached the root of her finger.
It's as if the penis has pierced her uterus...

「...With this...I completely become Yoshi-kun's...!」

Megu caress the ring with enchanted eyes...

So rings have such magic...!

114. Underwear and pursuer

Now that we've bought the ring...the next one is.

「...Let's buy Yoshi-kun's underwear」

My underwear?

「No...We don't need to buy mine in the department store...」

「Eh?...Yoshi-kun, where do you usually buy underwear?」

Megu's making a surprised face.

...Where?

「...100 shops」

「...100?」

「100 yen shops」

Or rather...for this five years, I've been living by buying underwear at 100 yen shops.

「Hmm...Don't 100 yen underwear feel bad?」

Megu's making a worried face though.

「I don't know...I've never put on anything but 100 yen」

Is there difference between the feel of men's underwear?

「Hundred yen underwear is no good...let's buy a better one」

Megu told me with a serious face.

No...I never had problems with hundred yen though.

「It's fine...It would be a waste. I'm the one wearing it after all」

When I said that...

「Then...Megu will buy hundred yen underwear as well. Are you fine with that?」

Megu stares at me...

「No...Megu doesn't need to match with me. Women's underwear on the

Hundred yen shops doesn't look so decent...」

Yup...It's bad quality.

After all it's just 100 yen.

「Yoshi-kun...if the hundred yen underwear for women isn't decent, don't you think that's the same for men's underwear?」

Megu says seriously

Now that she said it that might be right...

「But...I don't need to mind the feeling when wearing」

「I want you to!」

...Megu?!

「Yoshi-kun...there're are various things in the world.」 I want Yoshi-kun to become a man who understand the difference of things...!」

...A man who understands the difference of things?

「Yes...If you understand the difference, won't you be able to judge the true value of it?」

Megu grasps my hand strongly...

「But...My underwear won't be seen outside」

「Even if the others can't see it...Yoshi-kun who's wearing it will know, right?

Wearing it...and understanding from experience」

「...Well, that's true」

「Yoshi-kun...If I think that it's a waste of money so I go to school with an old and worn out underwear, what would you do?」

If Megu wears an old and worn out underwear...

「I don't want that. I want Megu to wear a clean oone」

「...I'm the same!」

Megu told me strongly...!

...I see.

I'm devoting myself on Megu one-sidedly.

If I think of wanting Megu to wear a clean underwear then I have to get clean underwear as well...

「Also...Tomorrow's the 『Medical Checkup』 I'd like Yoshi-kun to go there in proper underwear」

Tomorrow's 『Medical checkup』will have body measurement.
The doctors had already done their 『Medical Checkup』at the start of the term.
Well, that was internal medicine checkup.
Tomorrow will be mainly measuring the height, sitting height, weight, and chest measurement and likes.
Also...does X-rays come too?
Anyway...they will be measured in their underwear separated by gender.

「If Yoshi-kun wears a strange underwear, I'll be laughed at...」

Megu stares at me.

「I'm Yoshi-kun's 『girlfriend』in the school after all...!」

Oh...I'm completely surrounded.
I'm no longer alone.
I have to live carrying the 『Consideration』to my 『women』...!

「...Got it. I'll let Megu buy it」

Megu smiles...!

「...Okay!」



...But.
Coming to the men's section...

「Ufufufufufuun...!」

Megu's choosing my underwear in high spirits.
While humming...

「Megu...Aren't you embarrassed?」
「Eh...Why?」
「Well...It's men's underwear section」
「I'm having fun you know! I'm like Yoshi-kun's wife...!」

...W-Waifu?!

...M-Megu?

「Err...Yoshi-kun likes trunks, right?」

Megu saw my underwear multiple times.
I showed more than the underwear though...

「Ah...yeah」

「But...how about you try this boxer briefs? This ones have a better texture」

...Boxer briefs?

Oh, the trunks that have the tight feel?

「Hmm...Then, let's go with that」

I don't have any objections.
I don't care about the underwear I wear either way...
I don't like white briefs, but...
I wore white briefs before I bought trunks on hundred yen shops.
After wearing that for a year...It becomes impossible to wash away the yellow tint...

「Got it...Let's buy five pieces.」

...5?

「No...Let's just buy 3. I can just wash it in rotation if it's 3 pieces.」
「No...We'll buy 5 pieces. There should be a spare too!」

Megu's wife methods are obstinate.

「By the way...how much is that?」
「840 yen a piece」

...Err!
...I can buy eight trunks from the hundred yen shop with that.
Five pieces...!
T-T-T-That's a huge expense!!!

「Don't make that face...we bought my dress for 70k yen! Use some money to buy your underwear!」

...D-Dammit!

When it comes to this...!



「That's a waste!」

We're in the female underwear section right now...

This is terribly embarrassing.

Though I'm feeling extremely embarrassed...I endured it with determination.

「That's no good! I'll buy Megu an underwear set with 10k yen or more...!」

I'm already desperate....!

Let's get the best bra and panty...!

「And we're going to buy three kinds of it!」

「...Three kinds?」

Megu's making a blank face.

「First would be for tomorrow's 『Medical examination』 It's not good according to the school regulations to wear anything but plain white!」

「...Y-yeah」

「Even if it's plain white...I'd buy a design set for it A beautiful, cute, and cool one」

「That's...We can just use the normal one I use to go to school」

Megu said, but...

「Nope! Your body would be seen by other girls during the body measurement, won't it? Even I want Megu to go there with the best, beautiful and the cutest underwear!」

I'll return the logic Megu used on me a while ago...!

「...Got it. But, let's lower it to 3k yen...!」

「Never!...We're going to buy 10k yen! It'll look different!」

I declare with firm determination...!

「Also...the one you'll wear the day after tomorrow, on Misuzu's symposium. Since you're going to wear a good dress, you should wear good underwear as well. You should dress yourself up even if it's not seen from outside, wasn't

it...?!」

「Well...That's true but...」

「We'll buy a bra and panty that suits the 70k yen dress...!」

「Un...I get it」

Megu approved this one immediately.

「Lastly...let's buy a lewd underwear...!」

「...Eh?」

Megu's long and narrow eyes opened wide...!

「I want to see Megu wearing a lewd underwear」

Megu's face turned red.

「...Geez, Baka」¹

Megu clings to me...

「Megu...will wear no matter how lewd it is...!」

...And

The two of us hunts underwear...

We looked for the underwear that's appropriate on the school regulations for tomorrow.

「Isn't this one good?」

I chose a set of a refreshing design.

「...T-That's right」

Megu's embarrassed.

Err...I take a look at the price tag.

The white bra and panty set is priced 12k yen...

「...Umu」

「What's wrong, Yoshi-kun?」

「I finally understood what Megu said a while ago...?!」

「Eh, why?」

「It's just a plain white underwear...But the look is completely different. This one has an appearance that tells that it feels different when worn and that it has

high quality texture...!」

Even though it's really just a simple design.
They're drawing a distinct line from the bargain sale products...
As expected, those that exceed 10k yen are different...

「Even Yoshi-kun's 100 yen and 840 yen underwear are completely different...!」

That might be the case but...I can clearly see the difference between girl's underwear.

Well, there's the price too...

Okay...The first set is done.

Next...

「...Are you sure with this?」

This time, it's the underwear for the symposium...
I suggested that the set costing 23k would be good to Megu.
This one is a pale pink set with frills and lace.
There's floral watermark designs in it.
...It looks gorgeous and cute from the outside.

「I wonder if this suits me」

Megu is still belittling herself again.

「Then...Should we buy this 40k yen instead?」

When I urged her aggressively...
Hey...We're almost our limit though.

「I-it's fine...This one will do!」

Megu agreed with the 23k yen.
Lastly...the lewd underwear.

「Yoshi-kun...are you sure with that?」

The set I chose is a red cloth with black lace.
The color is flashy but the design is ordinary.
It would feel normal having a high school girl wear it...
But still...It feels like a 『Lucky underwear』...

「...I'm fine with something more strange you know?」

That's what Megu says while blushing.

「I've seen the ladies in the mansion wear something even more amazing than that when I was a child. Yoshi-kun wants to have sex with me on those clothes?」

Megu thinks of buying even more lewder underwear it seems.

「Katsuko-nee may have lots of those types」

Yup...She must have lots of bra with hole on the nipple or string panty.

「Also...This is a normal department store. They don't have those that are extreme」

If we seriously want to buy lewd underwear...we have to go to a specialty store for that.

「But...This isn't much of a lewd underwear...It's not adult-like at all. Yoshi-kun, are you sure with that?」

...Oh

Megu doesn't understand it...

「Megu...What kind of underwear do you have?」

「...It's all plain white. Just according to the school regulations」

I thought so...!

「You don't wear showy underwear with color, don't you?」

「...Un」

I told Megu.

「It's fine to not use too lewd underwear immediately. Megu's been an『Honor Student』so far. It would make me confused if Megu wears such a『Lucky underwear』...!」

「...Is that so?」

「Megu's still a first year so even if you're a lewd girl, I'd like you to be a high-school-like girl...!」

I want to be in a relationship with Megu who's at the same age as me.

There's no need to force her to stretch herself.

Megu thinks deeply.

「Right. I cannot win in sexiness against Katsuko-neesan or Nagisa-san. If Megu fights, she has to use her high school student girl-like lewd weapon...!」

...Eh?

...Fight? Weapon?

...Megu?

「I've been aiming to be a 『Good girl』and 『Honor student』since I was taken in Yamamine house...I think that shell is hard to break. Perhaps, I cannot get away from the 『Honor Student』route anymore...」

Megu analyses herself...

「Yoshi-kun...is being aroused by the 『Honor Student』Megu being indecent, is that right?」

Megu looks at my face...

「Hmm...I like the lewd Megu...」

...Wait a moment.

I also think deep inside of me...

「No...What arouses me is the Megu who's very tidy, persevering, hardworking, and kind to everyone...being lewd in front of me」

The image gap.

Megu listens to my talk seriously.

Then...She nodded...

「...Got it. Megu won't stop playing the 『Honor student』role. I'll be a 『Good Girl』in front of everyone...and become a 『Bad Girl』in front of Yoshi-kun...!」

Megu said with brilliant eyes.

「Yoshi-kun, take a look at both Megu's...Both of them are real Megu...!」

...Megu!

Megu takes the red and black 『Lucky underwear』...

「You're right...Up until now, I thought of wearing this kind of color of

underwear will make me a『Bad Girl』 That's how much of a 『Honor student』I am...!』²

The reunion with 『Kuromori』has put Megu's sense out of order...
Just hearing 'lewd underwear'...She thought of a 『Prostitute』like underwear...

「Yeah. It is as Yoshi-kun says...I should begin my 『Bad Girl』image with this underwear...」

Megu confirms her own position...then starts from there.
She's not forcing to stretch herself...

「Megu is at the same year as Yoshi-kun...so we should do high-school-like indecency...!」

...Megu!

「Megu...Let's go to the back of that pillar there」

I hold Megu's hand

「...Why?」

Megu smiles at me.

「I want to kiss Megu just now...!」

Megu clings to me.

「What a coincidence! Megu wants to kiss Yoshi-kun too...!」

Just like that...Megu piled her lips with mine.

We're kissing at the female underwear section in the department store...!³



In the end, we chose the cheapest high school student-like 『Lucky underwear』

8.8k yen for a set...Hmm.

After deciding on buying three sets of underwear, I noticed the sizes.

Megu said 「Perhaps this one fits right」...

It's expensive after all...

Then, the clerk asks「Would you like to put it on?」

...Eh, you can try underwear?

I see...This is expensive after all.

But...wearing underwear that someone else tried on...isn't it unpleasant?

「I'm going to try it on...!」

Then, Megu went to the fitting room with the clerk.

This time...I can't come with her.

It would be too embarrassing no matter how you look at it.

「We've already decided so the only thing they're going to do is to check the size...!」

Just kidding...I just want to show off because the clerk is in front of us...

I'm in my school uniform.

What am I saying...Or rather, I'm an idiot!

Then...I waited alone.

...Err

...What the hell is this.

In the female underwear section...I'm waiting alone in my school uniform.

Ah...the shoppers walking around are all looking at me with weird eyes...

『Why is he on this floor?』their faces say...

...Awawawawawa

Ain't I looking like a pervert?!

...M-Megu!

H-Hurry up and come back!!

「...Thank yo for the wait Yoshi-kun!」

...In the end, I bathed in cold eyes from the people for almost 15 minutes.

「I'm glad I tried it on. The『Lucky underwear』is a perfect fit but...the two others are a bit bigger. They'll change it with the same underwear with different size. Also...The clerk had taught me how to make my breasts look big when wearing bra...!⁴」

Ah...Is that so?

「Then, should I take this to the counter?」

The clerk said with a cheerful face.

Well, we're shopping stuff that exceeds 40k yen...

「Yes, please...!」

「Are you going to use cash?」

Well...We're still students so we can't have a card.

「...Yes. Cash」

I took out money from the envelop Minaho-neesan gave me.

「...Is this a present for your girlfriend's birthday?」

The clerk asked me laughingly.

Megu and I are queued in the cash register.

Megu holds my hand again.

We're being seen that way...

Certainly, I'm holding the bag of Megu's dress and Megu's shoes.

On the other hand...Megu's holding the bag that contains my underwear.

「No...That's not it」

I answered the clerk clearly.

「That's my gratitude for my girlfriend...!」

Megu holds my hand tightly...!

She's looking down bashfully with moist eyes.

「I'm wrapping it then...!」

The clerk said with a smile...!

...But

Megu's dress costs 73k yen.

The shoes matching the dress costs 35k yen.

The ring costs 32k yen.

My underwear costs 4.2k yen.

The plain T-shirt that was bought along with the underwear costs 1.8k yen.

Megu's underwear, three sets...costs 43,800 Yen.

Total...189,800 yen.

...We bought without thinking.

We took 200k yen and there's only 10,200 yen left.

「...This is strange」

I muttered.

「What's wrong, Yoshi-kun?」

Megu looks at me.

「No you see...Even though I think that its a waste to use money on myself...I don't feel any regret buying for Megu. Rather, I thought of wanting to spend more...」

...It's really strange.

「I'll earn a lot. I have to buy a lot of things not just for Megu but also for Maika and the other girls」

Megu leans on my body...

「I'll also work part time...I want to buy Yoshi-kun a lot of things...!」

「I'll be fine. Megu should just use the money she earned for herself」

「What Megu wants to do is to devote herself to Yoshi-kun...!」

Megu...smiled at me.

Somehow...My chest feels hot.

I don't get it though.

Is this what they call happiness?

...Bururururu!

Suddenly, my phone vibrated.

「Isn't that Minaho-san?」

I see...Maika's examination ended already?

I answered the call.

『...Hello, Yoshida-kun. Where are you right now?』

...As expected.

「We're in the department store around the station」

『...You're done shopping?』

「Yes, we bought everything」

『...How much was left?』

「Err...Around 10k yen」

...Will she get angry?

We spent too much...

『You passed...I thought that you'd leave more than half since it's you』

「...Eh?」

『If you had more than 50k yen remaining, I intend to have you buy Megumi's clothes once again...but it seems that there's no problem』

「...O-Okay」

As usual...Minaho-neesan likes to test people.

『Go to the bus terminal around the station in 15 minutes. Line up on the bus stop to the municipal hospital』

...Bus stop to the municipal hospital?

『Try to pretend that you don't know my car even if you see it...When I blow the horn, dash towards the car. Okay...?!』

...It feels like there's reason for that.

「...Okay, got it. We're going to run as soon as you blow the horn」

I ready myself and answered.

『See you in 15 minutes』

...She end the call.

「Sorry, can we have a bigger bag so we can put it all together?」

Hearing me on the call...Megu spoke to the clerk.

「...Megu?」

「If we're going to jump to the car, we should do that」

Megu smiles calmly.

...It seems that she's already prepared.



Without hurrying...without panicking.

We walk at normal speed...

We're holding two shopping bags.

Megu holds the bag of dress...

The shoes and underwear are all in my bag.

We come to the bus terminal after getting out of the department store.

「Do you know the number of the terminal on the bus to the municipal hospital?」

When I asked...

「12th. I know that because my foster mother was hospitalized before」

Megu answered.

「...Why was your mother hospitalized?」

「She fell on the stairs in the company...and her waist bone was broken」

「Your mother was working too?」

「Yes...She's on the design advertisement company. It's a small company but... they also have newspaper design in them. They're printing a huge amount of copies for not just supermarkets, but also car companies, big flats, or car companies」

In short...Megu's mother is also working on a company related to Shirasaka house.

「Ah...The 12th is on that way」

The bus terminal for the municipal hospital is the most out of place.
Is the bus coming soon?...There's 10 people lining up already 「...We'll line up too」

We lined up with the queue...

There's still five minutes before the appointed time Minaho-neesan told us.

「Let's buy canned juice?」

When I said that...

「Let's not. It would hinder our movement...」

Megu answers.

「Rather than that...Yoshi-kun.」

Megu snuggles to me and murmurs...

「If ever someone's following us, they'll surely line up in this queue」

...I-I see

「...That's why you shouldn't be loud if it's something you don't want someone to hear it」

「...Okay」

「With that said...Yoshi-kun's bad with that, right?」

「...Yeah」

「Megu will be talking so Yoshi-kun just have to nod」

「...G-Got it」

Seriously...

My 『women』are much more intelligent than me...

It saves me a lot though...

Megu begins her talk about her track and field team...

Anyway...I just kept coming.

「...They're here」

Megu whispers to my ear without changing her expression.

「Yoshi-kun, don't turn around...」

「...Okay」

「We just have to run when she blows the horn...is that right?!」

「Yes...That's right」

Megu holds my hand...

「Don't be nervous...Megu's here with you」

...Megu, what a reliable girl!

「The car is at Yoshi-kun's back right...it's around ten meters」

Megu gives me the detailed information...

「...Right now, Katsuko-san opened the door...!」

...Bubuu!!⁵

The horn rang!

...Now!

Megu and I turned and dashed to the car...!
As expected of a track and field member...Megu's legs are fast!

「...Hey, wait!!!」

I hear a scream from the back...!
As expected, they're following us...?!

「...Hey, dude, you dropped something!!」

...Like hell I'll take the bait!

Katsuko-nee opens the car door wide.
Maika's hiding herself.
I can't see her from outside...!

「...Thief! Catch them!」

The man chasing us from the back suddenly said!
You're using everything now...?!
..... ! !

First, Megu jumps to the car...!
Next...I jumped in!!
We closed the car and turned back in a hurry...!
There's three hoodlum men running after us!
A-Are we going to make it?!

「Don't bite your tongue...!」

The car starts immediately when the car door closes!

「...Hey!」

One of the hoodlum kicked the door...!
Thanks to that, the door closed!⁶

...Babababababababa!

The car accelerates...!
The three men from outside the rear window becomes small...

「...We're saved」

When I sighed...

「No...They're going to come after us」

Minaho-nee muttered...!!!

◇ Escape Arc

115. In the abyss....

I looked back when Minaho-neesan told me that...
Certainly....There's a car that's running after us in a bizarre speed.

「You're mistaken if you think that that's the only one...!」

...Eh?

「We have phones and internet nowadays...While they're chasing after us in a loud manner, there's another car going ahead of us...!」

So the other party is such a huge organization...!

「W-What should we do?」

I turned to Sensei...
Sensei who's holding the steering wheel spoke calmly.

「It's okay...This is why we're going round and round the station...!」

Speaking of which...we're not getting away from the station...?!

「We'll be able to read most of the enemy numbers. As long as we can know the number...we can know how serious they are...!」

...Minaho-neesan?

「How many years do you think we stayed in this town? We have reliable investigators hired. All of the suspicious people around the station are being suppressed right now... This is our hometown. We're all using surveillance cameras in the public facilities and shopping district...!」

She's going around the station on purpose to see through the enemies...!

「Also, this is a location with a lot of people so the enemy cannot touch us by force...!」

As expected of our Nee-san!

「It's about time I guess...!」

...Eh?

...What are we going to do?

「...We had our escape destination since the start?」

...Escape destination?

「...Everyone, hold on tight!」

Saying that, Minaho-neesan suddenly turned the steering wheel...!

「Uwa!」

「Kyaa!」

We're being pushed by the force!

Maika and Megu screamed!

...Buaaaaaan!

The car blows it's exhaust and jumps into the underground parking station of the big hotel from the main street...!

「...Isn't this?」

Katsuko-nee smiled...

「That's right, this is the hotel that's contracted with Nagisa...and」

Katsuko-nee looks at Minaho-neesan.

「...I have forty percent of the stocks here」

In short...Minaho-neesan is a big shareholder of this hotel...

This building is under the patronage of 『Kuromori』...!

「...They're coming as expected」

Our car blasts in the underground parking lot...

The car from a while ago comes from our back!

No...it increased to two!

「Now then...It's about time we end this」

Minaho-neesan turns the car to the gate on the interior of the parking lot. There's a 『Members only parking lot』...

There's a management office and a muscular security guard runs out in groups.
Minaho-neesan flickers the light of the car...
With just that, the gate opens automatically...!

「I've contacted them a while ago so they know my car」

Our car slides in to the 『Members only parking lot』...
At the moment the car enters, the security guards bowed to Minaho-neesan.

「...I'll leave them to you people」

Opening the car window, Minaho-neesan spoke to the guards.
The gate has already been closed.

「Hey fuckers...Open this gate!」

The two cars chasing after us are prevented by the gate from coming inside.

「Sorry, this is a member's only area」

The security guards face the pursuers.

「What? What Member?!」

The pursuers got off their car noisily as well.
1, 2, 3, 4...there's 5 people in total
All of them are hoodlums...or rather, they look like Yakuza.

「Well you see...This is a gate that never let those people who doesn't know what organization enter...!」

The security guards took out their metal policeman club and stun gun...!

「We can just leave everything else to those people」

Our car goes in deeper the 『Members only parking lot』
There's an elevator that can fit a large sized car in the interior of the parking lot.
Minaho-neesan took out an electric key and turns it to the elevator.
There's a gate protected by humans and a double check elevator machine that performs a check.
The elevator door opens and the car comes in.

「...Uwaaaaa!」

「...Ugyaaaa!」

I can hear the men screaming from the background...

「...Don't look back. They're just an unsightly scenery」

Minaho-neesan said over the mirror.

The elevator door closes...

I can no longer hear the screams ◇ ◇ ◇

The elevator goes further underground.

「This is the fifth underground floor...」

Minaho-neesan told us.

The elevator's descent stops and the door opens.

Approximately ten cars can park in here.

But...There's not a single one parked in.

「It's been a while coming here...」

Katsuko-nee muttered expressionlessly.

I somehow understood it...

This hotel is is an annex of 『Kuromori』brothel

Minaho-neesan chooses her words in explaining so Maika won't notice the existence of 『Kuromori』

「You see...This is a meeting place for rich people and their mistress without being known by anyone. Nowadays, this is a 『Room rent』for such people...!」

『Kuromori』prostitution section has stopped their activities however...

This annex is still lending rooms to the guests of 『Kuromori』from the old days.

The guests take their female partner by themselves.

Therefore, the security guards are residing here...

「If it's a city hotel, you can just pretend to have a meeting on a different room...then go down the secret elevator won't you? You can have 『Adult meetups』without everyone seeing it. You can use the usual guest room rented as an alibi and the hotel can make a profit as well」

...So they're doing that kind of business.

「Either way, let's go to my office. Take all the baggage when you're going down. I like this car but we can't use this anymore. Those people have the

number of this one」

Minaho-neesan said in regret.

「I feel sorry for the people who owns this car in papers but...the trouble fee has been paid in advance, we have no choice but to give up...」

「What kind of people are they?」

I find it curious so I asked.

「If I recall, they're elderly people working at a plating factory in an industrial park...」

Oh...Those people would be invaded by the companions of those hoodlums. My condolences.

「This way」

We took our baggage and followed Minaho-neesan...

「It's here...Even though I said office, It's hardly used」

Nee-san opened the lock and invited us inside.

There's only a desk and reception set...It was an unexpectedly simple room.

「Either way...we're absolutely safe here」

We sat on the sofa being told by Nee-san.

Maika leaks out a sigh.

As expected, she's nervous.

「Are you okay Maika?」

「Un...I'm fine. Or rather, it made my heart throb!」

Maika looks at my face and smiled.

「...Maika?」

「Yuzuki-san, what kinds of room are those used for 『Secret adult meetings』?」

Maika asks Minaho-neesan.

...What?

When you said that your heart is throbbing, you were interested in those?

...No, that's wrong.

Maika's face might be laughing...

...But her legs are trembling.

She's talking a different topic on purpose to hide her unease...

This child had that character...

If I don't take a look at her more.

Megu nods at my glance.

Megu understands...

Katsuko-nee's holding Maika's shoulder casually...

Everyone's thinking carefully of the smallest among us, Maika...

「The secret meeting rooms have luxurious interior. The concept is different on each room」

「Waa, Maika wants to see」

「Not right now...There's a lot too stimulating things in there」

「Eeeh!...Stimulating? What kind?」

Maika bites Minaho-neesan's words.

「We'll visit next time...we don't have time for today」

Minaho-neesan smiled wryly.

The phone on the desk rings.

「...Yes, it's me」

Minaho-neesan answered the call.

「...Is that so? Got it. They're also intruding the front of the hotel. I don't mind, call the police. So they knew it from the people who chased us to the underground...As expected. They're fast to talk to people on the crime syndicates...please report to the lawyer, Tsuruya-sensei. If they deal with that kind of team, the opponent would be plucked off enough...」

As expected...it was a crime syndicate.

「...The detailed correspondence should be left to Manager Takada and Concierge Chief Nomoto. The crime syndicate will persist to destroy the hotel side by putting false charges on them...the hotel should strongly appeal that they're unrelated. I'm going up immediately. The usual room please. Thank you...!」

Nee-san said then hang up the phone...

「The concierge of this hotel is my senior」

Katsuko-nee told us with a smile.

Katsuko-nee's senior...In short, a retired woman of 『Kuromori』

「She's very reliable so please feel relieved...」

Perhaps, most of the women in the mansion has taken part in Minaho-neesan's various business.

There's a firm bond between the women who were made prostitutes...

「Ojou-sama...should I prepare tea?」

Katsuko-nee stands up from the sofa.

「No need. We're done here anyway. There's a guest room prepared above so let's just call for room-service」

「Then, we're having supper here as well?」

「Right...the people in room service are safe」

...It seems that we're going to eat supper at this hotel.

「This underground facility isn't just used to run away from the pursuers」

Minaho-neesan looked at us.

「Electric waves doesn't reach this underground facility. There's no relay broadcast facility as well. There are a lot of customers who want to enjoy the 『Secret Meeting』in a place where phones won't reach...」

...Phone?

「I'm going to confiscate your phones」

Minaho-neesan...told Megu, Maika and I.

...Err?

「...Did you not know that the location of a person can be known from the phone?」

Un...I've heard about it.

「Your phones are already identified by those people...!」

...I see.

Megu and my location can be found out by the GPS.

「But...Maika would be troubled if she can't contact her friends」

Maika said.

「That's fine」

Katsuko-nee took out a machine that looks like a laptop from the car.

「We've bought identical ones from the phone shop. We'll just read the data on your phone and transfer it」

In addition, Katsuko-nee took out three phones with the same model.

「We'll give this in exchange of the confiscated phones. You can use it so don't worry. The data from contacts and mails, everything will be transferred. You may not like it but endure it. Once this event settles down, we'll change the model...」

Katsuko-nee said with a smile.

「That's fine isn't it, Maika-chan?」

Megu smiled at Maika.

She handed her own phone to Katsuko-nee, taking the lead.

「...Then please」

「Yes, leave this to me!」

Katsuko-nee ties the phone to the machine via cable and begins her work...

「It can't be helped...Maika just renewed the other day...」

Saying that, Maika presented her own phone.

I took out my phone as well.

「But...They're faster than I thought」

I told Minaho-neesan.

「Are you talking about Shirasaka house's movement being sooner than expected?」

Then...Minaho-neesan...

「No. Shirasaka house still haven't began to move yet. According to my

investigation, it seems that they hired an underground investigation company but...they have bad reputation, they move slow, and have low investigation ability. Why would they hire those people expressly? As expected, newspaper people are useless. They have tunnel vision on what they know...thus they're naive...!」

...Eh?

「Then...Shirasaka house haven't started investigation yet?」

「That's right. Well, with the scale of their investigation company, they'll complete their preparations by tomorrow or the day after tomorrow」

...With that said?

「Huh...If so, when who's the crime syndicate that's coming after us...?」

...W-Who employed them?

...*Knock*

Suddenly, the door was knocked...!

I was startled by it.

This is an underground facility so we're the only one's here, right?

「...Who's there?」

Minaho-neesan asked...and the person on the other side answered.

「...It's me...Minaho!」

There's only one person calling Minaho-neesan 『Minaho』...!

...M-Margo-san?!

「...Come in, it's open」

The door opened and Margo-san comes in.

「...How did it go?」

Margo-san took out one sheet of paper when Minaho-neesan asked.

「It's them as expected」

There's a low resolution photo from a surveillance camera somewhere printed on the paper.

It's a tall foreigner?

I don't get his face though...

「...It's Cesario Viola」

...Margo-san?

「He's already in this town...!」

My head was filled with what's ahead that I forgot the existence of the strong enemy...

「Who's this foreigner?」

Maika peeps to the photo in curiosity.

「...Nei's archenemy」

Margo-san spit out.

「Nei-san's archenemy?」

「Yeah...He's an American that killed Nei's parents and is now chasing Nei...!」

I'm surprised.

「Could it be that those people who chased us just now...?!」

Margo-san smiles wryly.

「It's as Yoshida-kun expects...Those are hired people of Mr. Viola in Japan」

...Is that how it is?

「Mr. Viola's parents are soldiers so he came in Japan in his childhood and he can speak Japanese. However, he should've been in Okinawa. It's my first time hearing that he has come to the mainland as far as I know. Naturally, since he's not familiar with the land...he employed locals」

Margo-san explained.

「Is it that easy to employ Yakuza?」

Megu asked and Margo-san...

「Mr. Viola's underground community in US is well known...He must've mingled with the people of the crime syndicates in Japan」

Then...

The crime syndicate trying to intrude the hotel hardly knows any information on Cesario Viola.

Their relationship is just an employee and employer.

「As a makeshift...a huge amount of Yakuza will chase Yoshida-kun and Mr. Viola will take a look at our reaction...」

...Reaction

「The number of people, the scale...and the connection with the underground」

I see...

「We're the same though. We're both still in the dark. But, because of the uproar being concentrated only around the station, we're able to confirm that Mr. Viola is in Japan. We have checked all the surveillance cameras in the neighborhood」

Minaho-neesan let the pursuers chase us around the station to confirm the appearance of Cesario Viola.

Thinking that Mr. Viola himself is near the location...

「Then...Where is he right now?」

Margo-san shook her head...

「Taking a look at the surveillance cameras, he left by the taxi after this. We're examining the taxi company for the moment but...it seems impossible to chase after him. I don't think he'll come to this hotel. He's not an idiot that jumps to the enemy nest alone...!」

...They're already good by just confirming that the enemy is in Japan.

「But...Why do those people know our whereabouts?」

Megu asks Margo-san.

「That's because of Yoshida-kun's phone」

My phone?

「...Iwakura-san leaked information about Yoshida-kun, Nei, and me to the

underground community, don't you remember?」

That's right. Our personal information was leaked by Iwakura-san to the underground community.

Mr. Viola came to Japan because of the leaked information and photo of Nei-san...

「...Yes」

「Nei and I were hidden all the time so it's impossible to search our whereabouts in Japan」

Margo-san and Nei-san are members of 『Kuromori』...

Nei-san never took in a guest so she has never shown her face in 『Kuromori』

Margo-san is on backstage as guard so she basically don't show her face.

There's no information on the two connected to 『Kuromori』...

「Iwakura-san had leaked information at least which school Nei is staying but... In the first place, the phone number and address Nei submitted to the office of school are all fictional. Even if someone access it, we would immediately be alerted and be standby to move. It's holiday today as well so they cannot distinguish Nei's location from the school. As for me, my address in the university and the embassy are identical... My phone number are all from a different person...and I'm always using multiple ones. Ah, the number Nei and I have been using until now has been disposed. We'll tell you our new number later...!」

So they've been thorough with that.

「Therefore...Yoshida-kun's the only clue they have」

...Me?

「Iwakura-san leaked out the information about who you are and which school you go to. Your mobile number, even if who of your classmates has 10k yen, they're able to have that from the phone network」

...Perhaps they do.

Who's number did I write on the emergency contact again?

「That's why those guys come to you first...」

...Is that how it is?

Nobody knows that I'm related to 『Kuromori』

They just think that I'm a normal high school student.

They'll take a hold of me then have me spill out Nei-san's location.

「Ah...Then, Maika and Megu are still safe, aren't they?」

I sighed.

If I'm the only one they're aiming, I can deal with it somehow.

But...Margo-san...

「You see Yoshida-kun...the underground world is comparatively small」

...Ha?

「What do you think will happen if Mr., Viola's hired Yakuza and Shirasaka family shared information?」

...Share information?

「It would immediately be known that Megumi-chan's the girl who ran away with you. Shirasaka house is requesting to search Megumi-chan no investigation companies. Students on the same class and same school would be uploaded on the underground community. There's no person who won't think that you two are related...」

In short...They'll cooperate and come after us...?!

「It'll be immediately found out that we're behind Yoshida-kun and Megumi-chan. If both targets are in the same group... There's a high possibility that Mr. Viola's hired crime syndicate and Shirasaka house's hired investigators will cooperate」

...Certainly.

That would become troublesome...

「Can't we have the syndicate hired by Cesario Viola withdraw?」

Katsuko-nee asked Margo-san.

Un...If we use the name 『Kuromori』, the crime syndicate might give up...

「That's no good. The crime syndicate is connected with Mr. Viola. There's almost no clues on that mister. We should let him free and gather more

intelligence」

Margo-san's opinion is reasonable.

「...We're able to escape to this hotel from the crime syndicate by chance. They don't know our relation with this facility after all...

Minaho-neesan said.

「Those who enter the underground gate of this hotel will be 『Guests』without question thus...they cannot tell information about the customers, they'll reject it. That would make the other side quiet」

『Kuromori』is a prostitution ring that is associated with the big shots of politics and business circles.

That means that they'd rather die than tell that 『Information about the guests』
For the time being...Mr. Viola's hired crime syndicate would hold back.
They would feel indebt with the hotel that's under the rule of 『Kuromori』
without knowing anything.

But...Shirasaka house.

They know that they're dealing with 『Kuromori』from the start...

「...We need to make a hit before Shirasaka house is able to arrange themselves.」

Margo-san said and looked at Maika.

「I feel sorry for Maika-chan but...can you contact your mother and your grandfather on mother's side?」

...That's?

「What the Shirasaka house fears the most is the people knowing Shirasaka Sousuke's evildoing. It would cause serious damage on the Shirasaka house after all」

Margo-san analyzes it clearly.

「The second one is to secure Shirasaka Sousuke himself. They want to recapture Shirasaka Sousuke without anyone knowing that he's kidnapped」

...I see.

「Securing Megumi-chan is the later of the priority level...At most, they must be thinking that she has the clues on Shirasaka's current whereabouts」

Margo-san supplements Minaho-neesan's talk.

「If the head of Shirasaka house was a bit more decent and...He'll contact me directly. There's a lot of people among them who knows me and the mansion...!」

The family and the persons connected with Shirasaka Sousuke naturally knows 『Kuromori』as well.

No...There's a lot of 『Guests』among the clan as well.

「It's a makeshift...All the dirty work are done by the people they hired, it'll get even more troublesome as they don't approach themselves...」

...I see

「Therefore...What was Shirasaka Sousuke doing in the back until now. And with the fact that he's being restrained in Australia...They think that this will be leaked to people other than Shirasaka house」

Margo-san smiled.

In short...We're informing Maika's mother's side to restrain the head of Shirasaka house!

「Maika-san's grandfather...Ichikawa-san is a decent and honest person, or so I've heard. ...We've never met each other however...」

In short...He's not a guest of the mansion.

A person completely without contact with 『Kuromori』

「There's no need to let the public know Shirasaka Sousuke's back face... Having the relative, Ichikawa-san know first and it will have enough effect. Ichikawa-san is the leader of the advertising industry and a person in equal ground of the head of Shirasaka house. He won't do something that's on Shirasaka house's convenience...!」

「Rather...They hate being involved with the scandal of Shirasaka house. For Ichikawa-san, Shirasaka Sousuke's evildoing is an inexcusable act of betrayal」

Even if it's a political marriage...the man who married his own daughter is a

manager of an illegal prostitution ring...

An honest man shouldn't be able to tolerate such things...

「I'm sure my Grandfather would be surprised...」

...Maika muttered.

「It seems...Maika should better report him now...」

Quietly...she laughed and answered.

「...Maika, will you please do it?」

Maika looks up at me.

「What are you saying...I'm Onii-san's 『Woman』」

...Maika.

「Maika understands how serious Yuzuki-san as well...but...!」

Maika hesitates.

「Isn't it about time you tell Maika everything?」

...Maika's too clever.

Even though we try not to speak the whole picture of 『Kuromori』to Maika...she noticed it.

「It's still no good...We can't tell you everything」

Minaho-neesan said clearly.

「Does that mean that you can't trust Maika?」

Maika looks straight at Minaho-neesan.

「...That's wrong. It's the problem of timing. I think that it's better not to tell Maika-san everything yet. That way, you can behave at ease」

Minaho-neesan answered with a smile.

「...What do you mean?」

「We can't have Maika-san come home today but...it's possible that you will meet your mother and grandfather tomorrow. At that time, I would be troubled if Maika-san knows too much. You might tell Ichikawa-san information we don't want them to know yet...」

「You're thinking that Maika will tell her grandfather without thought?」

「I don't...But, I cannot underestimate Maika-san's grandfather. He's managing a big enterprise. I think that he'll be able to gather information from Maika-san persuasively...」

Minaho-neesan looked at Maika with strong eyes...

「Therefore...We still can't tell you about everything『Yet』...!」

...Maika

「Not 『Yet』for now. Then you're going to tell me everything sometime?」

「...Yes. I promise that」

The two women glare at each other...

「Got it...Maika will contact Mama and grandfather...」

Maika submitted for the time being...

116. Call with grandfather

「...Ah, Hello, Ojii-chan?!
It's me. Maika...Un. I'm fine!
Is it okay for me to make a call right now?...Ah, great!
Eh?...Maika's in the middle of meal...
While we're at it, I've got something I have to ask Ojii-chan...!
Eeeh?!...I'm not!
I don't need pocket money.
It's not like I want to buy something...!
It's not Onee-chan...Maika won't make such kind of requests on Ojii-chan. ...No
no no!
Maika's not that kind of child...!
Like I said...I'm not asking for a phone...!
Actually...
Un...You see.
Maika's been kidnapped...!
...Kidnapping.
That's right. Maika's in the course of being kidnapped!
...Jeez!
Ojii-chan, please listen to Maika properly!
I'm really really being kidnapped...!
Ah...But, they didn't do anything cruel to me so don't worry...
All of the kidnappers are good people.
UN...We're in the middle of the meal right now.
That's right, I'm eating outside.
There's no way I'm at home when I'm kidnapped...!
Eeeh?!
There's now way I can tell you where I am right now you know?!
Maika's been caught...!
...Eh?
Maika's eating hamburger steak
No, it's not a family restaurant.

It's something a formal chef made.

Un...It's quite good. It's very delicious.

No...Like I said, it's not like that.

It's a hamburger steak made by a genuine chef of a restaurant!

...Like I said, that's not it!

...Why are you not listening to Maika seriously?!

Maika's getting angry...!

It's okay it's okay, there's no need to apologize...

It's not that Maika's seriously angry...

...Eh?

...Aah!

Ojii-chan still doesn't believe me.

Even though Maika's really been kidnapped...!

...Ah.

...Wait a moment.

I'll give the phone to the kidnapper boss...!

...Like I said, It's not!

It's not a 『Pleasure seeking criminal』but ...『Kidnapper』!¹

...Geez!

Anyway...I'm going to give her the phone...!」

..... ! ! !

「...I've taken the phone.

Is this Ichikawa-san?

Let me say my greetings for the first time...

I'm...Kuromori Minaho...

No...I'm not Maika-san's friend at school.

...We don't have that kind of relationship.

I'm a person from the underground.

Yes...I have kidnapped Maika-san.

...Yes. It is as you say.

...It is, Kuromori.

I think you will understand it easier if I say I'm 『Kuromori Kunousuke's』 daughter...

...Yes. That Kuromori Konousuke

My father is Kuromori Kouichiro...

I'm the current successor of the 『Organization』my grandfather has made...

I think Ichikawa-sama has come several times during 1975's...

...Yes.

...Yes, that Kuromori

...Have you come to remember it?

...That is right.

I'm the current head of 『Kuromori』...

I'm holding the power of the organization...

...Yes, that is right?

...Why is a person of 『Kuromori』together with Maika-san...?

...Fufufufu.

It is as your granddaughter told you earlier...

...Yes

We have kidnapped Shirasaka Maika-sama...

...That is right.

...Yes.

...It's not a joke nor a ruse.

『Kuromori』house has belonged in the underground Japan for many years

...Yes, that is right.

We're providing polite accommodation for Maika-sama...

...Ufufufu

...There is no need to panic.

Please listen to what I have to say until the end.

I think you should refrain from making any rash actions.

...Yes.

We don't want to make the matters worse as well...

I guarantee Maika-san's safety.

...No, no, there's no such thing.

Our 『Organization』has multiple contacts in mass media...

Yes...No matter how much of a lead Ichikawa-sama lead the advertising business, it's impossible to control all of the mass media.

We have internet nowadays...

Yes...Maika-san's father's family may be from a newspaper company, however... they cannot hold down the rival companies of the organization, can they? Rather...I think they will be pleased to report a scandal leading to Shirasaka house.

...Yes.

...That is right.

We have information on a big scandal on Shirasaka house.

Therefore, I advice Ichikawa-sama to take actions ahead before the possibility of the scandal reaching Ichikawa-sama as well.

Shirasaka house's is married to Ichikawa-sama's eldest daughter after all...

It may prove fatal for Ichikawa-sama as well...

Would you like me to speak about the details?

Yes...Then, I will begin.

First...I will warn you beforehand...Our 『Organization』currently hold not just Maika-san.

Maika-sama's father who is supposed to be in a business trip in Australia...Mr. Shirasaka Sousuke is also restrained by us.

Yes...That is right.

Mr. Shirasaka Sousuke is already imprisoned by my people...

I cannot answer where he is right now.

Shirasaka house has already began searching for Mr. Sousuke.

Please confirm it later.

As a matter of fact...Our objective is Mr. Shirasaka Sousuke.

Yes...Our purpose for having Maika-sama with us isn't for ransom.

We've taken Maika-sama just to make contact with Ichikawa-sama.

I would like to express it again...We do not have the intention to hurt Maika-sama at all.

We would like to return her home as much as possible.

...Yes.

I want to build friendly relationship with Ichikawa-sama as much as possible...

...Yes.

We wish for such situation to continue as well.

Above all...Maika-san is an intelligent and beautiful young lady...

To be honest, we don't want to do anything violent to her as much as possible...

...Yes.

...I've already promised Maika-san's safety earlier.

Of course...in case we fall into an extremely disadvantageous situation, but...

...Very well.

Then...Let's return to Mr. Shirasaka Sousuke.

Is Ichikawa-sama aware that Mr. Shirasaka Sousuke is affiliated with our 『Organization』for over the past 20 years?

...That is so.

Mr. Shirasaka Sousuke have taken the leader-like standpoint on the 『Kuromori Organization』...

Suppose you don't believe me...Let's see.

In case of Ichikawa-sama's company, you can ask the managing director Yamazaki...Or the business bureau director Tamura, or the media promotion tactics director Yoshioka.

Those three are especially close with Mr. Shirasaka Sousuke, I think Ichikawa-sama knows this as well.

...Those three are long time『guests』of ours.

Yes...Mr. Shirasaka Sousuke have those people as regular customers of our 『Organization』

Everyone should know my relationship with Mr. Sousuke...

...Yes.

Please you can confirm it later.

I will continue our previous topic.

...I will express it frankly.

Mr. Shirasaka Sousuke has betrayed our 『Organization』

Currently, Mr. Sousuke tried to start up a new 『Organization』by himself while backed by a crime organization.

You can ask director Yamazaki about this as well...

Director Yamazaki should have deep connections with the establishment of Mr. Sousuke's new organization.

And...Mr. Shirasaka Sousuke has stolen our 『Client list』for his new organization.

...This is a clear act of betrayal for our『Organization』

Of course...We cannot just overlook it in silence.

『Kuromori』belongs to the underground society...

We never forgive 『Traitors』

I think Ichikawa-sama knows that kind of world.

...Yes.

...That is right.

We think that Shirasaka house will still want to recapture Mr. Sousuke.

It seems that they want to completely annihilate our 『Organization』to rescue Mr. Shirasaka Sousuke.

If this continues, 『Kuromori』will have to fight against Shirasaka house on full scale.

When it happens...The spark is likely to reach even Ichikawa-sama as well...

Your food critic young lady...and your two granddaughters will be involved as well...

It is possible that the bad influence will reach the company and family of Ichikawa-sama.

I will say it again...Our 『Organization』is a long established business in this industry.

There's a record of Ichikawa himself coming as well...

There are many people among your clan who patronized us in the past.

Our 『Organization』...can secure the fire of the scandal as much as we want.

Do you remember Morimoto, our clerk?

...Yes

Morimoto is still in our 『Organization』...

...That is right.

The events in our 『Organization』will never be leaked outside...

We have a method to keep the secrets of our guests.

Therefore...Our 『Organization』will continue to receive favors from the guests.

But...Shirasaka Sousuke has betrayed us...and tried to steal the guests' information.

...Yes.

...That is right.

If this continues, the secret guest list of our 『Organization』for all the years...we fear that Shirasaka Sousuke will leak the personal information of our guests to the crime syndicates.

I think you understand our reason why we have to dispose Shirasaka Sousuke

with all our effort.

...Yes.

...It is as you say.

Our purpose is to punish Shirasaka Sousuke...

That's all.

We do not expect a fruitless fight with Ichikawa-sama nor Shirasaka house

...Of course.

...Yes, please understand

...Yes

As long as they abandon Shirasaka Sousuke...that will be enough.

But...If ever Shirasaka house wants to rescue Mr. Sousuke by all means...

In addition, if they do not stop the attack at our 『Organization』

We have to defend ourselves.

Yes...That is how it will be.

Mr. Shirasaka Sousuke's betrayal is the cause of this since the beginning.

We're just doing the proper action of an 『Organization』from the underground.

Yes...we do not care about money.

Mr. Shirasaka Sousuke was a member of our 『Organization...』

...It's impossible.

...Impossible.

Then...Ichikawa-sama, are you telling to let us overlook him trying to hand over information about the 『Organization's』guests to crime syndicates?

...That is right.

Yes...It is as Ichikawa-sama imagined.

I think that Shirasaka house's judgement to rescue Mr. Sousuke is not well.

Mr. Sousuke will be 『Punished』by our hands but...will the root of evil end in the future?...

However...Even if the Shirasaka house confront us directly, there will be people who insists to rescue Mr. Sousuke coming.

What can we only do is to take urgent defensive measures.

...Yes.

We've taken custody of Maika-san under those circumstances.

...Do you understand?

There's an old saying 『The cornered mouse bites』

For a small 『Organization』such as ourselves absolutely need a considerate preparedness when fighting a noble family like Shirasaka-sama.

However...we won't let our 『Organization』collapse because of Mr. Shirasaka Sousuke.

We will do everything to defend it.

...Yes.

The stage of our discussion has already gone far enough.

Shirasaka house has already began moving...

I think you will know if you contact them.

...No

Of course...We would like to receive Ichikawa-sama's cooperation.

But...I don't intend to receive your answer right now.

Ichikawa-sama, are you home right now?

Then...I will forward you a file on the matters I've just told you about.

Please confirm it with your own eyes.

Video evidences of Mr. Shirasaka Sousuke's past with prostitution, rape, abduction and confinement crimes he has committed.

As well as Director Yamazaki who's under Ichikawa-sama...

You can check those materials first then analyze on your future responses.

...Yes.

Then, I will contact you once again after an hour.

...That is right.

There's no way I will be able to do that for someone as wise as Ichikawa-sama...

If ever Ichikawa-sama conducts a hostile movement on us within an hour...We will be uploading Director Yamazaki who's under Ichikawa-sama's company's illegal act.

The first trigger of the scandal will become Ichikawa-sama's place...with that said, please take note of that.

...Yes?

...Maika-san?

I'm not so foolish to use my trump card first.

I myself think that Maika-san is a very lovely young lady...

I sincerely pray for her safe return as much as possible.

...Yes.

...I'm going to give the phone to Maika-san then」

..... ! ! !

「...Ah, Ojii-chan?

Either way, that's what's happening...!

...Un.

...That's right.

No, it's true...Everyone's kind to Maika.

Like I said, Maika's fine.

For now...okay?

Really really...I'm not lying...

I'm fine. Really fine.

I won't talk cheerfully if I'm forcing myself...!

They're really taking good care of me...

The hamburger steak is delicious...

Un...Everyone's eating together.

Everyone's kind...Like I said, that's true.

...That's right.

...You see.

In the end...Papa did bad to everyone?

Maika was told various things...

Ah...But, not everything.

They said that it's pitiful to tell a child everything...

They just told me a bit of it.

Or rather...I met the person who had terrible experience with Papa.

...Un.

I know that person didn't lie.

Maika understood it...

Papa had done a lot of bad things to those people...

...Un.

...That's right.

No, Maika believes these people more than Papa.

Because these people are serious...

They're earnest...

They don't treat Maika like a kid.

They're listening to Maika properly...

...Eh?

...You see, Ojii-chan

...That's not it.

Maika's already prepared.

...Un.

I think Papa's no good already.

...That's impossible.

Because...Papa's really a hopeless person.

He troubled a lot of people as well...

You know it don't you?

Ojii-chan knows what kind of person Maika's papa is.

...That's right.

It is my uncle in Shizouka says...

Maika's papa is a good-for-nothing...

That's why it's inevitable.

...Un.

Maika has already given up on Papa.

...That's right.

...Also, uncle Shirasaka loves Papa.

Aren't those people a mass lump of pride?

But...That's wrong.

I think it's no good that it will become a big trouble because of Maika's Papa.

...Un.

...That's right.

...Maika thinks the same but.

But...nothing will change even if you say that now

...I know

...Un

...Maika's really fine...

...Eh?

Ah...I still haven't told Mama or Onee-chan anything.

You see...I told Onee-chan that I'll stay over a friend's house

...Right.

...Ah, wait a moment!

...No, that's not it.

I think that it's better not to tell Onee-chan anything yet...

She's a Papa's girl after all...

She might go to uncle Shirasaka and start something strange...

...That's right.

Ojii-chan knows it too, right?

Yukino Onee-chan's a bit of an idiot...

But, her voice is loud and she goes hysteric immediately.

...Un.

From where did she learn it from I wonder.

She's a spoiled brat like Papa.

...That's right.

Anyway...

Don't tell Onee-chan anything until Maika returns home...

...Please

...I don't want that.

It's already a big trouble that Maika's kidnapped so we can't let Onee-chan worry...!

...That's right.

Anyway, Maika will do her best...

Don't tell Onee-chan...

...Un.

Please...Ojii-chan

Yeah...Right

Un...Ojii-chan should talk to Mama.

She should be in Shizouka today...

If you can't contact Mama, then call the Manager.

It's okay...she's always with Manager-san.

That's right.

They stay in the same room even at night...

...I know

Maika's already in middle school so I can understand just by looking at it.

Err...do you know Manager-san's number?

Un...That's right.

Obaa-chan knows it...

...Un.

Anyway...Maika's safe.

I'm really fine right now...

Everyone's kind with Maika...

Like I said...

Maika's thinking that it would be fine if it just ends with me being raped...

...Eh?

...Well, isn't that right?

These people are angry at Papa. They hate him.

Maika's papa had done horrible things to them all this time.

It can't be helped if Maika's raped forcibly...

I cannot complain even if I get killed...

Maika don't want to die yet though.

Anyway...Maika is in that kind of delicate situation...

Ojii-chan, don't do anything unreasonable...

These people grasps all the police information or investigation companies.

If Ojii-chan breaks his promise with these people...Maika will be on a tough spot.

Maika wants to talk with Ojii-chan again...

...That's right.

Maika loves Ojii-chan.

I also love Obaa-chan.

I love Mama too...

But...I hate Papa.

I don't want to see him again...

Ojii-chan, do you know?

Maika's papa was violent on various women...

Raped them and forced them to prostitution.

There are people who passed away too.

Maika already hates Papa.

I'll never forgive him...

Ah...Wait a moment.

I'm going to give it to Kuromori-san...!」

..... ! ! !

「...I've forwarded the file right now. Please confirm it.
Then...I will contact you after an hour」

...Putsu!

...Tsu tsu tsu²



「But, this hamburger steak is really delicious...!」

After Minaho-neesan hang up the call, Maika opens her mouth wide and eats the lump of meat.

「...Un. It's my first time eating this delicious hamburger steak」

I also devour the dish...

「Eh, this much is normal you know? I can even make this taste!」

Katsuko-nee says, but.

「Who's making the hotel room service?」

Minaho-neesan answers my question.

「In our hotel, there's a cook in each restaurant taking charge. European, Japanese, Chinese and Italian kitchens. Basically, they're bringing room dishes identical to the restaurant」

「...Oh, that's why it's delicious」

We moved to the guest room from the underground

We can see the night view of the 27th floor...

The room only has the smallest room's light turned on.

Inside the poorly lighted room...

Us taking supper while looking down the blinking lights from around the station.

「...Don't approach the window. There's a possibility that they have we can be seen from a telephoto lens」

Margo-san warned us.

Oh right...We're being aimed at by the crime syndicate Mr. Viola hired.
They know that we're in the hotel...

「...I think that they're checking each room with binoculars. That's why we shouldn't turn on lights as much as possible. They will see us well if we turn on the lights...」

Margo-san said.

The dark air drifts in the room...

Err...We have to start a topic...

「...But still...Maika, didn't you exaggerate a bit?」

「Eh, Onii-san, what do you mean?」

「Look...The last part of the call...『It can't be helped if I get raped』」

「Eh, well, that's what I really think」

「But you see...If you tell your grandfather that, blood might go on his head and he might do something unreasonable」

「...Unreasonable?」

「Something like employing special force to do a rescue mission for Maika...」

「Onii-san, are you an idiot? Special force can't be privately employed...!」

「Then...something like a dark knight...³」

「We're not in a Manga...there's no way such a person exists you know? In the first place, Maika's grandfather is a normal person. He doesn't know any dark knight!」

Maika puffed angrily.

「In the first place...Didn't Onii-san really do it?...!」

「...Eh, what?」

「Raping Maika」

...Err

I think I poked the hornet's nest...

「And you did it a lot!」

「...Y-Yeah」

Certainly...when I take a look from an outside perspective.

Maika has already been raped by me who's a member of 『Kuromori』...

It's bad if Maika's grandfather knows this...

He might really send special force...

「Well, it doesn't matter though」

Maika smiles at me.

「Maika's on a campaign to commemorate her virgin loss so...Onii-san can rape me anytime anywhere and no matter how many times!」

M-Maika?!

「Maika...still doesn't know the pleasure of having sex. But, won't I feel pleasure if I do that multiple times until my body gets used to it? That's why, If Onii-san wants to do it, then rape me as much as you want. Maika wants to feel better soon...!」

...Err

「Maika-chan...was loud a while ago In Ikeda-sensei's clinic...」

Katsuko-nee smiles wryly...

「Ikeda-sensei's angry as I thought. 『What do you intend to do by bringing virgin girls to examine everyday?!』」

「...Ah, Sorry」

It's not that it was planned, but...

As a result, I took three people's first experience...

Somehow, I feel sorry.

「Then, Maika-chan asked Sensei...『Rather than that, can Maika have sex tonight?』」

...Eh?

「Because...Maika will be together with Onii-san tonight, isn't it? I feel sorry for Onii-san if Maika can't have sex...」

Maika says with a smile...

「Sensei took a look at it...She said that place isn't damaged. She said that I should actually not have much sex today but...It's okay do it at least twice. Ah, she said that it's fine do it a lot more tomorrow. I've got a lot of pills so release

inside Maika a lot...!」

...hey hey. What's going on?!

「Ah...But, Maika can only do it twice tonight. Do the other with Katsuko-san and Megumi-chan, okay, Onii-san!

...Err

Is this what a kidnapped middle school student supposed to say?

Megu's face turned red and faced me.

「...I-I can do it as much as you want」

...Megu

T-This sisters...seriously

Oh right...These girls are sisters with different mothers.

Both of them have beautiful faces but they don't look alike at all.

Megu's long and narrow eyes feels adult.

Maika's bright big eyes...is always smiling.

No...Their noses are alike.

When you take a closer look...they have more resembling parts.

But still...I can't see them as normal sisters.

「...Maika wants to be like Nei-san」

Maika suddenly said.

...Nei-san?

「Look, Nei-san's very beautiful and sexy...and yet, she's very bright and reckless, right? Maika wants to be a fun like girl just like Nei-san...!」

Maika sees her like that.

「When I heard that Nei-san is Onii-san's sex partner along with Katsuko-san, I went pipiin! Isn't that amazing!」

「Eh...What do you mean?」

「Well...Didn't Nei-san and Katsuko-san say that they won't have sex with anyone but Onii-san?」

「...That's true. I won't have sex with anyone but him anymore」

Katsuko-nee told Maika while drinking coffee after meal.

「What about Megumi-chan?」

「I'm the same. I will have only Yoshi-kun for the rest of my life」

Megu answered Maika with a straight face...

「Nei-san's the same isn't she? She's such a beautiful and sexy person!」

...Now then, what should we do?

We're losing the chance to say that Nei-san's a virgin every second...

「That's why...Maika wants to be a woman like Nei-san...!」

...Like Nei-san.

「Maika will become a bitch only for Onii-san!⁴」

...B-Bitch?

「Maika, what bitch?!」

There's no way she'll become a Russian will she?

Someone like Ivan Sergei Bitch 「You see...Bitch means a lewd and vulgar girl. That kind of messed up woman!」

Oh...So it had that meaning in Russian.

「No...But I don't think there's a need to force yourself to become absurd...」

Maika answered me.

「Well...Maika has no choice but to be messed up. Maika will become an enemy of Shirasaka house. I abandoned Papa...Perhaps, I can't go back to school anymore」

Maika's on the edge right now...

Maika's approached by the frightening reality and the unease of the future.

「Maika...will become Onii-san's mistress. It suits me doesn't it? An indecent mistress」

「Yes...It suits the meaning」

Katsuko-nee told Maika.

「Megumi-chan is Onii-san's lawful wife isn't she? Then Maika's okay being a mistress. A woman in the background. But, very sexy and messed up. A bitch

only for Onii-san...」

Maika is behaving lightly by force...

As expected, she's forcing herself.

「If you're going to be a bitch, then you have to experience sex until you get immersed in it...!」

Minaho-neesan looks at me.

「Immersed in sex?...I will I will! Maika wants to be thoroughly violated by Onii-san!」

Maika wants to escape the fear before her eyes.,
But...! 「Yoshida-kun...do it」

Minaho-neesan told me

「Either way, you're going to sleep with Maika-san on the same bed. Okay?」

...Well, I promised Minaho-neesan earlier.

To calm down Maika's fear of rape...

I have to embrace Maika in sleep...

「Ah...I'll sleep together too!」

Megu told Maika.

「Eh...Megumi-chan will sleep together with us?」

...Megu.

「If Maika-chan's going to become a bitch, then I'll become a shameless girl!
Maika-chan...let's get loved by Yoshi-kun together as sisters...!」

「Eh...Both at once?!」

「...That's right」

「Uwa, Maika wants that! That looks very bitchy! Onii-san...do it with Megumi-chan...No with me and Megumi-nee-chan!」

S-Shimai Donburi...?⁵

Even in this case?...

「That's right...Let's get along...!」

Megu decides it by herself...!

No...What will happen to me tonight...?!

「Sorry to obstruct your happy talk but...we have to think on how to get out of this hotel first...!」

Margo-san who's been silent until now has said with a laugh...
...Eh?

Won't we stay here for tonight...?!

「I think that Maika-chan's Ojii-chan, Ichikawa-san is checking the file we sent him. He should be making sure if what Minaho said is true. Of course, the head of Shirasaka house should be checking the situation of Shirasaka Sousuke」

...Un

「Mr. Viola has seen Minaho took Yoshida-kun and Megumi-chan to this hotel.」 Those people doesn't know Minaho's true character but...there's a lot of people from the underground who knows the relationship of this hotel to Minaho」

That's certainly true.

The underground facility of this hotel is also a part of 『Kuromori』...

「It's unthinkable for them to be able to investigate that far within one hour... But if ever they know that we're in this hotel...what do you think Ichikawa-san will do?」

Minaho-neesan being here means...
Of course, Maika will be here as well.

「...They're going to send Special forces to this hotel」

...Eh?

「...Real talk, it might not be real special forces but there exists a party similar to that. Ichikawa-san should know people in the underground...and having contact with those people isn't that hard」

S-Seriously?!

「Therefore...we cannot shut ourselves in this hotel forever. Either way, Cesario Viola's people are surrounding the hotel. They're just waiting for us to come out of here」

「Then...Isn't it dangerous to get out right now?!」

Margo-san laughed.

「It's dangerous to get out...and it's dangerous to shut ourselves as well. Above all, I want to return to the mansion soon. I'm worried about Nei who we left behind...!」

...That's right.

『Kuromori』mansion which is our stronghold is the most aimed by the danger...!

「Well, the security there is on fortress level...I don't think they can easily break through it...」

...Nei-san!

「Don't panic...Yoshida-kun. We've taken measures on it. You don't need to worry...」

Minaho-neesan told me.

「We'll hear Ichikawa-san's response first. We'll be changing our next schemes from those...!」

「That's right...we'll be on standby in this room until the next call」

Margo-san said.

I took at the clock of the new phone I accepted a while ago...

It has been only 15 minutes since the call with Maika's grandfather.

There's still 45 minutes

117. Escape

Minaho-neesan and others are gathering information during the little time before the second call with Maika's grandfather.

Minaho-neesan, Margo-san, Katsuko-nee...all of them are operating their own laptops.

Minaho-neesan is on Maika's grandfather's movements...

Margo-san is on the people employed by Mr. Viola...

Katsuko-nee is checking the surveillance cameras outside the hotel...

「It's no good...There's someone on the lookout on each exits」

Katsuko-nee muttered...

「Each exits...?」

When I asked...

「The main entrance is obvious, the gate at the underground parking and the tenant use gates as well... There are several people watching over it. There are two to three cars on standby. Once we get out, they'll come after us immediately」

Uwa. Aren't they completely surrounding us in the hotel...?!

「Can't we have the suppliers going in and out the hotel? For example, the couriers. Since this is a big hotel, there should be a lot of luggage sent off. Shouldn't we sneak into the trucks?」

Maika told Katsuko-nee.

...But...

「That's no good...Those kinds of car have fixed time for collection and delivery. The night schedule has already ended」

Minaho-neesan answered.

「Also...It's unthinkable for the courier service people who don't even know us get on their truck. Those kind of people have carrying the luggage to the specified destination on time as their top priority. They would refuse even if you

offer them a million. They don't want to lose their daily work for just a million」

Margo-san rejects Maika's opinion...

「Ah...It seems that the other side thought the same thing as Maika-san. There's one disguised as courier service invading the hotel. They got caught by the security immediately however...」

Katsuko-nee says while looking at the monitor.

「This level of hotel have the guards know who are the suppliers coming in and out... No matter how much you camouflage it, it would be found out immediately」

「But, Margo-san...if they pretended to be guests, can they refuse?」

Megu asked Margo-san.

「Well yeah. You can enter the lobby and restaurant freely but the hotel employee checks if a person seems to be suspicious without fail. Fortunately, since they have caused a commotion in the reception desk a while ago, the police seems to have come as well. They cannot do anything unreasonable」

「But...What if they go up the guests rooms without permission...?」

「It's impossible to come to the guest rooms if the visitor haven't checked in the hotel. If the person tries to take the elevator without permission, the bellboy will ask him 『Which room are you going?』 Those who answer ambiguously will never be able to pass through so don't worry」

Margo-san answered.

「Employees of this kind of hotel are educated severely so that they won't neglect being cautious of suspicious people. If not, don't you think that thieves, perverts, and con artists can enter easily? It's used for crime syndicate meetings...」

Sensei supplements.

I see...This hotel has a check system on the visitors of this hotel.

「But...If those people normally goes to the reception desk and rented a room...They won't be able to refuse to let them in the guest floors won't they?」

Maika said in worry.

「The hotel shouldn't be able to refuse someone as long as there's no reason」

...T-Then?

「Therefore...At the moment we escaped in here, the hotel is now 『No vacancies today』 It's not a lie. I've reserved all of the vacant rooms. That will make them not know which room we escaped in...!」

As expected...Minaho-neesan is really careful.

If there's 『No vacancies』, then it's inevitable to refuse them...

「...Katsuko-san, about how many people are observing the hotel right now...?」

Margo-san asked Katsuko-nee while staring at her own laptop...

「...Let's see. Counting the people in the entrance and in the car, I think it's around 5 people? There's around 70 people including the people in the lobby and the restaurant...!

Katsuko-nee analyzes.

「I understood it when a member of those guys were caught by the security guard in the underground. Well, that's the most underling on the structure of the syndicate. But, if you understand the end, you can know who their 『parents』are Mr. Viola's partner...!

...Margo-san?

「Yeah...There's not much of people who does unreasonable tasks like this. We're able to identify it somehow. The scale of that organization can move as well」

Margo-san smiled at us.

「...Perhaps, the number of people that has been surrounding the hotel right now is the limit of the people their organization can move. If ever there's a different unit moving, it would be ten people at most...!」

...Then that means?

「If we can escape the people who are surrounding us in the hotel...we'll be able to buy time. The other side still doesn't know Yoshida-kun's connection

with us...」

「However...Isn't it very difficult to escape from this hotel without being noticed...?」

Maika asks Margo-san...

「Maika-san...Do you know 『Fire Services Act』?」

Minaho-neesan asks Maika.

「...Yes?」

「Whenever you try to start some sort of business...『Fire Services Law』will make sure that you have three fire exits without fail. When there's a fire, you can't go out the exit that's surrounded by fire don't you think?...That's why there's three. In case of bad shops, they only open the fire exit when there's an inspection from the fire station, usually, they put luggage in there so people cannot pass...」

Minaho-neesan smiled.

「That said...I always prepare three means of escape whenever it is. Also, having different directions...and the same exit path, if you ever can't use one, you can still have the other...」¹

So that's how it is...

「...My, it's about time. Should we make a call with Ichikawa-san?」

Sensei said while looking at the time in the monitor.



「...Hello, It's Kuromori」

『...Umu, I was waiting for your call』

I can hear Maika's grandfather through the speaker of the phone...

「Have you seen the file I've sent you...?」

『I haven't seen all of it but I've understood the summary. Sousuke-kun definitely belonged to your 『Organization』and have done a considerably wicked thing...!』

「Since he's only using it as a mean to release his own personal sexual desires... The 『Organization』doesn't favor him at all. Also...He's a person with quite a

strong abnormal perverted taste」

『I also see that. Just what kind of human he is...! I have asked my subordinate about their relationship with him and I've confirmed it. They have used your 『Organization』and have done shameful acts...they will definitely be fired』

「...That is Ichikawa-sama's freedom to do so. Our target is only Mr. Shirasaka Sousuke in the end...」

『...You do not intend to fight the Shirasaka house, do you?』

「Yes...We do not intend to harm Shirasaka Sousuke nor Mr. Sousuke's wife who is Ichikawa-sama's daughter...!」

Minaho-neesan grins...

『What will happen to Youko's daughter, Yukino and Maika?』

「That...our opinions are divided as well」

Minaho-neesan answered.

「Among our people...There are those who were forcibly kidnapped and turned to prostitute by Mr. Shirasaka Sousuke...became pregnant...and was made to be unable to give birth once again. There's not just one who's holding deep hatred on Mr. Shirasaka Sousuke as he establishes a happy home while they receive such treatment」

『But...Kuromori-san, you're the boss aren't you? Can you not unify the will of your organization for your own?』

「Haa」Minaho-neesan snorted.

「Ichikawa-sama...The person who has a body that cannot give birth anymore is me」

The heavy silence continued for a while.

「...I was at the same age as Yukino-sama back then. I was forced to prostitution when I was 16...and my body became unable to bear a child anymore. My little sister, Mr. Shirasaka Sousuke has brought an unlicensed doctor and resulted to my little sister's death. My lost little sister is hardly different from Maika-sama right now...!」

『...But...Weren't you Kuromori Kouichiro's daughter?』

Minaho-neesan answered calmly.

「As I was saying a while ago. Mr. Shirasaka Sousuke is a person with a very abnormal perversion... My father is the same. He was pleased raping his middle school daughter and forcing her to prostitution... We were treated like slaves my men all the time. There's no 『Woman』in our 『Organization』that doesn't feel grudge towards Mr. Shirasaka Sousuke. We waited for years to have an opportunity to extract revenge on Mr. Shirasaka Sousuke...」

『...So, I finally saw the whole picture of the situation. I see...You're also a woman of the organization...』

「Yes. Therefore...we will never hand over Mr. Shirasaka Sousuke for money compensation. We will completely destroy Mr. Shirasaka Sousuke...!」

『Understood...I will tell your intent to Shirasaka house』

「...Thank you in advance」

『But...Can you overlook my daughter and granddaughters...?!』

It looks like old man Ichikawa seems that he won't let that go...

「Well...It will be discussed after Shirasaka house suspends their hostile acts at us...!」

Minaho-neesan rejects...

「Ichikawa-sama...what's your schedule for tomorrow?」

『...I'll leave it to you. I'll match whatever schedule you want as Maika's taken as a hostage』

「Then...At 11A.M. please come to Yukino-sama's school」

『...Yukino's school?』

「Yes...Along with your daughter. Having Yukino's grandfather and mother coming to her school won't be too strange」

『...But』

「Oh...I'm an official teacher of that school」

『...What do you mean?』

「Yukino-sama's school...is a part of our 『Organization』...」

『The school Yukino is going...did you pull the strings? Are you aiming at Yukino?』

As expected...Maika's grandfather is sharp.

「Certainly not...Yukino-sama has entered our school by coincidence. Rather

than coincidence...Mr. Shirasaka Sousuke has recommended it when Yukino-sama was searching for a school. Thinking that our high school is convenient in various ways...」

Minaho-neesan gives the impression that it was Shirasaka Sousuke's decision.

『...I see. If that is what you say』

Old man Ichikawa reluctantly consents...

「Then, we will be waiting in the principal's office 11 AM tomorrow...!」

『Please wait...Please give the phone to Maika』

Minaho-neesan handed the phone to Maika.

「Hello...It's Maika!」

『Maika...It's just for tonight...I'll definitely save you tomorrow...!』

「You don't need to worry that much, I'm fine! Everyone's a good people... They're really kind to me...!」

『...When we come back, Ojii-chan will listen to everything Maika wants. I'll buy you anything you want...!』

「Maika doesn't need anything! Oh right. You haven't told Onee-chan about Maika, don't you?」

『That's right...I haven't talked to Yukino just as you have told me. I also forbid Youko to speak...』

「I'm glad...If Onee-chan starts complaining, it won't end!」

『...Are you sure you haven't experienced any cruelty? Are you okay?』

「I was scared at first...I thought that they'll hurt me...but I'm fine. I'm getting along with everyone...!」

『Anyway...Endure for a while, I'll take you home tomorrow...!』

「Un...Sorry, Ojii-chan. I made you worry」

『No it's fine...I'll do anything for your sake...!』

The old man stopped talking...

「Geez, make that kind of voice Ojii-chan. I'm really sorry. Maika's sorry for being a bad girl. I'm sorry...!」

Maika's holding tears in her eyes.

『No...Sousuke-kun's at fault. Maika didn't do anything wrong...!』

「That's not it...Maika's really a bad girl! That's why this happened! Sorry! Ojii-chan, I'm sorry!」

Maika cried.

As expected...a middle school girl's heart will be crushed by a situation like right now.

「...Yoshi-kun」

Megu pushes my back...

...Un

I embraced Maika's body.

Maika's body trembled for a moment then relaxed afterwards.

Minaho-neesan took the phone from Maika.

「Ichikawa-sama...would that be okay?」

『...Yes, understood. I'll leave Maika to you』

「She won't get any discomfort...!」

『Can you have her call her mother later...?!』

「Sadly...It's about time we move from our current location.」 I think it's about time Ichikawa-sama learns where we are right now...」

『...Yes. I know which hotel you are right now』

He's able to check it in such a short time.

「Therefore...We will be moving to a different location. I'm sorry but there will be no contact until tomorrow, please understand」

『I see...You're from the underground. You see through all of our cards』

「Isn't Ichikawa-sama the same?」

Minaho-neesan counterattacks.

「Then...I will look forward to seeing you tomorrow」

『...I will say it again, I leave Maika to you』

「...Yes. We will try to return her safely...!」

Minaho-neesan hang up the phone...



「Margo, Katsuko...What do you think?」

Minaho-neesan has asked the opinion of the two immediately.

「It's a 50-50 right now...They don't seem to be lying, but. I think they have already prepared a rescue team for Maika-chan. They don't trust Minaho's words」

「But...I think that it is a good restrain on Shirasaka family. But, I don't think that the head of Shirasaka house will give up on Shirasaka Sousuke just from the advice of Ichikawa-sama...」

「No, in this case, it's enough to just have Shirasaka house and Ichikawa house having an awkward relationship. It will be a groundwork for the future...」

...I see

「But...They already know which hotel we're in」

「Well...we purposely used the hotel telephone to be found out」

Eh...Margo-san?

「Even if she introduces herself as 『Kuromori Minaho』there's no way to confirm it you know? If we make call in this hotel...they can immediately discover the relationship of Minaho and this hotel...It will be a proof that the person calling is really 『Kuromori Minaho』 Well, that won't be a complete evidence」

Is that how it is?

「Also...Ichikawa-san doesn't know that we're being surrounded by a crime syndicate in this hotel. If he does, he won't make that kind of reaction. He'll be able to use it as a card for negotiations」

Margo-san explained.

「Anyway...we're going to escape from here. The situation would only turn worse if we stay in here...」

Minaho-neesan said

Un...He knows that we're in this hotel all this time...

Ichikawa-san's subordinates will be coming over in addition to the people who are surrounding us outside...the people of Shirasaka house will come when Ichikawa-san contacts them...

We would lose our means of escape than now...

「...Then, let's get out of the room. Everyone, get ready」

Margo-san and Katsuko-san closes their laptops when Minaho-neesan said that.

Megu gathers the luggage.

「...Maika, are you okay?」

I asked Maika while embracing her.

...Maika.

「Un...I'm already fine Onii-san.

...Even though it's a lie.

Maika's body is still trembling.

I know as I'm holding her.

I kissed Maika's lips...

「..... ? ! 」

Maika got surprised for a moment, but still, she accepted my tongue.
Maika's trembling stopped while our tongues twined with each other.

When we part our lips, Maika sighed out.

「...Puha! That's cruel, Onii-san...」

「What is?」

「...You forcibly kissed Maika」

「...You hate it?」

「No...But, I want you to tell it when you're going to do it」

「Then, I'm going to do it again」

「...Eh?」

「...I'm kissing you」

「...Got it」

We kissed once again.



We go down to the second floor using a business use elevator.
Then, we returned to the underground facility using the secret elevator from a while ago.

Does this basement have a secret passage leading somewhere?

「When this hotel was built...All of the blocks have been redeveloped」

Minaho-neesan told us while walking the long corridor.

「Therefore the underground of the infrastructures are connected with the neighboring buildings」

I-I see.

「Then, there's a passage for maintenance?」

When I asked...

「No way...If there's that sort of passage, they'll surely know that there's a loophole」

Margo-san laughs.

「They'll be able to come freely from the other buildings then」

...Eeeeh?!

「Then...Where are we going?」

「Well you see」

Margo-san, opens the iron door on the way of the corridor.

Inside is...a wide spaced machine room.

There's big pipes on the wall and ceilings.

Is this electricity, gas, or water?...It's hard to know.

There are pipes where people can walk through as well...

「There's four big pipes here」

「...Yes」

「One of them is a fake」

...Fake?

「Actually, it's not connected with the other pipes. It connect straight to the next building.

We're going in here」

Margo-san removed the cover of one of the pipes.

I see, we can enter here.

Margo-san crawls ahead with a flashlight in hand.

「The floor is curved circular so walk carefully. There are holes here and there so don't worry about oxygen shortage. It's dark so take care」

We go through a narrow space that would seem to hit adult on the head when they stand up.

The air feels bad in the pipe. It has a bad smell.

Margo-san goes ahead while lighting the front.

Katsuko-nee is having troubles since she's carrying a laptop and baggage on both shoulders.

Megu and Maika are walking ahead of me holding hands.

Megu is holding the shopping bag with her dress. Maika's holding a small luggage.

I advance while holding the three bags we brought from Megu's house.

Minaho-neesan from the endmost light up our steps with a flashlight.

We advanced through the pipe for 20 minutes.

Finally, Margo-san finds the exit.

「Un...This is the exit」

Margo-san goes out the pipe by herself.

As expected, it's dark here too.

「...It's okay. Come out one by one」

We get out one by one as told.

We're in the underground machine room of a different building it seems.

I can hear vibrating sounds in the dark space.

「Everyone's out...I think the exit is this way」

Again, Margo-san advances in the dark.

We reached an iron door again...

It's not locked...It opened immediately.

Though the next room is dark as well...

「Ah...I'm turning on the lights」

Margo-san turned on the switch on the wall.

The fluorescent lamp flickers...

We've been in the dark all this time so it's dazzling 「Lol, everyone's having an awful face...!」

Maika laughed.

Everyone's covered with dust...

「Maika's the same」

I said and laughed at Maika.

「Hey...Wipe off the dust!」

Maika pats the back of my uniform!

「Wait wait, Maika-chan...! There's still dust in here so do that outside!」

Margo-san told Maika while coughing.

「Ah...Sorry!」

Maika bows.

When I look around...this is an emergency use storage.

There are lots of card board boxes queued in a shelf.

This must be a room where no one usually enters.

「This way」

Margo-san shows a door on the depths.

When we opened the door...it was the parking lot of a building.

The scent of outside air...

「There's no doubt...That's the hotel building on the other side.」

MArgo-san confirmed...

「I assumed before that we will be arriving here. I have two cars prepared on this parking lot」

...I'm glad.

We somehow managed to escape.

「Then, Maika will dust you off!」

Maika hits my school uniform lightly.

I also took off the dust on Maika's hair...

Megu is on Minaho-neesan...

Katsuko-nee's dusting off Margo-san.

「...I want to go to bath soon」

I agree with Maika's opinion.

There's two light van Margo-san prepared beforehand.

As I thought, it has the 『Maruko Printing』in it.

「...Then, Margo and Katsuko will return to the mansion. I will be taking the children with me」

Minaho-neesan issues instructions

「Eh...We're not returning to the mansion?」

「Yes...It would be dangerous if we all return. The three of you will stay on a different location tonight」

Minaho-neesan said.

「You will go to school directly tomorrow from there. Therefore take only what's necessary for tomorrow. Leave everything else on Margo's car...」

「Okay got it」

Megumi who has the most luggage has replied to Minaho-neesan...

118. Fugitives

「...Then, I'll keep the dress and shoes. Is there no need for resizing?」

Katsuko-nee takes the dress Megu just bought...

「Yes, I tried it on properly」

Megu answered bashfully.

「I will look for the accessories that will fit this. It's Misuzu-san's symposium after all. You must dress up...!」

Katsuko-nee smiles.

「Thank you very much...」

Megu bows to Katsuko-nee...

「Megumi-chan, that's great...What will Maika wear?」

Maika asked but...

Don't ask about clothes...You're currently 『Kidnapped』you know?

「Tomorrow's blouse and uniform for tomorrow...and the underwear was bought a while ago...」

Megu took out what she needs from the bag and stuffed it to another bag.
But...What should I do?

I don't have anything prepared but my school uniform.

Ah...We bought only underwear a while ago.

「I'll have your change of clothes delivered tomorrow morning」

Katsuko-nee said

「No, it's fine. I can just reuse the shirt I'm wearing...!」

「That's no good! If you don't clean it...Megumi will be the one laughed at!」

Minaho-neesan scolded me...!

「What other things we should put in your bag?」

When Katsuko-nee asked me.

「Ah...It's okay being empty. Tomorrow's the medical checkup」

「Really...It saves us that there would be no classes」

Minaho-neesan said heartily.

Anyway, the luggage is moved to Margo-san and Katsuko-nee's car...

「Please take care...There might be people who are monitoring the mansion as well」

When I say that, Margo-san...

「We have to make sure. Mr. Viola's people might not yet reach us but...
Shirasaka house's people might've already intruded」

「...Would it be okay?」

I'm worried at Nei-san who's left behind the mansion.

「It's okay...the road to the mansion is a private one. That's why the roads are closed down. If they try to get through it forcibly, they would be trespassing.
People from the security would come over them immediately」

「But...won't that be troublesome for the people who live around the mansion?」

Margo-san laughs.

「Our mansion is a small hill...there's six houses around the mansion but
there's no one living there」

「...Eh?」

「Ah...There's only one underground worker living in there. There's only two of
the six houses that has an exit directly outside the street. There's a western-
style painter-teacher living there」

「It's Hama-san...He's a trustworthy teacher so I'm lending it to him」

Minaho-neesan supplements Margo-san.

「Un. It's a camouflage. The other five has documents of people living in there.
I'm supposed to be living in one of the houses there」

Margo-san is...?!

「That's right...Whenever I try to go out somewhere alone, I go out of that
house on purpose. Ah, the six houses are all connected on the underground
passage...Hama-san doesn't know it though」

...That means?

「We come out of the houses except the one Hama-san lives in. We come back to the mansion from there. Nei will be moving to my house for tonight. I will be sticking with Nei for a while. I'll leave the mansion to Katsuko-san and Morimoto-san...」

「...It can't be helped. Someone has to play as the watchdog...」

Katsuko-nee sighs...

「Also...we cannot let Agnes-sama get hungry」

...Agnes?

Minaho-neesan's...『Sixth Toy』?!

「Eh!...There's someone named Agnes in the mansion?!」

「Yes. She's underground...!」

...Minaho-neesan?

Underground?

If I recall, it was the confinement room isn't it?

「I wonder what kind of meal Nei made?」

「If you ask that, I left Nei-sama with something I prepared」

Katsuko-nee answered Minaho-neesan with a calm face...

「Agnes-sama won't eat meals unless Nei-sama or I deliver it」

I heard that Agnes is Shirasaka Sousuke's daughter whom he produced to satisfy his own desire...

She has been confined underground all this time...she wasn't allowed to go to school either...

「Why is she in the underground? Is she confined?」

Maika asks Minaho-neesan.

Minaho-neesan...

「Maika-san...Your secret sister isn't just Megumi...!」

Maika trembles in surprise...!

「You have another...a little sister...!」

Minaho-neesan...calmly said.

「...T-That's」

Maika's face looks confused.

「Her name is Agnes. Just Agnes. She's not in the census. She's been in the basement since her birth」

「...Why?」

Minaho-neesan thought for a while...then answered.

「Maika-san...Do you know 『Tale of Genji's』『Murakashi』?」

Maika...

「We took lessons on Tale of Genji but I don't know the detail」

Same...

I think it's the story of Yoritomo Minamoto defeating Heike and establishes Kamakura Shogunate 「To make it simple...Hikari Genji has kidnapped a girl named Murasaki and raised her up to a woman of his taste」

Huh...What about Yoritomo? Yoshitsune and Benkei?

「A man's ideal...making his own daughter he raised as a 『Woman』of his taste...!」

Maika's eyes opened wide.

「There's no way my Papa...?!」

Minaho-neesan speaks as if sighing...

「That's right...Shirasaka Sousuke created a daughter of his taste...and wants to make that daughter his toy. That's why Agnes is confined. Since she was born」

Maika trembles.

...Shit.

Katsuko-nee and Megu embraces Maika from the back...

「In the first place...It was my grandfather's thought plan but...he didn't make it real. It's just a mere play...a delusion of an old man. Shirasaka Sousuke has carried that out. For the sake of his own lust...!」

What a cruel man.

「Furthermore...Shirasaka Sousuke thought that he wants to have sex with his own daughter...therefore Agnes' mother is a French...a very beautiful person. She was forced to give birth to Shirasaka Sousuke's daughter when she was 17... That was 12 years ago」

12 years...Agnes has been underground for that long time...?!

「...Pulled away from her mother, not having any friends...she didn't receive anything even proper education. She's just taught nothing but to love Shirasaka Sousuke...!」

Is that something a human does?

To his own daughter...

「Agnes-sama can understand words but she doesn't know letters. She can't write nor read. The only man she had contact with is Shirasaka Sousuke. Shirasaka has shown Agnes since she was young sex videos. While saying 『You're going to do this with your Papa soon』」

Katsuko-nee talks about Shirasaka's evildoing with an expression of hatred...

「Afterwards...A lot of things happened to the mansion. Autumn last year, Shirasaka and Agnes didn't have any contact. Ojou-sama protected her. Fortunately...Agnes-sama's body isn't defiled by Shirasaka yet」

「He was looking forward on taking her virginity when she becomes 13 years old...!」

「Yes...ojou-sama. That is all we can do to save her」

Katsuko-nee sighs.

「Shirasaka...is planning to have Agnes give birth to his child...!」

Minaho-neesan looked at me.

「My little sister...Naomi died because she was pregnant too young. That seems to have become a trauma on Shirasaka as well. Therefore...He endures not having sex until the body grows up to some degree. That man will never give contraceptives to the women he rapes...!」

...That's absurd!

There's such a man living in this world!

「Is Agnes-chan really Maika's little sister?」

Maika asked Minaho-neesan...

「Yes...that's right」

Minaho-neesan looked straight at Maika's eyes and answered.

「...I want to meet Agnes-chan」

Maika muttered sadly.

「...Yes, please see her. That girl has never met a girl at the same age as Maika-san」

「That's right...with me and Nei-sama bringing her meals...Other than Ojou-sama and Ikeda-sensei who does her house call, no one talks to her...」

「She won't talk to me」

Minaho-neesan said sadly.

「She hardly talks to me too. She seems to be talking with Nei-sama to some extent...」

...Right

「Before Katsuko-san took care of her...Shirasaka Sousuke's hired people are really cruel on women... Only her meals are modulated, she doesn't do anything...and she's always expressionless. They sometimes beat Agnes too」

「I've dismissed them...there was a record of them beating up Agnes in the surveillance cameras」

Minaho-neesan answers Margo-san.

「Agnes-chan...she's pitiful...!」

Maika clings to Katsuko-nee having a tearful look.

「That's right. Next time, how about Yoshida-kun or Megumi bring meals to Agnes...?!」

Minaho-neesan told us.

「That's right Ojou-sama...I think that's a good thought...!」

Katsuko-nee keeps nodding.

「...Maika will take care of her too」

...Maika

「Agnes-chan is Maika's little sister. Maika have to help raising her...!」



The two car separates path.

The first car has Margo-san and Katsuko-nee.

The second car has Minaho-neesan, me, Megu and Maika...

Minaho-neesan is on the driver's seat and I'm on the passenger's

The two others are on the back seat...

「Yoshida-kun...Your school uniform stands out so take it off」

Certainly...It would be strange to be wearing a school uniform while riding on the passenger seat of 『Maruko Print』

I took off my school uniform and I'm now just wearing my T-shirt 「Open the dashboard and there should be disguises put by Margo」

I opened it as told and take a look at it...There are various hats, fake glasses, and neckties 「I'll take that hat. Yoshida-kun, wear the glasses an necktie...the two of you, hide yourselves until I say that it's okay...!」

「...Okay」

Megu answered as a representative.

The two of them covers themselves with the blanket in the car.

I put on the glasses but the necktie...!

「...What are you doing?!」

Minaho-neesan reaches out and tied my necktie...!

...Wow 「...What's wrong?」

「No...Minaho-neesan's good at tying neckties」

...Sensei is

「When I was a child...it was my daily work to tie my grandfather's necktie every morning...」

...Eh?

「Not just my Kuromori grandfather...Yuzuki...My maternal grandfather as well. I lived with them when I was in elementary. Speaking of which, I wasn't able to go to my grandfather's funeral...」

Minaho-neesan...was abducted by Shirasaka Sousuke, and made a woman of 『Kuromori』

「...Let's visit the grave along with everyone」

I told Minaho-neesan.

「...Right... Once we finish everything」

Minaho-neesan starts the engine of the car...



From the underground parking lot...to the night town...

Two cars come out from the other side of the hotel we were from a while ago.

We separate from Margo-san's car on the first intersection...

Then our car has kept running for ten minutes.

「It's okay now...There doesn't seem to be any car following us」

Hearing Minaho-neesan, the two from the backseat comes out of the blanket.

「...That was hot」

Maika had beads of sweat flowing on her head and nose.

Megu breathes deeply...

「Let's take a break. I want to make a call...」

Minaho-neesan stops the car in the parking lot of a 24/7 supermarket

「Yoshida-kun...sorry to ask but go with everyone shopping. It's troublesome if we get hungry so buy some drinks and snacks. I think Katsuko will deliver meals by tomorrow morning」

Saying that, Minaho-neesan handed me money.

「It's fine. I still have some money left...」

Yeah...There's still 10k yen left from our shopping a while ago...

「It's okay. This is 『Necessary expenses』so you don't need to use your money」

Minaho-neesan forces the 5k yen bill to my hand...

「...Be careful of your surroundings. I don't think someone would still be following us but...there's no loss on being careful...!」

「...Okay」

When I was putting on my school uniform and the 『Beat up Stick』on my sleeve.

「...Onii-san, what's that?」

「N?...It's 『Beat up stick』」

「...Beat up stick?」

「That's right...It's something like a weapon for the time being」

「Hee」

Maika opens her mouth wide in surprise

「Then, we're going」

The three of us steps out of the car...and Minaho-neesan starts her call.

「...Ah, hello, it's me. Can I stay over your hotel tonight...?!」

Who is she talking with...?

「...Thank you. That helps me a lot」

Anyway...It seems that our location for tonight is decided.

「Hey...Onii-san, let's go!」

Maika rushes me.

「Yeah...Got it」

Megu holds my hand like natural from the side.

「Yoshi-kun, let's go...!」

「Un...」

I hold hands with Megu and go to the supermarket



「You're buying too much...Maika-chan!」

Megu is angry at the shopping bag turned to a mountain of snacks.
Inside the 24/7 supermarket.

It's very bright.

But...There's hardly any shoppers.

「We're only buying for tonight so it's a waste to leave anything behind」
「If there's leftovers...Maika will just eat it tomorrow...」
「Geez, saying such a thing...If you really want it then you can just buy it next time」

Maika...

「Well...Maika won't be able to go outside for a while...!」

Right...

Maika's setting is 『Kidnapped』isn't it?

Megu paused for a moment.

「At least return half of it Also, if ever you really want something then Yoshi-kun and I will buy it...we promise」

...Maika

「...Okaaay~」

Saying that, she returned the snacks to the shelf.

「Also...You shouldn't eat chocolate and those with high calories at night」
「Eh...Is that so, Megumi-chan?」

「That's right...I don't care if you get pimples」

「Uwa, then I don't need it! I'll stop eating chocolates!」

Somehow...They look like real sisters.
No...They're real sisters though.

「Just get at least one chocolate」

I said.

「...Why, Yoshi-kun?」

「Well...Choco has calories so it's good as emergency provisions. That's why let's

have at least one」

「Then, let's go with the normal chocolate bar」

「Yeah...please」

Also, let's buy 1.5L drink.

Maika said that a sweet juice would be good...

「You can't drink sweets after brushing your teeth!」

With Megu-neesan's words, it became oolong tea.

In exchange, Maika bought 500mL.

「Toothpaste and towels?」

Maika looks at us

「We don't need it. Guessing from Minaho-san's phone call, we will be staying on some hotel. Hotels have toothbrush and towels」

...Is that so?

We don't need any luggage...

「Hey...Megumi-chan」

Maika said

「Can we really trust Yuzuki-san?」

...Maika?

「...I heard her from her talk with Maika's grandfather...」

Maika looks down.

「Yuzuki-san...refers herself as 『Kurumori』...」

Megu answers Maika.

「Minaho-neesan...is the same as me」

「...Eh?」

「She's not the daughter of the father's legal wife. 『Kuromori』is her father's house...and 『Yuzuki』is the mother's house's name. Therefore, she usually introduces herself as 『Yuzuki』」

Hearing that answer, Maika...

「Then...What's the 『Organization』? Yuzuki-san said that she's the boss of an 『Organization』 Saying that Maika's Papa is a member...!

Maika's clever for a child.
Rather...She's too intelligent.

「Originally...『Kuromori』is a prostitution ring. Minaho-san's grandfather.
That's when Minaho-san's father and Shirasaka-san took it over」

「...Took it over?」

「That's right. Then...they did all the selfish things they want. Minaho-san, has lived with her mother in a place with her little sister those days...they didn't have any relationship with the organization」

「...But」

「Minaho-san and the little sister who's unrelated to it...was forcibly raped by Shirasaka-san and turned to prostitutes. After that, it was Minaho-san's story...」

「Then...Why is she now the 『Boss』?」

Maika still can't understand.

「Well you see...Minaho-neesan made her body a mess, and turned her body to be unable to give birth again...and was moved from prostitution to managing」

Can she understand my explanation?

「...Managing?」

「Yeah...Shirasaka Sousuke's management is quite unreasonable so the prostitution ladies had asked the influential guests. They hope to have a person from their people to be put in the management. Then...Minaho-neesan has then changed to managing the organization. Minaho-neesan, is a descendant of the founder of 『Kuromori』...A former prostitute, so she knows what is the problem and how to improve it...」

「Then like that, Minaho-san managed the 『Organization』...and showed better results gradually. Then one day...She took hold of the whole 『Organization』」

「To be specific...it was to drive out Shirasaka Sousuke」

「Minaho-san is 28 years old...so she has retired from prostitution when she was 16. Therefore, she has been planning about her revenge on Shirasaka-san for 12 years... While watching prostitutes sacrificed to Shirasaka-san...!」

Megu's eyes are wet.

「...What's wrong, Megumi-chan?」

「Maika-chan...You see. I lived with the prostitutes until I was six. My mother was abducted Shirasaka-san...and turned to a prostitute. I was born in the brothel and grew up there. Everyone's a kind person. Everyone's talking together...and taught me on my studies. Therefore...I never ended up like Agnes-san...!」

Megu's eyes have tears spilling from it

「...No...That's not it. I think Shirasaka-san has confined Shirasaka-san underground because I was raised like that. Not meeting anyone...and become his own doll...!」

Megu...is educated by the prostitutes so she wasn't raised to be tainted... Shirasaka, has isolated Agnes underground...?

「When I hear about earlier, I was surprised. I was sure that when I was small...there was a foreigner. A milky blonde hair...a very beautiful person. I remember the day when she give birth to a child... But, I haven't seen the baby...And the mothers said 『She was brought by someone』...she has always been underground...under the mansion...!!!」

...I embraced Megu.

「It's okay...We'll save Agnes」

「...Yoshi-kun?」

「Agnes is...Megu and Maika's little sister...!」

「...Un」

Megu nodded slightly.

「Maika...Minaho-neesan told you earlier this but...we cannot tell anything more than this. This isn't to fool Maika but the shock would be too much. We'll tell you everything little by little...」

「...Onii-san」

「Even with her exchange with Maika's grandfather...Even in the underground... Minaho-neesan tells the truth to Maika little by little. I think she's taking care that Maika might just panic when she tells everything at once...」

「...Is that so?」

「I think so too...Minaho-san is clumsy but she's really gentle...!」

Megu told Maika.

「But...Once the time comes, she'll tell you everything...」

I promised Maika.

「At that time...what will become of Maika?」

Maika muttered worriedly

「That doesn't matter!...Maika-chan is my little sister!」

Megu tells Maika strongly.

「...Megumi-chan!」

「Whatever happens...it won't change that we're sisters. I will protect Maika-chan whatever happens...!」

Maika jumps to Megu's chest.

「Sorry...Megumi-oneechan. Maika's saying selfish things...!」

「...It's okay, aren't we sisters?」

Then...Megu looked at me.

「Yoshi-kun too」

「...Eh?」

「We're Yoshi-kun's 『woman』 for our entire life. I don't mind Yoshi-kun loving girls other than me. If you come to hate me then just throw me away anytime. But, Megu will love Yoshi-kun forever. That's what I decided on. I'll continue to love you forever...!」

Is that love?

Or devotion?

...But.

I have nothing else to do but to accept Megu's thoughts.

「Even I will continue to love you forever... Megu and Maika will always be my 『woman』...!」

Maika looks at me.

「Maika...is not a good girl. I'm selfish, foolish, and ill-natured」
「...That doesn't matter...Maika is Maika...!」
「...Onii-san」

In the corner of a lonely night supermarket...
The three of us embraces each other...

◇ Mana Arc

119. A night for three

「...It's here」

Minaho-neesan enters the car to an alley with bright neon lights.

「Eh...Isn't this?」

Isn't this the so-called love hotel alley?

There are suspicious lodging facilities lined up left and right...

『Lodging』and 『Rest』are shining brightly in the signboards...

Also...『Full/Vacant』signs 「...Uwa! What's this place?」

The middle school girl raises her voice from the backseat.

Minaho-neesan had made a call earlier saying「Can we stay over your hotel?」

「Minaho-san...could it be that the hotel we're going to stay in...?!」

Minaho-neesan's eye smiles at Megu...

「That's right, It's a love hotel...! I thought that it would be crowded because of the consecutive holidays but it's rather not crowded」

「...It's empty?」

「Look, there's a lot lights saying vacant, don't you think?」

...I see

There's a lot of green 'vacancy' than the red 'full occupancy' on the hotels.

「Well, the holiday this year have tomorrow as a weekday...something like that」

I see...so that's why it's not crowded.

「Err...It seems here...!」

Minaho-neesan mutters while looking up the hotel signboards around the center area of the alley.

「Seriously...why name this building 『Hotel de Paris』」

「『Hotel De Paris』...?」

「It's the best hotel in Monaco. Well, there are similar hotels in the world other than Monaco...She took the name from the hotel in Monaco. Yoshida-kun, you do know Monaco, don't you?

「Uhm...Isn't it where the F1 goes round and round?」

Minaho-neesan laughs.

Maika looks amazed.

「Onii-san...It's not that they do F1 there everyday...!」

Ah...Right

I surely thought that it was Monaco's specialty...

「Maika went to Monaco before. During our family summer vacation. It was when I was nine. We didn't stay in 『Hotel de Paris』though」

As expected of a rich lady...

Their family can travel abroad since the house is the director of an advertising agency.

「Then...Papa went to a state casino and never come back until morning. He just sleeps during morning and doesn't take us anywhere. Then, Onee-chan was so angry that it became trouble. Mama seems to have given up from the start though...!」

Maika's eyes turned teary while she is speaking.

She seems to be remembering her family.

...I 「Hee! That's amazing...Did Maika ride an airplane?」

「...Eh, Onii-san haven't?」

Maika looks at me with a blank face.

「...No」

Un...Never since I was born.

「Ah, but I've seen them. When I was in elementary, we went to an airport during a field trip. Jumbo, it was really a Jumbo!」

「...What is that!」

Maika laughs.

Her crying face turned to a smile in no time.

Seriously...Middle school girls change their expressions immediately.

「By the way, Minaho-san...It's in China and yet why is the hotel named 『Paris』?」

I returned to the topic at hand.

「...Eh?」

Maika looks at me with a surprised face...

「Let me ask this Onii-san...do you know where Monaco is?」

Isn't that obvious?

「China...If I recall, it's close to Hongkong」

Maika and Megu looked at each other.

Megu whispers to me.

「Yoshi-kun...That's Macau」

...Macau?

「...Isn't Macau Monaco?」

「...Eh, why?」

「Look, Venezia and Venice are the same thing?」

「Could it be that Yoshi-kun is thinking that Monaco and Macau are the same place?」

「...It's not?」

Maika looks at me with frightening eyes then spoke.

「...It's completely different!」

「Eh? Well...aren't they the one with Casinos and F1 races?」

「Yoshida-kun, Macau does F3」

Minaho-neesan taught me while smiling wryly.

「...What's different with F1 and F3?」

「I think it's the size of the car or the performance of the engine...I don't know much about it either. The people who race wanting to improve stepping up to F1 are F3. Katsuko likes that so ask her」

...I-Is that so?

Speaking of which, she's amazing on the bike...even when driving a car, she goes in an amazing speed.¹ During my car sex with Misuzu...

「Seriously...Onii-san doesn't know anything about it!」

Maika's angry.

「...Sorry」

「It's fine...It's cute for Yoshida-kun to be ignorant on somethings」

Minaho-neesan said while laughing.

「Maika-san and Megumi too...teach Yoshida-kun a lot of things...Yoshida-kun never had someone to talk with all this time...」

「...Okay!」

Megu responded to Minaho-neesan immediately.

「Eh...Onii-san doesn't have friends?²」

「Err...Well」

If I recall...friends I can talk lightheartedly are in the boy's school in the mountain.

I don't know where my elementary friends are...

「You have me right now! Misuzu-san and the others as well」

Megu shouted.

「Therefore, it's fine! Yoshi-kun won't be alone!」

...Megu.

Somehow, I feel like she's praising me while making a fool of me...

Maika...is looking at me with the face not knowing what's going on.

Well...I think there will be an opportunity to talk about myself someday.

「Then...Let's go with this 『Hotel de Paris』that doesn't live up to its name」

Minaho-neesan enters the car to the parking lot of the hotel.

In front of the parking lot of the love hotel, there's a vinyl sheet cut like bamboo screen hang down from above.

Passing through the vinyl sheet...it feels like we're passing through a waterfall,

the car enters the parking lot.

A third of the parking lot is filled 「This is Maika's first time entering a love hotel」

「...Even I'm the same」

「...Even me」

Megu said bashfully.

「Let's get off the car. Bring all of the luggage」

Following Minaho-neesan...We got off the car.

A signboard on the wall says 『Hotel Reception/Front Desk→』

We go towards that direction...

「Not there, Yoshida-kun...!」

...Eh?

「But...They say this is the front Desk?」

「There's no way you can go in a love hotel in your school uniform you know?

There's a middle schoolgirl too. If you bump into other guests at the front desk, what will you do?」

While Minaho-neesan says that...she's observing whether someone would enter from outside the parking lot.

...I see

We stopped outside the hotel...was to not let someone see us enter the hotel, and to know the timing when there's no person inside...

「Anyway...Come this way. I was told that there's a staff entrance at the other side of the building...!」

Carrying our luggage...we follow Minaho-neesan
Certainly...There's a staff entrance.

Minaho-neesan pushed the intercom 『...Yeees?!』

I can hear a voice of a high spirited woman.

『...Ah, Minaho-chi. I'm opening it』

...There must be a surveillance camera.

Minaho-neesan didn't even say a word.

Or rather...This voice...

I feel like I've heard this before...

The staff entrance opened immediately.

「Ooh...I was waiting for you guys!」

Appearing from inside is...Tamayo-san?

A former member of the mansion...?!

「Now now, come in...!」

We were led to an office.

Though there's a fluorescent lamp, it's still a dim office.

There's a normal bureau and cashbox.

...Time card too

The interior was a reception desk of the hotel.

There's one old woman sitting in there...

「...This is Tamayo-san's hotel?」

Megu asks decisively...

「That's right. This is my side business...Or rather, my job?」

...Job?

「I don't earn that much by working as a stylist on the day. Then, I bought this with the money Minaho-chi has given me during my retirement. This is usually the time to leave this to the part timers. Today's a free days so there's no one but me and my mother. That was perfect timing...!」

...Mother?

The old lady sitting in the reception desk turned to us and bowed.

「...I thank you for taking care of Tamayo」

She thanked Minaho-neesan...

「No...I'm the one who's helped by Tamayo-san a lot. I even intruded suddenly today...」

...I see.

Tamayo-san...was deceived by Shirasaka Sousuke and was made a prostitute of

the mansion.

Then...She was able to meet her mother again after retiring...

They're living together now.

「By the way, Minaho-chi...Who's that girl?」

Tamayo-san looks at Maika.

Maika was...

「H-Hello...I'm Shirasaka Maika!」

Tamayo-san got surprised.

「...Shirasaka?」

「That's right...She's Shirasaka Sousuke's daughter」

「Eh...Are you sure with this Minaho-chi?」

Tamayo-san looks at Minaho-neesan.

「...It can't be helped. Yoshida-kun made her his 『woman』」

...Err

...Well

...That's how it is

「And Minaho-chi agrees with that?」

「...My objective is Shirasaka Sousuke. I don't care about the form as long as he suffers」

「...I see. NTRing³ her beloved daughter might be okay then」

NTRing her daughter?

「Either way...he thinks that his daughters are his property. You should show him this child and Yukino having sex...!」

Tamayo-san said hatefully.

「Eh...Onee-chan?!」

...Shit!

Maika still doesn't know that Yukino's been violated already...!

「Right...I want Yukino-san to fall on our trap sooner...!」

Minaho-neesan said out loud in purpose...

Tamayo-san notices it.

「...You're right The order's wrong, having the little sister go before the elder」

...Hmmm.

...Were they able to fool her?

Maika's strangely clever.

「Oh right...Megumi-chan, let me give you something good!」

Saying that, Tamayo-san opens a locker behind her and looks up for something.

「Err...Ah, found it」

...That is.

A new collar-shaped leather chocker.

There's Metallic-green and gold in the box.

「You used the collar your mother used before didn't you? Megumi-chan should have hers. This isn't something that is passed to someone...」

...Certainly

I think it's not good for Megu to take her mother's collar.

Megu won't become a prostitute.

I'll never allow it...

「This is the latest one...There are metal fillings here, look. Then you connect the leash here.」

「...Leash?」

When I asked, Tamayo-san.

「The cord or chains used to tie the dog is a leash! Oh right, I think there's a leash in here as well!」

Tamayo-san took out a long thin chain from the locker...

Metal fixing on one side...and on the other side is a handle that can be held like a phone strap.

It's really like a chains for a dog walk.

「Then...What color would you like Megumi-chan?」

「I'll take the green」

Megumi answered immediately.

「Mother has green before but I'll pick a different shade」

Tamayo-san handed Megu metallic green...

「Here you go!」

「Thank you very much...I'll treasure it」

「This is for you!」

The leash chain was handed to me.

「...Uhm」

Maika looks with wistful eyes from the side...

「Can Maika have the remaining collar?」

「Eh, you want it?」

Tamayo-san looks at Maika.

「Yes...Maika is also Onii-san's 『Woman』」

Tamayo-san glances at me...

「Hmm, it seems you haven't trained her properly?」

「No...training?...」

「Well, doesn't matter...Then, I'll give the gold one to this young lady...!」

「Thank you very much!」

Then...

Megu has the metallic green...

And Maika was handed a gold collar...

「Then...I'll leave them to you」

Minaho-neesan tells Tamayo-san...

「Eh! Minaho-san won't stay together with us?」

Minaho-neesan...

「I'm in charge of everything...I have to return to the mansion. There might be some reports on Ichikawa-san and the head of Shirasaka house...If I'm not there, Margo and others cannot cope with it...」

...Un

As the representative of 『Kuromori』Minaho-neesan is the one talking to different parties...

「I'll let Katsuko pick you up tomorrow at 6:30. They'll take you to school after...Okay?」

「Got it...Take care Minaho-neesan」

「I'll leave the girls to you...!」

「...Un」

I will be alone tonight protecting Megu and Maika.

「Tamayo...please. I'm going to return this debt...!」

「What are you saying?...aren't we like 『Sisters』? Minaho-chi's revenge is our revenge...!」

Tamayo-san smiles at Minaho-neesan.

「Could it be that you're another one of those who experienced cruelty from Papa?」

Maika instinctively asked such a question.

Tamayo-san...

「...That's right. I was made to experience hell on earth. Ten years ago. Your father took the ten years which a woman is on her prime and the time where she should be spending happily...!」

Maika's trembles in surprise...!

「It's not just me...don't forget that there are dozens of women like that. There's a lot who died too...!」

It's not Minaho-neesan and her little sister, and Megu's mother...

「Minaho-chi's not the only one who'd abandon her life thinking of tearing your father limb by limb. I have a mother and child so I cannot cooperate though. I cannot die now...」

...Tamayo-san.

「I won't die for it anymore too」

Minaho-san mutters.

「I thought that I can already die when I finish my revenge on Shirasaka Sousuke... Katsuko and Margo are independent women...I think Nei's problem can be entrusted to Margo to solve. I can leave Yukiyo and Agnes' future to Katsuko...To be honest, I intend to stab Shirasaka house...!」

...Stab?

「We're going to bury a member of Shirasaka clan in darkness...so the other side won't consent unless at least one dies on this side as well...」

Minaho-neesan intended to die all this time...?!

「But...I can no longer die now. I have made my indispensable 『Sisters』 I cannot die until Yoshida-kun and Megumi grows up and becomes independent.

⁴ I have the duty to protect these children...!」

For Minaho-neesan...

Nagisa-san is already independent...

Katsuko-nee and Margo-san are adults with enough power to be independent...

Nei-san, Iwakura-kaichou, and Agnes...they can be entrusted to everyone.

And...Megu and I are still treated like a child.

Wait...What about Misuzu and Maika?

They're not relatives for Minaho-neesan?

「Yoshida-kun, don't make that kind of face...I respect your 『women』 But...I don't treat them as my relative」

Maika's trembling.

「Maika-san...don't ever let go on your hold on Yoshida-kun. If ever you try to betray us...I will be pushing you to the lowest circle of hell...!」

...Minaho-neesan?

「I don't trust you yet as much as you don't trust me yet」

...Minaho-neesan was listening to our conversation from the supermarket a while ago?

Did she attach a wiretap somewhere?

「You're connected to me through 『Yoshida-kun』 If you remove that

connection, I intend to return to my original revenge plan」

Maika snuggles to Megu.

「You can't depend on Megumi...If Megumi has to chose between you or Yoshida-kun, she'll choose Yoshida-kun. Megumi has become Yoshida-kun's 『woman』from the bottom of her heart. The bond of a 『man』and a 『woman』 cannot be destroyed by showing your tears... !」

Lastly...Minaho-neesan looks at me.

「...Yoshida-kun. Think of this as your last chance.」

「...Eh?」

「Make Maika-san completely your 『woman』by tomorrow morning. Calm down the shaking of Maika-san's heart. If not...She'll always be not an ally but not an enemy either, she'll become indecisive...!」

Minaho-neesan sees through the blur of Maika's heart.
The hesitation, impatience...and fear.

「Megumi...Help Yoshida-kun. If you really want to make Maika-san your 『Sister』...then don't be kind to her...!

「...You're right, Minaho-san」

...Megu

「I might've been gentle with Maika-chan thinking that she's still a child」

...Is that so?

...No, I think it is.

I also have been handling Maika like I'm touching a swell before I noticed it...

「...Then, spend the night with the three of you...!」

Minaho-neesan handed us our homework until morning...



「...Well, you probably shouldn't worry about it that much?」

After Minaho-neesan left...Tamayo-san spoke.

「Maika-chan was it?...Did you already have sex with him?」

「Err...2 rape and one normal sex...」

Maika's completely shrunk herself...

「Uwa...you're not going easy as ever. She was a virgin isn't she?」

Tamayo-san looks at me...

「Err...Well, a lot happened」

「Then, what's left is the frequency. Have lots of sex and have your body be compatible with each other」

「...Eh?」

「If your bodies are compatible then you'll go together forever. If not then you'll separate...it would also fail if you try to mix forcibly. And if you don't make it clear...!」

Tamayo-san thought for a moment then frankly spoke.

「Then...What about Megumi-chan/」

「...Yes?」

「What's your compatibility with him?」

「Err...I like having sex with Yoshi-kun」

「...Does it still hurt?」

「Well, it still does but...It makes me feel good when it hurts...」

「Oh, you're a bit of an M」

「...Hmm I don't know about that」

「Well, whether it's an S or an M, he'll surely respond to it. Megumi-chan shouldn't be embarrassed of her fetish and expose it」

「...U-Understood!」

We've completely become focused on Tamayo-san's questioning...

「Well...Megumi-chan shouldn't need to worry about it that much. We've seen your first sex after all...!」

Being told like that...it feels so embarrassing that I want to die.

「In Maika-san's case...Well, just have sex right away multiple times. After all, you don't have any other way but this...!」

Being told that, Tamayo-san handed us the room key.

「...Here you go, the room is 402」

「T-Thank you very much」

I took the key.

「If you get hungry, just call the operator and we will deliver meals. You can take a look at the menu in the room」

「Ah...okay」

「While we're at it, we'll give you our hotel card...if you show this card, we'll give you a 20% discount. No, we'll make you a 『Special member』and we'll cut the price to half...!」

...Eh?

...Tamayo-san?

「Having sex in the mansion feels like someone else is watching you somewhere? You can use our hotel anytime you want!」

A-Anytime...?!

「When you come with Megumi-chan, Maika-chan...and the young lady of Kouzuki from yesterday, I'll definitely give you a discount. I'll tell my part timers about it. Oh, you can't use it when coming with Katsuko-chan or Nagisa-chan. Those girls have to pay the regular fee...!」

「Here!」Tamayo-san handed me the card.
I accepted it...

「...Thank you」

「Oh right...Next time you come here, don't go wearing your school uniform. Change your clothes and make sure that the uniform won't be seen from top. Megumi-chan and the others too...!」

...Y-Yeah.

「Then...Enjoy the 『Night』with the three of you...!」

Tamayo-san smiled.

「Have some good sex. Then worry about everything else tomorrow!」



We took the elevator from an unpopular corridor.

The three of us get in.

We're going to spend the night with the three of us?

「Tamayo-san's really nice」

Megu muttered.

「She believes that it will go well with Yoshi-kun and Maika-chan...That's why she included Maika-chan's name when she handed the card」

Un...

I think so too.

But...Maika's not energetic.

She's looking down, leaning on the elevator wall...

...We arrived at the fourth floor.

We get off the elevator...

「Err...Where is room 402?」

「It's there, Onii-san...」

Looking at the location Maika points at...

The 402nd room door's lights blink.

...It's to prevent us from making a mistake on the room.

I opened the door.

「...Come in」

Maika and Megu enters the room first...

I entered last and closed locked the door.

Anyway...we're able to escape to a secret room.

I sighed...

「Wow, this is amazing...!」

Inside the room...is a big bed in the center

Then, there's a small table and a sofa.

It's really a room for just sex.

The back has a bathroom and restroom too...

But well...It feels strange but there's no strange furnitures.

But still, Maika's making a fuss...

...Ah

The sides and the ceiling of the bed are all filled with mirrors.

「With this...it's completely visible when you have sex on top of the bed」

I don't get what Maika means by 『Completely visible』but...

You can completely understand the state of the sex when looking in the mirror.

「We're going to have sex in such place...!」

Maika...looks a bit nervous.

Well...It's her first time in a love hotel.

Furthermore...there's three of us.

「Yoshi-kun...there's no need to be nervous」

Megu whispers on my ears...

Eh...I'm nervous?

「...It's our first time in such an adult place so I get that you're nervous but」

Ahahahahaha...I'm nervous.

「I'm going to warm up the bath first!」

Megu said cheerfully.

「Ah, agreed! Maika wants to enter the bath!」

Maika lowers her waist to the sofa.

As expected...we're tired in various ways?

「Maika-chan, can you serve tea?」

Megu told maika.

In this case, this means pouring the tea we bought in the supermarket to paper cups 「Un, got it」

Maika opens the plastic bag...

I...

I wanted to make a phone call before it's too late.

I took out the new phone given to me a while ago but...

「...Onii-san, who are you going to call?」

Maika asks me while pouring the tea.

「N...Nei-san first」

...I

I'm worried about Nei-san who's in the mansion...

Is Nei-san okay...?!

120. Man and woman

Nei-san's number is registered on the new phone...

That's obvious...

Katsuko-nee won't make a blunder like that...

I look at the clock on the side.

...9:32 PM

...Okay

When I tried to make a call...

『...Hello, Yo-chan?』

I feel Nei-san's voice on the other side having no vigor.

「...Ah, can you tell?」

『Un, Maru-chan and Katsun are already here...they told me that Yo-chan changed his phone. I've already registered the new one...!』

As expected of Katsuko-nee, she doesn't make a mistake.

「Is it okay there?」

The crime syndicate Cesario Viola hired...

Or the investigators Shirasaka house has sent...

『It's just Shirasaka house here...they're surrounding around the hill in the mansion, like that』

As expected...they know that the mansion is 『Kuromori's』headquarters...
There are frequent guests coming from Shirasaka clan...

『Mr. Viola's people aren't here yet though. Well, I think it's just a matter of time...!』

「They're still stationed in the hotel aren't they?」

『Hmm...When Yo-chan has escaped from the hotel, the manager has declared
『They're no longer in our hotel』after an hour. But, half of those guys still
remains there not trusting it...』

Haa...It's trouble.

『Sooner or later, they'll know the relation of that hotel with 『Kuromori』...I think 70% of the syndicate gathered would disappear coming to natural end. Even we have a huge connections with people related to the crime syndicates... There's mostly people who have better judgement. But, the remaining 30% of the people is still scary...』

「...Why?」

『...They're idiots and don't think reasonably, they're troubling people who'd meddle with anything』

Un...That's troubling.

『They're people who'd just say 『Sure sure』on a mysterious foreigner who piles up money for them...Well, we would like them to be just idiots...Maru-chan and Katsun are starting various things about that matter...』

「...Sorry, I」

『Eh...What?』

「I'm not together with everyone when in trouble...!」

Nei-san spoke in a slightly angry voice...

『What are you saying Yo-chan! Protecting Megu-chan and Maika-chan is a very important job!』

「...Yes, that's right」

『Be gentle with them so they won't feel scared』

「Got it...Nei-san」

『...Yo-chan, it feels sad when you're not here』

...Nei-san

「Nei-san... are you really okay?」

With the information that Mr. Viola is already in Japan...
There's nothing more scary than this for Nei-san.

『Yo-chan...are you worried?』

「Well...I thought that Nei-san would have nightmares again」

『...I'll be fine』

Nee-san muttered gently.

『I have the clothes Yo-chan wore earlier』

My clothes?

『Look...The white one when we ate lunch』

Ah...The Greek one

『This one soaks with Yo-chan's scent. I'm going to sleep while hugging this...!』

Well...

That feels a bit embarrassing.

『Therefore...I'll be fine. I'm going to smell Yo-chan and dream of Yo-chan...!』

...Nei-san.

『Anyway...Yo-chan doesn't need to worry in here, I'll be fine. Maru-chan and Katsun are already here...Sensei's about to return too. Sensei has perfected this security system of the mansion after several years...so I think it will be okay tonight』

Then that's fine.

『Yo-chan...even if we're apart tonight, we live under the same sun, we all walk under the same moon¹ I'm always with Yo-chan!』

「...Same here, Nei-san will always be in my heart」

『Thank you...Bye. Ah, have you called Mii-chan?』

...Eh?

「Not yet...」

『Mii-chan doesn't know that Yo-chan changed phones right? I think you should better tell her...!』

...S-She's right!

「Got it, I'll call her immediately!」

『...See you tomorrow, Yo-chan』

「Okay!」

『...I love you!』

Saying that...Nei-san hung up the phone.

...I

I became stiff from the last words.

「Hey hey, Onii-san?...What did Nei-san said?」

Maika presents me a paper cup of Oolong tea.

「Oh...As expected, people hired by Shirasaka family is loitering around the mansion. But Margo-san and Katsuko-nee has arrived already, Nei-san told us not to worry as she's being guarded now」

「...Is that so?」

Maika's expression looks complicated.

...Rather than that

「Oh right, I have to call Misuzu sooner...!」

「Eh, why?」

「Look, Misuzu doesn't know that I changed numbers...she must be enduring her urge to pee...」

It's bad if her bladder bursts!

「...Why does Misuzu-san have to endure peeing when Onii-san change phones?」

Maika's face has a 「???」floating on it...

「You see...Misuzu-san cannot pee unless she's permitted by Yoshi-kun. She has that kind of rule」

Megu who filled the bath with hot water speaks to Maika as she returns.

「Wow Onii-san, you're being cruel to Misuzu-san...Is that training?!」

「That's not it, Maika-chan」

Megu smiles at Maika.

「Misuzu-san does it herself」

「...Misuzu-san?」

「That's right...Yoshi-kun doesn't force anything on us. He's someone who always accepts what we wish with his best...!」

Megumi says that but...

...Arere?

...I can't connect to Misuzu...!

「Onii-san...Misuzu-san doesn't know that you have a new phone number doesn't she?」

「Un...That's obvious. I just got this earlier...」

Weren't Maika in the same place?

「Then, it won't reach Misuzu-san if you make a call with that...!」

「Eh...Why?」

「Misuzu-san is Kouzuki house's young lady. She won't answer calls from an unknown number. Even Maika does that...」

I-Is that so?

「Well, won't it be scary if it's someone strange?」

I-I see

「That's why...Send her a mail first. Put your name as the title and say 『I changed by number』...」

「...G-Got it」

At the moment I shouted...!

「Ah, Yoshi-kun...I just sent it...! 『The one calling just now is Yoshi-kun with his new phone』...」

Megu has mailed Misuzu already...

「I have to mail those girls from my club too...」

I see...Megu has a lot of friends so it's trouble.
She sends mails with fast hands.

...Then.

My phone rang...!

I answered the call immediately.

「Hello, is this Misuzu?」

『...Danna-sama I'm leakiiing!!!』

...As expected!

「Misuzu, where are you right now...?!」

『I'm in the toilet at home!』

Then, that makes this fast!

『Can Misuzu pee now?!』

「Just do it! Or rather, please hurry up and pee!」

I can hear the sound of spilling water from the other side...

『...Aaaaaahn!』

Misuzu lets out a bit lewd voice.

「...Misuzu, are you okay?...Did your bladder rupture?!」

『It's okay...You're cruel, Danna-sama. If you changed your number then tell Misuzu immediately, geez...!』

「...Sorry」

I apologized immediately.

『Danna-sama, where are you right now? Have you come back from Megumi-san's home now?』

「Yeah...We took care of Megu's house safely. But, we had various troubles after that and now Megu and Maika are here with me in a love hotel」

『...Love hotel?』

Misuzu's peeing sound stops suddenly.

『Love hotel, it's that, isn't it?...The thing mainly used for a man and woman to have sex...?』

「Yeah...That love hotel」

『Could it be that you will stay there tonight?』

「Un...that's what happened」

『Why is Misuzu not there?』

...Err

...What?

『Of course...It is Danna-sama's first time staying in a love hotel?』

「Yes...That's right but」

『...Please tell me the location...I will come there via taxi immediately!』

No...wait a moment!

「Well...This isn't a place for Misuzu to go to. The outskirts...isn't that much of

a beautiful place...and it's in the middle of the red light district!」

『...Aaaah! Misuzu wants to be violated by Danna-sama in that place too!』

...M-M-M-Misuzu?

「Are you okay shouting that out loud?」

She's on her toilet for the time being, isn't she?

『It's okay. This is a toilet in Misuzu's room...!』

「Misuzu has a toilet in her own room?」

『Yes...There's a bathroom too. Also, since Misuzu plays piano, the room is completely soundproof. Therefore, please don't worry about my voice...!』

S-She's really an Ojou-sama.

Then that means that there's a bathroom and restroom in every room...!

『Rather than that...Misuzu wants to have sex with Danna-sama in a love hotel too!!!』

Don't shout!

『Why does Megumi-san and Maika-san have to be there and Misuzu isn't? Aaaah, I can't believe this! This is frustrating! I can't agree to this!』

Misuzu...calm down!

「You see...Misuzu Even if we're apart tonight, we're under the same sun and we're under the same moon. Misuzu's always in my heart...!」

Anyway, I used what Nei-san told me earlier...!

『I don't care about that! Misuzu doesn't want to be apart from Danna-sama! I'd rather die!』

...D-Die?

...Y-You're exaggerating

「I-I get it...I'll bring Misuzu when there's a chance. We'll go to a love hotel just the two of us...Okay?」

I'm already desperate.

『...Really?』

But still, that was able to put a brake on Misuzu's charge...!

「This love hotel is run by Tamayo-san. You do remember her right? You met in the mansion」

『Yes...The stylist』

「That's right. She gave me a discount card earlier so let's come together next time」

『...That's a promise!』

「Un...I promise」

『We're going to stay overnight!』

「Yeah, if you want, we can stay for 24 hours...!」

『...Uwaa! That's wonderful!!!』

Megu calls me out.

「Yoshi-kun...give me your phone」

...Eh?

「Uhm...Misuzu, Megu says she wants to talk to you...」

I handed my phone to Megu.

「...Hello, it's Megumi... I don't intend to steal the march while Misuzu-san isn't here」

...Megu?

「Yes...Maika-chan and I will be monopolizing Yoshi-kun for tonight but...we'll make time for Misuzu-san too. You won't be left out...!」

Megu speaks differently to Misuzu.

Actually...she's showing our relationship to Maika.

「...Yes. Thank you. I'm giving it to Maika-chan」

Megu said that then handed the phone to Maika

Maika looks completely confused.

「...I-It's Maika. Yes...That's right. Ah, yes...Err...Got it. I'll take Onii-san's love for Misuzu-san's share too...yes...!」

Maika's face is pale.

「Onii-san...Misuzu-san is...」

Maika hands me my phone

I took it...

「...Hello?」

『...I'll allow it. If tonight's Maika-san's education time, Misuzu won't complain. Danna-sama, please discipline her a lot...!』

...Discipline?

『Anyway...Maika-san still doesn't know who's her master. Please stick Danna-sama's scent properly...!』

That's...I'm not a dog.

『People feel relief when they're under someone's rule...!』

...Eh?

『For example...A child under it's parent's rule. Even if the rule is somewhat troublesome, their heart's calm down from being ruled』

「...Misuzu?」

『Dependence is also a bit different...if she grows up a bit then it's a different one...Maika-san is still a child. If she's treated like an adult strangely, it would grind her spirit. Because adults have to judge, act, and take responsibility by themselves』

「...Then」

『Yes...Please dominate her. It's harsh for Maika-san right now to let her judge the current situation and have her always take the most suitable action. It doesn't matter if it's forceful, please train her to obey Danna-sama's judgement. That way, she'll feel at ease...』

Misuzu is an adult who's smarter than me...

She grasps Maika's state of mind precisely...

「Got it...I'll try it as Misuzu says」

『But...We'll definitely go to a love hotel with just the two of us! We'll talk about the detailed schedule tomorrow!』

Misuzu's in high spirits.

『Then, Danna-sama, good night. I love you! Chu!²』

Then...I made a call



「Yoshi-kun. Should we enter the bath?」

Megu told me.

「I think that there's enough hot water」

「Oh, right」

「Yoshi-kun...since you're wearing a school uniform, take it off...」

「Ah, un」

I take off my school uniform.

Megu hangs it on the suspender and took the brush given by the hotel.

「We entered a dusty place a while ago...」

Megu brushes my clothes...

Somehow...She's like my wife.

Megu calls Maika.

「Maika-chan, you should hang your uniform too. It would wrinkle if you leave it like that」

Maika...

「...It doesn't matter」

「...Maika-chan?」

「Because...I can no longer go to school wearing this uniform...」

Maika looks down.

I understand what Misuzu said now.

「Maika...hang your uniform」

「...Eh?」

「We still don't know whether you can go to school or not after the consecutive holidays don't we?」

「...Un」

「You must not wrinkle as there's at least a single percent of possibility」

「...But」

Maika can't agree with it.

「Maika-chan...take it off」

Megu spoke having a severe face.

「...Megumi-chan?」

「It is as Yoshi-kun says. Maika-chan...there's a lot of people that aren't free in this world. That's why, at least, you should always be prepared on whatever situation you will be in...!」

...Megu

「You don't want to put on a wrinkled uniform don't you?」

Megu's words sticks to Maika's heart...

「...Got it」

Maika stands up

「Maika will take it off on the side」

Maika goes to the dressing room...

「No...strip in front of Yoshi-kun...!」

Megu said clearly...

「...Why?」

Maika's frightened.

「It's not why...We're Yoshi-kun's 『women』aren't we?」

「But...Maika's embarrassed」

「Even I am embarrassed...but, I want Yoshi-kun to see the embarrassed me too...」

Megu then took off her clothes...

「...Megumi-chan?」

Megu now just wears her underwear in front of me.

Her face is red...she's bashfully trembling.

A slim and tall body...

Megu's beauty stands out when she's wearing only underwear...

「Megu...you're beautiful」

「...Thank you」

「Megu's legs are so long...your whole body's tight...it's a really beautiful body...」

I instinctively admired Megu's half-naked body.

「...Sorry for having small breasts」

「What are you saying? You always say that...I like this Megu-like breasts」

「...Un」

「Megu has some greatness Megu only has. I love Megu's body line. I think it's really beautiful」

「I'll keep this body so that I won't be hated by Yoshi-kun」

...Megu entrusts her body to me.

I kissed Megu.

「Maika-chan...I don't have anyone but Yoshi-kun anymore」

The half naked Megu speaks to Maika while in my arms.

「...Nothing else?」

「...I can no longer come back to Yamamine house. I will fight Shirasaka house. My real father is a cruel person who tried to make me a prostitute...I don't have anyone but Yoshi-kun already」

「...What about Yuzuki-san, Margo-san and Katsuko-san?」

「Those people...they saved me and loved me. Of course, I'm grateful for that. I think that I will pay the debt throughout my life. But...Yoshi-kun's different. He...」

Megu embraces my head.

Megu's chest presses my cheeks.

「We...Misuzu-san, Nei-san, Katsuko-neesan and I loves Yoshi-kun...As much as Yoshi-kun love saved us...we have to love Yoshi-kun or we'll break...!」

...Eh?

...Me?

「We have the relationship of loved and lover so we need each other. No... We're no good if we don't have Yoshi-kun...Yoshi-kun's no good if he doesn't

have us either. We believe that so we have no one but Yoshi-kun...」

「...Why? Maika doesn't get it!」

Maika mutters.

...Same

I'm always being washed by the situation...

I just take in the reality in front of me with all my best...

...I don't understand myself well

「...Because...Yoshi-kun doesn't have anyone but us」

...Eh?

「Maika-chan...You might've not heard it from Yoshi-kun but Yoshi-kun's abandoned by his parents. Yoshi-kun's mother left the house and his father disappeared as well. And that's on the day of the entrance ceremony at high school.

「...Onii-san?」

「...Yoshi-kun has been living for a month in a house where there's no one living. Alone all this time. He doesn't even know until when he will have money...He doesn't know until when he can stay in his house...He's always been in that situation all this time」

...I

When I rethink on the situation I'm in right now...I shivered.

I was crazy back then.

I think I won't be able to endure it if I'm not crazy.

I don't have any future in that darkness.

「I'm the same...the people in Yamamine house are good people but...Megu never thought of those people as her own family. Megu has lived all this time thinking that she must behave well and not trouble them. Then...Shirasaka-san came and told Megu to become a prostitute. Megu was scared...I thought that my life has ended already...!」

...Megu

I embrace Megu's body tightly...!

「...It's okay. Megu has me...!」

Then...Megu

「That's right...Megu has Yoshi-kun. And, Yoshi-kun will always have Megu...!」

Megu kisses my lips...!

Hot, hot...passionately!

...I misunderstood.

I've always thought that I have to protect Megu and Misuzu.

...That's not it.

Megu and the girls are also protecting me...!

「Megu doesn't have anyone but Yoshi-kun. Yoshi-kun doesn't have anyone but us. Therefore, our hearts have decided that we won't separate even if we die. It's not just Megu...Misuzu-san and the others surely thinks the same...」

...Megu.

「Maika-chan...It's about time you notice it too」

「...Eh?」

Megu's words made Maika tremble...

「You do remember what Minaho-san said earlier don't you?」

「...Un」

「I can't help but agree...Maika-chan doesn't have anyone but Yoshi-kun anymore」

...That's right.

I have to protect Maika.

If I abandon Maika...Minaho-neesan will make Maika fall into hell...

「...Hey, Yoshi-kun.」

「...What?」

「Minaho-san's first plan, what was her plan to Yukino?」

...Yukino?

Megu looks at me and nods.

It's about time we talk about Yukino...

「Minaho-neesan's first plan is to sell Yukino to a brothel in the slums of Southeast Asia...She told us that she would be prostituted to anyone for cheap

money...!」

「That's right...It was still good fortune that it ended with her just being raped...!」

Maika's eyes opened wide...!

「...Onee-chan's already raped?」

Megu answers Maika with a serious face

「If I recall...it was 30 times for three days」

...I did that all though

Before I open my mouth...Megu presses her hand on my mouth in a way Maika won't notice.

She says...'don't say anything unnecessary'

「I also saw the scene of Yukino being raped. No matter how Yukino resists... she was thoroughly violated. There's also a machine put in her anus...」

「...That's too cruel!」

Maika's trembling so much.

「...Isn't Papa the wrong one here...Onee-chan's unrelated to this!」

That must be Maika's real feelings.

Of course...she herself too.

Why does she have to be involved on her father's crime...

She cannot agree with it inside her heart by any means...

「Sorry...I had my mother killed by Shirasaka-san...was on the brink of being turned to a prostitute so I can understand Minaho-san's feelings」

「...Megumi-chan?!」

「I think that the hatred from having a blood relative hurt...won't be dispelled by hurting the beloved family of the other side. Especially Minaho-san...her sister and child was killed because of Shirasaka-san...!」

Maika falls silent.

「Perhaps...her first plan on Maika-chan is much more cruel as well」

「...But she did. Maika was raped and lost her virginity...」

That's right...I raped Maika.

I ejaculated three times...in the courtyard where it rains.

「Yoshi-kun...Do you know how many times Yukino was violated on her first time?」

Megu talked as if it wasn't my act on purpose.

「Yukino was violated 13 times when she lost her virginity...!」

Maika's face is astonished.

「Minaho-san...wanted Maika to be done as cruel as that But...Yoshi-kun didn't do it did he?」

「...Eh?」

「It's Yoshi-kun so Minaho-san thought of his feelings and just had you raped strongly at first and later he was kind with Maika-chan wasn't he?」

...Err

「I know...Yoshi-kun is like that」

Megu pats my head.

「You negotiated with Minaho-san didn't you?...You told her『Leave Maika-chan to me. I'll make her my woman』didn't you? If not, Minaho-san won't concede on Maika-chan this much...」

Megu knows.

「Minaho-san hates all the people related to Shirasaka Sousuke. I'm the same, if it wasn't for my mother, I think she'll give me the same judgement as Shrasaka-san's daughters... It can't be helped, that's much cruelty Shirasaka-san had done...for 20 years...」

Megu's words stings Maika's heart.

「Megumi-chan...what should Maika do?」

Maika looks at Megu.

「...First throw away all of the possibility of anything happening」

Megu said.

「For example...do you think that the people from Shirasaka house would

come to help you, open that door, and come for Maika?」

「...I don't」

「Thinking realistically...what do you think will happen to Shirasaka house?」

Maika answers.

「I think uncle Shirasaka will abandon Papa in the end. Yuzuki-san seems to be tough...if it takes time, Papa would just be in disadvantage. The people in Shirasaka branch family doesn't like Papa that much...」

「What do you think will happen to Yukino and Maika-chan?」

「When Yuzuki-san talks to Ichikawa Ojii-chan...Mama and Papa would divorce. Maika and Onee-chan will be taken by Mama...」

「...Is that what you really think?」

「No...Mama will remarry Manager-san and then, Maika won't have any place anymore」

...Maika

「Ichikawa-san might take Maika-chan you know?」

「But...Maika and Onee-chan is Papa's daughter so we cannot live in Ichikawa clan. We'd only be seen as an embarrassing existence...!」

「You're right...I was the same in the Shirasaka clan...」

It was the other technique Misuzu told me a while ago...
Megu's clearing up Maika's heart...

「I can't return to Yamamine house nor Shirasaka clan. I will serve Yoshi-kun as his 『woman』...」

「...Megumi-chan」

「Maika-chan...I think you should do that as well. Didn't you say it yourself earlier? You'll become Yoshi-kun's 『Bitch』...」

「That was something I just said it without thinking...」

「No...Make it real. Among the choices left for Maika-chan are the only ones Maika-chan can really be...!」

Megu's words dominate Maika...

「Yoshi-kun...will accept whatever Maika-chan wants. As long as Maika-chan doesn't betray Yoshi-kun...Yoshi-kun will never betray Maika-chan. Maika-chan knows that Yoshi-kun is that kind of person, right...?!」

「Well...Yes」

Maika looks at me

...I

「...Maika, take off your clothes」

Hearing my words...Maika felt nervous.

「...I'll get naked too」

Saying that, Megu removes the button of my shirt...

「Anyway...Let's have sex again. Let's test it」

「...What is?」

Maika asks while trembling.

「We're going to test if we really can have a relationship of a 『man』and a 『woman』...!!!」

...Maika.

121. Summer little sister ¹

「...Wait, Yoshi-kun, that's not it!」

Megu told me.

「...If Yoshi-kun asks Maika-chan for sex then in the end...it's just pampering Maika-chan...」

Saying that, Megu stands between me and Maika...

「Maika-chan...I won't pamper you anymore...!」

「...Megumi-chan?」

Maika's afraid

「Un... ..I think I've been pampering Maika-chan all this time. She's still young so I feel sorry, I thought that I had to be kind. But...I think everyone has been mistaken」

...Megu?

「If you say that...I'm still in my first year at high school...Yet I think I lived in a very cruel situation. But, I lived enduring it...!」

Megu exposes her naked heart in front of Maika.

Earlier...Misuzu told me to 『Discipline』Maika.

Minaho-neesan...「Calm Maika's heart by the end of the night」...

And, Megu...is starting to approach Maika in her way.

「Even Yoshi-kun's the same! Yoshi-kun had lived and endured a difficult life alone...We're the one's who should be sympathized!」

Megu strikes Maika with a loud voice purposely.

「...I-I'm sorry」

For the time being, Maika bows to Megu as she changed suddenly...

「Maika-chan...what did you think whenever there's a family gathering and I'm always in my school uniform? Do you know what I feel back then? My mother was raped by Shirasaka-san...I wasn't born as a blessed daughter...on top of

that, I've seen my mother be a prostitute...being raped by various men everyday!」

Megu's showing off her emotional scars on purpose.

「...I'm sorry. I'm sorry」

Maika just kept apologizing while showing a face not wanting to hear it.

「I don't need your 『I'm sorry』!」

Megu shouted at Maika!

「And...My mother...when she was sick, she wasn't taken to the hospital...she died. Shirasaka-san has abandoned my mother...!」

Megu's spilling tears.

I embraced Megu.

「...Embrace me stronger」

「...Yeah」

「Yoshi-kun...I love you Megu doesn't have anyone but Yoshi-kun...」

Megu embraces me.

「...Sorry, Maika never knew anything」

Maika looks down weakly.

「...I don't care about that...!」

Megu pushed Maika.

「Yoshi-kun...Let's take a bath together. Then...love Megu a lot, you should just leave Maika-chan. Megu will do anything...I love you...I love you, so...!」

Megu kisses me again and again...!

Embraces my back tightly...!

「...Megumi-chan...What should Maika do?」

Maika asks Megu with a teary face.

「...Think about it yourself. What should you do?」

Megu didn't turn to Maika.

「But...I don't know!」

Maika shouts at Megu!

Hearing that, Megu...

「...Maika-chan. You heard what Minaho-san told Yoshi-kun earlier didn't you?」

「...Eh?」

Maika's surprised.

「Minaho-san said...『This is the last chance』...!」

...That

I also noticed it.

「If ever Maika-chan was still selfish tomorrow morning...Minaho-san will abandon Maika-chan. Minaho-san is doing the troublesome negotiation for Maika-chan's sake right now...!」

「What do you mean by that?」

Maika clings to Megu's words...

「...I think that all of Shirasaka-san's wrongdoings is ready to be announced publicly. I think the file sent to Ichikawa-san was made for that purpose」

...Right.

That file is in Minaho-neesan's laptop she carries around.

It was sent to Ichikawa-san from the hotel room...

It's ready to be announced to the public anytime anywhere.

I'm sure that Katsuko-nee and Margo-san have the same file...

「Shirasaka-san would perish by just sending that to various mass media. Of course, it would be a scandal that would get Shirasaka house involved...!」

No...It doesn't need to be the mass media.

You can spill it on the internet.

If Shirasaka Sousuke's file flows to the world, it would be the end...

It would be Minaho-neesan's win at the moment.

When the file spreads out, Shirasaka house is no more...

「In exchange, Maika-chan, Yukino, Maika's mother and Ichikawa-san would

be involved in the scandal as well...! Shirasaka-san's charges will be kidnapping, rape, and forced prostitution...and that's for 20 years! It's a very big scandal...If it's known that her husband has done those crimes, she can no longer be a food critic. Ichikawa-san too, he'll retire from being the representative of the company...he can't come out because of the embarrassment!!!」

「...That's」

「Of course...that doesn't matter to Minaho-san. Rather, I think she'd be laughing as Shirasaka-san's family suffer. But...Yoshi-kun took in Maika-chan...」

...Me?

...It's my fault?

「Therefore, Minaho-san's negotiating with Ichikawa-san to make a place for Maika-chan. Instead of making a scandal...I think she wants Shirasaka house and Ichikawa house to agree having to punish only Maika's father. When that happens, Ichikawa-san and Maika-chan's mother won't be dishonored. Maika-chan and Yukino will be able to go to school as before...」

I see...She's aiming for the head of Shirasaka house to abandon Shirasaka Sousuke by himself...

...Therefore, Minaho-neesan.

...Dammit

Minaho-neesan's plan is really certain, simple and perfect.

Then, because I tried to help Maika...

...What I did caused trouble to everyone.

The mansion doesn't need to be surrounded by those strange people...!

Nei-san doesn't need to spend a night suffering...

「Yoshi-kun...It's okay. Don't worry. I think that the file sent to Ichikawa-san would be handed to the head of Shirasaka house. I'm sure that the head of clan would consult his people. And perhaps...Minaho-san's file has a message included saying 『This file can always be publicized on the net』 The head of Shirasaka house would break by morning... Even if they suppress the mansion forcibly, if the essential files are sent to another location, it would be meaningless. They don't know how many we are... No, they're going to think that every prostitute in the mansion are all Minaho-san's allies. It's impossible to grasp the location of all the members in such short time. This battle is

Minaho-san's win since the start...!」

I-Is that so/
Then...That's fine.

「That's why if ever Maika-chan didn't change until morning...Minaho-san's file used to negotiate with Ichikawa-san would be put on public. As education for Yoshi-kun...」

「My education?」

Megu looks at me.

「Yoshi-kun right now is using the reason『She's pitiful』for picking up girls She wants Yoshi-kun to only go with people he loves. I think the same...!」

...Megu

...I see

In the end...I can't be optimistic...!

「But...Maika is a good girl! She's a girl worth protecting with my life! I think that!」

Megu kisses me.

「That's what I love about you...But, this is why Yoshi-kun is helpless...」

The trembling Maika turns to Megu.

「...Maika-chan, is Yoshi-kun worth risking your life for? What do you think? Today, Maika-chan certainly had horrible experience but...Yoshi-kun is helping you with all his best so you won't experience more than this... You know that don't you? What can Maika-chan return to Yoshi-kun then...?」

...Megu and Maika.

The two girls look at each other.

「...Maika doesn't know!」

Maika mutters.

...Megu.

「Yoshi-kun, let's enter the bath together. And love Megu with all your might tonight. Let's just report to Minaho-san tomorrow that Maika-chan's no

good...」

Maika's trembling hard.

「...Megumi-chan, please don't abandon Maika...!」

Megu looks at Maika with angry eyes then shouted!

「...Don't depend on me! Think what can you do by yourself!」

...I

「Megu...Is there no way but for me to abandon Maika?」

「...Un, I think so too」

「For example...I still have 10k yen, I'll hand it to Maika and have her go home by taxi...!」

Maika's eyes opened wide.

「Yoshi-kun...do you intend to betray us...?!」

Megu said 「Us」not 「Minaho-san」...

Megu's heart is already a member of 『Kuromori』

「Minaho-san has Maika as her 『Hostage』so she can negotiate with Ichikawa-san...If you let Maika-chan go, won't Minaho-san be troubled.」

「...Right. I cannot betray Minaho-neesan...」

Maika's face became dark again and she looks down.

「Also...if Maika-chan runs away, Minaho-san would make the files public immediately. And that's the end. Shirasaka house and Ichikawa house would take damage and Maika-chan's family would be ashamed that she can no longer show her face outside for the rest of her life...That's not all」

In short...There's no way to save Maika.

「Then...If Maika submits herself to me, then is it okay to let her go after the negotiation with Ichikawa-san ends?」

Megu pinched my cheeks!

...Ouch!

「I won't allow that! Why does Yoshi-kun pamper Maika-chan so much!」

...Megu

「Maika-chan, what about you! Yoshi-kun goes this far and yet you still intend to feel like you're a princess?...!」

Maika's stunned.

「I will never hand Maika-chan right now to Yoshi-kun! Maika-chan right now isn't suitable to be loved by Yoshi-kun!」

Megu...is confronting Maika as a 『woman』
Not as Maika's 『Sister』...but as my 『woman』
Megu has already prepared for the worst.
Throwing her home and blood...She really chose only me...!

「Megu...sorry...!」

I embrace Megu...

「It's fine...I'm Yoshi-kun's 『woman』」

Megu pats my cheek gently.

「Sorry for making it hurt...」

「It's fine...」

「Let's get in bath now. Then let's have sex...Selfish girls like Maika-chan doesn't matter anymore. Love Megu a lot」

Megu holds my hand and invites me in the bath...

「...Wait, Megumi-chan. Don't go...!」

Maika calls Megu

「...Maika, really doesn't know what to do...Please, tell me...Megumi-chan...!」

Megu turned around.

「Take a look at a mirror, Maika-chan...」

...Mirror

There's a mirror pasted on the walls and ceiling of the love hotel's room.
Maika and I look at the mirror.

「I'm with Yoshi-kun」

The half naked Megu who's wearing only underwear inside the mirror is snuggling up close to me.

Maika's alone.

「I'm happy... Being with the person I love...it really makes a calm and happy face...」

Megu in the mirror sticks closely to me and smiles satisfied.

「...You're beautiful... Megu」

Tall and slim body that has a good style...

Long and narrow eyes...A beauty.

「Having such a beautiful girl stay by my side is like a dream」

Megu spoke...

「...It's real. Megu will always be Yoshi-kun...!」

...I

The other girl reflected in the mirror...Maika.

Half-crying...she's trembling like an abandoned cat...

「Maika-chan...I'm like Katsuko-san, I can't do anything without Yoshi-kun. I'm not as beautiful as Nei-san. I'm not as bright as Misuzu-san...but, didn't everyone say it? I am okay being Yoshi-kun's 『Girlfriend』at school. It's okay for me to be registered as Yoshi-kun's 『Wife』too... Therefore, I have to do my best. To become Yoshi-kun's cute wife...!」

...Megu

「Us...Yoshi-kun's 『women』are doing our desperate best right now. Not just me...Katsuko-san, Nagisa-san, Misuzu-san too...Nei-san too, surely...」

...Nei-san too?

「Isn't that right? Everyone's so beautiful, and filled with talents... Everyone thinks of wanting to monopolize Yoshi-kun. Even me...But we know that Yoshi-kun loves each of his 『women』that's why everyone's holding back. Everyone's enduring...!」

Megu said.

「Therefore...Everyone desperately polishes their worth to be Yoshi-kun's 『woman』 I think that we will continue competing even in the future²」

Am I a 『man』worthy of it?

「If ever among the 『women』someone appeared causing Yoshi-kun trouble, we will remove her with all our effort. We hate seeing such a selfish person abusing Yoshi-kun. We'll never allow it...!」

Megu looks at Maika in the mirror.
Their eyes met in the mirror.

「Maika-chan...it's you」
「...Me?」

Megu spoke coldly.

「Maika-chan, weren't you just causing troubles to Yoshi-kun all this day...!」

That's not true.
I'm the one who suddenly raped Maika...
Maika's just confused with the situation that happens to her body all this time...
It's cruel to let this 14 year old girl decide on everything...

「Right...Maika has been causing troubles to Onii-san...」

...M-Maika?

「...Onii-san has been doing all his best to bring Maika to a 『place』and yet...
Maika has been spoiled...and has been selfish」

...No, but...you see

「But...Maika cannot do anything. I can't give anything back to Onii-san...」

Maika looks down.

「Clinging selfishly like that...and unable to give anything back, Maika-chan's a 『Princess』...」

Megu's eyes were cold...

「It was the same in front of Minaho-san and Tamayo-san. Maika-chan's attitude is horrible. You're shaming Yoshi-kun...」

...Eh?

I didn't feel anything though...

「Un...Onii-san protects Maika...Made Maika everyone's ally and yet...I think it was impolite」

「...Think?」

Megu glares at Maika.

「...I do. Onii-san, I'm sorry...」

No...Maika

Why are you apologizing to me...?!

I don't get it.

Maika...looks at her own face in the mirror.

「...What a horrible face. Maika has really lost everything. Papa and Mama... My house and my family, I can do nothing but to give up...!」

The face of a cornered child is reflected on the mirror.

「Maika...don't care anymore. I don't care about my life. I don't even know what I should do...!」

That's a child's speech.

She doesn't accept fate...only asking for the impossible.

「Maika-chan...are you sure that you don't care anymore?」

「Yeah. Maika doesn't care anymore」

Maika throws away her life.

...Is this okay?

What should I do?

Can I do something about it/

What should I say...?!

Before I can find my answer...

Megu speaks to Maika.

「Is that so?...If Maika-chan gives up then...Yoshi-kun will find Maika-chan's life...」

...Megu?!!!

「...Megumi-chan?」

Maika looks at Megu with a face of fear.

「Yoshi-kun will be the one to think about Maika-chan from now on. Maika-chan no longer needs to worry about herself. Live as Yoshi-kun says」

...T-That's.

「In exchange...Maika-chan will devote herself to Yoshi-kun. Live with the thought of how to please Yoshi-kun. Live for Yoshi-kun's sake. That is the only choice that you have right now...!」

「...Only one?」

Maika looks at Megu.

「That's right. Maika-chan cannot think of anything else don't you?...Then Yoshi-kun will think of Maika-chan's happiness. Whatever happens, Yoshi-kun will protect Maika-chan. That's why...Maika-chan should just think of Yoshi-kun...!」

「...Is that okay?」

Maika's eyes captures me.

...I

「...Yeah, that's right. I'll protect Maika. You don't need to worry about anything. Therefore...Maika should just think of me...」

Perhaps this is what Misuzu meant by 『Rule』
I think.

Megu has reached the same conclusion as Misuzu.

「...Is this really okay?」

Maika asks me again.

...I

「That's not something Maika should ask. Maika should just answer me
『Understood, I'll do as you say』...!」

I asserted.

...Maika must not hesitate anymore.

Maika is too intelligent for a child so she thinks too much.

Pretending to be an adult strangely while having a gap of a child...is the point that makes her hated by other women.

Then...I just have to seal Maika's thoughts.

Maika should no longer worry about herself.

「Yes...Onii-san. Maika will think about Onii-san from now on」

...Maika answered calmly.

Maika's face in the mirror have changed.

From the abandoned girl...to a protected face of a girl.

...A face of a woman loved by someone.

Once again, Maika looks at Megu...

Not in the image of the mirror but the real Megu.

「Megumi-chan...thank you for telling Maika various things」

...Megu

「Maika-chan...you should first begin by not shaming Yoshi-kun...!」

「...Y-Yes...Megumi-san」

Maika's attitude has changed towards Megu.

Towards Maika...

「Call me 『Megu-oneechan』...」

「...Eh?」

「...If you really intend to live as Yoshi-kun's 『woman』...then we'll become proper 『sisters』 Not just by words but 『sisters』from the bottom of our hearts...!」

...Megu looks at Maika seriously.

Maika looks straight at Megu as well.

...Then 「Please take care of me...Megu-oneechan」

Maika said then bowed at Megu...

「I maybe an incompetent little sister but please continue to guide me」

Megu smiles at Maika.

「Yes...Megumi accepts you...!」

Megu looks at me.

「Yoshi-kun...Let's Make Maika-chan your 『Little sister』」

...『Little Sister』?!

「I'm already Yoshi-kun's 『wife』in my heart. I think of myself as 『Yoshida Megumi』 Maika can no longer return to Shirasaka house too, so you'll become Yoshi-kun's little sister...Live with the name 『Yoshida Maika』

Megu declares...

Maika will become my 『Little sister』

「...Uhm, Megu-oneechan」

Maika speaks to Megu with a small voice

「What...are you dissatisfied」

「Not that...I, onii-san's...No, If I become Onii-chan's³ 『Little sister』I want to change everything...!」

...Everything?

「My name has been misread as 『Manatsu』before That relative of mine had the same name...and it was read as 『Manatsu』 ...Therefore」

Maika looks at me.

「Just now...I'm am 『Yoshida Manatsu』 Please call me 『Mana』 Mana will be Onii-chan's little sister...!」

Megu looks at me.

「Now, Yoshi-kun...call her『Mana』...!」

...I

「...Mana」

「Yes...Onii-chan」

Mana's face loosens gently.

Mana understood that she has to entrust everything about herself to me.
This girl is already mine.

Is this what 『Rule』means?

Entering Megu and my rule...Mana has regained her peace of mind...?!

No...Isn't this just mere escapism?
Just 『depending』to me on everything...

「Yoshi-kun...Us sisters don't have the power to be independent. Therefore...
please let us rely on Yoshi-kun」

Megu said...Did she read my mind?
...Right, Misuzu-said:
『Children's mind calms down when they are ruled...』
Megu is saying that she and Mana are still children...
Therefore...They desire for a strong mind to 『Rule』them...

「Got it...I'll 『Rule』you two...!」

I declared.

「Mana will become Onii-chan's lewd little sister... !」

...Err
...Mana?

「Mana will become a cute little sister to have sex with only Onii-chan...!」

T-That's...!
Megu then speaks to me.

「Yoshi-kun...Us sisters still don't have the power to do anything for Yoshi-kun
like the other 『women』 What we can do right now, is at least have Yoshi-kun
enjoy our bodies...Isn't that right, Mana?
「Yes...Megu-oneechan」

...Megu?
...Mana too?

「But...Megu-oneechan. Mana doesn't have much confidence...!」
「...Why?」
「Because...Mana's body is still childish, I don't think I can satisfy Onii-chan...!」

Megu told Mana.

「I'm the same...I'm no match against Katsuko-san's sexy body. In beauty, Nei-
san's way over the top. Therefore, Megu has to use her whole body to serve
Yoshi-kun」

「...Use the whole body to serve?」

「I...If Yoshi-kun wants to have sex, I will do it with him anytime, anywhere. I will give my body to Yoshi-kun anytime he wants...!」

「I see...If you can't win by quality, just fight with quantity!」

「That's not it...You should just always be close to him when Yoshi-kun wants to do it. I'm fine being a tool to relieve lust. I want to be loved by Yoshi-kun the most among other 『women』...!」

Megu said then kissed me...!

「Got it. Mana will become Onii-san's tool. I'm fine being a little sister-cum-sex slave! Please love Mana always... !」

Megu and Mana's eyes were sparkling...

Both of them are excited...

This two are really sisters by blood.

She already got Megu's habit of saying 『I want to be a sex slave』

Mana just said the same thing now.

In the end...I think this is because of their blood.

Perhaps...Shirasaka blood.

Megu and Mana's true nature are both greedy in sex.

No...Including Yukino...these sisters have lewd constitution.

Megu...Have the strong thought of 『I should be an honor student』so her lewd constitution is shut in.

Maika...has her wisdom and repulsion against Yukino, and the pride of being the good girl of the family, she has confined her interest in her own nature.

I have opened the Pandora's box.

Under my 『rule』, the two girl's brakes are blown off.

Their limiters have been completely removed...

These girls releases everything, their happiness, sadness...anxiety, and frustration through sex.

I...have to take in the desire for sex of the two with all my best.

This is my responsibility 「Let's get in the bath」

I prepared myself.

Tonight, I will love these two without holding back...

「Yes...Dear」

Megu said

「Yes...Onii-chan」

Mana answers.

「...Yoshi-kun, strip me」

Megu depends on me.

「Yoshi-kun will take off my underwear...!」

Megu told Maika happily.

I unhooked Megu's bra...

It's fun to watch her breasts shake no matter how many times I saw it already.

「Yoshi-kun...take off the bottom too...!」

Eh...wasn't the promise just the bra?

「...Hurry up」

Megu seems to be showing off how she flirts with me...

Even though Megu's face is dyed red in embarrassment already...

「...Got it」

I hold Megu's panty.

I pull down the small piece of cloth across the elastic ass mountain of Megu's.
Her thin pubic hair appears before me...

「Megu...raise your legs...」

I pull out Megu's panty from her leg...

「Thank you...Take a look at Megu's body」

Megu's body is beautiful

Her pink colored nipple is already standing.

「...Megu's body is for Yoshi-kun only」

Megu clings to me and lets me feel her nipple.

「Ufufu...Then, Megu will strip Yoshi-kun.」

Megu puts her hand on my pants...

「Wait...Onii-chan」

Mana speaks to me.

Mana is still on her school uniform...

「Please strip Mana too」

...Mana

「I'm sure that it would be fun stripping Mana...Onii-chan...!」

Mana said bashfully.

122. Bodies in hot water/Dark urges

...Uuuuuu, Umu.

With that said...the middle school and high school girl enters the bath.

Sandwiched by the naked sisters, I soaked in warm water...

What heaven is this?

Anyway...There's a big mirror in the bathroom of the love hotel, the image of the three of us naked is reflected on it...

Everyone's silent...unmoving.

Err...

The love hotel's bath is wider than the normal, it's great as there's still some room even with the three of us inside it...

Or rather...it's maybe because Mana is small.

No...This bath is really wide.

It's wide but...it's shallow, or rather, this is the tub where you lie down actually.

Therefore...the depth of the hot water isn't so much.

Looking at the side...Megu's breasts and Mana's chest is saying 『Hello』

Therefore, I'm somehow embarrassed to look on the side...

...It's fine however.

Since we took off our clothes and entered the bath...the three of us didn't speak a word.

The bath with three people is surrounded by strange silence.

It feels somewhat strange...or rather, embarrassing

It's unreasonably embarrassing.

This...If there's only the two girls alone here, it would be a different situation...

If it's one-on-one it would turn serious...

But, with the three of us in.

Furthermore...It's two girls and me alone.

I don't know where to look anymore...

Somehow, I need to talk fairly...

Which naked body should I take a look and where not to look so much...

Aaaah...I don't know what's right anymore!!!!

But still...the feet of two makes contact with my feet in the hot water...

My penis is intensely erect.

The two girls from both sides give it fleeting glances...

I'm giving glances on the two's pink nipples from time to time...

...Aaaaaaaah

The hot bath is a bit lukewarm but...my body gets hotter as we've been soaked for a long time.

My forehead is sweating.

「...Yoshi-kun.」

Suddenly, Megu licks my sweat...

...Megu.

She looks at me and laughed.

「...Bitter. Yoshi-kun's swear is bitter. It has a bit of saltiness too」

Megu said and showed her cute tongue to me.

Pink tongue...

I feel my erection turned to diamonds...

「...Yoshi-kun, are you nervous? Megu is so nervous」

Megu rubs her breasts against me...

My arm can feel the pointy nipples...

「...If I say 『Yoshi-kun can do anything he wants with Megu's body』...I'm sure that Yoshi-kun will be troubled...!」

...Yes

...You're right.

「Yoshi-kun's diligent after all...」

...No

A diligent man won't take a bath with two girls...¹

「But, that's what I love about you...!」

Megu licks my ear from the side.

My body shivered.

「...Mana's embarrassed too?」

Megu gets ahead of me and asks Mana.

「...I-I'm embarrassed」

The middle school girl turned red.

...Mana.

After I raped her in the noon...I took Mana to the bath.

At that time, she was calm though...

...As expected, she was acting.

...Well, that's of course

She's alone with the man who raped her.

In short, she's in a closed room with me...

She's in a state where she doesn't know what will happen...

She acted an innocent child character on purpose to not stimulate me in strange ways.

Rather...It's amazing for Mana to be able to act in that situation...

...It was bad as well

If she has cried and screamed, I would understand Mana's feelings.

And yet, her adaptability is too high so she pretended to be alright.

But, that was just a 『Forced Smile』...

It was able to fool a dumb human like me...

It wasn't able to fool adults like Minaho-neesan...

But, Mana has sharply perceived that situation again so...she behaved overly familiar and selfish...drawing close up to me for protection...she has antagonized others.

Katsuko-nee and Nei-san are kind by nature so they endured thinking that she's just a child.

Just like Megu...

Thinking back now...Margo-san didn't talk to Mana at all...

Margo-san surely is super angry at Mana.

Or rather...Minaho-neesan who talked to Mana calmly is the scarier one...

Minaho-neesan...is the type that would smile when angry...

Just as Megu said...

Minaho-neesan saying 「This is the last chance」isn't normal...

I was a bit surprised by those words...

But...Being told by Megu, I thought naively that Minaho-neesan won't be

casting away a pitiful child.

I didn't know how much Minaho-neesan can compromise her own revenge plan for my sake...

Minaho-neesan's plan was to dispose Mana.

I who didn't understand that...is very miserable.

I thought naively...and was let to do what I want with Mana...

I worsened the situation.

For the whole『Kuromori』...

It's all my responsibility.

With the promise of making Mana my 『woman』, Minaho-neesan removed her from her target of revenge...

「Yoshi-kun...What are you thinking?」

Megu looks at me in worry...

「...Minaho-san?」

「...Yeah」

Megu kisses my cheek as I look down...

「If you feel that you did something for the people of the mansion...then apologize to Minaho-san tomorrow. Megu will apologize with you...」

Mana looks at me.

「That's about Mana isn't it, Onii-chan?」

「Yeah...Mana should apologize to everyone too」

「Un...Got it」

Mana said without vigor.

「Let's forget about tomorrow...Yoshi-kun, should I wash your body?」

Megu smiles at me.

Megu's really kind.

Kind and beautiful...

Megu is too good of a woman for me.

「Ufu...You finally looked at Megu...!」

...Megu!

「Look...I'm washing you...!」

「Ah...But, Mana and I entered the bath before getting out of the mansion. We were so muddy after all...」

Somehow...it feels strange washing my body multiple times a day.

We're not Shizuka-chan²

Also...We're going to have sex after this...

「I'm sure we're going to take shower tomorrow as well. Therefore, it's fine to be sweaty now...」

With my answer, Mana...

「Mana didn't think that she'll have bath with Onii-chan twice a day. Right, Mana doesn't need to wash her body now. We'll do it tomorrow morning...」

Or rather...I'm a bit tired.

If possible, I want to sleep right now.

A lot of things happened today.

I think it's really too much...

「Megu took shower after club activities but...I want to wash my body with soap at least...」

Megu draws her body close to me.

「Yoshi-kun...can you wash me?」

「Oh...Sure. Let's do it」

「...But, before that」

Megu looks at my penis that's showing out from the hot water.³

「I'm going to lick this」

...Megu

「Yoshi-kun...Raise your waist. Try to let out the tip of your penis from the warm water...!」

I do as I was told.

Raising my waist from the hot water...The tip of my erect glans shows itself.

「...I'll suck it」

Megu puts my glans in her mouth.
She's sucking it with her lips...

「Yoshi-kun...Does it feel good?」

「Yeah...It feels good.」

「I'm glad. This...One of the lady in the mansion has taught me before. Saying that it pleases men when you lick men's penis in the bath...I'm glad I remembered it」

Megu stretches her tongue and licks my glans...

「Megu's feeling super embarrassed.... Being naked in front of Yoshi-kun... taking bath together...and licking your penis like this...」

Megu's face is dyed red in shame...
But, her eyes are wet with passion.

「I'd like to stay this embarrassed. I must not get used to it. If you get used to Megu's naked body...won't it be boring for Yoshi-kun?」

Megu speaks while rubbing my red glans with her long and white fingers.

「Megu's feeling very embarrassed right now...This is for Yoshi-kun's eyes only. Yoshi-kun will be the only one to see this embarrassing Megu!」

...Megu.

「...Yoshi-kun. You can touch Megu's breasts. Touch my ass...tease that place... Make Megu embarrassed. Megu is Yoshi-kun's toy...I want you to embarrass me a lot...!」

Megu hangs saliva on my glans...then strokes the glans tightly...!
...Aaaah!

「...Onii-chan, does it feel good?」

Mana whispers to me.
I can hear Mana swallowing her saliva...
Mana's aroused...

「It feels amazingly good...!」

Megu speaks to Mana while fiddling with my penis.

「Yoshi-kun...feels very good doesn't he? It's cute isn't he? He's feeling good with Megu's fingers. Megu likes seeing Yoshi-kun make a pleased face...Megu will do anything embarrassing for Yoshi-kun's sake」

「...M-Megu-oneechan」

Mana thinks that she has to do something.
But...she doesn't seem to guess what she should do.

「...Megu-oneechan. What should Mana do?」

...Megu

「I don't know. Think it yourself」

Saying that, she licks the glans with her tongue again.
She's enjoying my startled expression...

「A girl who can't do anything herself won't have anything...If Mana won't do anything then Megu will serve Yoshi-kun all alone tonight. I'll make Yoshi-kun take a look at only me. I'd like him to love Megu a lot...!」

Megu seems to be educating Mana thoroughly.
It as Misuzu says...

I must 『discipline』her 「Think of it yourself. How can you make Yoshi-kun feel good? What should you do to please him? What should you say to make Yoshi-kun have fun...Megu's desperately thinking that right now. Because, I want Yoshi-kun. I will do my very best to be loved by Yoshi-kun more than other girls...!」

Megu rubs my glans to her cheeks...
Then kisses the side of my penis.

「...Yoshi-kun. I love you. I love you...I love you so much. Hey...touch me」

Megu takes my hand and leads it between her crotch...
Though we're in hot bath...I can clearly tell.
Megu's pussy is wet with love nectar.

「Look...That place is wet isn't it? It's because Yoshi-kun is here. Megu is with Yoshi-kun so she's wet... Touch it...that's right. This is an entrance only for Yoshi-kun...no one can enter but Yoshi-kun. You see, Megu is born to be

violated by Yoshi-kun...!」

「...Megu...My Megu...!」

Megu straddles on me...

「...Ahn! Megu can't hold back anymore. Yoshi-kun, order Megu...!」

Megu is looking at me with moist eyes...!

「I'm a woman who can't cum without Yoshi-kun's permission. Please allow Megu...!」

「...Allow?」

「I want it...I want Yoshi-kun to fill Megu's insides...!」

Megu's face looks in pain...she's looking forward to my intrusion...
I answer to Megu's expectations...!

「Megu...I want to have sex with you! Let me put it in!」

Megu's face is melting away...!

「Yes...Deaar~...!」

Just like that...My erect penis enters Megu's entrance underwater...!

「...Afuu!」

The two of us are connected facing each other in the bath!
The sharp glans thrust into the soft meat lip that's wet with love nectar!

「...Nnnnnuu!」

Megu raises her voice...!
She's making a pained face...!
My penis invades deeper inside Megu!

「...aaaaahn!」

I'm breaking through Megu's insides!
Yesterday, the road that just had it's virginity broken is narrow...My penis is spreading it.

...Megu's face looks like she's in pain.

But still, Megu doesn't try to stop receiving me...!

「Megu...does it hurt? Are you okay?!」

「...It's fine! I like it painful!」

Just like that...Megu accepts me to the root...!
The glans is kissing the deepest part...!

「...haa, haa, haa」

Megu's breathing moves her shoulder.
As expected, the insertion is still tight.
She relaxes herself and entrusts her body to me.
Our lower body is connected completely under the hot water...!
Megu's cute breasts is before my eyes.
Megu's breasts shake up and down matching her deep breathing.
Her pink nipple...are like ripe fruits.

「...Lick it」

Megu spoke to me with an angel's smile.

「...It's Yoshi-kun's. Only Yoshi-kun and Yoshi-kun's child can lick it」

...I

Grabbed Megu's nipples.

Sucked it.

Rolled my tongue on it...

「...Ahn...It feels good」

Her vagina clamps tightly...
I enjoy Megu's breasts with my face.
I lick her nipples with my tongue...

「...Megu's glad to be a 『woman』」

Megu looks at me and smiles happily

「I'm happy being Yoshi-kun's 『woman』...!」

...Megu.

...Megu.

...Megu...!!!

We're having sex in water that's warmer than air.
And...Megu's insides is hotter than the water...!

I can feel the difference of the temperature of the air, the water, and Megu's vagina!

...It feels good.

Having sex in bath feels really good.

We continued having sex while making noises in water when we piston...

「...Megu's accepting Yoshi-kun with her whole body right now. I, now...I love you Yoshi-kun. I love Yoshi-kun. Love! I love Yoshi-kuun...!!...Dear! My dear! Megu's already no good without you. Megu's your slave. A slave-like wife...!!」

I can no longer hold back.

In the hot water...I shake Megu's body from below!

I push up Megu's womb from below...!

「...Ah...Aaah...Aaaaah!」

Megu's raising a big gasping voice...!

Her face looks like she's in so much pain.

Her moist eyes are looking at me.

She keeps kissing my face repeatedly...

「Megu...are you really okay? Doesn't it hurt?」

Megu shakes her body...!

The hot water splashes...!

「It still hurts a bit...make it hurt more...Megu likes the pain!」

Megu...thrusts her waist!

She's lowering her ass hard to let my erection hit her uterus!

「Aah...That movement feels good...Megu」

「Really?...Is Megu really pleasing Yoshi-kun? Is Megu useful to Yoshi-kun?!」

「Yeah...Megu's body feels good!...I want to have sex with Megu all the time! If only we can stop the time...!」

「It's fine. We'll do it always...! No matter how long, no matter how many times! Megu will be Yoshi-kun's slave!」

Megu...Tightens her vagina!

With my penis buried on her deepest part...she turns her waist in circles.

Ugh...I'm being squeezed.

「...Ufufu. Does it feel good? You see I learned it from a senior from the club」

...Megu smiles

「Senpai taught me a technique to please Yoshi-kun...!」

What kind of club is the track and field!

「Did you know Yoshi-kun...Women's anus and the pussy have muscle that's connected like a figure of eight...Therefore, if you tighten your anus, that place would tighten as well...!」

Saying that...Megu licks my lips.

「...I'm learning a lot of things. I will study anything just to please Yoshi-kun...!」

...Megu!

...Aaah!

「...But, I will never get used to sex. I won't drown. My sex will be only to please Yoshi-kun. I will never forget this very shameful emotion...Yoshi-kun should violate the embarrassed Megu...!」

「...Megu wants to be violated?」

Can Megu not love normal sex?

「...un. Megu wants to be violated by Yoshi-kun. I'd like to be violated. I want to be treated like a toy. I want to be a toy! I want to be Yoshi-kun's favorite toy!」

Megu...exposes her heart to me

「...Megu wants to be a sex doll! Megu is born to be violated by Yoshi-kun after all. I'm a sex doll only for Yoshi-kun. You can make a mess out of Megu...!」

Her waist shakes...

My erection polishes up Megu's insides...

「...Got it. Megu is my sex toy...But I'll treasure you. I'll love and treasure you... I'll take a look after you forever...!」

I embraced Megu's naked back...

Megu leaks out hot tears from what I said.

「...I'm happy! I'm so happy! Yoshi-kun said that he'll treasure Megu! He'll

treasure Megu. I love you Yoshi-kun! I'll give it to you! I'll give my all to you!
Megu will give her everything to you...!」

...Aaaaaaaaaaaaaah!

The hot lump is rising.

「...Megu, I'm about to!」

Megu looks at me and shouts.

「It's fine! Give it to Megu! Please pour it inside Megu's stomach!」

「...C-Cumming!」

「Yoshi-kun, show Megu your cumming face...the face that feels the best!」

...Uuuuuu!

「...Meguuuuuu!!」

...Byurururu

My semen spouts...!

「...Ah...It's pouring in! Yoshi-kun...it's reaching me!」

We're having sex in the bath!

My penis is piercing the deepest part of Megu...

It's releasing white liquid like a fountain!!!

「...Yoshi-kun's warmth...is soaking into Megu's baby chamber!!!」

I look at Megu's face while ejaculating.

Megu's looking at me too.

「...I love you... I love you dear...!」

「...Megu...Megu...My Meguu...!」

We kiss while embracing each other...

My ejaculation's not ending...!



「...how is it? You came a lot?」

Megu smiles while still connected to me.

「Un. I let out a lot inside Megu...!」

Megu licks my lips.

「You let out a lot...I can feel Yoshi-kun's semen reaching my womb. Megu's inside is filled by Yoshi-kun...!」

Megu's vagina tightens.

Megu's inside is sucking out the semen that's left in my penis...!

「But...I want more. Megu's womb is telling me that it wants more of Yoshi-kun's semen...!」

Megu puts her tongue in my mouth.

Our tongues twined...

「...Onii-chan」

I can hear a crying voice of a girl in my ear...

「...Please look at Mana too」

...Mana

Mana who's been watching us have intense sex...

Her eyes are moist...

She has her hand between her crotch...She's stimulating her clitoris.

「...Mana, you must not order Yoshi-kun」

Megu's 『Disciplining』 Mana while clinging to me.

「If you want to be seen then present yourself. Think on how you can please Yoshi-kun...! Fill your head with only Yoshi-kun! Throw yourself and think only about Yoshi-kun...!」

Hearing Megu...Mana stands up.

While the hot water drips down...the young naked body stands up.

I admire Mana's naked body while still connected to Megu.

An immature body that's still growing.

But still, her breasts begin to assert itself already.

Cute and puffed up stomach.

A body of a 14 year old that doesn't have much muscle.

Her ass meat is still not thick.

But...It's awfully soft and I already know it's elasticity.

Mana stands before me.

Mana shows her hairless slit in front of my face.

「...Onii-chan, please take a look」

Mana speaks to me in a tense voice...

「...It's Mana's pussy that was made a 『woman』by Onii-chan today...」

Mana sits on the edge of the tub and spread her legs wide.

I can clearly see her slightly swollen vagina., 「...I want Onii-chan to go inside again. And do lewd things with Mana again...!」

Mana's trembling.

「Mana...is actually scared」

Mana told me.

「...I'm scared. But」

Mana opens up her vagina with her finger.

It's wet.

The love nectar is dripping down...

「Mana...is much more scared being abandoned by Onii-chan!」

...Mana!

「Mana's body is still a child...so I don't think it's fun for Onii-san to have sex. But...Mana doesn't have anything to give Onii-chan...!」

Megu reacts to Mana's words.

「Mana's still being arrogant...!」

Mana trembled in surprise...!

「Having a childish body or unable to do anything...Isn't that just Mana's selfish convenience? If you have time to think that then think on how can Mana's insubstantial body please Yoshi-kun! Concentrate only on Yoshi-kun!」

「...Megu-oneechan」

「If this continues, Mana will never be embraced by Yoshi-kun until tomorrow mornign. Unless I report it to Minaho-san...Mana won't have the awareness that she's Yoshi-kun's 『woman』...!⁴」

Megu tightens her vagina as she speaks with Mana.

「But...Mana doesn't know what to do...!」

「If you don't know then shouldn't you just ask Yoshi-kun? 『What do you want me to do?』...!」

Megu's 『Education』is harsh...

Megu's desperate as well.

If ever tomorrow, Minaho-neesan didn't accept Mana as a 『woman』⁵...

Mana would be disposed...

For the kind Megu cornering Mana this far...

Megu herself understands that tonight is a crisis...

「Onii-chan...What should Mana do?」

Mana's face looks afraid.

「Yoshi-kun...just clearly say what you think. Yoshi-kun, what do you want to do with Mana? Let out everything in your heart...!」

Megu's words...

I looked at Mana once again.

Not as a girl that's cornered to a pitiful situation.

But...I look at Mana's body as a woman....

Why am I deeply attached to this girl?...

Since when did I think of risking my life for Mana?

When I take a look at her frightened trembling face...I finally noticed.

As expected...I like this kind of face.

Furthermore...I have the desire to do horrible things to women with this face...

More...I want to make even more afraid.

I want to make her cry.

「...I want to rape her」

I reveal my true feelings.

「I...want to make a mess and rape Mana...!」

...I understand.

What I was fixated about mana...

I enjoyed the first time I raped Mana.
I was pleased raping Mana forcibly.

I felt sorry about that...
Afterwards, I tried to protect Mana desperately...

I'm the worst.

「...It's fine, do that」

Megu whispers to me...

「Yoshi-kun should just vent out his feelings honestly...!」

...Megu

「We're...Yoshi-kun's 『women』...!」

Megu licks my ear.

「In exchange...you must not do it with other women...!」

Megu knows my dark libido...

Yesterday, she saw my situation raping Yukino...

That's why...she's telling me to release my libido to my 『women』

「It's fine...Mana is also Yoshi-kun's 『woman』...therefore you can make a mess out of her...!」

If you reverse those words, it means that I can't embrace Yukino anymore...

「Mana...Yoshi-kun wants to rape you What would you do?」

...Mana!

「Onii-chan...please rape me as you want...!!!」

123. Mana is Onii-chan's...!

「...When I was in middle school, I heard this from a friend named Takahashi」

I sit on the edge of the bathtub.

On top of my legs is the naked Mana...

「Ah...I lived in a dorm when I attended an all boys middle school. Takahashi goes to the high school in there. I was able to sneak out somehow...」

Mana and I are reflected in the mirror in the bathroom of the love hotel.
Mana who's being carried by the naked me is trembling in fear.
Maika's face looks so pitiful.

「Then you see. Then Takahashi has a brother who goes to university...Then, when it was during winter break, Takahashi's brother said this when he returned home」

Embracing her from the back...I massage Mana's small breasts with my fingers.

No...It doesn't have much volume to be massaged by fingers.

But still, when I put my hands on it...I can feel clear elasticity from the bare skin of the 14 year old girl.

The still hard chest of a middle school girl.

I enjoy that feeling with the palm of my hand...

「『Women really looks good with long hair. Girls with long hair means that they take great care of it everyday. Women with silky smooth hair obviously have honest and proper character when you date them』...!」

I lick Mana's white fair back.

Mana's body trembled...!

The parts I licked are having goosebumps...!

「Hearing that, Takahashi got surprised...Because Takahashi's brother never dated a girl with a long hair...」

I kiss Mana's nape...

Mana twitched.

But...She's enduring it.

Sucking the skin under her back hair, there remains a red mark.

Is this what a kiss mark is?

Okay...Let's make a lot more.

I keep sucking out Mana's nape...

「Then...When Takahashi's brother went out, he secretly opened his brother's computer. Well, I think it's about looking for erotic images or videos hidden but...I don't have a computer so I don't know it...It seems that men are collecting lewd videos they collected from the internet to their computer...!」

I touch Mana's nipples from behind...

Mana's nipple is stink hiding under her areola.

When you look at the tip of the right nipple in the mirror...it has a small dent that looks like you'll fit a screwdriver in it.

I poke it with my finger...

Though it's sunken under her areola...I can tell that Mana's nipple is getting hard.

「Then, Takahashi take a look at his brother's saved lewd videos, one by one...and he noticed something...!」

I bite Mana's ear.

Mana raised a 「Ahn!」voice.

「The women in the lewd videos Takahashi's brother saved up...are all women with big eyes and mouth...!」

I touch Mana's stomach...

Squishy...but her waist is thin.

The skin of this 14 year old girl is tight.

Somehow...Her skin feels a bit thick.

Katsuko-nee and Nagisa-san's skin are a bit thin.

It feels like there's plump meat under the thin skin.

As for Mana...There's hardly any fat felt under the thick skin.

There's a bit on her breasts and ass...

「Then, Takahashi has noticed it...『Speaking of which, all of the women my brother dated have big eyes and mouth』」

I touch Mana's thighs...
What a soft and fluffy feeling...
When I stroke it, there's beads of hot water flowing through it.
I guess this is what they say water resisting skin...

「In short...the common feature of the women in his saved videos are...
『Women with big eyes and mouth』...But it is completely unrelated to
Takahashi's brother's 『Preference』which is 『Long hair』...」

Mana's ass...
When I touch it, her body twists...
It's a thin ass without any meat yet.
But, when I touch it...This middle school girl ass has the elasticity of a rubber...

「Then, in the end Takahashi's conclusion is...men don't really know the type
of girl they like...they don't know but they chose their own 『preference』
Therefore...he said 『If you want to know his true taste, then take a look at his
computer』 『If you find a common feature on the women...then you should
know what he actually likes』...」

My finger finally touches Mana's slit...
It's wet...
Mana's secret lips is reflected on the mirror...
After it lost it's virginity...it had sex multiple times.
It's swelling a bit.
But still...this hairless slit of a 14 year old girl...
It's perfectly closed...

「Mana...Do you get what I'm saying?」

I whisper on Mana's ears...

「...I-I don't」

Mana is shaking.

「If ever I had a computer... I'm sure that the images I have collected would be
all girls with the same face as Mana...」
「...Eh?」

The beautiful girl in the mirror expresses her surprise.

「I think I physiologically like faces like Mana...Mana's face is very beautiful. Your eyes are big, your nose is high...your lip is a bit thick, it feels sexy. Perhaps, my taste is a girl that has Mana's face...!」

It's different from love...

...『Taste』

It's simply...like.

Whether you like a cat or a dog...

Liking croissant more than bread...that level of taste.

「...T-Thank you very much...Onii-chan」

Mana thanked me though she's trembling.

「But sorry...I like to see women that has face like Mana's to have a troubled look...」

I arrived at the truth.

This dark, dark...urge.

「...I told you about this before but...I've yearned for Mana's sister, Yukino since the entrance ceremony... Even though I say it's yearning, it's a bit different. Everyday...I've been masturbating while imagining I rape Yukino... I rape Yukino's body in my head everyday...!」

Mana's body stiffen in my arms...

「I didn't want to love Yukino. I don't want Yukino to be my lover... I wanted to rape Yukino. A lovely beautiful girl I could never reach... I want her to be stained by my semen...!」

That's my nature as a man...

My miserably, and ugly lust...

「When I discovered that Yukino and Endou are going out, I received shock... I feared that Endou might take away Yukino's virginity. I want to trample Yukino's virginity by all means...I don't want it to be stolen by some other guy. If Endou embraces her, I won't be able to imagine raping Yukino in my head...!」

My face in the mirror...

Is a face of a miserable man...!

Mana looks at my face in fear...

「I am dying to make Yukino's body a mess...! I want to release all of the feelings I have inside Yukino's womb! The hatred for my parents...the anxiety to the future...the loneliness and despair... All of it, along with my semen, I want to ejaculate it inside Yukino...!」

That's right...I just used Yukino as an outlet of my heart...
The feelings I've saved up...is released to Yukino.

「...Then, you raped Oneechan?」

Mana spoke.

「Mana...you're forbidden to call Yukino 『Oneechan』!」

Megu speak from the bathtub.
Megu's pushing her breasts to my back while...
Teasing my penis with her hand...

「Mana is already 『Yoshida Mana』isn't she?! You're not 『Shirasaka Maika』!...
Call Yukino 『Yukino-san』!」

Megu's instructing her strictly...!

「Okay...Did Onii-chan raped 『Yukino-san』?」

Mana shrinks, then asks me.

「Yes, Yoshi-kun participated in the rape. He asked Minaho-san and Yoshi-kun
torn Yukino's virginity...!」

Megu spoke before I can answer.
She's speaking as if Yukino has been gangbanged...
She's giving an impression that I'm not alone.

「Yeah...I desperately begged Minaho-neesan. I want to take Yukino's virginity
by all means...!」

「Is that so...『Yukino-san's』first time is also rape...」

Mana said sadly.

「But, isn't that great...Mana?」

Megu speaks happily while rubbing my glans.

「Yoshi-kun liked your face...!」

「...Eh?」

Mana looks at Megu in the mirror.

「Isn't that right? Yoshi-kun liked Mana's face so Yoshi-kun took you from Minaho-san, isn't it? If not...Mana would've experienced something more horrible...just like Yukino...!」

Megu stretched her red tongue and licked my back...!
I feel pleasure running through my bak...!

「Yoshi-kun...What horrible thing happened to Yukino?」

Megu whispers to my ears...

「I heard that she was violated 13 times on her first night...what happened afterwards?」

Is Megu telling me to talk about everything that happened to Yukino...?
No...Megu's telling me to confess.
Confess everything I did to Yukino.

「Afterwards...Yukino was violated in a car while watching her lover and the baseball club members practice. Then...she's also violated in an abandoned school building...was peed on, and peed in front of everyone...it's all recorded in camera. Photographed.」

Mana is shaking.
But, her eyes are open and is looking at me in the mirror.
I continued talking to Mana in the mirror.

「Then...She was called into a public restroom in the park in the middle of her date with her boyfriend...and was prostituted twice. Afterwards, she walked in the town in a miniskirt without wearing any panty...violated while being watched by men in the red light district... Yukino was violated in front of her house too...」

「...That's」

Mana becomes speechless...!

「Then...yesterday...」

When I was about to speak, Megu intervenes.

「Megu will continue from here. Megu saw what happened yesterday... Yukino was teased by vibrators and electric shock in front of people and she turned to a laughingstock. Then, she was made to wear a bridal gown...and was raped by a man in a place that looks like a church. I feel sorry for Yukino who can't wear bridal gowns anymore. She can't marry anymore...If you experience something like that, you'll be always remembering the time when you were raped...!」

It's as if Megu is possessed by Minaho-neesan.

No...Megu's doing it on purpose.

Megu is performing Minaho-neesan's 『Spellbound words』to rule Mana's heart...!

Megu is a woman of 『Kuromori』...Minaho-neesan's 『Eighth toy』

「That's not all...Mana. Yukino had a worse behavior than Mana so...she wasn't taken to Ikeda-sensei like Mana or Misuzu-san after she lost her virginity」

「...Does that mean?!」

Mana's trembles violently.

「That's right...Yukino's the only one who's not taking contraceptive pills. Minaho-san intends to make Yukino pregnant. She'll make Yukino give birth in substitute for her who can't bear one...!」

「That's cruel. Too horrible!」

Mana's eyes have tears spilling...

「Mana...Stop that」

Megu scolds Mana in a low voice.

「...Megu-oneechan?」

Mana can't understand Megu's anger...!

「Mana has no time to sympathize with Yukino...! Does Mana want to experience the same...No, even worse than Yukino?!」

「...No...I don't want to!」

Mana shook her head...!

「Who do you thank for being brought to the doctor?! Is it because Mana is a good girl?」

「...No. It's thanks to Onii-chan. Mana...has been bad all this time」

「You know that Yoshi-kun has been protecting Mana from Minaho-san all this time, don't you...?!」

「Yes...I do」

「And now...You do know that Mana's still in a life or death situation, don't you?」

...Megu's words pierces Mana.

「...Yes」

「Then...Throw away that 『princess』mood completely」

「...Megu-oneechan?」

「Think seriously...What does Mana have to do to be approved by Minaho-san?」

...Megu?

Mana...thinks.

「Yoshi-kun...Let's abandon the naive ideas. Minaho-san is on a do-or-die game with her life on the line...If there's even a slight possibility of Mana betraying us...if there's even a slight possibility of her sabotaging us...it's determined that she'll be disposed」

...T-That's right.

Minaho-neesan...is shouldering the lives of the whole 『Kuromori』...
We can't overlook the insecure element of Mana.

「Minaho-san won't accept anything half-hearted...what would you do, Mana?!」

Mana...!

Mana answers...!

「I think, Mana has to be Onii-chan's slave」

Mana answered with a crying face.

「...I think so too. ...If you don't persist through that, Minaho-san will never accept Mana」

...Slave

「...Therefore, Megu-oneechan told me earlier to stop thinking about myself and just think about Onii-chan...!」

「That's right. If ever Mana tries to give priority to herself...at that moment, Minaho-san will cast away Mana. We're already at that level...!」

「...Mana has always been selfish, disobedient, and conceited...」

Mana reflects deeply.

Did Mana's image detoriate that much for Minaho-neesan...?

No...If I recall, she wasn't seen as someone that can be trusted.

「If Mana wants to live like a human in the future...She has to become a complete slave. It's okay, Yoshi-kun will love you as a 『Little sister』properly. But, Mana must not depend on Yoshi-kun's love...Mana is a slave after all...!」

...Is that okay?

Mana nods her pale face.

Tears are accumulating in her eyes...

「Yes...Mana was a fool who took advantage of kindness... Having never thought of being a slave...I've been impolite once again...!」

...Mana

「...You understand it well. Mana」

「Yes. Mana will become Onii-chan's slave. I will set my heart on becoming a slave...I'll learn the spirit of being a slave...!」

Mana swears to herself in the mirror.

Mana will make herself fall to a slave...

「Yoshi-kun...That's how it is」

「...No, but」

「Yoshi-kun doesn't need to mind it. Just think of Mana as your 『Little sister』as you do and just love her. Mana will selfishly convince herself that she's『Yoshi-kun's slave』...」

...But

「Understand that this is necessary for Mana...」

...I

Mana turned to me.

「Onii-chan...Thank you for saying that you want to rape Mana」

Mana is desperately forcing herself to smile...

She's becoming my slave to get over her fear of being violated.

「...Mana」

Mana is a very clever girl.

She's a girl who didn't lose her sense of self, she's adaptive to the situation.

Because of that, she was hated by Minaho-neesan and others though...

Mana has the strong willpower and acting ability...

That kind of Mana...is convincing herself that 『She's my slave』...

What's going on...?!

「Thank you for liking Mana's face! Please rape Mana a lot...I'm sure I'll get used to it」

Mana clings to me.

Her small breasts rubs against my chest.

「Mana...you must not get used! Yoshi-kun wants to rape the Mana who has the afraid face. You must not get used to rape. You should be scared of it...!」

Megu said something illogical.

「Got it Megu-oneechan...Mana won't get used to sex. I'll always be scared of it...!」

Mana's forcing herself smile while trembling.

「Now...Yoshi-kun, rape Mana」

...Megu

「You like Mana's face don't you?...It's okay. Yoshi-kun's hatred, anxiety, loneliness, and despair... You can release it all inside Mana along with your semen...!

...Eh?

「Yoshi-kun is always enduring everything...There's a lot of bad thing that's

accumulating in your heart. This is why you want to rape a girl like Yukino, don't you」

...Megu's eyes are in pain.

「Yeah...I'm the worst guy」

「It's not...You're very cute. I love you, Yoshi-kun!」

...Megu?

「...It's fine. Expose the true Yoshi-kun in front of us. It doesn't matter if it's shameful or ugly. We will clear up all of the dark feelings collected in Yoshi-kun's heart...!」

...But.

...Doesn't that mean?

「We're Yoshi-kun's 『women』...we want to accept all the good things and bad things about Yoshi-kun...! Now...release all your pent up desires on Mana! Mana will be in charge of that today...therefore」

Megu speaks.

「...You don't need Yukino anymore, do you?」

...I shivered.

Megu...is trying to tear Yukino away from me.

She's trying to change the outlet of my emotions to Mana from Yukino...

「Mana...From now on, you're Yoshi-kun's rape slave. You'll be violated anytime whenever Yoshi-kun is in ill humor. Aren't you glad? Yoshi-kun needs Mana...!」

「...Mana is needed?」

Mana asks Megu.

「Un...Whenever Yoshi-kun have sex with someone else, he's always taking care of his partner. That's nice but...Yoshi-kun needs a partner who he can release his dark desires on. If he doesn't have someone like that...Yoshi-kun will break in the future」

Megu declared.

「He's currently venting it out on Yukino...But, Yukino's disqualified. Yukino doesn't have the capacity to accept a man's desire...She's an idiot you know...」
「Un...『Yukino-san's』an idiot」

Yukino...your 『Sisters』are backstabbing you...

「Therefore...I think Mana is qualified. Yoshi-kun, don't you think so too?」

...I

「Yoshi-kun...take a look at Mana's face again」

I look at Mana's face as Megu told me.

「...As expected, Mana's face is Yoshi-kun's type?」

「...Yeah」

「Do you want to violate Mana...?」

...I

「Answer honestly. We won't get away from Yoshi-kun because of something like that. We want to know Yoshi-kun's real feelings...!」

...My real feelings

「We want Yoshi-kun to expose his heart to us...!」

...U

「I want to ravish Mana. I want to make a mess out of Mana whenever I feel in ill humor. I want to make Mana my rape slave...!」

...Oh

I showed my dark desires to Megu and Mana.

「...Do you need Mana?」

Mana asks me...

「I don't mind being a sex slave or a rape slave...do you really think that you need Mana from the bottom of your heart...?!」

In the end...Mana's pride will be the last line.

Her pride won't allow her to be saved from pity...

Mana...At least think that she wants to be 『needed』

Even if she becomes a 『Rape slave』...

「...I do. I need my rape slave Mana...!」

Mana kneels before me...!

...Mana.

「...Thank you for needing Mana, Onii-chan. Mana will be living as Onii-chan's 『rape slave』from now on...I'll do my very best to be loved forever...so please, don't abandon me. Please don't throw Mana away...」

Mana licks my feet.

Just like how a dog submits itself.

「Mana...What you said just now, swear that to Yoshi-kun three times a day. If Mana won't do at least that, you can't become a 『rape slave』will you?」

Megu makes Mana fall even further...

「Yes...I promise. Mana is Onii-chan's slave. I swear to be your slave throughout my life...!」

She kisses my feet again and again.

During the daytime...I washed Mana's foot.

And now...Mana's kissing my foot...

As my slave.

「Yoshi-kun...embrace Mana」

Megu said while stroking my penis.

「Mana just swore to be your rape slave...if you don't rape her with all your might, she'll worry if Yoshi-kun really needs her or not...!」

...Megu.

「Onii-chan...please violate Mana! Please release all of Onii-chan's gloomy emotions inside Mana! Mana is a rape slave for that sake!」

...I

...I

「Mana...put your hands on the mirror and stick out your butt...!」

I ordered Mana...

「Yes...Onii-chan...!」

Mana holds to the mirror...
And sticks out her ass in one go.

「Is this good enough?...Onii-chan」

But still...Mana's body is trembling.
She's still feeling fear from having sex.

「Look at your own face reflected in the mirror...!」
「...Yes」

I pushed my erect penis in Mana's vagina.

「...Hiii!!」

Feeling the glans touching her...Mana trembled.

「...Are you scared, Mana?」
「I'm very scared.」
「It'll get scarier you know」
「...Please make it scarier」

Mana opens her slit with her fingers...
Her love nectar is spilling down...

「What...aren't you completely wet?...Are you aroused, Mana?」
「I don't know...It's just that my stomach feels hot...!」
「...You're a pervert, Mana」
「Yes...Mana is a lewd girl. Onii-chan, please punish this bad Mana...!」
「...You won't be accepting any man other than me throughout your life!」
「Yes...Mana's already Onii-chan's property. I'm a slave only for Onii-chan」

Mana's voice sounds shrilling...
Mana's body is trembling...
Her face looks frightened in the mirror...
I want to make that face cry even more...!

「...I'll violate you! Mana!」

I pushed my glans inside Mana's slit!

「...Ouuch!!!」

The face in the mirror endures the pain!

Mana's pussy that was virgin just a while ago...!

The vagina that hasn't recovered from pain is invaded by my desire!

「...Are you scared, Mana?」

「...I'm scared, I'm scaaaared!!!」

Her small and narrow hole is expanded forcibly by my penis...!

「...aaaaaaaaah!」

Mana exclaims...!

...She's being ravished!

...Mana's being violated!!

「Okay...Let's push it to the deepest part!」

I pierce my penis to the root!

「...Ouch...It hurts...!!」

A foreign object is being pushed into Mana's stomach that's about to burst.
She's spilling out hot tears like rain...

...Cute.

Does it hurt that it made you cry?...Are you feeling pain?

Mana's enduring face is very beautiful, I think...

「...Hey, look at the mirror」

I ordered Mana.

「Take a look at your own face as I rape you...」

Mana...looks at herself...

「...It's embarrassing...It's shameful」

「...You're beautiful, Mana. Mana's face when she's being raped by me is the cutest」

I whisper in Mana's ear while piercing her from the back .

「What kind of face am I making right now?」

「Onii-chan's making a scary face. But, it looks so pleased」

「...It feels good. Raping Mana feels really good」

I raise Mana's body from behind...

I can see the part where we are connected in the mirror.

「Look...take a look at it Mana. We're connected」

「Aah...Onii-chan is inside Mana...!」

Mana shed tears again...!

「It's really inside...Something that big is all inside Mana?」

「That's right...I'm raping Mana right now」

「What should I do...Mana is being raped...!」

「...I'm moving」

I slowly use my waist...!

「Aaaaahn...It's coming inside Mana! It's entering! It's coming in again! I can see it...it's exposed!!...Mana is being raped by Onii-chan...!」

Mana is looking at her raped self and is indulging herself in the suffering...!
I can no longer hold back...!

「Mana, put your hands in the mirror again...I'm going in a dash until I ejaculate!」

「Yes...Onii-chan」

Mana puts her hand on the mirror.
I gripped Mana's waist...!

「...It'll hurt!」

「...I-I'm scared !!」

I start a violent piston!

「...Ouch, ouch, ouch! It huuuurts!!」

My penis is being stroked by the narrow vagina!
I ram deeper towards Mana's uterus!

「Ouch! It hurts deep inside!」

Mana's face in the mirror is enduring the pain and suffering!
Her tears spill down and splashes on the bathroom floor...!

「Onii-chan...Onii-chan...Onii-chaaan...!!」

Mana can no longer shout anything but 「Onii-chan」
She's just desperately enduring the man's cruelty...!
I touch Mana's breasts from behind!
I tease her nipples...!
Oh...the desire to ejaculate rises in a dash!

「Mana...I'm releasing it! I'm going to release it inside Mana!」

I look at Mana in the mirror!

「Cum! Defile Mana's body! Make it dirty! Onii-chan!」

...Aaaaaaah
...Cumming!
...It's coming!
It's rising up...!!

「...M-Manaaaaaaaaa!!!」

My semen blows out!!

「...Aaah!!! Onii-chan!!」

Mana's womb is trembling as semen pours in...!

「...It's coming out right now!」

We look at each other in the mirror

「I can tell...I can feel it...Onii-chan is pouring it inside Mana right now!!」

Doku, dokudoku, doku...!
My penis pulsates and sent white liquid to Mana...!

「...Manaaa!」

I stab in my waist and squeezes it to the last drop...!

「Aaaah...Onii-chan, does it feel good?」

Mana asks me.

「...It does, what about Mana?
「Mana doesn't know...But」

The 14 year old girl in the mirror looks at me while being impregnated...

「The Mana in the mirror makes a pleased face...」

「...Mana」

「Mana is surely a pervert...an abnormal pervert¹」

My ejaculation finally ends.

I embrace Mana's body from behind.

「That's great...Mana is a 『rape slave』for only me」

「Un...You're right. Onii-chan」

「Thank you...Mana. I feel refreshed after ejaculating inside Mana...!」

I kissed Mana's ear from behind...

I pull out my penis from Mana.

The remains of the sperm drips out from her slit opened wide.

Mana turns to me, putting her ass in the bathroom floor.

「Mana should be the one thanking you for using her body, Onii-chan...」

「...Mana」

Mana looks at Megu

「Megu-oneechan...sex is amazing」

Megu looks at us satisfied.

「Mana never knew that it's so pleasant to use her own body to make Onii-chan feel good」

Mana smiles at Megu.

「I think so too...When I make Yoshi-kun feel good, I feel glad that I'm born a woman」

「un...Mana's glad to be a woman as well. I'm glad it's Onii-chan. I'm glad I'm his slave...!」

Megu asks Mana.

「How is it Mana?...Want to continue?」

Continue...

The life of a rape slave...

From now on...Mana will continue becoming my outlet of my desires...

...Mana

「...Un. Even if it's rape, I know Onii-chan likes Mana...」

Mana nods.



Once again, we entered the bath and washed the sweat and love nectar.

「Yoshi-kun...wash Megu's body」

Speaking of which, there's that too.

「Got it」

When I take the sponge, Megu...

「I don't need sponge...」

...Megu?

「Wash me with your hand...!」

I put body soap on my hand...

Then...washed Megu's body.

「...Aahn, it feels good」

Megu whispers to me.

I thoroughly enjoy Megu's body by the palm of my hand...

「...You can touch me lewder you know」

Megu said.

「No...Touch me lewder. I want you to touch me...!」

Her breasts, stomach, back, legs, ass, and even her crotch are washed cleanly by me...

I showered Megu and washed away the bubble...

Then, we warmed our body in the bathtub again...

When I decided to get out of the bath...

「It's okay to take a rest after the bath, but...」

Megu smiles at me.

「Attach the collar we received a while ago on Megu. Yoshi-kun has the chain. Megu will become Yoshi-kun's dog...I want you to violate me from behind like a dog...!」

Megu pleads me with passionate eyes...

「I want to be violated by Yoshi-kun while looking at myself in the mirror too...!」

...Megu.

My crotch hardens again...

「Mana wants to do it too? Let's become Yoshi-kun's pet」

Mana...

「If Onii-chan wants to do it...」

Mana doesn't prioritize her own desires anymore.
She thinks about what I want before anything...

「Well done, Mana...You said the right thing...!」

Mana doesn't forget to 『Educate』 Mana...
I...

「Un. Let's go with collar play, Mana. Ah, but, I only have one chain to be attached」

That's right...Tamayo-san gave me only one

「If we have only one...Megu-oneechan can have it Mana will be watching over」

That might be the right answer as well
If it was the previous 『Maika』she'd calmly say 「Let's get another one from Tamayo-san」

「Okay...Let's get out of the bath first. I want to drink something. I'm feeling thirsty」

「Right」

The three of us get out of the bath.

When I open the door...

There's one woman standing in there...

A tall woman wearing black clothes.

「...It seems that her 『Education』 is going well」

She smiles with her usual cold eyes...

...Eeeeeeh?

W-Why are you here?

M-Minaho-neesan...?!!!!

124. Crimes and punishment.

Mana and I are in blank surprise as...

Minaho-neesan suddenly appeared.

Megu speaks to Minaho-neesan with a resolute expression.

「...You could've given us a bit more time」

...Megu

...Did she know that Minaho-neesan came?

「Megumi, do you want that collar play that much?」

Minaho-neesan smiles at Megu...

「...Yes」

Megu answers with blushing cheeks.

「It's okay...you can do it later」

...Err

What does this mean?

Mana came to her senses...!

Mana then kneeled on the bathroom floor naked...!

Her forehead touches the floor.

「My, what's wrong with her?」

Minaho-neesan speaks in a sadistic tone...

...Mana doesn't answer.

「...What's wrong, Mana」

When I asked her, Mana...

「Onii-chan...please allow me to ask for forgiveness on Yuzuki-sama!」

Mana said while her forehead touches the floor.

「Ah...Sure. Minaho-neesan, Mana said that she wants to apologize...」

「Hmm...Is that so?」

Minaho-neesan stands in front of Mana...

「...Maika-san, no, you're Mana-san aren't you?...I allow you to speak to me...!」

Minaho-neesan dominates Mana as a 『Ruler』...!
Mana...

「Yuzuki-sama...I, have been impolite to everyone, to Yuzuki-sama since the beginning of the day. I am very sorry...!」

Mana's voice is desperate.
She's apologizing to Minaho-neesan with a shaking voice...!

「Please punish me accordingly...! However, please don't punish Onii-chan. Please!」

Eh...Me?

...Ah.

...I see.

Mana's my 『woman』...

My 『Little sister』...My 『Rape slave』

Naturally...Mana's misconduct is caused by my lack of supervision...

Mana's sins are my sins.

...Oh

...I

Why am I this idiotic?

I never noticed something important until someone tells it!!!

I kneeled next to Mana in hurry...!

I kneeled in front of Minaho-neesan while still naked!!!

「...Minaho-neesan, I'm sorry! I will properly 『Discipline』 Mana for her sins! I will take all the punishment...Please spare Mana!」

I stick my forehead on the bathroom floor.
My head bumps against the floor because of the momentum.
But still...I desperately rub my forehead on the tiles...!

「Sure...For the time being, you two passed」

Minaho-neesan told us.

「...Raise your heads. Look at me」

The two of us looked up from the floor to Minaho-neesan...

「...Yoshida-kun. I wanted you to learn the responsibility of a 『man』 to his 『woman』 You must not spoil them...¹ You must scold her so she won't cause trouble to other people, she must be punished as well. If you can't do that...I can always take away Mana-san away from you anytime I want...」

Even though the tone is kind...Minaho-neesan's words were severe...

「...And, Mana-san. If ever you ignored your master, Yoshida-kun and just talked to me directly...I was to dispose of you immediately」

Minaho-neesan's cold words scares Mana...!

...I see.

If it was the usual 『Maika』...even if she's going to apologize to Minaho-neesan, she'll ignore me and talk to her directly.

「And...Confessing your crime and considering to prevent the punishment reaching your master was wonderful. You're a smart one so if you realize that you're no longer Shirasaka house's 『Princess』, but Yoshida-kun's 『slave』I thought that you'll be able to behave yourself properly...I'm giving you a passing grade for the time being」

Then, does Minaho-neesan.....Mana?

「But...I've been watching Mana-san for the whole day, but...Aren't you the type who 『forgets the head once it's past the throat²』」

Minaho-neesan looks down at Mana with a cold smile...

「...Yes. Mana is that kind of foolish girl...!」

Mana speaks words of reflection while in half-tears.

「You're not an idiot...I've said this a while ago, Mana-san is smart. It's just that you don't have the class. Realize that you're a vulgar human」

「...Yes. Yuzuki-sama」

But still...Mana holds back her tears.

If it was Yukino, then she would've been swept away by her feelings and just cry and scream, but...Mana's holding back.

That's Mana's strength I think.

「『Strike while the iron's hot』wasn't it? Then, I thought of completing Mana's『education』at the current stage...」

Minaho-neesan came to this room...
to thoroughly establish the 『Slave consciousness』to Mana?

「...Anyway, you'll catch cold when you stay naked. Let's talk the details in that bed...Megumi

「...Yes」

「...Your bodies are still wet. Wipe Yoshida-kun」

「Got it」

Megu took the bath towel from the love hotel's dressing room.
She spreads it out...and tries to wipe me up.

「No...It's fine. I can do it myself...」

When I say that...Minaho-neesan...

「Yoshida-kun...let Megumi wipe you」

「...Minaho-neesan?」

「You can't take the job of your 『women』」

Minaho-neesan...is also 『educating』me
...Thoroughly.

「Let Megu wipe you...I want to do this」

Megu smiles gently.

「Un...Then please. Megu」

I spread my arms and stand to make it easy for Megu to wipe me
Megu wipes my body with a bath towel...

「By the way...There's two pieces of bath towels」

Certainly...The bath towel prepared in the love hotel are only for one man and one woman.

「Why are you not doing anything...?」

Hearing Minaho-neesan, Mana jumps up...!

「...O-Onii-chan...P-Please let Mana wipe Onii-chan's body as well!」

Taking another bath towel...Mana stands in my back.

「...C-Can I wipe your body?」

Mana didn't wipe without my permission.

Is this the consciousness of a 『slave』?

「Un...please」

「...Yes」

Megu's in front...

While Mana wipes my back side.

While the two of them are naked.

Megu's cute breast is shaking...

「I'll be wiping the feet as well」

Mana kneels on the floor and wipes my feet.

「Yoshi-kun, I'm wiping this one too」

Megu is wiping my penis carefully.

「Thanks...」

My body has been completely dried off.

I ask Minaho-neesan.

「Uhm...should I wipe Megu and Mana's body as well?」

Minaho-neesan...

「You can do that as you like. They're Yoshida-kun's 『women』aren't they?」

...Right.

They're my 『women』

I do what I must as it's my responsibility. ³

「Megu...I'm wiping you」

「...Yes, dear」

Megu stands in front of me bashfully...

No matter how much she exposes her naked body to me, Megu won't forget the shame...

Mego won't forget the embarrassment from feeling that I'm looking at her.

Megu who's bright red is really cute...

I took the bath towel from Megu and wiped her soft body.

「...Next, Mana」

Before, I'd use the reason that Mana is younger...

...That's no good.

Megu became my 『woman』before Mana...

Megu is the 『Lawful wife』for me and Mana is a 『Little sister』and a 『slave』

Mana should be after Megu...

That is priority.

I wipe every corner of Mana's small body.

Her small breasts...and the crotch where my semen is dripping.

「Done?...Then, there's a love hotel gown there, right? Put it on Yoshida-kun」

Certainly, there's a thin strange cloth in the dressing room.

Megu took the pink one for herself and passed the blue to me.

Anyway...I tried putting it on.

Somehow...instead of a gown.

It feels like I'm a hospital patient that will have an operation...

Megu and I wore our gown, but...

「Err...what about Mana?」

When I asked, Minaho-neesan laughed.

「...『Slaves』don't wear clothes you know?」

...Mana trembles from what Minaho-neesan said.

「Now...Let's go back in the room. Don't worry. I'm going back after a small talk...then you can enjoy the night with the three of you...!



We returned to the room with the bed.

Megu and I sit on the bed and Mana sits on the floor naked.

She's snuggling up to my feet like a pet...

Minaho-neesan turned the sofa to the bed, then sat down.

「By the way...Minaho-neesan, when did you come back?」

I started with a harmless question.

「...Come back?」

「Well, didn't you come back from the mansion?」

Right...Minaho-neesan said that and should've gone out of the love hotel.
Nei-san said 「Sensei's coming back soon」in the call as well...

「Oh...I was lying」

...Lie?!⁴

「I was in this hotel all this time...I was listening to your conversation」

...Minaho-neesan?

...Does that mean!?!

「It's better that my location and way of contact is unknown...It would be disturbing the enemy...!」

Minaho-neesan is talking about something totally different from what she said a while ago 「...Megumi, how did you notice it?」

Minaho-neesan looks at Megu.

Right...Megu?

「...The call」

Megu answers.

「...I tried to mail all of my friends that I changed my phone number. But, there's no one replying」

No reply?

「Usually, there are girls who would reply immediately, but they didn't send anything...」

No...But.

Megu's phone was used to mail Misuzu...

Then, Misuzu called immediately...

「Therefore...I thought that Minaho-san might've given us a phone that can only talk to specific people...」

Specific people?

「That's right. We had copied the memory of your previous phones to that but...you can only call to the numbers registered beforehand...!」

Minaho-neesan said...

...The numbers registered beforehand?

...Is that why I was able to make a call with Misuzu and Nei-san...?!

「I've said this a while ago...I don't trust Mana-san at all...!」

Minaho-neesan looks down at Mana...!

「Won't it be troublesome if Mana-san betrays Yoshida-kun...and calls Shirasaka house, or Ichikawa-san, or even the police in secret?」

Mana...betrays me?

「If Mana-san reports her location and she was rescued...our plans would be interfered. There's the possibility of Yoshida-kun and Megumi-san be taken as hostage as well...

...I see...

...That's why.

「If her own phone won't do, she might use Yoshida-kun or Megumi's phone. Therefore...I handed the three of you the same phone spec. Yoshida-kun knows that he can contact Misuzu and Nei...for the time being, it can also contact me, Katsuko, Margo, and Nagisa It won't be able to contact anyone but that...!」

... In short, Minaho-neesan.

Doesn't trust Mana at all...!

「Minaho-san knowing our conversation in the supermarket is because this phone is wiretapped isn't it?」

Megu asks further.

「That's right. At most, coming to this hotel...this room has some hidden cameras so I've been watching your state with Tamayo...!」

...Eh?

But...Tamayo-san

Just told me earlier...「You're feel that there's someone watching over you in the mansion when you have sex so you can't concentrate, right?」 She said that we can use this hotel anytime...

Therefore...I was sure that this hotel doesn't have cameras and mic...!

...Right

Tamayo-san didn't say anything about not having any monitor in here.

I just misunderstood it by myself.

「Tomorrow...Mana is an important hostage until the negotiation with Ichikawa-san finishes. I can't let you go. Therefore, I pretended to be going back and monitored you...!」

...In Minaho-neesan's current plan, keeping Mana in check has a big meaning. Minaho-neesan must continue to watch her by herself.

「If they rescued Mana-san...Ichikawa-san will immediately cooperate with Shirasaka house and attack us. That would be troublesome. We needed another day...no, just half a day would be fine. As long as we have Mana-san in our hands...Ichikawa-san will hinder Shirasaka house's activities. I want to disturb Shirasaka house's movement even for a bit... Therefore...It would truly be troublesome if Mana-san isn't here tonight...!」

Minaho-neesan said...

「...Also, I want to know Mana-san's real intentions. I want to confirm it with my own eyes if you really are suitable as Yoshida-kun's 『woman』」

A suitable 『woman』...for me...

「Your judgement is correct...with Mana-san's character, she won't be able to start over again unless she falls to the social status of 『Slave』...!」

...Minaho-neesan?

「Truly... she has grown up in a bad environment. Megumi has commented on your 『Princess feeling』, it really is true. You fit in the enemy well...and behaved as much as you like as Yoshida-kun has become your guardian」

Was it that bad?

「A normal girl would've been a bit more modest... Furthermore...After Mana-

san has been declared that 『you'll become our ally』, you hesitated multiple times don't you? Thinking whether you should betray Yoshida-kun and contact Ichikawa-san...!』

Minaho-neesan...has been observing Mana all this time.

「...You're like a Shirasaka in some meaning Well...we know Shirasaka Sousuke so we were able to hold back. You're the same as him...Your head is thinking something else while trying to talk trust...!』

Minaho-neesan can feel the figure of Mana's father, Shirasaka Sousuke in her back.

The daughter resembles the father.

If they live together...it's obvious that their thought and attitude would be similar.

Therefore...Minaho-neesan never lowered her guard.

No matter how much of a child Mana is, if she lowers her guard...it would become similar with Shirasaka Sousuke.

She didn't forget the possibility of her betrayal.

「I've explained it in words so far but, Mana-san has never seen any evidence about the crimes Shirasaka Sousuke has committed. Do you know why?』

Minaho-neesan asks me.

Speaking of which...Yukino has been shown images and videos, and yet...

There's nothing shown to Mana yet.

Minaho-neesan showed the scar in her stomach but...it was just explained through words after that.

「I wanted to know how much Mana-san would believe on our earnest talk. I can measure her humanity by that』

Mana's humanity.

「Yoshida-kun has always been serious to Mana-san. I showed my scar to Mana-san with serious feelings, and yet...Mana-san's manner was always wavering...』

...Wavering?

「In the end...She can't get convinced that the harm should be reaching herself

no matter how much evil doing her father has done. Rather than that...Mana-san's pride can't agree with the reality that Yoshida-kun has raped her...! Her head was just filled with the tragedy that happened to herself. Therefore, no matter how serious we talk, it won't appeal Mana-san's heart. Mana-san has been acting as an『ally』on the surface all this time...!」

...Is that how it is?

「Megumi has noticed my intention...and knows how much on the edge Mana-san is」

Minaho-neesan looks at Megu...

「Yes...I was able to imagine how Minaho-san would 『dispose』of Mana-san」
「Right...Megumi was there during the most horrible time of 『Kuromori』...」
「yes...Not just my mother...I've seen multiple ladies dying...」

...Died?

Minaho-san looks at Mana...

「Mana-san...You just said that 『You'll accept whatever kind of punishment』didn't you?」
「...Yes」

Mana answers while sitting on the floor naked.

「Did you say that knowing the meaning of 『Disposal⁵』in our world when you say that?」
「...No」

Mana shook her head...

「...『Disposal』means 『Kill』」

Minaho-neesan said calmly.
Mana's body begin to tremble.
Her molar chatters.
Megu looks at Mana.

「I noticed that Minaho-san intended to kill Mana if she betray us. She has already come to that level...」
「It was on that level from the start...」

Minaho-neesan said with a smile.

「The original plan I made was to get Shirasaka Yukino pregnant sell her away to an overseas prostitution brothel after giving birth. Shirasaka Maika will be gangbanged in front of Shirasaka Sousuke, and kill her...」

...Minaho-neesan?

「...It can't be helped you know? My little sister... Naomi was killed by Shirasaka Sousuke. It's not just Naomi...Keiko-san and Shinobu-san...Hiroko-san...Yoshie-san...Yuuki...Minako...Kaede...there's a lot of girls who committed suicide as well...」

Minaho-neesan looks at Mana with cold eyes.

「If it's for revenge against Shirasaka Sousuke...It can't be helped that we would kill his beloved daughter in front of him...!」

Minaho-neesan stands up from the sofa...goes to the table and opens her laptop.

「...I'll show you the evidences. The files I've sent Ichikawa-san is totaled eight hours. The images and videos there are all uncensored. I'll show a part of it...!」

We faced the laptop screen.

...Then, the video starts.



The man violates a young girl.

While laughing at the crying girl.

「That's me...the 12 year old me...!」

The same man rapes another woman...

「This is my mother...」

The woman's face is dead.

A small girl is crying next to the dead corpse lying on the bed.

「That's...Megu, right?」

「...Un」

Another girl is being violated...

The man is on top of the woman resisting violently.

「This is Naomi...She was just 12 years old」

That girl's funeral photo.

「...This is cruel」

A woman wearing our school uniform is being violated.

「...Nagisa-san?」

「That's right. Shirasaka Sousuke has raped Nagisa's virginity...!」

Another girl resists the man with a fist.

「...That's Katsuko-san, right?...」

「...Yeah, Katsuko-nee was also kidnapped by Shirasaka Sousuke and was turned to a prostitute」

This time, two girls are being violated as they cry violently...
I recognized the face of the crying girl...

「...This person was the one in the hotel office a while ago?」

「Tamayo-san was also one of the women deceived by Shirasaka Sousuke」

「...That's」

「The girl violated behind Tamayo-san is Minako-san...Minako-san wasn't able to endure the prostitution and committed suicide...!」

The girls Shirasaka Sousuke has raped...

These videos...

The images of women who died...

It's repeated in turns...

There are abnormal sex videos where Shirasaka is there too.

There are blood-stained girls as well...

The one with blood spouting out of her crotch...is Minaho-neesan...!

Any of the images have the women crying intensely.

And, Shirasaka-san...is always laughing.

He's laughing frivolously like an idiot.

What a selfish and disgusting smile...

「...This is impossible」

Mana mutters.

「...There's no way Papa would be forgiven for doing this」

Mana spilled tears...

...Before long

The video ends.

「...This is just a part of it. Shirasaka Sousuke has been doing this kind of things for 20 years. Deceiving women, abducting them, raping them...then turning them to prostitutes when he gets tired of them. He sells off the broken girls abroad... The prostitutes who received proper reward were only after I participated the management...」

...Absurd.

Hearing her talk and watching the video is completely different.

It's so cruel...and frightening.

「Yoshida-kun...You do know the reason why Katsuko-san 『She can't marry happily』?」

「...Yes」

「After experiencing this kind of hell...It's already impossible. Thinking about the girls who have died...there's no way she can be happy...!」

I was trying to understand it with my head.

I was trying to understand it with just words.

But...Minaho-neesan's revenge...

Her hate for Shirasaka Sousuke...

It's far darker than what I thought...

They weren't just deprived of their youth...

Those who died...

The companions killed...

Minaho-neesan and the other girls' heart were killed.

「...Does Mana have to die?」

Mana asks Minaho-neesan.

Minaho-neesan...

「...That depends on Yoshida-kun」

...Me?

「Do you really want her?...You must not answer using your pity and sympathy. Speak honestly...Do you need Mana?」

I look at Mana.

Mana is looking at me with a desperate face.

...I

Minaho-neesan answers.

「...I do. It's not for my sake but for Minaho-neesan」

Minaho-neesan's surprised.

「...For my sake?」

...I

「No matter how much you hate Shirasaka Sousuke...Minaho-san must not kill Mana. You'd be the same as Shirasaka Sousuke if you do...please don't do killing at least...Nee-san!」

Hearing my answer...Minaho-neesan

「Then...make her your 『Slave』 I won't accept Mana-san's life unless she's a 『Slave』」

「...Got it. Mana will be my 『slave』 forever...!」

I will keep Mana's life.

She won't be killed.

I can't let her be killed.

Mana should live.

「I will be raping Mana in front of Shirasaka Sousuke. I'll declare that Mana's my slave in front of her father. I'll give that revenge on you at least...!」

「Right...at least, I won't rest easy if that much won't be done...!」

Minaho-neesan said.

「Mana...are you okay with that?」

...Mana?

「Yes...understood」

She replied in a small voice.

「Mana-san...I'll say this beforehand, there are a lot of women who has a grudge against Shirasaka Sousuke. I will hold back the other women for Yoshida-kun's sake. But, if ever Mana-san tries to betray Yoshida-kun even once after this...we will kill you without hesitation...in the most cruel way possible. Remember that much...!」

Minaho-neesan told Mana.

「Minaho-neesan...」

I get off the bed and kneeled in front of Minaho-neesan.

「...What's wrong, Yoshida-kun?」

「Please punish me!⁶」

...Right, I

Today...I've committed sins that Minaho-neesan must punish.

「I...never understood how serious Minaho-neesan is on her revenge... It's also my responsibility that Mana has did as she pleases. Much more...I tried to let go Mana」

...I proposed to let Mana go home by taxi.

Minaho-neesan should've heard that with her hidden microphone.

「But...You didn't give up...」

「No... I can't forgive myself for thinking that even once...!」

Minaho-neesan laughs.

...Then.

「Okay...then, I'll give Yoshida-kun's punishment」

「...Yes」

I look up at Minaho-neesan...

「Starting now, until seven in the morning...ejaculate ten times. All of it should be intravaginal. You can't ejaculate from fellatio or outside the body...!」

125. The first Super Shimai-donburi great war F

T-Ten!?

...creampies¹

Even though I just had two rounds of sex!

「...I think that number is appropriate」

Minaho-neesan looks down at Mana.

「That was the number of times Mana-san has hesitated whether she should betray Yoshida-kun or not for the whole day, isn't that right?」

Mana trembles in surprise.

「Yoshida-kun. Do you remember Mana-san repeatedly talking about 『Hamburger Steak』 during her call with Ichikawa-san in the hotel?」

Speaking of which...she was talking about 『Hamburger steak』 too much.

「She's worrying about whether she should tell her current location to Ichikawa-san. Or possibly...She's trying to let Ichikawa-san remember a hotel somewhere they've eaten 『Hamburger steak』」

Hearing Minaho-neesan...Mana looks down.

「You see...People associate with image immediately. When trying to tell 『I'm held at a hotel right now』 you correspond it by saying what you see in front of you, the 『Hamburger steak from the hotel room-service』 Of course, just the 『Hamburger steak』 message won't reach Ichikawa-san」

...Is that how it is/

「Mana-san is making a call with a calm face...but she's actually facing a considerable pressure. Therefore...she can only express the image of 『Hotel』 by using the word 『Hamburger steak』...」

Minaho-neesan has been reading Mana psychologically that away all this time.

「Mana-san...Are you still not going to answer? How many times did you try to

betray Yoshida-kun?」

Mana looks up.

「...I think it is as you say...ten times」

「Right. I've seen you trying to look around multiple times wondering how to escape from us. If Yoshida-kun and Megumi weren't with you all this time, you might've really ran away somewhere」

I never noticed it.

I didn't suspect Mana at all...

I only saw her as a child falling into a pitiful situation.

「Therefore...you have that number. Make Yoshida-kun ejaculate as your punishment」

...The number I overlooked Mana's suspicious behavior

「But...there would also be various troubles tomorrow. It would be a problem if Yoshida-kun isn't healthy」

...Minaho-neesan grins.

「Therefore...I'd like you to sleep for at least five hours」

...Eh?

「It's 10 o'clock right now. Have sex for two hours after this and sleep by 12 o'clock. And, wake up at 5 o'clock tomorrow and have sex until 7」

2 hours + 2 Hours = 4 hours...10 ejaculations.

「...Minaho-san. Do you mind me being a partner of Yoshida-kun as well?」

Megu asks with a serious face...

「Of course you can. As long as Yoshida-kun ejaculates inside the vagina... however, Megumi's sex will only be for the two hours at night. I forbid you from receiving Yoshida-kun's ejaculation by tomorrow morning...!」

「...Why, Minaho-san?!」

Minaho-neesan laughs.

「Megumi...Tomorrow's your medical checkup. It would be embarrassing for you to have Yoshida-kun's semen dripping from your crotch while you're having

your height and and weight measured, isn't it?」

...She's right.

I can't let Megu go through such embarrassment.

「But...Mana-san was told by Ikeda-sensei that she can have sex only at least two times tonight」

Megu holds on.

「You see...Ikeda-sensei said『Well, as long as it's around two times』 In the first place...Mana-san don't want to be ravished by Yoshida-kun for tonight anymore. Thinking that Ichikawa-san will be coming for her tomorrow...she thinks that she only has to overcome tonight. You heard her asking Ikeda-sensei 『Can I have sex for tonight?』 She's expecting an answer 『You just lost your virginity today so don't have sex for the rest of the day』from Ikeda-sensei...」

As expected...Mana doesn't want it.

Having sex with me.

「But...Ikeda-sensei has been a doctor that looked after the prostitutes of the mansion for years...She won't say anything that will pamper her」

「Then...Does it mean that she can do it as many times until tomorrow...?」

I asked Minaho-neesan.

「Speaking of which...Yoshida-kun is thinking that Mana-san doesn't wish to have sex anymore tonight, am I wrong? Tomorrow morning, she'll just make another reason to avoid sex again. Mana-san's fundamentally clever...for a middle school level」

Minaho-neesan looks down at mana with contemptuous eyes.

「I've been playing with Yukiyo when it comes to psychological warfare. That girl is good when it comes to explanations, excuses, and logical developments advantageous for herself」

...Iwakura-san.

「As far as I know...Yukiyo is the best idiot in the mansion. Lascivious, vulgar, and pervert, she is beyond help. That's why she's very cute」

Minaho-neesan criticizes Iwakura-kaichou...

「Earlier, Yoshida-kun talked about trying to betray me, but...if you say that, Yukiyo has betrayed me multiple times. No...Even now she's beginning to work on betraying me... Of course, I know all of it... I should be thinking of her next punishment as well!」

Minaho-neesan...speaks happily.

「Therefore...Yoshida-kun and Megumi, you can betray me as much as you want. As long as you're prepared to take the punishment... Don't worry. No matter how much you betray me...I'll never throw you away...」

...Minaho-neesan.

「...Katsuko...Nagisa...Margo...Yukiyo...Nei...Agnes...And, the two of you. My 『Toys』... I will never abandon the people I accepted. You are much more important than my life. I love all of you...!」

I never understood the meaning of being accepted by the woman named Yuzuki Minaho...

「...Until I was turned to Minaho-neesan's 『toy』...No, even after that, I was tested by Minaho-neesan and the 『Kuromori』multiple times...」

Starting with my rape with Yukino...and the various things that happened.

「That's right...In the first place, we were deceived by Shiraska Sousuke and other people, a collection of women who fell to hell...There's no way we would trust someone easily...」

...That's right.

That is the backbone as a member of 『Kuromori』

That's why I was tested multiple times...

Even though I experienced that myself...

I was convinced that Mana has been accepted by everyone...

I'm an idiot.

Shirasaka Sousuke's daughter can't be easily trusted.

「We are people who don't believe others by just mere 『words』 We are always watching whether the person's 『words』and 『act』matches... Yoshida-kun is always sincere. You don't speak 『words』out of necessity...you always do your best on 『acting』your promise...that is why we accepted you. I'm very

proud to be called 『Nee-san』 by you...!』

Minaho-neesan smiles happily...!

「On the contrary...we bind others with 『Words』 Humans, easily spit 『words』 from the atmosphere and the momentum... We can measure the 『dignity』 of others by knowing how much guts they have on taking 『responsibility』 from their words... No matter how rich they are, powerful they are, human without 『dignity』 is just trash. They can't be someone taken directly...!』

Minaho-neesan looks at Mana...

For the whole day...Minaho-neesan and the ladies have been speaking gentle 『words』...were all just a 『trial』...!

On that 『trial』...Mana 「You kept speaking temporary『words』to deceive us」 「...I-I'm sorry」

Mana's face looks cramped...

「Do this another time and I'll kill you. That's the cruelest method as far as I can think...!』

Minaho-neesan's eyes were cold...

「Even if I die, Katsuko will kill you. If not, Margo. Or, Nei...You will definitely be killed by my 『relatives』you don't know...!

Mana's trembling.

「Mana-san...can you swear to take responsibility on the『words』you say in the future...?』

Mana...!

「...I swear. Therefore...please don't kill me...!』

Minaho-san laughs...

「Then...You're okay being Yoshida-kun's 『slave』for the rest of your life? You have said it yourself...are you okay with that...?!』

Minaho-neesan...doesn't trust Mana's pledge in the bathroom about 『becoming my rape slave』just a few minutes earlier...!

「...I-I promise! Mana...will become Onii-chan's 『slave』forever...!』

Hearing her response...Minaho-neesan.

「Is that so?...then, let's put a tattoo on Mana-san's genital as a proof that she's a 『slave』...!」

「...Eh?」

Mana looks up...

「Isn't it natural for the master to mark the slave, right?」

Minaho-neesan looks at me.

「I used a template for Yukino-san...But, this time I will write it myself. Yoshida-kun...what do you want me to write?」

Minaho-neesan...took out her tattoo tools from her bag.

「Your Onee-chan was stubborn...so Yukino-san had her pubic hair shaved and put tattoo in there. This one won't disappear for the rest of your life unless you use a special medicine...!」

Minaho-neesan laughs...

「Yoshida-kun, want to write it yourself?」

...I

「No...my handwriting isn't that good. I'll leave it to Minaho-neesan」

I would feel sorry for Mana if I stain Mana's skin from a tool I haven't used yet...

「Then...I'll write it...What should I write?」

「...Please write『宝²』」

「...Takara?」

「Mana is my 『treasure』...」

「...That's very you」

Minaho-neesan approaches Mana...!

「No...I don't want a tatoo...Megumi-chan, help me!」

Megu...

「Mana...want to die?」

Mana holds her breath.

「You are Yoshi-kun's 『woman』...If Mana betrays Yoshi-kun, I will also come to kill Mana...!」

There's no human pampering Mana in this room anymore.
Mana is a 『slave』

「...Don't move, Mana-san is the one to regret if I write badly!」

Holding the pen-like tool...Minaho-neesan applies it to Mana's abdomen 「...
Hii!」

Mana trembles from the feeling of the tip of the pen.

「...Don't move, Mana」

I ordered Mana.
Minaho-neesan wrote 『宝』right above Mana's slit.
It's an emerald green letter just like during Yukino.
It's a good writing like it's brushed...

「Don't move for a while. It would become ugly if you touched it before it settles on the skin...

Mana is looking at the 『宝』written under her navel in blank surprise.

「Mana-san can't fall in love for the rest of her life. You won't have sex with any man other than Yoshida-kun...!」

Mana looks up at Minaho-neesan with tears stored in her eyes.

「If other men sees this, how can you answer them? Do you think a man would take a woman seriously if she has a tattoo like that on top of her genital...?」

The tattoo that shines above the genital...is not fashion by all odds.
It's a 『slave woman』in the underground world.
Mana is essentially a daughter of the upper class.
As expected, she must be thinking of loving and marrying a man on the upper class.

But...Japan's upper class is conservative.

There's no way they would accept a woman with a tattoo in their genital.

Mana begins to cry quietly.

Mana can no longer return to Shirasaka Maika.

She has to live as my slave...as Yoshida Mana...

「Leave Mana-san for at least 30 minutes. Have sex with Megumi while waiting for the tattoo to completely establish」

Minaho-neesan said.

「...Minaho-san」

Megu asks with a serious face.

「What's wrong?」

「Yoshi-kun...has been 『tested』 by Minaho-san and others and he was accepted...!」

「...That's right」

「I...was never tested at least once」

Megu said sadly.

「Please test me too」

Minaho-san embraces Megu in silence.

「...You were tested as well, Megumi」

Megu's surprised.

「I have been watching over you from a distance for ten years since you were taken over by Yamaine-san. You have grown up to be a gentle girl that didn't yield to that harsh environment. Those ten years were your 『test』...」

「I'm not a gentle girl at all. I'm selfish, egoistic, a vulgar pervert...!」

Megu appeals to Minaho-neesan.

「That Megumi is being accepted by Yoshida-kun. Don't worry. Everyone in 『Kuromori』believes Megumi. Everyone knows what kind of girl Megumi is...!」

「...But」

「I told you that we judge people by their 『act』didn't I?」

「...yes」

「Especially, we're a gathering of prostitutes...we judge people in their sex」

...Sex?

「We're not watching Yoshida-kun's sex just for fun. Sex exposes a person's fundamental character...」

Minaho-neesan smiles.

「Megumi is devoted...and gentle in sex. Misuzu-san is a pleasure seeker but she doesn't forget to be considerate of Yoshida-kun. As for Yoshida-kun, he always looks at his partner's face. He doesn't leave himself on his own selfish desires...!」

That's our sex.

「The three of you don't forget your partners. You try to communicate properly even while in the middle of sex. People who have sex like that aren't bad people」

Minaho-neesan declared.

「It's different to that 『slave girl』who doesn't have the talent but to be raped forcibly...!」

Mana's evaluation in sex is low.

「Anyway...There's nothing bad to say about Megumi. Just think about being Yoshida-kun's 『Lawful Life』, and do your whole best」

「...Yes, Minaho-san」

「Now then, I should be getting out...Oh right, I have to give this to Yoshida-kun」

Minaho-san takes out a black collar and a long chain out of her bag...

「I'll return the gold collar Mana-san took from Tamayo earlier. It won't suit Mana-san」

Saying that, she handed me the collar and chain.

「This collar...is impossible to remove unless you put the right PIN. Yoshida-kun, put your favorite number on it. This collar is impossible to be removed using the power of the person collared. Yoshida-kun, take hold of the end of the chain. There's a wristband on the end, right? That wristband is PIN locked too. Make sure to lock it when you're sleeping at night...change the PIN every day so Mana-san won't remember it...okay?」

In short...After coming this far...Minaho-neesan still doesn't trust Mana. She's even putting on a collar and a chain...

「Mana...I'll put on the collar」

Mana is still stunned from the shock of getting a tattoo.
I fixed the collar in Mana without her permission.
It has the same mechanism as Misuzu's anklet...
As for the number...I put on my attendance number during my three years in middle school.
The collar locks on.
I attached the chain on the collar.
The position of the metal filling of the chain is on the back of her neck...it's can't be removed by the person even if she can reach it, the installation method was complex.
Anyway...I fixed the chains.
The length of the chain...is around 2M?
I attach the chain to the wristband before it's too late.
I put in the PIN...and locked it.
With this...Mana can no longer run away without permission.

「Bye then...If you don't have sex soon, you won't make it in time」

Minaho-neesan said.

「...I almost forgot to say but, if ever Yoshida-kun wasn't able to do 10 intravaginal ejaculation by 7 in the morning, Mana-san will be beaten up with a whip...for the time being, 20 times」

...T-That means?

「Yoshida-kun can endure it if it's just a punishment for himself right? That is why, as a penalty if ever Yoshida-kun fails, all of it would be taken charge by the 『Slave』, Mana-san...!」

Mana-san who's stunned...looks at Minaho-neesan with frightened eyes.

「It's useless to make that face...do the work assigned to you. Like a 『slave』... It's okay, humans don't die from being whipped for around 20 times. It's just that your skin would be peeled off. I will be using a horseback riding whip...!」

Minaho-neesan said laughingly.

「...Spend a fun night~!」

Saying that...Minaho-neesan gets out of the room.



「...What do you think?」

I ask Megu.

「Will Minaho-neesan stay in the hotel till morning? Or would she go back in the mansion after this?」

「...I don't know」

Megu answers quietly.

「Either way, she's observing this room. Even if Minaho-san comes back, Tamayo-san will be checking us...」

...That's right.

We're still being observed.

「Therefore...we should just do what was imposed on us as Minaho-san said.」

Megu smiles at me.

「Two hours from now on...and two hours tomorrow morning. For the time being, let's set the alarm clock at 5AM...!」

Megu sets her phone alarm at once.

「A simple calculation of doing it five times at night and five times in the morning, would be hard. I think we should handle as much number in the night」

...Megu

「Even with simple calculation, you can't ejaculate once every 24 minutes...!」

Megu is thinking seriously...

「I will do the thinking so Yoshi-kun can just think about ejaculating...!」

「...Yeah」

「Mana still don't have her tattoo fixed yet so please do Megu first」

Megu lies down on the bed.

「Let's do it normally once...violate me, Yoshi-kun...」

Megu unties the string of her gown...

She exposes her naked body to me.

「...Megu!」

I hand over Megu!

「...Aahn! Love! I love you!」

「...Megu! Megu! Megu!」

I lick Megu's breasts...!

「...Delicious? Megu's nipples taste good?」

「It's delicious...Megu!」

「More, suck it more...Tease Megu's body...Yoshi-kun!」

I touch Megu's whole body...!

The body that has taken a bath, and accepted my semen...turned burning hot immediately.

My penis has regained its strength!

「...I'm already fine. It's wet already, so come...!」

Megu appeals with moist eyes.

I rushed inside Megu...!³

「...Aaah! It's in!!」

My penis pushed to her uterus immediately.

It's making a lewd wet sound...!

The Megu's vagina is wet with love nectar and semen.

「...Ravish me...Violate Megu!!!」

I speed up inside Megu like a sprinter...!

Every time I pierce her violently...Megu's face looks like she's enduring pain.

But, Megu's still looking at my eyes.

「Yoshi-kun...does it feel good inside Megu?」

「...It feels good!」

「Want to make Megu pregnant?!」

「...I want to!」

「Megu...wants Yoshi-kun's child!」

「...Megu, Megu, Megu!」

「Please want Megu more! Megu will give you everything!」

「...Megu!」

「...Yoshi-kun, are you cumming? Want to leak it inside Megu?」

「...I-I'm about to cum!」

「It's okay! You can let it out inside Megu...!」

Megu embraces my back tightly!

「...Yoshi-kun's hot stuff...give it to Megu!」

「...Ah, aaah!」

My penis explodes inside Megu's vagina!

...Byurururu!

「Aaahn...your hot stuff is coming in! Megu is being impregnated...Yoshi-kun...I love you! I love you!」

...Uu...Uuuu...Uuu...!

I defile Megu's womb once again...!

「Haa...Haa...Haa...Haa...」

It's really a sex like a hundred meter dash...

Sweat gushes out immediately after ejaculating...

Exhausted, I lie on top of Megu's body...Megu kisses my lip.

「Thank you...That's the first!」

Megu who took my semen smiles like a goddess.

「Want to go another round immediately?」

Megu seems to intend taking two consecutive rounds...

What devotion...

...Megu.

「Megu...I'm glad having Megu as my wife!」

「Eh...What did you just say?」

「Megu is already my wife...my beloved wife!」

I kiss Megu...

「Uhm...Yoshi-kun」

Megu said.

「...You see, from Megu's position...Megu can see clearly Yoshi-kun embracing her from the mirror in the ceiling...!」

Right...This room has mirrors on the wall and ceilings...
Megu who's under me can see the ceiling.

「...I'm making a very happy face!」

Megu said while looking up at the ceiling.

「Yoshi-kun is inside me right now」

「Yeah...It's in」

「Megu and Yoshi-kun is having sex...!」

...Megu!

「Yoshi-kun...lick Megu's breasts」

I lick Megu's breasts.

「Ufu...I'm feeling good. We're having sex this way...!」

Megu's aroused...

My penis is also hard...

「Can I stay looking at the mirror?」

Hearing Megu...I slowly resumed my piston.

「I want to see myself being embraced by Yoshi-kun...!」

「...Okay, Megu!」

While I still have the energy...I'll handle as much rounds as possible.
Also...we're short in time.

I start to speed up once again...!

「...Ah...Aaah...Aahn!...Aaah!」

Megu's panting...!

「It's very lewd...! We're doing a very lewd thing!...Yoshi-kun...Yoshi-kun...!!」

Megu is violently passionate as she look up at herself being violated...!

「...ahn...Aaahn...Ah, ah...Aaaah...!!!!」

Our bodies become one...

It's as if we're just one machine...!

Every time I pierce her...Megu's body shakes...!

Her cute breasts jumps cutely...!

The connecting part making wet sounds with love nectar as lubricant...!

Every time the glans kisses her uterus...Megu's panting greatly...!

「...I...I'm feeling strange...I'm becoming strange!!!」

Megu shouts as she look at herself reflected in the mirror.

「It's amazingly lewd...I'm making a very sloppy face! I'm having sex with Yoshi-kun...I'm having sex...!」

「That's right...We're having sex!」

Both of us are wet in our sweat...!

「...It's strange...Megu's melting...I'm melting...What should I do, Yoshi-kun? What should I do?」

...Megu!

「...Make it hurt more! Yoshi-kun I like the pain! Make Megu feel good like this...!」

「...Feel good, Megu!」

「...That would be a problem...I would be troubled...Megu wants the pain...It feels good...Megu's addicted to sex...It's impossible to escape sex anymore...!」

「...It's okay! Be addicted! Don't try to escape!」

「...I can't...If I get addicted to sex...Yoshi-kun wil hate me...I can't be a lewd girl...!」

Megu's excitement on sex is exposed subconsciously...

Megu fears drowning in the pleasure of sex.

That's why...She's saying 「I like it painful」

She tries to escape being buried in pleasure using pain...

Then...

「...I love the lewd Megu!」

「...Yoshi-kun?!」

「Become lewder in front of me! Feel good!」

「...Yoshi-kun! Yoshi-kun!」

Megu's vagina tightens firmly...!

The last stopper in Megu's heart comes off...!

「Ah!...Ah!...Ah!...Megu's feeling strange! I'm becoming strange!」

「Do it more! More, more, more...!」

I enter my last sputrt!

「...Aaaaaaaaaaaaaaaaaaaaaa! You're so intense, Yoshi-kun! Yoshi-kun!」

「...Megu, Megu, Megu!!!」

「Megu's melting! I'm melting! Aaah...It's coming up! Megu's body is cumming!!!」

「...Megu, Megu, my Megu!!!」

「Love! Love! I love you! Megu loves Yoshi-kun! I love you! I love you! I love you!」

「Me too...I love Megu!」

「No...Megu's melting, melting, melting...aaaah! Yoshi-kun embrace me tight! Please embrace Meguuu...!」

Megu's body convulses...!

「...Yoshi-kun! Yoshi-kun, help meee!!!」

Megu screams her climax...!

「Iyaaaaa, iyaaaaaaa...Aaaaaaaaah!!!!!!」

Megu who's reaching the climax of pleasure is clamping my penis!!

「Megu...Here I go!...Meguuuuuuu!!!」

The hot white liquid scatters inside Megu's vagina!

「...Ah, Hot!!!」

Megu's being impregnated!!!

「...Yoshi-kun! Yoshi-kun! Don't let go of Megu! Hold Megu forever!!!」
「I'm here...I'm holding Megu tightly...!!!」

We're embracing each other while melting!
Our naked bodies intertwine hotly...!
We put out lips together...lick each other's tongues...
We're really like sex partners...

...Before long
We drain our strength slowly.
We smile at each other...

「...I love you, Yoshi-kun」
「...I love you too, Megu」

We kissed once again
「I will do anything for Yoshi-kun」
「Same here...I love Megu」

We kissed each other again and again...
Then...Megu said.

「That's the second one」
「...Yeah」

I look at Mana under the bed.
「Mana is looking at us with frightening eyes」

「It's your turn...Mana」
「Right...I think the tattoo has already been fixed. You need to do your work as a
『rape slave』...」

Megu said while still having my penis in her vagina.

Mana's frightened.

126. The first Super Shimai-donburi great war F – Conclusion

「...No, I don't want it anymore...!」

Mana crawls on the floor to run away.

But...the chain attached to her collar holds her down.

I pulled the wristband in my arm connected to the chain with all my strength...!

「...Aha!」

Mana holds her throat in pain and stopped moving...!

「...You can't do that. Mana is Yoshi-kun's 『rape slave』...so do your job properly Megu who's skin is completely flushed after two rounds of sex... informs Mana.

I pull out my penis from Megu...

White liquid spills out of Megu's vagina...

「...Thank you for cumming a lot...Yoshi-kun. I love you」

「...Megu's body feel so pleasant...thank you」

We kissed again

「I finally understood what Misuzu-san means by 『Eros』」

Megu smiles

「Having both feel pleasure having sex is very important...」

「Yeah...I'm a hundred times happier if Megu feels good, not just me...!」

「Megu cannot live without Yoshi-kun anymore」

「That's okay...we're married」

「...Un. Yoshi-kun...I love you」

We kissed once again

We kept kissing like it's breathing...

「Then, Yoshi-kun...It's about time we train the 『slave』...!」

Megu smiles bewitchingly.

「...Mana, come in this bed」

That kind Megu...orders Mana.

「...Ah...Uuuu」

Mana can't move...she's trembling

「Mana...You really want to get killed...?」

Megu said calmly.

It's as if she's Minaho-neesan 「...D-Don't kill me」

Mana speaks with a small voice.

「If Yoshi-kun weren't able to ejaculate eight more times until 7 o'clock tomorrow...Mana would be beaten up 20 times with a horse whip...you get that?」

「...Yes」

「Mana...have you seen someone beaten by a whip?」

Mana shook her head.

「I did...a lot of times during my childhood in the mansion. If you were hit 20 times, your back would be blood stained. It would be painful for a week, and you can't sleep lying on your back. Of course, there would be a lifetime scar too...!」

Megu is cornering Mana.

「People who have a weak heart dies from the shock...Is Mana's heart strong?」

...Mana is trembling hard.

「...Help me, Megu-onee-chan...please help me...!」

Mana desperately begs Megu.

「...You get it don't you? I can't do anything about it. Everything in this room is being observed. If you don't want to be whipped...you have to do something yourself」

「...Myself?」

「Don't you think Mana can do nothing but serve Yoshi-kun so he can

ejaculate?」

Mana finally looks at me.

「...Yoshi-kun, we're done. Let's leave her alone. You're tired aren't you? Let's sleep for today already. Let's sleep tight until Katsuko-san picks us up. ...Megu will become Yoshi-kun's dakimakura. Of course, if Yoshi-kun can't endure it anymore, don't hold back and come inside Megu...!」

Megu embraces and pampers me.
Her naked breasts rubs against my chest.
The feeling of her stiff nipple...is ticklish.

「Right...It's Mana's fault for not understanding her own standpoint, there's no need for me to force myself for Mana's sake. Let's sleep...Megu」
「Yes dear」

Megu and I tries to lie down on the bed.
...Then.

「...I-I'm sorry. Onii-chan」

Mana calls me out with a crying voice.

「Mana is wrong...please, please help Mana...!」

Megu answers without turning to Mana.

「You still don't understand...we can't 『Help』Mana...」

...That's right.
There's no one pampering Mana anymore.
Mana shouldn't be『saved』by someone...
She has to do the assigned work for her by her own will...

「...What should Mana do?」

I raised my body and looked at Mana.
Her naked body trembles in fear...a pitiful 14 year old girl...
I must not be deceived by her looks...
I must never feel pity on her...
Mana is a 『Slave』

「If you think this and that in your head it'll get scary...! You only need to think on how to make me feel good!」

I ordered her strongly.

「...Eh?」

Mana looks at me.

「What will happen to Mana in the future? Mana cannot do anything about it herself! That's the same for us! If ever Mana's grandfather made Minaho-neesan angry during the negotiation tomorrow...Mana would be killed」

「...That's!」

「It can't be helped! This isn't a revenge for Minaho-neesan alone!」

...That's right.

I've already known cooperators named Yuuka-san, Hidemi-san, and Tamayo-san...

「There's a lot of people cooperating with Minaho-san's revenge to Shirasaka Sousuke. They entrust all of their hate and grudge to Minaho-neesan... Mana's life isn't on on Minaho-neesan's own judgement anymore...!」

...That's right.

If we turn a blind eye on Mana...the other cooperators will protest against Minaho-neesan.

Or...they will bury Mana themselves.

「Then...What should Maika do?!」

Mana called herself 『Maika』

As expected...The 『Onii-chan』...or the 『I'll become a slave』were just an act.
...A temporary measure.

「You...it's either die or be in a situation that's better than being dead...」

Megu answered instead of me.

「...Do you like to be killed by your own pride as a member of Shirasaka clan, as 『Shirasaka Maika』? Or would you throw all your pride and live as a slave named 『Yoshida Mana』Decide right now...!」

Megu's words were severe.

「...There's really no other choice?」

Mana looks at Megu with a flattering expression again.

...Megu 「...I've had enough. You should just get killed!」

Megu lies down on the bed.

She looks at me in the mirror at the ceiling...

「I thought that I should be kind to anyone until now. I lived with that belief. But...it's wrong. If I am kind to people like Shirasaka-san, Yukino, and you...they will be conceited... Megu will never be happy if she keeps company people like you...!」

Megu clings to me.

「Yoshi-kun...I want to be happy. with Yoshi-kun. I thought that I will never be happy forever because of Shirasaka-san and the Shirasaka clan until now. 'I will never be happy'...thus, I gave up. I cried alone in the bed multiple times...!」

...Megu!

「But you see...I immediately jumped on the fate of being Yoshi-kun's 『woman』 Megu became happy. Yoshi-kun has made Megu happy...Minaho-san, Misuzu-san, and the other ladies will definitely be happy too...!」

Megu embraces my head.

Megu's cute breasts is being pushed to my face.

「I decided to fight my fate. No, it's not just me...Minaho-san and the other ladies too...everyone's fighting their fate on their limits. That's why...I... already...!」

Megu swears to herself reflected in the mirror.

「I won't let my good intentions be taken advantage by others, I won't help a foolish child...!」

Megu throws off Mana.

...I

「Sorry...Megu, I was wrong...」

I rise from the bed.

「...Yoshi-kun」

Megu looks at me.

「...Leave this to me」

I stand from the bed and stand in front of the naked Mana.

「...Eh?...W-What?!」

Mana's afraid.

Seeing Mana's frightened face...

I slapped her with all my might!!

...Pan!!!

「...Kyaaa!」

Mana was blown of to the wall of the love hotel!

Just like that, I pulled Mana's body...

And throw her to the bed!!!

「Nooooooooo! Iyaaaaaaaaa!」

I lift Mana's ass as she cries!

Then!

I hit Mana's ass with all my power!

...Bashiii!!

「...Kyaaaa!」

It won't finish with just one...!

Again...and again...!

「...Ouch!!!...Noooooo!!!...Stooooop!」

Like hell I'd stop...!

I hit Mana's ass repeatedly with the limit of my power...!!

...Bishiii!...Pashii!!...Paaan!!...wapaaan!!

「...Nooooo!!...It hurts!...Help me!...Help meee!!!」

Mana cries!

But...I'm not stopping!

I hit her more than twenty times.

Mana's ass is swelling red...!

Leaving Mana on her spanking position...Mana's face looks at the mirror.

Mana's face sees mine in the mirror.

「...What's your name?」

I asked Mana.

「...Eh?!」

Mana in the mirror looks confused.

「Name! What's your name...?!」

I beat Mana's ass!

「Ouch! Shirasaka...Shirasaka Maika!」

Preoccupied by the pain...Mana can't afford to act.

「...You're wrong!!」

I hit Mana's ass even stronger!

「...Hiiiiii!!!」

Mana's body jumped up!

「You're Yoshida Manatsu!...Right?!」

...I hit her once again!

「...Kyaaaa!」

「...Answer me! What's your name...?!」

Mana answers while trembling.

「...Yoshida Manatsu」

「...My what?」

「...That's」

...I hit slap her ass!

「Kyaaa!...Onii-chan's...『slave』...『slave』!」

Mana tells me while shedding tears.

「Please! Don't slap me anymore!」

I hit her with all my might!

「...Ugyaaaaa!!」

「I'm the one who decides if I'm going to slap you or not!」

...One more!

「...Kyaaaaa!」

I tell Mana.

「Mana... say 『I'm Mana, Onii-chan's slave』 Don't say anything else」

「...But」

...I slap her ass!!

「...Ouuuuch!! I get it! I get it!!!!」

...I slap her ass!!

「It's not 'I get it'!」

「...I-I am Mana...Onii-chan's slave...!」

Mana says while crying.

「...Repeat」

「I'm Mana...Onii-chan's slave...!」

「Repeat...repeat this forever until I say stop...!」

Mana...

「...I'm Mana...Onii-chan's slave...!...I'm Mana...Onii-chan's slave...!」

I turned up Mana's body.

Mana's frightened as hell.

「What are you doing?!...Repeat!」

「...I'm Mana...Onii-chan's slave...!...I'm Mana...Onii-chan's slave...!」

I play with Mana's small breasts.

「Aah...I'm Mana...Onii-chan's slave...aah...!」

「If you say anything else...I will be slapping your cheeks until your face changes shape...!」

Mana speaks repeatedly while crying.

「...I'm Mana...Onii-chan's slave...!」

「Megu...suck it and make this big」

I ask Megu for a fellatio

「...Yes, dear」

Megu smiles and puts my penis in her mouth...

I play with Mana's body.

Not just her breasts...I also let my fingers play around her thighs and the area around her vagina...

Meanwhile...Mana keeps repeating her 『Self-introduction』like an incantation...

「...I'm Mana...Onii-chan's slave...! I'm Mana...Onii-chan's slave...!」

Okay...It's about time.

「Megu...It's big enough?」

「Yes...Have fun with Mana's body!」

I spread Mana's legs.

Mana's afraid.

「Hey...what happened to the repetition?」

Mana repeats her speech while still trembling...!

「...I'm Mana...Onii-chan's slave...! I'm Mana...Onii-chan's slave...! I'm Mana...
Onii-chan's slave!...I'm Mana...Onii-chan's slave...Nooooooooo!」

I thrust inside Mana's vagina!

「Hey...Repeat! Repeat!」

I shouted at Mana while doing a deep piston!

「...aaah, I'm Mana...Onii-chan's slave...! I'm Mana...Onii-chan's slave!
Iyaaaaaaa...I'm Mana...Onii-chan's slave...!」

Mana endures the cruelty while crying...!

I just attack Mana's vagina without caring about her body!!!

「Hey...Mana, repeat! repeat!!」

「Aaahn...I'm Mana...Onii-chan's slave...! Nooo, I'm Mana...Onii-chan's slave...!
Aaah...I'm Mana...Onii-chan's slaaaaveeee...!」

Mana continues to desperately shout while being raped.

「Mana...you're cute!」

Megu licks Mana's sunken nipples.

Her nape and ears...she's a woman so she knows which erogenous zone to stimulate with her tongue.

「...Mana, Mana, Manaaaa!!!」

「...I'm Mana...Onii-chan's slave...! I'm Mana...Onii-chan's slave...! I'm Mana...
Onii-chan's slave...!!!」

A hot lump rises within me...!

「Mana...Look at the ceiling!」

Mana opens her eyes...!

「...Can you see it? Mana in the mirror...Mana is being raped by me right now...!」

Mana's eyes is dyed in despair.

Seeing her own self being violated...

But still, Mana kept repeating her speech...!

「...I'm Mana...Onii-chan's slave...! I'm Mana...Onii-chan's slave...! I'm...!!!」

I can't hold back anymore!!

「Mana...here I go...I'm going to cum inside Mana again! Look at yourself being impregnated by me!」

I put on a spurt immediately!

I violently attack Mana's small body!!

「...Aaah, I'm Mana, Onii-chan's slave!!...Aaau, I'm Mana, Onii-chan's slave...!
Aaaah, I'm Mana, Onii-chan's slave...aaaaah...!!!」

...Cumming!

...Dookun!! dookun! Dookun!!

My meat pole...gushes out white venom while shaking inside Mana's vagina...

「...Reach Mana's womb! !!!!!」

Mana is looking up at herself being impregnated...
Though she's crying in despair...
Mana still repeats herself...

「...I'm Mana...Onii-chan's slave...! I'm Mana, Onii-chan's slave...! I'm Mana...
Onii-chan's slave...!」



「Thank you for the hard work for the third round」

Megu pours oolong tea on the paper cup and brought it to me.
I took the glass while still connected with Mana.

「Thank you...Mana」

I drink the tea.
Mana shows a thirsty face under me.

「...Do you want some? Mana」

Mana...

「...Ha」

I poked Mana's forehead before she was able to answer 「Yes」...

「You only need to nod when it's a yes! Don't say anything other than 『I'm
Mana..』...!」

Mana nods in panic.

「Then...continue your self introduction」

Mana's eyes have tears spilling from it.

「...I'm Mana...Onii-chan's slave...! I'm Mana...Onii-chan's slave...!」
「...Good」

I took another cup of Oolong tea from Megu.

「I'll feed you mouth to mouth. Or rather, all of your drinks in the future will
be fed mouth-to-mouth by me...okay?」

Mana's astonished.

「...I'm asking you if it's okay?!」

Hearing me...Mana nods her head.

「Good...」

I put the oolong tea in my mouth and pour it in Mana's mouth.

Mana shows a very unpleasant face...but still, she must've been thirsty.
She drinks it immediately.

「Want more?」

Mana nods.

「...Megu」

「Yes dear」

Megu fills her mouth with the tea from the cup.

Then, she piled her lips with mine.

Megu sent oolong tea from her mouth...

Then...I deliver it to Mana.

「Megu, you want mouth to mouth too?」

Megu smiles bashfully.

「Un...sometimes」

「Sure...Let's do it from time to time」

I pulled out my penis from Mana...

I've done it three continuous times...No, including the bathroom sex, it's five times...

My penis has lost it's tension...

「...Should we take a rest?」

Megu asks me

「What time is it?」

「...It's 11 o'clock」

The promise with Minaho-neesan was to do it until 12 o'clock. I want to finish it at least two times for the night, but...

I look at Mana.

「...I'm Mana...Onii-chan's slave...! I'm Mana...Onii-chan's slave...! I'm Mana...

Onii-chan's slave! I'm Mana...Onii-chan's slave...!」

Mana is looking at herself at the mirror in the ceiling while lying down, with her arms and legs stretched, naked, on top of the bed.

...The violated self.

There's white liquid overflowing from her wide open crotch.

「...I'm Mana...Onii-chan's slave...! I'm Mana...Onii-chan's slave...! I'm Mana...Onii-chan's slave...!」

Mana keeps muttering her 『self introduction』like a broken machine...
The 『Shirasaka Maika』inside Mana will be destroyed by the end of the night.
And...The slave 『Yoshida Manatsu』will be born...

「...Mana, get up and give me a fellatio!」

I ordered Mana.

Mana looks at me with sad eyes and nodded.

I sit on the edge of the bed.

Mana kneels in front of me.

As expected...Mana is positioned so she can see her own appearance in the mirror...

「...Lick」

I point out the withered penis in Mana's face.

Mana begins to lick it with her tongue like a dog...

「...Look at the mirror, take a look at what you are doing...!」

Mana looks at herself doing fellatio

...The eyes see something awfully filthy...

A middle school girl serving a naked man with her mouth...

The white semen shines between her crotch...

「Mana is my『slave』. A rape 『slave』 Think only about me. There's nothing left in Mana's live but to be violate by me...」

Mana sheds tears of despair...

She continues her fellatio while crying.

「Yoshi-kun...Megu wants a collar too...!」

Megu wants to be pampered by me.

「Sure...Let me put it on you」

I took the green collar from Megu.

Megu presents her own neck to me...

「Megu is also Yoshi-kun's bitch¹ when there's a collar... Love me like a dog...!」

Megu said with her face blushing.

「Yeah...got it」

I fixed the collar on Megu's neck.

I attached the chain too.

「Okay...Girls. Get on all fours on top of the bed...!」

The two lined up facing the mirror.

Megu who became a dog when the collar was attached talks to Mana who's next to her.

「Hello. I'm Megu. I'm Yoshi-kun's lewd bitch! Who are you?

...Mana

「I'm Mana...Onii-chan's slave...!」

I hold the chains of the two.

Me who's reflected on the mirror...

Can only be seen as the owner of the two bitches...

「...I will compare the two of you!」

I stand behind the two with my penis that somehow managed to revive.

「First would be Megu」

I pierce my erection behind Megu who's on all fours.

「Yes...violate meee...Ahn! Yoshi-kun came in!!」

Megu's vagina that was just deprived of its virginity is still narrow...

But, it's completely moistened by the multiple sex...

I enjoy the clamping of Megu's vagina.

I stretch my hand from the back and massage her breasts.

Doggy stile sex has the breasts pulled by the gravity, so it has a different pleasure.

「...Nn, nnn! Ahn! I'm being violated like a dog! I'm being violated while Yoshi-kun holds my collar!...Aaah! Embarrassing! This is embarrassing!!」

Megu is extremely aroused by her own foolishness reflected in the mirror.

「...Yoshi-kun, this is great! Megu feels she's violated intensely...! Let's do this at school! Hey...violate Megu on all fours even in the school...Yoshi-kun, please!」

Megu begs.

「...Sure. where should we do it?」

「Let's see...how about the rooftop? Or the pool? Or maybe outside...Megu will be stripped naked by Yoshi-kun outside and violated from being...I want that...!」

Megu's vagina tightens...!

「Yeah...Let's definitely do it!」

「...I love you! I love you Yoshi-kun!」

After enjoying Megu's vagina a lot...I pull out.

This time, It's Mana's turn to be violated...

「...Mana, introduce yourself」

I turn my penis on Mana's ass.

Mana's ass who's slapped by me severely is swollen red...

When I touch it...her body shakes.

It must hurt when I touch it.

「...Hurry up」

「...I'm Mana...Onii-chan's slave...! I'm Mana...Onii-chan's slave...!」

I place my glans at Mana's entrance.

...Here I go!

「...I'm Mana...Onii-chan's slave...!!! Uuuu!!!」

The 14 year old body screams from being invaded in the back.

「...How is it? Yoshi-kun, compare it with Megu's」

Megu looks at our connection in interest...

「Un...As expected, women are different」

I stated my impressions.

「How is it different?」

「It's completely different...Mana's entrance is a bit on the back. The angle for the penis to enter is also different. I can enter Megu immediately but I have to push it facing up a bit for Mana...

「That different?」

「Yeah...The feeling inside is different as well. Mana's temperature is much higher」

「...Mana is better?」

Megu shows a worried face.

...I

「...A 『slave』that doesn't listen versus a cute 『wife』? It's obvious that the 『wife』is better」

Megu's eyes shine.

「...Really, Yoshi-kun?」

「Yeah, when having sex with Megu, I really feel the 『love』 For Mana, it feels like an exercise to release semen. It's completely incomparable...!」

I diminish Mana on purpose.

「...Do you really need this 『slave』 then?」

Mana in the mirror looks up in surprise.

「Right...if Yoshi-kun doesn't feel good, let's tell Minaho-san to 『Dispose』 her?」

Megu gets on my play.

「Un...It doesn't feel good even in sex」

Mana...

Sheds tears while being violated by me.

「Oh...she cried. I won't feel good having sex now」

「Yoshi-kun do it with Megu. You don't need Mana anymore do you?」

「Right. I feel sorry that she'll get killed, I thought of helping her and yet...if she's being useless, I don't need her」

「Sorry, Mana...Yoshi-kun doesn't need Mana. When it comes to sex partners, Megu, Misuzu-san and katsuko-san will be enough. Mana doesn't make him feel good」

I stopped my piston

「With that said...Sorry, Mana. I wasn't able to save you」

When I tried to pull my penis from Mana.

...

「...Please help me. Please...don't abandon me」

Mana begs on me over the mirror.

「But...Mana's selfish, arrogant, and she's always looking down on us...aren't you useless for me?」

I denied Mana's existence.

「I've got girls who are much more beautiful, kind, and ready to have sex than Mana. Everyone has an adult and sexy body more than Mana」

I purposely pick on Mana's inferiority complex.

I will do anything unfair in order to save this girl.

I will become a complete member of 『Kuromori』

...That's what I decided.

「I wanted to save you because I feel pity, but...Mana has been thinking about betraying me all this time...!」

I slapped Mana's ass.

Mana's vagina tightens.

「Tomorrow...Minaho-neesan will beat you up with a whip...and throw Mana away. As expected, I don't want to see Mana get killed...!」

I look at the mirror while connected with Mana.

Mana is looking with desperate eyes.

...Mana...speaks.

「...I...I will become a 『slave』 I'll become a 『slave』that Onii-chan would like...!」

Mana said while in all fours...accepting a man's penis deep in her vagina.

「...I'm Mana...Onii-chan's 『slave』...!」

...I

「Mana...you barely made it」

I told Mana.

「Being cornered this far...and if you still asked 『...What should I do?』...I would've really cast you away at that time」

...At life's predicament.

Those who ask others what he should do until the very last has no way of saving.

They don't have the value of saving.

Even if that person dies...

「...Onii-chan」

We're in a very dangerous world right now.

The head of Shirasaka Family...Cesario Viola...

Everyone in『Kuromori』...are betting their lives in the fight.

「I learned it through Mana. People must not sympathize easily. You must not pick them up because they feel pitiful... Because...we're in the middle of survival...we don't have the time to be sympathizing with people...!」

Minaho-neesan entrusted Mana to me so I can learn it.

Even if I abandon Mana in the end...Minaho-neesan will forgive me.

...but 「...Mana, will you really become a person useful for me? If yes, I'll let you life. If not...」

...I can do nothing but abandon.

Even if I know that Mana would be killed...

「I will...I will become a useful 『slave』for Onii-chan...I'll become a 『slave』...!」

I resumed my piston.

「...First, be my 『rape slave』 Right now, you can't do anything but that...!」

I pierce deep inside Mana violently!

This 14 year old girl tries to accept me desperately!

「...I'm Mana...Onii-chan's slave...! I'm Mana...Onii-chan's slave...!」

Mana keeps repeating her speech in front of the mirror to persuade herself...!

「...I'm Mana...Onii-chan's slave...! I'm Mana...Onii-chan's slave...!」

「...Yoshi-kun, let's kiss」

Megu and I kissed.

Megu's tongue invades my mouth.

Our tongues meet each other...

...aaah.

「...Mana, I'm cumming」

...Uuuu

As expected, there's not much coming out from my fourth ejaculation.

But still, I grasped Mana's ass and it begins to squeeze the remaining semen from my penis...

「...Aaaah」

Mana is falling in the hopeless abyss...

I pull out my penis from Mana.

Mana loses strength and lays down on the bed.

Then...I

I look at the real Mana instead of the one in the mirror.

...Huh, was Mana's body this small?

I was fighting Mana's heart before I noticed.

I didn't look at Mana's body.

...I feel shocked.

Mana's body is still a child.

A 14 year young body.

For the first time after making Mana fall as a 『slave』...

I noticed that the woman I violated is really still a child...

★ May 2 - Tuesday

127. Skill first, power second.

...N

...Nnnn, un

Is my phone alarm ringing?

...Sleepy.

To be honest...My body feels heavy.

I had too much sex.

...Aaaah

I have to wake up...

There's six more rounds...

...Huh?

I feel pleasure in my crotch...

Looking at it...

Megu is sucking my penis...!

「...Megu?」

「Good morning, Yoshi-kun!」

Megu licks my glans while smiling at me.

「Eh...Why?」

Hearing my question, Megu...

「Well...your penis is erect...」

...I see

Even though my body is already too tired...

You're still up?...!

「...Wake Mana up」

Megu said while stroking my glans with her lips.

Mana is sleeping peacefully.

She doesn't look like waking up from the phone alarm.

...Her calm sleeping face.

She's really still a child.

I raped this young girl multiple times.

Then, I have to continue raping her this morning.

I can't use Megu to ejaculate this morning as promised with Minaho-neesan.

Mana will have to take my ejaculation six times in two hours.

...Right.

In the end...I was only able to do it four times last night.

My fourth ejaculation ended in 11:45.

It was impossible for me to get another erection and ejaculate within the remaining 15 minutes.

「...Let's brush our teeth and sleep」

Megu said.

The three of us lined in the sink and brushed our teeth.

Or rather...There's only two toothbrush in the love hotel...

Megu and I brush our teeth first...

Then Mana used the toothbrush I used.

When Mana made an unpleasant face...I slapped her ass.

Mana brushed her teeth while crying...

Then...The three of us slept like J|| while Megu and Mana wearing collar.

Mana is sandwiched in the middle...

Mana can't run away.

I embraced Megu and slept.

「...Hey, Mana...wake up」

「Nn...I'm sleepy. Maika's still sleepy...!」

Mana is half-asleep...

I slapped Mana's cheek!

「...Hii!」

Mana wakes up immediately!

「...Who are you?」

...Mana

「...I'm Mana. Onii-chan's slave」

She repeats her 『Self introduction』

「...That's right. It's rape time!」

I kiss Mana's lips.

Mana hates it.

「Megu...make Mana's pussy wet」

「Yes dear」

Megu separates her lips from my penis and buries her face between Mana's crotch.

「Mana...I'll lick you up」

Megu stretches her long tongue and licks Mana's slit.

「...It tastes like Yoshi-kun's semen」

Megu smiles.

「It would be impossible this morning...But please let Megu drink Yoshi-kun's semen next time」

「You like drinking my semen?」

「Megu will love anything as long as it's Yoshi-kun...!」

...Megu.

「I'm not making Mana feel pleasurable. I'm just tasting Yoshi-kun in this place...!」

Megu said while making her tongue crawl up.

I also lick Mana's breasts.

「Can we do something about this sunken nipples?」

「Mana's still small so it can't be helped」

「What about Megu?」

「It came out around when I was in third year in middle school?」

「...Is that so?」

「That's why...Yoshi-kun should just lick it and suck it out」

「...Sure」

Ignoring the frightened Mana, the two of us play with her body...
...Before long.

I can hear wet sounds coming from Mana's crotch.

「She's lewd as expected...it's wet」

Megu smiles at Mana.

Mana blushes in embarrassment.

「It can't be helped...she's a『slave』who has no value but to be raped」

「She really is...Mana doesn't have any other use」

Mana's eyes became teary again from our torture.

「Mana's pussy is swelling, it's a big problem」

「It's okay. I'm the only one who can use it anyway...」

「Right. If Yoshi-kun doesn't vioalte her, Mana would be 『dismissed』...!」

Hearing Megu's words...Mana trembled.

「Hey...Mana, take a look at yourself at the mirror in the ceiling.」

Megu forces Mana.

「Can you see?...The green tattoo on top of your pussy...!」

The『宝』tattoo...is shining in Mana's abdomen.

「If you show this to any man other than Yoshi-kun...we will kill you」

Megu whispers to Mana.

「Having this kind of tattoo...Mana can no longer return to a normal girl. You get that?...!」

Mana doesn't speak anymore.

She knows that I will slap her if the answer isn't proper.

「Yoshi-kun...I think it's already good」

Megu moves her face away from Mana's crotch.

In exchange...I bend over Mana.

「Here I go...Mana」

How many times have I raped Mana from yesterday's virgin loss?

In the end...Mana doesn't open up to me...

No matter how many times we try to have sex...It only turns to rape.

Mana and I can't have normal sex...

The penis hits the swollen opening.

「...N!」

「What's wrong...Yoshi-kun?」

「No...I had too much sex. My penis is already stinging」

「...Sorry, Yoshi-kun」

Megu said.

「...You're enduring it for Mana's sake」

Hearing Megu...Mana looks up at me.

「...Let's give up. It's impossible to ejaculate six times in two hours. Yoshi-kun's already tired...!」

「No...I can't give up I'll never let Mana get whipped...!」

「...Yoshi-kun.」

「...Mana...is my 『slave』...my 『little sister』...!」

I push in my penis in the swelling opening...!

「...Uuuuuuu!」

Mana raised a groan again...!

Mana's vagina isn't completely wet.

I slowly shake Mana's body...!

「...Mana」

I'm raping this small 14 year old body.

The narrow vagina remembers the shape of my penis.

I'm changing this young girl to my 『rape slave』

I'm completely violating her mind and body...

「Mana...stick out your tongue」

Mana sticks out her tongue with a pained face.

I slurp her tongue.

Our tongues twine with each other.

...Ah.

Megu is licking my back.

「...Do your best, Yoshi-kun」

「...Yeah」

While I'm dripping sweat...

I think about ejaculating inside Mana.

「...I love the hardworking Yoshi-kun!」

Megu rubs her own breast against my back.

I try to drown myself in the sexual feeling.

Just sex...

and rape...

going only towards ejaculation...

I can't think of anything else...

「Aaah...Cumming, I'm cumming...Manaaa!!」

...Dokun

It wasn't a lot...

Mana takes in semen in her womb again.

Mana trembles in despair at the moment she felt hot liquid pours in her womb.

This small 14 year old body...is being remodeled as a body of a 『woman』to be raped.

I pile my sweating body on Mana.

The smell of sex and sweat drifts in the room.

We're male and female...No, Mana is lower than a female.

A doll used only for ravishing...Spreading it's legs wide and accepting a man's penis.

「...want to take a break?」

Megu tries to feed me tea again.

「No...We don't have the time」

I bury my face in Mana's hair.

The fragrant smell of sweat and shampoo...a smell of a girl.

Smelling that, it improves my sexual feeling even for a bit.

「...Now, let's start the sixth round」



...N-No more

I can't cum anymore...

「Megu...What time is it?」

「...5:57」

I somehow managed to do three more after an hour...

My semen tank is empty already...

Or rather...My stamina's at the limit.

Mana is much more in danger than me.

She's completely dead tired...

She's just lying down on the bed powerless like a doll.

Her swollen vagina has semen dripping from it...

「...Are you okay, Mana?」

Mana answers.

「...I'm Mana. Onii-chan's 『slave』...」

Could it be that I've made Mana mentally strange? I panicked for a moment.

But...Mana's eyes still have life.

She's glaring at me.

To me who keep giving her such pains., 「...It's impossible. Let's give up. It's Mana's fault」

Megu said.

「No! I won't give up!」

Mana stares at me.

She's probing my mind.

「I...I will never let my 『woman』be whipped!」

I leaned on Mana's body once again.

Mana closes her eyes from the despair...

...At that time.

...Gachan!

Suddenly...the door's lock came off.

The one who can open the room from outside...

...Is Tamayo-san?

The door opens and fresh air enters.

「...My my, what a smell」

「Ufufu...Good morning」

...That is.

Katsuko-nee and Nagisa-san?

...Why?

It's not yet 7 o'clock.

Katsuko-nee is on her black suit.

Nagisa-san is wearing a pink dress.

「Megumi-chan...how many more remaining?」

Katsuko-nee asks

「...Three more」

Megu answers.

「Well...You guys did your best」

Nagisa-san smiles at us.

「There's three more times within one hour...Hey, Nagisa」

「Yup...easy victory」

Saying that...the two took off their clothes.

「...Uhm.」

What is going on?

「Rely on your own 『women』a bit more...!」

Nagisa-san said.

「That's right...we will do anything for your sake!」

Katsuko-nee who's now just wearing a black sexy underwear took out a drink

bottle from her bag.

It's colored like vegetable juice...what is that?

「...It's a special energy drug. Drink this...It'll dope you a bit」

I drink it as told.

...Bitter.

But...I can feel my stomach in blazing heat.

「Yoshida-kun, just lie down...!」

Nagisa-san is wearing a red underwear...there's a cut between her bra and her nipple is completely exposed.

「It's great isn't it?...It's called open bra!」

Nagisa-san smiles.

「Megumi-chan, take a look...this is Nagisa's technique...!」

Told by Katsuko-nee, Megumi gets up.

「...Y-Yes」

Nagisa-san faced my crotch.

「...Okay? You see, semen is gathered in this bag of testicles under the penis」

Nagisa-san's special lecture starts.

「Therefore...you stimulate the testicles like this, and new semen would be produced」

Nagisa-san licks my balls while speaking.

She's licking it as if she's stretching the wrinkles of my scrotum.

She rolls the testicles to stimulate it.

...Aaaaah

I-It feels good.

「Don't you know many old men whose penis can't stand we had played with!?!」

Katsuko-nee said with confidence.

「When Nagisa does it, even a person about to die will get erect

immediately...!」

Nagisa-san licks from the other side of my balls to the root...
I can feel her hot breath between my crotch.
I revived in just a few minutes.

「The rules says that it doesn't matter who makes him ejaculate as long as it's a creampie?」

Katsuko-nee asks Megu.

「Yes, that's right...Katsuko-neesan」

Megu answers.

「Then...Can I go ahead, Katsuko?」

Nagisa-san asks for Katsuko-nee's approval.

「Go on...It's the penis Nagisa erected. Nagisa has the right to eat it」
「Then, excuse me...」

Nagisa-san took off her panty elegantly.

「...You should just lie down. Leave everything to Mama...!」
「...Mama?」
「...That's right. You are Papa, and I'm Mama...!」

Nagisa's smile gently wraps all of me...

「...I'm not drinking pills anymore」

My erect penis is being swallowed by Nagisa-san's vagina.

「...Ahn! Delicious~!」

Taking my penis to the root...Nagisa-san kisses me.

「...Ejaculate with the intention of making me pregnant. If not, I'll get angry at you...!」

She kisses me repeatedly...

「...N-Nagisa-san」
「...I want your child...Make Nagisa a Mama...!」

Nagisa-san's waist moves gently...

My penis is gently, strongly...clamped...

「...Ah, it feels good. I love you...dear...!」

W-What's this feeling of a vagina...

...I-It feels good.

「...Such Mama's breasts...please」

Nagisa-san's wearing a bra but...the bra has a gap, so her pink nipples comes to me.

I suck the nipple presented to me.

Nagisa-san pushes her breasts to my face.

Her big breasts...is so warm, and soft!

「...If milk comes out of it, I'll let you drink it too...!」

...Nagisa-san.

「No...I want you to drink it. I am your 『woman』after all...!」

Nagisa-san speeds up her waist...!

...Aah...Aaah...Aaah 「Ufufu...Does it feel good? Feel good inside Mama...!」

Nagisa-san's body smells like a woman.

Different from Megu and Mana...

The smell of sex from a mature woman.

This smell improves my sexual feeling...

「Just fill your head with only about having sex with me...Think about making me pregnant...!」

Nagisa-san's smile penetrates my heart.

「...Heey, say 『I want to make Nagisa pregnant』!」

「I-I want to make Nagisa pregnant...!」

...I

The remaining time and Mana disappears in my head.

My body just concentrates on ejaculating inside Nagisa-san.

「...N-Nagisaaa!」

「That's right! Desire me more! Impregnate meee!!」

Nagisa-san's waist...I

Ah...Aaaah...Aaaah!

「...I-I...Nagisa-san!」

「...What's wrong? It's leaking out? Go on, pour it in me!」

「...I love you Nagisa-san! ... I love you!」

「I love you too...Yoshida-kun!!!」

...C-Cumming!

Aaaaaaaaaaaaa!!!

「...Ufufufu...It's coming out. It's coming out...Yoshida-kun's semen is very warm...!」

「...N-Nagisa-san!」

「It's covering my ovum...Yoshida-kun will become a Papa...!」

Nagisa-san kisses my lip.

「...Please get pregnant. I want Nagisa-san to bear my child」

I...

「Me to...I want Yoshi-kun's child」

Megu mutters from my side.

「Megumi-chan needs to grow a bit more...You should just enjoy your high school life for now. You can be a Mama anytime you want...!」

Saying that, Katsuko-nee kisses Megu...

「...If Nagisa-san gives birth to Yoshi-kun's child, can I hold it too?」

Nagisa-san smiled with her whole face.

「My child is Megumi-chan's child...we're 『Sisters』aren't we?」

Megu nods with moist eyes...

「...Yes!」

Nagisa-san embraces me tight...

「Embrace me a lot until I get pregnant...Stay over my house for at least one week」

...Nagisa-san said sadly.

「Okay...got it」

「Mao will wait for you too...!」

「Got it...I'll become Mao's Papa...!」

There's fighting fate...and there's accepting fate.

I readied myself accepting Nagisa-san's everything.

...Including Mao-chan.

「Thank you...I love you」

Nagisa-san embraces and kisses me...then separate our bodies.

「...Sorry. I have to go to the market now...」

...Right.

Even though Nagisa-san has her flower shop work...

She came to help me...!

「Nagisa-san...Thank you」

「Don't worry...we have ordered the necessities online, if we just rush the car to the 『auction』we will make it in time」

「...But, Nagisa-san」

「Geez...Just call me Nagisa.」

Nagisa-san smiles at me.

「Though you're younger, you are my 『man』!」

...Nagisa.

「un...Thanks, Nagisa」

We kissed once again...

「Katsuko...I'll leave the remaining two to you...!」

Then...Nagisa looks at Katsuko-nee's eyes.

「...Leave this to me!」

The two made a high-five...

...It's substitution.

「...We don't have much time so we'll force ourselves okay?」

Katsuko-nee leans on me naked.

「Yeah...let's do everything. I don't want Mana to be whipped...」

I told Katsuko-nee.

「Then...relax your body」

I relax my body.

「I'm going to put a finger in your anus okay?...」

...Eh?

...Uooooo?!

Katsuko-nee's finger is going in my anus!!

「...Don't move」

The finger stirs inside.

...Aaah

「...Does it feel good?」

「...It feels strange.」

Katsuko-nee kisses my whole body while moving her finger inside my anus.
She's stimulating an erogenous zone precisely.

「...I think the energy drug from a while ago is working now」

Uuuu...the root of my penis is burning hot.

「ufufu...Look, it's standing now. Your penis got erect!」

Is my penis a Clara?!¹

「...Itadakimasu!」

Katsuko-nee takes me in!

...From there.

I don't get what's going on anymore...!

My penis is being crushed inside Katsuko-nee's vagina...

Katsuko-nee's tongue and finger stimulates my whole body!

「...I will teach you everything I know about sex!」

That's what I heard from Katsuko-nee.

「...I...I'm melting inside Katsuko-nee...Aaaaaa...What's going on with me?!」
「...Go on. Leave everything to me and I'll take you to heaven...!」

...Aaah.

My whole body is wrapped in pleasure...with my penis as core.
So sex is this amazing...!

「...Katsuko-nee...Katsuko-nee...Katsuko-nee!」
「...Call me Oneechan.」
「...Oneechan...Oneechan...My Oneechan...!」

Oneechan has a gentle face in front of me.
The face gently smiling...shakes.
...We're having sex.

「...Don't do everything alone anymore...」

...Oneechan.

「You're no longer alone. You can rely on us anytime...!」

...Yes

「...Good boy. Now, let it all out inside your Oneechan...!」

...The pleasure grows within me.
It's becoming a big balloon...
It's about to explode...!

「Now...show your pleased face to Oneechan.」

...Oneechan!
...Aaaaah!

「I'm exploding! It's bursting out!」
「It's okay...Oneechan is holding you properly...!」

Katsuko-oneechan's warm body...wet skin...melting vagina...and her adult
smell.
I smell Oneechan's fragrant hair...!
The adult Oneechan is embracing the child me.

「...Cumming! I'm cumming! Oneechan!!」

「...Come inside Oneechan!!」

...Byururururu!

My semen bursts inside Katsuko-nee!

She's embracing my whole body...!

This is sex...

I...I...

I'm drowning in Katsuko-nee's body...!

「...Haa, haa, haa」

Katsuko-nee's voluptuous chest buries my face and I gasp for breath.

...It hurts.

But...It feels good.

I was taught the depth of sex.

「Megumi-chan...don't make that kind of face」

Katsuko-nee tells Megu.

Megu looks sad.

「I won't monopolize him...!」

「But...I can't make Yoshi-kun feel good like Katsuko-neesan did...」

Katsuko-nee laughs.

「You're still learning aren't you? You should study slowly with him」

「...Eh?」

「Learning about sex together is amazing. You should just get better with him and Misuzu-san...」

「...Katsuko-neesan!」

「It's okay...Nagisa and I will teach you anything...!」

...Katsuko-nee

「Rather...We know techniques that are unnecessary for a loving man and woman. Excluding those...we will teach you the way of sex with love...!」

Saying that...Katsuko-nee separates from me.

I looked around.

「Huh...where's Nagisa?」

「She get out quietly while Yoshi-kun and Katsuko-san are having sex. She doesn't want to disturb...!」

...Dammit.

My 『women』...

Why all of them are good women?!

「Megumi-chan...how many more minutes?」

Right...we're not done yet...!

There's one more round remaining 「There's 30 minutes remaining.」

「...My, what allowance」

Katsuko-nee smiles at me.

...Un

There's nothing to worry about if Katsuko-nee's here...

「...Thank you, Katsuko-nee」

I express my gratitude from the bottom of my heart.

「...I'm going to consult you about everything from now on」

Katsuko-nee beats my head.

「Un...Sorry」

I'm glad to have this kind 『elder sister』...

「Now...the last one...」

Katsuko-nee looks at the dead dired Mana.

「As expected, she should take charge...!」

128. Final attempt

My penis is still erect. Is this the effect of the energy drug Katsuko-nee gave me?

One more...I have to complete ten ejaculations at any cost.

「...Jajajajajaan~!」

Katsuko-nee takes out a bottle with a lime green liquid just like how doraemon takes out a secret tool.

「...What is that?」

When I asked her...

「When we take on old men...there are a lot who can't get erect, or those who can't release semen easily. Therefore...we have this kind of special medicine」

Katsuko-nee removed the lid of the bottle.

「...You see. You paint this on the penis.」

Katsuko-nee pours the liquid to her own hand.
Then applied it on my penis.

I felt chill for a moment.

Then...the stimulation spreads to my entire penis.

Somehow...it feels like when your head is being washed by tonic shampoo.

「...How is it?」

Katsuko-nee smiles.

「Somehow... My dick feels cold」

「Isn't that right? I'll make Mana-chan's pussy wet as well」

Katsuko-nee puts medicine on her own fingers and touches Mana's vagina.

「...Uu」

Mana groans...

「...Endure it for a while. It'll feel better immediately」

Katsuko-nee smiles at Mana gently.

She's putting the medicine on Mana's slit.

「This also has an effect of curing the sore places...!」

Just like how my penis stings from having too much sex, I think Mana's vagina is also in big trouble.

It isn't so welcome to use a place that became a wound.¹

「Look...it's gotten hot doesn't it?」

...True.

My penis that was just tingling earlier...is now feeling hot.

My erection has reached the maximum again...!

「Well, doping has it's qualities but...they're just a last resort.」

Katsuko-nee puts her finger inside Mana's vagina...

She thrusts the medicine deep inside Mana.

「...Aaaaahn!」

Mana's pant...she's feeling it.

「Ufufu...It'll feel even better」

Katsuko-nee took out a pink colored tool.

There's an electric cord sticking to it...that's?

「You see...You put this in the anus. It's an anal rotor!」

「...Hiiii!」

Mana's afraid.

「It's okay...It'll only feel good」

Katsuko-nee...applies the lime green medicine on the pink rotor...and then...

「It's going in...!」

It was pushed inside Mana's anus...

「...Aaaah!」

Mana also feels the tingling sensation inside her anus...!

Katsuko-nee smiles suspiciously to me.

「Now...Come inside Mana!」

...I

My hot penis will go inside Mana...!

「...Hyaaaaaaaa!」

Mana raised a scream!

...Nnnnnnn! Uu?!

Mana's inside has her love nectar and the green medicine mixed...it feels strange.

Even if I don't swing my waist, my whole penis is being stimulated by small bubbles...

It's as if my erect penis is poking carbonated water...

In addition, Mana's narrow vagina clamps my penis...!

「Okay...Then, switch!」

Katsuko-nee has turned on the switch of the rotor pushed in Mana's anus!

「...Agaaaaaaaaaa!!」

Mana raises a groan!

The small vibrations in Mana's ass is being transmitted to my penis!

...What's this?

I-It feels good!

My waist moves on it's own.

Even though I was so tired already...!

There's no way I can't move my waist!

「...Hyaaaaaaan! Aaaaah! aaaaaaah!」

Mana screams while tears spill like rain...!

「...Mana-chan is quite a top-heavy girl isn't she? She's always calm, observing other people...and she's the type that wants to make her own standpoint to be the dominant one」

Katsuko-nee mutters from the side while we're having violent sex.

「There's no choice for girls like her but to make her fall to the bodily pleasure...!」

Katsuko-nee stimulates Mana's sunken nipples by turning her fingers around

it...!

「Remember it with your body...You are a woman...female...an animal. A woman's body accepts a man...throw away your reason...become a beast...!」

Katsuko-nee whispers at Mana's ears like magic words.

「...Iyaaaaaan! Iyaaaaaan! This...isn't me...!」

Mana is violently puzzled by the unusual happening on her body!

「No...That is Mana. Take a look at the ceiling. Mana...you're very happy」

Megu whispers at Mana from the other side.

Mana opens her eyes.

Looking up at the ceiling...Mana is being raped again...!

「...I...This is me...!」

Mana's vagina is changing from the repeated violent pistons...!
Inside Mana's vagina...the depths and the entrance...is strangling me individually.

Aah...My waist is moving on it's own.

I can't stop piercing Mana!

Is this the effect of the medicine again?

My penis is unbearably hot till the root...!

It's being squeezed to the root like a warm rubber...

Nevertheless, my glans feel cool...!

Erect to the maximum...it's knocking on Mana's uterus multiple times...!

...Aaaah.

...Aaaaaaaah

...Aaaaaaaaaaaaaa!!

The pleasure...it's stacking...It's about to let out soon...!

「...Agyaaaaaaaa! Akaaaaaa! aaaaaaa!」

Mana is panting like a small beast!

She's completely attacked by the pleasure...She's being sucked up...!

...Drowning...sinking...she's losing her head with it.

「...Myaaaaaaaa! Nyaaaaaaaa!」

Mana pants like a small beast's cry...!

...Mana.

...You're very cute!

...aaaah, Mana!

「...Cumming!!!」

My tenth ejaculation...!

Becoming a single lump, it gushes inside Mana's womb instantly!

「...Kyaaaaaaaa!!」

Mana's body became an arc from receiving the hot liquid!!

「...aaaaaaaaaaa!!!」

...Mana exclaims!

「When you use this drug...The stimulation when the semen is poured to the womb makes the best feeling. The deepest part of your stomach feels tingling... whoever it may be, they'll become nothing but a female...!」

...Katsuko-nee!

「...Aaaaah...aaaaah...Aaaaaaaaaaaaaah!!」

Mana's body convulsed multiple times!

She clamps my penis every time she does...she's trying to wring out my semen to the last drop.

Her uterus is wriggling as if it wants to gulp down my semen...

「...Mana...Mana...Mana...!」

I relaxed on top of Mana's body and kissed her lips again and again.
Mana is still light-headed.

「If you experience this, you can't do anything but be addicted to sex...Mana-chan」

Katsuko-nee's voice can't reach Mana who's absentminded.

「...I want to have sex like this too」

Megu mutters.

「Megumi-chan...do your best to make it happen without using medicine. This is doping in the end so it's no good with your body」

「Is that so?」

「If you enjoy sex properly, you will reach that immediately. If the two of you take it a step at a time, you'll learn more about sex...okay?」

「...Yes」

I get on top of Mana while I'm sweating hard.
For some reason...I want to laugh with all the air in my lungs.

「...Nfufufu, ahahaa, ahaahahaha!」

Mana regains consciousness from my laughter.

「...O-Onii-chan?!」

「We did it Mana! That's the tenth! Mana don't need to be whipped anymore!」

Somehow...I feel I've unlocked an achievement.
Anyway...I've done it.

「Mana-chan, in the end, how many times did you make him ejaculate on that ten times?」

Katsuko-nee asks Megu.

「...Six times」

「Being violated six times on the night you lose virginity or being whipped by Ojou-sama 20 times, there's not much difference I think...」

Katsuko-nee said...

「But...We did it! We were able to keep our promise with Minaho-neesan!
Mana, we did it...we're amazing, you did well...Mana...!」

My laughter changed to tears.
I'm crying.

My scalding tears fall into Mana's naked chest...!

「..... ? ! ! ! 」

Mana looks up at me with a surprised face.
We still have our genitals connected.

「...Mana, what are you?」

Megu asks Mana

...Mana.

「...I'm Mana. Onii-chan's slave」

She repeats her words again...!

「Yoshi-kun is praising the 『slave』 Mana. You did well...!」

I embraced Mana.

Pat her head.

Rubbed our cheeks together.

「That's right!...You did well! You worked hard, Mana!」

...I'm just happy.

At just about everything right onw!

Mana is looking at me with a puzzled face.

「...Don't make that kind of face, Mana」

I kiss Mana.

Kissed her repeatedly.

Mana just accepts my kiss.

「You worked hard...You're amazing...Mana!」

My tears smear Mana's cheeks.

「...I」

Mana's just in blank surprise.



「Now, take a shower and get going」

Katsuko-nee told Megu and I

「...What about Mana?」

「Mana-chan doesn't need to go to school right? You two need to go to school...!」

...Right.

I look at the clock...7:03

「We have ten minutes! Yoshi-kun, hurry!」

Megu pulls and takes me to the bathroom !

Then...the chain on the wristband is sticking to Mana's collar, so Mana followed as well「」

「It's okay, come with us Mana!」

The three of us go to the bathroom while I carry Mana.

「Yoshi-kun, Megu will wash you...!」

Sweat, semen, love nectar...anyway, Megu flushes the stinky smell from my body...

Meanwhile, I removed the chain on Megu's collar.

I heard from Katsuko-nee that it's okay as the collar is waterproof.

No...I know that I should better take off the collar.

This collar takes time to remove so I have to give up now.

「I'm going to wash your head...!」

It feels refreshing.

Un...The hot water passes through between my hair.

「I don't have time to dry my hair too but...I can't go to the medical exam with this smell」

This time, I showered Megu's head with hot water!

Putting body soap in the sponge...

I washed Megu's body and Megu washed ine.

There's no lewd feelings already.

We don't have time so we bath desperately.

Then...rinsing the shampoo...

「I feel sorry for Mana but I'll just wash you off with hot water」

Sadly, we don't have time to wash with soap.

I shower Mana's body while Megu is foaming my head.

Mana just stay still obediently.

The naked body of a 14 year old girl with a collar and a chain fixed at her.

Somehow, it feels like I'm really bathing a pet dog.

I wash her in a hurry and rinsed her in a hurry.

Katsuko-nee has brought our towel and change of clothes in the changing room.

Katsuko-nee has already changed to her former suit.

「Ah, my uniform is in the back」

We go to the room while Megu wipes her body...

「Hurry up and wipe your body!」

Being told by Katsuko-nee, I wipe my body in a dash...!

There's only two towel so Mana's just in blank amazement while wet.

「Yoshi-kun, here's the underwear we bought yesterday!」

Megu comes back from the changing room.

「Thanks...Megu...Hey, Mana!」

After finishing wiping my body...I passed it to Mana.

Mana begins to wipe her body timidly.

「...Yoshi-kun, put this on!」

Megu presents me her new underwear.

...Oh right, we had that promise.

「...Sure」

First...her panty.

I put it on her both legs.

Next...bra...

「...What's wrong?」

「I just feel regrettable that Megu's cute breast would be hidden」

...Un

I will carve this pink nipple in my memory before it's too late.

「...Idiot. If Yoshi-kun wants to see it, I can take off my clothes anytime...!」

Megu said bashfully.

「...I'll put on Yoshi-kun's underwear too」

Megu puts on my new underwear.
Megu squats in front of me.
My penis is in front of her.

「ufufu...Later」

Megu talks to my penis...then kissed the glans.
Then put on my underwear.

「Un...as expected of an 840 yen. The feeling when you wear it is different」
「Right?!」

While we're talking, Katsuko-nee...

「Do that later. Hurry up and put on your clothes!」
「...Okay」

But...When I try to wear my shirt.
I can't wear it as Mana's chain is there!

「Remove the wristband temporarily., I'll watch over Mana-chan.」

Err...what's the PIN?
The band came off.
I handed it to Katsuko-bee.

「I've brought you a new t-shirt」

Katsuko-nee handed me the t-shirt in exchange.
I wore it immediately.

「Here's your socks」

As expected of Katsuko-nee, she has everything ready.
Megu took out the clothes from the bag she took from her house.
We get dressed in an amazing speed...
We're in our uniform in no time...
...Huh?
Megu's head still has the towel.

「...We don't have time to dry it, do we?」

Megu asks Katsuko-nee.

「Do it after arriving at school. We'll set it beatifuly. For now, you can just wind it with your towel

「But...we don't have a place to set hair in school」

「It's okay...we have a room for that. There's a dryer too」

...I see

Megu doesn't know the principal's office yet.

「Minaho-neesan has a secret room」

「But...We can't go to school while I have a towel in my head」

「That's no problem too. We have a secret passage. If you get on the car, no one can see us from the outside...!」

Un...Anyway, we'll do somehow.

...Wait.

Mana's still naked!

「Katsuko-nee, Mana needs to wear clothes too...!」

When I say that in a hurry, Katsuko-nee...

「Eh...Why?」

...Why?

「...She's a 『slave』so she's okay being naked!」

Katsuko-nee smiled.



Taking all our luggage...we go to the love hotel's corridor.

Speaking of which, we didn't eat the snacks at all.

Well fine...someone will eat it if we put it in the secret room under the principal's office.

...Maybe Nei-san.

Is Nei-san okay?

「Hurry up...it would be embarrassing to be seen by other guests, right?」

Katsuko-nee pushes me from behind.

Right.

We have a naked middle school girl with us.

After changing into my school uniform, I put the wristband again.

Mana's wearing only socks and shoes.

Other than that...she's naked only with a collar.

The 『宝』tattoo is shining in her belly.

Even though I washed her off...my white semen drips from her thighs.

Somehow...we got out to the parking lot without meeting anyone.

Then...Tamayo-san is waiting there.

「Ufufu...looking good. A chained collar...and even a tattoo」

Tamayo-san looks at Mana with a smile.

「That's great that you became a 『slave』 I was seriously angry last night...」

Tamayo-san was a person who experienced cruelty from Shirasaka.

As expected...she was angry at Mana's overly-familiar attitude.

「I've been watching you all this time...You're properly 『disciplined』 If you didn't turn proper, I intended to slap you with a whip...!」

...Right.

This person was also a member who participated in Yukino's wedding dress rape.

「Mana...greet Tamayo-san. You have to say 『Nice to meet you』...!」

...Mana.

「...Nice to meet you. I'm Mana. Onii-chan's 『slave』...!」

The naked Mana greets Tamayo-san with a sorrowful face.

「...Your head is too high」

Hearing Tamayo-san, Mana...

Kneels naked in the parking lot's asphalt.

「...I'm Mana. Onii-chan's slave」

Tamayo-san presents her shoes to Mana's face.

「...Kiss my shoes」

Mana applies her lip to the shoe.

「I will overlook you as long as you're his 『slave』 But if ever I see you being conceited like last night...I'll kill you」

Tamayo-san said calmly...

「I hate you and your sister. You two really have the same character as Shirasaka. Even though you're stupid, your pride is too high that you're making fool of other...I hate girls like you」

Mana trembled from Tamayo-san's speech.

「Tamayo-san...She's no longer Shirasaka Maika. She's my 『slave』, Yoshida Mana」

I told Tamayo-san.

「I'll agree with that for now. Train her properly...if she accomplishes her role as a 『slave』magnificently, I will overlook her from now on」

「Yes...I'll do my best」

「Don't pamper her...This kind of idiot will grow conceited if you do」

「...Got it」

Katsuko-nee speaks to Tamayo-san.

「Please tell the other ladies that this girl has become a 『slave』 We don't mind you showing the video from yesterday」

「Yeah, I've already sent to everyone the video of her being raped in the mansion's courtyard. Everyone's gladly watching Shiraska's daughter being violated」

...I see.

They really are born with grudge against Shirasaka Sousuke.

「The spanking last night was very great...do you think that would make everyone consent for the moment?」

Minaho-neesan has Tamayo-san...and the former prostitutes of the mansion are cooperators of revenge.

Normally...she has to respect the wishes of these people.

「...Tamayo-san.」

Tamayo-san turned to Megu.

「I'm also Shirasaka Sousuke's daughter. Should I be a 『slave』as well?」

Tamayo-san replies to Megu who has an earnest expression.

「I have seen Megumi-chan's state while this girl's being 『disciplined』 You look like Minaho-chi from time to time」

Megu resembles Minaho-neesan?

Megu has a puzzled look in her face.

「...Megumi-chan, you belong to our side...」

Tamayo-san declared.

「You also had your life twisted by Shirasaka Sousuke...and unable to hope for a normal happiness. Megumi-chan is like us...an avenger. The revenge side, not the other side」

...The people of revenge side.

「But you see...We want Megumi-chan to do a different revenge from us」

Tamayo-san gently pats Megu's cheeks.

「You are the youngest 『sister』from us 『women of the mansion』 Shirasaka has put a curse of 『never happy』on us...break that curse and become happy with the person you love...!」

Tamayo-san looks at me gently.

「Your future is full of difficulties...prepare yourself. Whatever happens, do all you can to be happy...!」

「...Yes, understood」

I answered with a strong determination...

129. Onigiri and Miso Soup

Katsuko-nee's car is a silver minivan I've never seen before.

「The green car can't be used after yesterday's event」

Right.

That car's plate number has all been examined.

By the people Cesario Viola hired.

「That's why I brought a spare car」

As usual, the rear window is smoked and the inside can't be seen.

「Get all the luggage on the back」

Katsuko-nee opens the lock of the door...there's a seat that's turned to flat just like when I had car sex with Misuzu.

「You can lie down and sleep, it'll take 20 minutes until school but, it's better to sleep even for a few minutes?」

...I'm always thankful at Katsuko-nee's consideration.

We pile up our baggage on the back of the car.

「My bag has the dress so Yoshi-kun can have it as a pillow」

Megu offered me a bag.

「There's blanket there. If you feel cold then use that...」

There really is a blanket as Katsuko-nee said.

...I 「...Katsuko-nee, can I cover Mana with a blanket?」

It must be cold for her to be naked all the time.

「She's your 『slave』 Do what you want with her」

Katsuko-nee said and smiled...

「It would be troublesome if she gets colds...」

I wrapped the naked Mana with a blanket.

Mana's still expressionless.

「Mana, become my dakimakura」

I took off the outer coat of my uniform.

Then, I lied down holdinog Mana.

「I'm going to sleep holding Mana!」

Megu lied down next to me and embraced Mana.

On top of Mana's head, I see Megu's face.

「...Ufufu」

Megu smiles.

「What's wrong?」

I don't get why Megu is smiling.

「I just thought that it's my first time lying down in school uniform and looking at Yoshi-kun's face...!」

Even if you say that...It's my first time as well.

「Yoshi-kun...so cute!」

No...there's no way my face is cute.

The cute one should be the face Megu is making right now.

Mana looks sullen while being embraced by us.

「Stop flirting...we're going!」

Katsuko-nee said from the driver's seat.

「Ah...Where's Tamayo-san?」

I raised my body and looked outside the car...

「She has returned to the office...Tamayo-neesan looks so sleepy」

Right...Tamayo-san has been observing us all this time.

「We'll meet each other soon...say your gratitude next time」

「I guess you're right.」

Then...our car come out of the hotel.

The flamboyance we saw in the love hotel district last night is like a lie in the morning.

Any of the hotels are in fact quite old buildings, some even have cracks on their concrete wall.

There's a lot of garbage bags lines up in the dump site.

The cat walks bored ahead of that.

There's two crows¹ hanging on the electric wire.

The asphalt road has been patched multiple times.

The reality of the morning light erasing the dark night clarifies all of it.

The world under the sun...the『daily life』resumes.

「Yoshi-kun...we should sleep」

Megu called me anxiously.

「...Sure」

I lied on the flat seat again.

The car shook greatly.

I'm sure that we've gone out of the hotel alley to the main street.

「...Mana, are you okay?」

When I asked her.

Mana doesn't answer...

How can I make her open up?...

In the first place...It might be impossible for a 『slave』to open her heart.

...No, I should stop thinking deeply.

I closed my eyes.

Anyway...I'm sleepy.

...Then.

My phone rang.

「...Err」

I took out my phone from the school uniform I threw out of my head.

...As expected.

...She'll definitely call out at night and mornings.

「...Hello」

『Good morning! Danna-sama!』

...Misuzu's so energetic.

「...Pee?」

『Yes, Misuzu is in the toilet right now waiting for Danna-sama's permission!』

Misuzu must be sitting on the toilet with her lower half naked.
Though I'm imagining a lewd situation...My body feels heavy, my dick won't stand.

「Yoshi-kun, give it to me.」

Megu took the phone from me.

「...Hello, it's Megumi.」 Sorry, Yoshi-kun feels very tired right now. Please let him take a rest for now」

No...If Megu says that, it'll be counterproductive...

「Eh...Why is he so tired?...Well you see」

Look...Megu is making a tired face.

「Last night...Yoshi-kun has sex ten...no, 12 times」

Megu...y-you said something unnecessary!

「The breakdown is...three times in me...Mana?...Oh, Maika. She had seven rounds. Then, Katsuko-san and Nagisa-san had one each...」

That's amazing...me
I might die already

「Eh...Ah, Katsuk-san and Nagisa-san came this morning. Nagisa-san had sex with Yoshi-kun once then came back immediately. Right now, we're going to school in Katsuko-san's car...yes. Err...Yoshi-kun, Misuzu-san wants to talk to you」

Megu...you're going to return the phone to me this late?
...Geez, it can't be helped.

「...Hello」

『Danna-sama! Doing it 12 times overnight, do you intend to die?!』

...Yeah
I think so too.
Quite a lot.

「Well, a lot of things happened...about Mana...Maika」
『...What do you mean?』
「I'll explain the details later...I promised Minaho-neesan that I have to do intravaginal ejaculation 10 times overnight or Mana would be beaten by a whip」
『But...it's 12 times right? It exceeded by two numbers!』
「That's...I already did it 2 times before the promise...!」
『...What about Katsuko-sama and Nagisa-sama coming over?』
「I've worn out after my seventh so the two came to help. Uhm...They used an energy medicine」
『Please call Misuzu at those times too!』

...Misuzu.

『I don't mind if it's midnight! I'll use any means to rush there!...Misuzu doesn't want to be left in the dark while Danna-sama is having troubles!』

...Seriously.

Every one of my 『women』...are kind to me.

...I'm really thankful.

『I will rub Danna-sama's stomach later. If you're tired, then we'll take a nap together...!』

「Yeah...Thanks, Misuzu」

『...Danna-sama』

I can hear water flowing on the other side of the call.

「Misuzu...Are you peeing?」

『Yes, Danna-sama...Misuzu is peeing while Danna-sama is listening...!』

Misuzu does her usual peeing in the morning.

『I want to live together with Danna-sama soon. Then, you can watch me pee everyday instead of just by call...』

When we live together, that's going to happen every day...?!
I'm in trouble.

『Danna-sama, you will be in school until lunch?...I will visit you there later』

Oh right.

「Misuzu...when you're going to come, call Katsuko-nee and she'll come to get you. A lot of things happened so it's dangerous going to the mansion...!」

『What happened?』

...I see.

Yesterday, most of the things happened after parting with Misuzu...

Misuzu doesn't know anything yet.

「...I'll explain the details later but, it has become serious」

I can't talk about the head of Shirasaka house's investigation, the American criminal chasing Nei-san and the hired syndicate.

「I'll call Misuzu-sama later. I'll tell you the details when I do...!」

Katsuko-nee speaks from the driver's seat.

「Misuzu...Katsuko-nee will call you later she said. Ask her about the details by then. We can't speak so much as we're moving」

『Got it...I will be waiting for Katsuko-sama's call』

For the time being...It seems that she understands.

『But, I will definitely visit by lunch...please wait for me』

「Yeah...let's eat lunch together」

...Speaking of which, we haven't eaten breakfast yet.

I'm hungry.

I'll buy bread in the store when I arrive at school.

I have to buy Megu and Mana's share too...

Katsuko-nee needs her share too...

『Yes...Then, later. By the way, Danna-sama...!』

「...What?」

『Please don't do anything unreasonable like doing it 12 times overnight』

「...Yeah」

『I will protest against Yuzuki-sama and Megumi-san later...I won't let that happen to my beloved Danna-sama!』

「No...This is what I agreed on. Minaho-neesan and Megu didn't do anything

bad」

『...But』

「It's fine...Sorry for overdoing it. I'm sorry for making Misuzu worry」

『...Danna-sama』

「I won't do that anymore」

『Yes...Misuzu doesn't mind doing only half of it when she stays overnight』

...Half?

『...Please love me six times overnight』

...err

「Sure...got it」

...I can't say anything else.

Even Misuzu is inexperienced...

She must be thinking that I have the composure to do six times.

Then...I have to do my best.

『I love you, Danna-sama...Then, later』

「I love you too...Misuzu」

...The call ends.

The drowsiness overcomes me in a dash.

「Sorry, Yoshi-kun...I've said something unnecessary」

Megu apologized to me.

「It's okay. It's better not to keep it a secret to Misuzu. If she discovers it later, she'll get angry...!」

I put down my phone and lied down.

I embraced Mana's body.

Mana is looking at me.

「...What's wrong Mana? It's cold?」

...Mana

「Why did you not say that it's my fault?」

She said with a small voice.

「I should be taking responsibility on everything Mana does. That's my duty as Mana's 『master』 Minaho-neesan ordered me so I can learn that...」

「...But」

「On the contrary...Mana would be punished for my sins. That's why I can't fail anymore」

I caress Mana's face.

「...Onii-chan」

「I won't pamper you anymore, I'll be harsh...that is because I don't want to see Mana be hit by a whip」

I embraced Mana's small and soft body.

「I'm going to sleep for a bit...good night, Mana」

Inside the shaking car...

I closed my eyes



「...We're here」

Hearing Katsuko-nee's voice, I opened my eyes.

The car has already arrived at the personnel parking lot.

We entered the secret shutter...

「Eh, why here?」

Megu doesn't know the secret passage.

「There's a secret underground passage from the school building」

I told Megu

「...But」

「Our school interior has been remodeled by Minaho-neesan in various ways I'm sure that Megu would be surprised」

The hidden cameras or the microphones.

「Okay, get off the car and bring what's only needed for today. Leave anything else in the car afterwards」

When Katsuko-nee said that...Megu sorts her luggage.

I take Mana and got off the car.

I stretched myself.

When I was about to wear my school uniform...Mana helped me.

「...Mana?」

「Mana is Onii-chan's 『slave』」

Mana said expressionlessly.

「This way」

Lead by Katsuko-nee...we walked in the underground.

Though it seems to be cold...we left Mana's blanket in the car.

Minaho-neesan won't agree with it if she doesn't go naked.

Before long...we reached the basement of the school building.

「Above this is the secret room」

We arrived in the monitor room under the principal's office.

Going up the stairs...Nei-san was there.

「Morning! Breakfast's ready!」

...Nei-san has her usual smile.

「I'm glad...you seem fine」

I feel relieved when I see that smile.

Nei-san is the one I'm most worried about.

「Un...I've been here since last night! The school has a much better defense system than the mansion!」

「Eh...didn't you say that you were in the mansion last night?」

Margo-san appears before me who's surprised.

「That was a lie. Nei-san told Yoshida-kun a lie on purpose」

...Lie

「The naked girl over there might try to escape from Yoshida-kun...and talk about that information」

Margo-san looks at Mana with cold eyes.

Really...Everyone's was cautious and don't trust Mana.

I look at Mana.

「Mana...greet everyone」

Mana has learned enough from Tamayo-san.

She kneels on the floor naked.

...Then.

「Nice to meet you...I'm Yoshida Manatsu Please call me Mana. I've become Onii-chan's 『slave』」

Margo-san speaks to Mana who fling herself to the ground.

「What, you can do it if you try...I thought that you're beyond help yesterday」

As expected...She was angry at Mana.

「Yo-chan, I heard it from Sensei but...Mana-chan's a 『rape slave』now?」

Nei-san...well you see.

「...Yes, that's right」

Mana answered before me.

「Mana-chan...raise your head」

Mana looks at Nei-san.

Nei-san smiles.

「If Mana-chan becomes a good girl...I think you'll be promoted from 『rape slave』to 『sex slave』 If you become even more of a good girl, then you'll become a normal 『slave』 Then you see...If Mana-chan becomes a really good girl, Yo-chan is a kind man so Mana-chan would become a 『little sister slave』」
「What's the difference?」

Mana asks.

Yeah...I don't get it too.

「...What does Mana-chan think?」

Nei-san answered.

「Yo-chan won't change forever. Even now, Yo-chan is abysmal kind to Mana-chan...He'll treasure Mana-chan from now till forever」

I'm kind to Mana?
I raped her and slapped her ass...
Put a collar on her neck and pulled her around naked...

「That's why...What's left is for Mana-chan to accept Yo-chan. If you accept Yo-chan...Mana-chan will become happy!」

Nei-san smile...and Mana looks up at Nei-san's face expressionlessly.

「...Rather than that, you guys are hungry aren't you? There's Onigiri and miso soup ready, let's eat」

Nei-san said.

「Err...What time is it right now?」

I feel uneasy about the time.
We're already at school.

「...It's 8:05」

Minaho-neesan comes down from the stairs.
Our school starts at 8:30...we still have time.

「Ah...Mana, greetings」

Mana kneels in front of Minaho-neesan...

「I don't need it...I heard her greeting on Nei and Margo」

Minaho-neesan smiles.

「Rather than that...You did well, Yoshida-kun. You fulfilled your promise with me」

「...It's thanks to Megu, Katsuko-nee and Nagisa-san's help」

Yeah...I think it's impossible for me to finish it without everyone's help.

「I feel regrettable that I can't whip mana-san though」

Minaho-neesan takes out a whip from the table.

「Mana-san...take a look. This is my whip」

A whip covered in fat leather shines black.
Minaho-neesan swing it with her full strength...!

A sound cutting air, then...a sharp slapping sound on the table!

If you were hit by that...your skin would certainly come off.

「If ever you betray us...I'll hit you with this. Okay?」

Minaho-neesan told Mana.

「Sensei...instead of that...food, food, foood~!」

Nei-san's wearing an apron on top of her uniform, she brings a dish filled with Onigiri.

Margo-san brought the miso soup pot.

「Hey hey, Yo-chan and Megu-chan should eat!」

To be honest...I'm thankful.

「Itadakimasu」

Then, when I took one...

I look at Mana and thought for a moment.

「...Yo-chan...here you go, a plate. This line is salmon, this line is katsuobushi, and this one has a salmon roe」

Nei-san said then winked at me.

I put all kinds on the plate...I wonder if three of them would suffice?

Then, I poured miso soup into the bowl...and carried it to Mana.

「...Eat. That's an order」

Mana looks at me.

「Eat, Mana...it's an order」

Mana looks at her hand.

Her hands were stained when she kneeled on the ground.

「Yoshi-kun, here, wet towel」

Megu handed me a wet towel.

I...

I wiped Mana's hand with the wet towel.

「...Onii-chan」

Mana muttered.

「It's okay now?...eat」

「...Yes」

Mana took one Onigiri on her mouth.

「...Are three enough? Or want me to bring you more?」

「...It's okay」

Mana answers.

「Here, I've brought Yoshi-kun's share」

Megu has brought a plate filled with Onigiri.

「Thanks」

I sit next to Mana and began to eat.

...Delicious.

「Here, have some miso soup!」

Nei-san handed me a bowl...

I drink a mouthful.

The warm miso soup soaks in my tired body.

「Nei made this Miso soup...and Maru-chan made this Onigiri」

Nei-san said.

「I can do at least gripping the rice...but to be honest, I don't know how to season the miso soup」

Margo-san said while eating Onigiri.

「Speaking of which...earlier, you said about Nei-san telling a lie on our call last night」

I asked Margo-san.

「Could it be that my talk with Margo-san too?」

「Yeah...It's truth with lies. It's true that there's six houses around the mansion, but it was a lie that all of them are connected to an escape passage. It's true that I'm registered to be living on one of the houses there...but the western

painter Hama-san who's living on the back of the house isn't true. Actually, Isasaka-sensei, a novelist lives there」

「...That's also a lie」

Margo-san grins.

「Actually, it was a real estate agent, Hanasawa-san? Or a salary man named Anago-san...Or it might be Nakajima-kun who always come to invite to play baseball...!」

「Look...It's all lies」

Geez, I can't do anything but smile wryly.

「It just means that I can't tell you right now...!」

...I see.

Mana isn't the only one who must not know about the truth.

Mana's grandfather...Until the negotiation with Ichikawa old man ends, we don't know what will happen.

I shouldn't learn information unneeded as much as possible.

Even Megu and I are possible to get caught by the enemy and interrogated.

「It's not I'm saying a suitable lie. People change the content of what they speak even by a bit. When you do, you can know where you heard it from」

Margo-san said.

I see...That's how it is.

Margo-san is coping practically and thoroughly...

「Megumi-chan...stay like that」

Katsuko-nee brought a spray, hair dryer and brush without taking even a bite.

「I'll style your hair right now...!」

「Ah, I'll do it myself...please eat!」

「I can do it after you go to your classrooms...」

Saying that, Katsuko-nee wets Megu's hair with a sprayer...!

「I'll make you cute that everyone in your class would get surprised!」

Katsuko-nee brushes Megu's hair...!

「If you want...I can even give you a thin make up!」

Nei-san took out a pouch with her cosmetics.

「No...make up is a bit」

「Just let me...I'll give you a natural make up that they won't be able to tell that you did make-up. In the first place, they will never think that the honor student Megu-chan doing make up so it's fine」

Certainly...

Everyone in the class thinks that Megu is a serious girl.

「But...uhm, I...!」

「Just eat the Onigiri and let me do it!」

「You better fix her eyebrows while you're at it」

「Katsun, I agree with that! Err...」

「...U-Uhm」

「It's fine, it's fine!」

「That's right, leave this to Katsun and I!」

...Fifteen minutes alter.

An unexpected beauty was born!

「...I know that Megumi-chan has a good foundation」

「...Un...if you change her hairstyle and give her a bit of make-up, I'm sure that she'll become cute!」

The two who played with Megu are the ones most surprised.

「Megumi-chan...you're very beautiful...!」

Margo-san is in wonder.

...Un.

I've never imagined that she'll become this much of a beauty...

「...Yoshi-kun, how is it?」

Megu haven't looked in the mirror yet.

「You're amazingly cute...!」

Megu smiles at me.「」

「...I'm glad. Yoshi-kun praised me!」

Katsuko-nee brought a hand mirror.

「Here you go Megumi-chan」

Megu looks in the mirror...

「...This is me/」

Megu is surprised at her own transformation.

「Megumi...looks just like Keiko...」

Minaho-nesan told Megu.

「Because of Yukino-san's obstruction...and being a child of a reserve house, Yamamine, your beauty was concealed...!」

...That's right.

The real Megu is this beautiful.

「Yo-chan, this is a big trouble」

Nei-san told me.

「Eh, why?」

Nei-san looks amazed.

「Yo-chan...you don't get it? Yo-chan has to behave as Megu-chan's 『fiance』 from now on. Inside this school...!」

...Ah.

The girls in track and field has heard the declaration of our relationship.

Rather than that...They know that I went to Yamamine house...!

That talk...

Should normally spread to the class already.

Well...our class have a girl from track and field.

...Awawawa 「...Be prepared, Yoshida-kun!」

Minaho-neesan smiled at me...

◇ School Arc III

130. We're engaged!

「Then, we'll be taking care of your 『slave』」

I handed the wristband attached to Mana's collar to Margo-san.

「...I'll tie the chain here」

There's an iron loop attached to the pillar of the wall of the room...
Margo-san locks the wristband there.

Mana can't reach it with her height.

Having an iron ring on that kind of place...surely...

Someone must've been restricted in this room before...

「I'll take care of Mana-chan so don't worry!」

Nei-san said.

「...But, Nei-san what about the medical examination?」

Nei-san's a student of our school right?

「I'll pass! I'll pretend I'm not in school for today!」

Nei-san said laughingly.

...Right.

There's the matter about Cesario Viola too...

We must not recklessly increase Nei-san's eyewitnesses.

「...U-Uhm!」

I got surprised at Megu who speaks out from my back.

「Isn't this displaying the inside of the school?!」

...I see

Megu doesn't know Minaho-neesan's monitoring system.

「Our school has been long used to look for prostitutes of 『Kuromori』...!」

Minaho-neesan explains to Megu.

「There are surveillance cameras and microphones hidden everywhere in the school. First...we investigate whether the marked girl has a suitable character to be a prostitute. Then, her family and friends... After the preliminary inspection, we go to the target...」

Minaho-neesan pushes a switch on the control panel.

The camera switches from one to another...

Classroom, corridor, stairs, shoe cabinet...even girl's bathroom.

Outside the school building as well...the grounds, backyard, rooftop, the off-limits old school building too.

「...Is that so?」

Megu looks at the screen with a surprised face.

「When the school has been rebuilt five years ago, I prepared a thorough monitoring system. There's also a defense system too」

Minaho-neesan smiles.

「I knew that this will become my base when I execute my 『revenge』to Shirasaka Sousuke...Shirasaka knows the structure of the mansion. Also, the mansion's foundation is quite old so I can't make absurd renovations」

This school building was made for that reason since the start.

If it's the school...even if the crime syndicate Shirasaka has employed can be banned from entering...At worst, we can call the police.

Nei-san and the others knows that so they took refugee here last night.

A number of defense systems are hidden around this room.

「Now then...It's about time I show up in the faculty's office. I'm still a teacher」

Minaho-neesan goes up the stairs.

「Let's shift the time for a bit...Yoshida-kun and Megumi, go up two minutes after me. We don't want to be seen coming out of the room together」

「...Yes」

I answered.

「...Then, see you at the classroom」

Minaho-neesan goes up the stairs laughing.

「There's a small lamp on the door at the exit of the upper room. If that lamp turns green, you can go outside. That's the sign that there's no one in the corridor. The door is an auto-lock so you can leave it...」

Margo-san told us.

「When you're coming in, knock on the door three times...we'll check with the security camera and we'll unlock it when the coast is clear」

This『Monitoring room』can do anything...

「...You didn't forget anything?」

Katsuko-nee asked us.

...Err

Today's just 『Medical checkup』and 『Fire drill』...

I'm wearing a new underwear costing 840 yen...

「Do you have a handkerchief and pocket tissue?」

...Eh?

「...I don't」

「I thought so...here」

Katsuko-nee handed me a white handkerchief and tissue.

「Thank you, Katsuko-nee」

「What about Megumi-chan?」

「I have it...Rather than that, Yoshi-kun!」

Megumi took out the green collar Tamayo-san handed her.

「That's...Megu?」

「Minaho-san told you about it yesterday right? About the choker allowed by the school regulations...!」

...Well, that's true, but.

「Right...I think it would be safer to have Megumi-chan wear that」

...Katsuko-nee?

「The current principal and the teachers from the old days are people who knows the relation of this school to 『Kuromori』 The collar is a proof of a student that they are women of 『Kuromori』...Those teachers would acknowledge Megumi-chan's superiority. 」

...I see

When Minaho-neesan's grandfather has the power of 『Kuromori』he has a lot of prostitutes attending this school.[

The『collar』...distinguishes the general student from women of『Kuromori』

「Even the teachers who don't know 『Kuromori』were strictly ordered not to do anything with the women with collars. They all know that it's a special student...so don't worry」

「But...won't the teachers misunderstand that Megu is a prostitute?」

That's my worry.

「Make them think like that. The teachers in our school knows that they can't buy a 『Kuromori』prostitute with their wage...and if ever they make a hand on them, Ojou-sama would be demanding a very expensive compensation.

「...Money or life」

...The teachers who knows 『Kuromori』also knows the horrors of it 「Also...the girls who wear collars aren't necessarily a prostitute. All the girls involved with 『Kuromori』are wearing a collar. I use to wear it in the past too」

Margo-san is a graduate of this school.

「But...Nei-san doesn't have a collar?」

Margo-san answered my question.

「Nei also did before. But, Nei is a popular person in the school even if she doesn't wear a collar now...the teachers and the students know that Nei is an untouchable existence」

「Ahahah...remember that I set the Kendo grounds on fire. Since then, I dyed my hair blonde and wore blue contacts. When I walk in the corridor, everyone avoids me...There's no need for me to wear a collar this late...!」

About Nei-san's incident...

I still haven't heard anything about it.

Why did Nei-san set it on fire?...Why did she dye her black hair?

「There's another girl who removed it before running on the election. It would be troublesome if the students mimic her and turned the collar into a fashion」

Margo-san is talking about Iwakura-san.

「Megumi-chan...keep in mind that teachers will have a strange reaction when they see your collar. Those teachers are people related to 『Kuromori』...」

「When the revenge on Shirasaka ends...all of them will be dealt with」

Margo-san and Katsuko-nee said...

Minaho-neesan is going to disband 『Kuromori』

She's prepared to exile the people who knows the dark past of this school.

「...Yoshi-kun, please」

I put the collar on Megu.

「Megumi-chan will be the last woman to wear a collar」

「...You're right」

The two ladies look at Megu's green collar.

「...Good. It's about time we go. Anything we forgot? None」

When I tell Megu that...Megu holds her hand out.

「...Let's hold hands」

Oh...I forgot the most important one.

「...Sure」

I hold Megu's hands.

Megu's hand feels cold...she's nervous?

「Well then...We'll be going」

Megu salutes everyone.「」

「...I'm going」

「Sure...take care」

Katsuko-nee answered as their representative.

「...I'll leave Mana in your care」

「It's okay to treat her like a『slave』?」

Margo-san looks at me.

「Yes...Please be strict on her. But, if she's a good girl, then be kind with her.」

「Un...got it. You okay with it too, Nei?」

「Okay~」

I look at Mana.

「Then, I'll be gone for a bit...behave yourself, Mana」

The naked Mana tied to a chain looks at me with a complicated expression...



「Eh...This is?」

Going up the stairs...we open the hidden door leading to the room 「That's right...it's the principal's office. It's connected to the room below」

「...Amazing!」

Megu's surprised.

Well of course.

The hidden garage from the staff parking lot, to the basement passage, to the monitor room...and to the principal's office.

You won't normally think that this school has such secrets.

On top of the door leading to the corridor...is the lamp Margo-san explained a while ago turning on.

It's green light now.

There's no one outside the corridor...

「Let's go, Megu」

「...Un」

I opened the door and go outside.

When I closed the door...it was automatically locked.

High school corridor...

A familiar daily scenery.

I finally came back from the unusual world of yesterday.

「...Yoshi-kun.」

Megu looks at me in worry.

We returned to our everyday life but...

Megu and I are different from yesterday already.

I feel a bit nervous meeting our classmates.

「...It's okay Don't worry」

I kissed Megu...

Megu smiled.

「There's nothing to worry about...we're together!」

We walk in the corridor holding hands.

Coming out of the principal's office block without pedestrian...the third year classrooms are lined up.

...There's a lot of students.

I look at the classroom's clock.

The time is 8:17

It's 13 minutes more before time.

「...Good morning!」

Megu suddenly cried out!

...Uwawawa!

It was the captain of track and field...Takeshiba.

「G-Good morning!」

I also greeted her in panic.

「What's wrong?...Did you came her just to report to me?」

Captain Takeshiba seems to have misunderstood that we, first years have come to the third year corridor just to report to her.

The report...As expected, it's about yesterday.

「Y-Yes...I thought that I have to report to Captain first!」

The quick witted Megu immediately played along with Captain immediately.

...Err.

Takeshiba-senpai knows that I came to meet Megu's parents...

「Then...What happened? How were Yamamine's parents?」

Captain Takeshiba asked curiously.

As expected...Captain is a girl too.

「yes...We're engaged!」

Megu declared boldly.

「...E-Engaged?」

As expected, even Captain got surprised by it.

「Yes...Yoshi-kun has talked to my parents about wanting to marry me...then, he received the blessing of my parents!」

Megu reports while blushing.

Certainly...if you summarize what happened in the Yamamine house, you can say it that way...

「I-I see, that's great!」

Captain seems completely puzzled.

「T-The ceremony will be after the graduation. Please attend, captain!」

「G-Got it, Yamamine...!」

But...The two of them are too loud.

The third years have gathered in no time.

「...What what? Engaged?」

「Look, it's them...the ones in the track and field yesterday」

「Oh...The first years who announced their relationship?」

「Uwa, the girl's cute!」

「Well, she's engaged...!」

As expected...the event yesterday spread in the school already.

「...Eh, Yamamine-chan. Are you really engaged?」

A senpai in glasses shows up from behind Captain Takeshiba, she looks familiar.

Perhaps, another third year from the track and field.

「Yes, Takabayashi-senpai, we're engaged! Yoshi-kun also bought me a ring!!!」

Megu who's tension has risen to the top as she's surrounded by the third years, shows her ring to the seniors.

Ooooooh! the shouts of joy can be heard from the third years.

「...Amazing, they're really engaged!」

「This guy seems to have gone to the girl's house and greeted her parents...!」

「Eh...He seriously got the parent's blessing?」

「It's the so called lovers assuming marriage?」

「Like I said...They're saying that they're『engaged』!」

「...Isn't that amazing!」

「...Isn't that bad?」

「Or rather, that's so cute!」

The third years makes a racket.

Aren't the people increasing steadily?

There's more than thirty people here...all are women seniors.

「I get that you're engaged but...isn't it bad to wear a ring in the school?」

The glasses Takabayashi-senpai told Megu.

「That's an engagement ring?」

「Uwaa! I'm jelly!」

「I also want a ring from my boyfriend!」

「Un...I don't want to get engaged but I want just a ring!」

The female seniors are talking by themselves.

「...It's fine if it's just an engagement ring! It's written in the school rules!」

Megu shouted!

She's almost desperate!

「...Eh? Let's see?」

Some of the schoolgirls opened their handbook.

「...Ah, it's there. It's written in small letters!」

「True!...It says that you can wear engagement rings!」

「Eh...Why is that in the school rules?」

「Well, it must've happened before...engaged students.」

「Haa...I see」

The third year ladies were all impressed.

Captain Takeshiba talked to us.

「...I understand that you two were serious. You processed it logically and even got the permission to be engaged from the parents. I will support you two. Just tell me if someone complains about you guys and I will rush and punish them!」

Captain Takeshiba smiles.

She's truly a person with a motto 『Track and field is martial arts』

「...Thank you very much, Captain!」

Megu bows her head.

「If the school regulations allow it then I'll allow your engagement ring. But, remove that during club activities...it would be a problem if you lose it」

「...Yes」

「Keep it in your purse along with your valuables...I'll do the talking to our colleagues」

「...Thank you very much」

Megu's the only one doing the talking.

I'm not saying anything...

「U-Uhm...T-Thank you...!」

Gu, gudagudadaaa...!

I can't think of words to say...!

「He's blushing!」

「So cute!」

Being laughed by female seniors...is quite embarrassing.

「Was it Yoshida-kun?...I'll entrust you Yamamine!」

「Y-Yes!」

I bowed my head to Captain Takeshiba...



「...Excuse me...excuse me...!」

「...Sorry...sorry...!」

Megu and I escape from the third years' encirclement while holding hands...

「Aaahn! I was so nervous! It was so embarrassing!」

When we were alone...Megu talked to me.

「Same...I don't even know what I should say」

「Sorry that I had to do all the talking...」

「It's fine...I wasn't able to say anything but 『Thank you』...」

I really fell into panic.

What will happen if we reached our class.

There's a track and field girl from our class...

It would be much more of a fuss than those third years...

「Yoshi-kun...Are you anxious?」

Megu looks at my face and asks.

「I'm fine...we have to overcome this with the two of us...!」

「...Yoshi-kun」

Megu grips my hand.

The two of us head to the classroom as one.

『Year 1 Class 2』...our classroom.

「...Let's go, Megu」

「Un...Yoshi-kun」

We open the room after two counts...!

Almost 80 percent of the students are gathered in the classroom.

...Yukino's not here.

...Endou too.

The first year baseball club members are preparing for today's practice game today so they'll arrive at the classroom on the last minute.

I wonder what happened to Yukino...

「...Yoshi-kun」

Megu looks at me.

...Err

Should I announce it before someone else says something...?

That means...as expected, it's not a『declaration of relationship』but
『announcement of engagement』

How should I talk about it...

I hesitated for a moment

...Then!

「...Huuuh?! What's wrong, Yamamine-san?!」

Suddenly...one of the students call out to Megu.

「Really?...Yamamine-san has become beautiful!」

The eyes of the class has concentrated on Megu in no time.

「Did you change your hairstyle?...No, it's not on that level! Somehow, she
feels fundamentally beautiful...?!」

The men also makes a noise.

...Eh

Oh...right!

Captain Takeshiba saw Megu's look after she had her hair cut by Yuuka-san
yesterday so she's not so surprised.

Most of the third years earlier don't know the previous Megu...

But...our class.

This is their first time seeing Megu become this beautiful...!

「Or rather...Why is Yamamine-san holding Yoshida-kun's hand?」

The gaze that were surprised at Megu's transformation...moved to Megu's
hand when they heard that.

Aeeeeee...eeeerr

...How should I explain this?

「Well you see...Megumi and Yoshida-kun were going out since yesterday!」

Before we were able to say anything...those words suddenly came out.

This voice...as expected.

Ogino-san from the track and field...!

「Eeeeeeeeeeeee!!!」

The shock runs in the classroom...!

「And to top that...Megumi was the one who confessed!」

Ah...That was what Megu reported to the track and field club...
It was turned to that setting...!

「W-w-w-w-why?!」

One of the boys raised a loud voice!

「Yamamine-san...what's good about Yoshida-kun...?!」

...Un

I think so too.

Megu's gathering all the gazes...

Everyone's waiting for Megu's answer...

For some reason, no one's looking at me.

...Megu 「Err...Yoshi-kun is...」

One of the boys whispered while Megu is in the middle of talking.

「...Yoshi-kun?」

「...Yoshi-kun?」

「Well, it's Yoshida」

「You don't say!」

「...That's right, the problem is why Yamamine-chan calling Yoshida 『Yoshi-kun』!」

「...Seriously」

One of the boys spoke.

「Yamamine-chan and Yoshida are going out」

The boys took 1500 damage!!

「...As expected, is that so?」

「...Of course, normally」

「...But, it's Yoshida」

「...Yeah, it's Yoshida」

「You won't chose him normally do you?」

「...No way, normally」

「...Could it be that Yoshida-kun is tricking her?」

「Can you be tricked by Yoshida, normally?」

「That's surprising from a serious type of girl like Yamamine-chan...」

「What can you say about that! Yamamine-saaan?!?!」

Megu seems to be offended by the selfish words of the men.
She shouted in a clear voice!

「Yoshi-kun is a decent, sincere, and a kind person!...Also, he's cute...!」

Megu...you're saying that in this case?

「...Cute?」

「...Yoshida?」

「No...It must be cute in Yamamine-chan's eyes」

「You must be blind?」

「...They say that love is blind」

「Or rather, in the first place, why is Yamamine-san Yoshida's lover?! Isn't that strange! That's definitely strange!」

Yup...I can understand your feelings very well.
Even I am thinking that this must be a dream!

「It's definitely not strange!」

Megu is angry at the boy's words!
...Seriously.

「I love Yoshi-kun! I've decided to marry Yoshi-kun!」

A ripple spreads in the classroom.¹

「...Y-Yamamine-san, marriage?」

「...Yesterday, Yoshida-kun came to greet Megumi's parents, right?」

Ogino-san asked megu.

「Yes...Yoshi-kun told my mother and father『Please give me your daughter』!」

Megu's head up doesn't stop...!

「Yoshida...you did that?!」

「...T-Then, what did Megumi's parents say?」

Megu answers the men's question.

「They gave him their blessings!」

「...B-Blessed?」

Now that it comes to this...it can't be helped.

I take Megu's hand wearing the engagement ring and showed it to everyone in the class.

「...This is the engagement ring」

After my mutter...Megu spoke in a loud voice.

「We're engaged!」

The year 1 class 2 fell into an unexpected panic!!!

131. Back figure...

...Why did this happen?!

I'm sitting on my seat as usual

But, Megu is standing next to me...

She's holding my hand tight...

And our classmates surround us...

Megu is asked one after another.

Of course...it's not just girls who are surrounding us.

It's just those who are close to Megu...But still, they're more than ten people.

The other girls...aren't in good terms with Megu, they're mostly the girls close to delinquency gathered in a group...but still, they're sending glances at us.

As expected, women are interested in love affair...

The boy students are symmetrical...

They gathered at the back of the classroom and talked whisperingly.

They're looking this way from time to time...

I'm interested in what they're talking about...well, it's not something decent at all.

But still...the delinquents of the class don't come to the school until the very last minute so it helps us.

If they were here, I don't know what to say facing them.

I don't mind being being talked bad, but...

If they ever make a fool or insult Megu, I won't be able to hold back.

If ever someone does that...I'll definitely beat him up.

「...Then then? Since when you were going out?」

「Rather than that...have you two dated already? Of course, you kissed too?」

Even if it's a rude and immoral question, Megu answer each of them with a kind smile.

...Why am I not talking?

There were questions thrown to me, but...

Megu answers before I can reply.

...Somehow, it feels strange.

The hand holding me strongly is cold.

Megu must be nervous.

She's hiding the tension of her mind with a smile...

Only I who's holding her hand notices it.

「Hey...to be serious, who was the one who confessed?」

One of Megu's friends asked.

「You see, it was Megumi!」

Ogino who's another member of track and field answered with a smirk.

「I heard it from Yamamine-chan and Yoshida-kun already!」

...Err

Why is everyone so interested?

To be honest...it doesn't matter either way.

It's got nothing to do with people other than Megu and I...!

「...I'm the one who did confess to Yoshi-kun」

Megu answers bashfully.

「I liked him since we entered high school...I didn't want Yoshi-kun to be stolen by someone else...!」

「No, he won't...He's Yoshida-kun」

The girls burst out laughing...!

Well...of course.

「But...I absolutely wanted to go out with Yoshi-kun. So I was the one who confessed to him...」

Megu's story is pure bullshit.

But...Megu has already told a plot on the girls at the track and field.

She can't say 『Yesterday's talk was a mistake』this late

I just nod at Megu's talk in silence...

When if I say something strange, things would crumble down...

That's why I just try to be silent as much as possible...

In the first place, I don't know the story Megu talked about...

「But you see...going out, then suddenly introducing to the parents, and

getting engaged...normally」

「Isn't that seriousness very Yamamine-chan like?!」

「But...if you advertise it that greatly, they can't break up that easily!」

Megu objects to the schoolgirl's word.

「We never will! I seriously want to marry Yoshi-kun!」

Megu's eyes were serious.

「That's what Yamamine-chan said, what about Yoshida-kun?」

The glasses girl looks at me grinning

...I

「...I will marry her...we'll become happy...!」

That's not a wish.

...It's determination.

「Eeh?! It's not make Megumi happy...!!」

Ogino-san speaks Japanese grammar.

「Yeah...Yoshi-kun scolded me about that yesterday」

Megu smiled at her friends.

「...Scolded?」

The schoolgirls look at me.

What's your qualification to scold Megu?...Their eyes say.

Well, I agree.

「You see...I thought that I wanted to make Yoshi-kun happy one-sidedly. Then, Yoshi-kun said. 『It's no good to make just the partner happy Let's think about both of us being happy』...!」

Ogino-san asks me.

「...Yoshida-kun, did you really say that?」

...Err

I feel like I certainly said something like what Megu summarized just now...
Inside the car yesterday...

「...I did」

The girls shouted 「wow!」

「That's kind of surprising...」

「...Un, it's not a remark that matches Yoshida-kun character」

No...Certainly, I know that it's not something a useless man like me would say.
...But,. I 「Err...how should I say it...」

Ogino-san looks at me with a face that's not yet convinced.

「Yesterday, Megumi was doing all the talking, so I don't get the concrete reason but, I understood that Megumi is deeply in love with Yoshida-kun. I still seriously don't know which part is good about him but...for the time being, the person herself said that she liked him since the entrance ceremony...」

Yes, it is as Ogino-san says...
Even I don't know what's good about myself.
...Seriously.

「But you see...I don't get what made Yoshida-kun like Megumi, right?...Well, look」

「...Yeah, you're right」

The schoolgirls look at me in doubt.

「...Yoshida-kun has someone else he likes, right?」

...Ah.
Everyone really knows

「That person's not yet here so I'm going to be frank...could it be that you just moved on because Megumi confessed to you?」

...Well

「Un...Could Yoshida-kun tell us honestly what he likes about Yamamine-chan?」

「Right...You would still think about if Yoshida-kun really likes Yamamine-chan...!」

「If it was just an 『engagement』because of a half-hearted feeling...I feel sorry for Megumi...!」

「...Un, you're right」

「...Right」

The schoolgirl's eyes approached me...!

No...It's not just them.

The schoolgirls pretending to be unconcerned about us...and the boys from the back are waiting for my response with big ears...!

...Err

I...!

When did I get attracted to Megu...?!

The first time I was conscious of Megu was...!

「...Megu's back is beautiful...!」

How many days was that since then?

Megu ran and picked up a first aid kit for my sake...!

...At that time.

「...Megu's back when she's running」

「...Back?」

Ogino-san has a suspicious face...

The other schoolgirls too...

Right...that wasn't enough.

「Her straight backbone...long and beautiful legs...」

Megu's form that time is clearly etched in my memory...

「...Legs? What the hell, in the end, you're just into Megumi's body?」

Ogino-san interprets it badly...

「No, I definitely think that Megu's legs are thin, long, and beautiful, but... that's not it...that's not how it is...」

...Err.

How should I answer this?

「...Megu's back is always beautiful. Her foot touches the ground properly, standing up straight...she's not leaning on someone. She's always standing firmly with her own power...!」

The girls became speechless from my answer.

...Eeei!

I just tell everything that comes to my mind!

「...Megu is always kind to others and yet strict with herself. She's always doing her very best with her own power without relying on anyone else at any time. Such resolute heart, have a very clear back figure showing up...I liked that. Like, or should I say that I respect Megu...!」

I look up at Megu.

Megu has been next to me all this time.

I'm sitting on my chair and she's standing.

We're still holding hands, but...

Megu never leans against me.

She doesn't do bad manners like sitting on my desk.

She stands with her own feet.

Even when she's next to me, she doesn't forget the spirit of self-reliance...

Megu is that kind of girl.

「Respect?...Yoshida-kun, you're respecting your own girlfriend?

One of the girls asked me in wonder.

「...Un. I do respect her...I think that she's really a wonderful girl. ...That's why, I think of Megu dearly...!」

「...Yoshi-kun, I'm the same...!」

Megu clenches my hand tightly.

I grasped it in return...

「I respect Yoshi-kun too. Yoshi-kun never lies to me, he always looks me in the eye, and he listens to my talk seriously. I trust Yoshi-kun...that's why I love him...!」

Megu and I look at each other.

「...I want to marry Yoshi-kun」

「Un...I will marry you, Megu」

Looking at us, the girls...

「...You two really, really got 『engaged』」

「...They're not just getting carried by the mood or joking」

「...I thought that Yamamine-chan was distracted by the spring season」

「...I thought that Yoshida-kun is a bad guy toying with Yamamine-san's heart」

「I'm the opposite...I thought that Yamamine-san pushed Yoshida-kun and he submitted」

「They're seriously rabu-rabu.¹」

These girls say what they want.

「...This is what I heard from Megumi's talk yesterday」

Ogino-san said.

「Megumi's an adopted daughter」

「...Adopted daughter?」

Megumi smiled to her friends.

「That's right, my real mother is already dead. Then, I was taken over by Yamamine house」

Megu answered calmly.

Megu's hand is really cold.

She's slightly trembling.

I squeeze her hand...

「Then...Yoshida-kun's parents were divorced, was it/」

「Ah...yeah. That's right」

...Just like Megu.

I talked calmly.

My voice is a bit hoarse though...

「That's why...you want to marry Megumi and make a home soon. I heard you talking about it to Captain Takeshiba...!」

The schoolgirls turned speechless from what Ogino-san said.

「That's right...I want to be a Mama soon. I want to give birth to my beloved's child...and have a happy family」

That's what Megu really think.

「I want to be 『family』 with Yoshi-kun」

...Megu.

「...We're already family」

「Un...you're right」

The two of us hold hands.

We already have a bond.

A strong thought no one can cut.

「So that's why...Yamamine-san and Yoshida-kun are 『engaged』」

「Yoshida-kun thought about Megumi's feelings...!」

Ogino-said that, but...

「Megu and I have the same feelings. We want to be happy together.

Becoming a 『Family』...!」

I think it's a good opportunity.

I was able to arrange my feelings inside my head.

Megu and I...No, it's not just Megu.

Katsuko-nee, Nagisa-san, Misuzu...My 『women』

Also, Minaho-neesan, Margo-san, and Nei-san...

Including Mana who just became a 『slave』...

I want to be 『family』with everyone.

We gather together because we want to be 『family』

Love.

I...I love my 『family』from the bottom of my heart...

「Sorry...I misunderstood Yoshida-kun」

「Yeah...I thought that you're just a dumb person who's always absentminded」

...Err

They thought of me like that?

I feel quite down.

「...But」

「Un...Somehow, he's a person with firm opinion」

「Well, he's someone who was picked by the serious Yamamine-san, he's surely that kind of person...」

...Even if you say it like that.
I don't know how to react.

「That's right. Yoshi-kun came into my house yesterday...and properly greeted my parents. Holding his hands on the tatami mat, he said 『Please give me your daughter』...!」

Megu's shedding tears.

「...Yoshida-kun, you really said that?」

...Well

「Yes...I did」

I was so courageous that time...
Even I am surprised...

「Did you really swear to marry Megumi in front of her parents?」

...I

「Yeah...I already prepared myself. I'm prepared. I've understood my own fate...I'll take responsibility for Megu's life. I want to be together with Megu forever...! No, it's not just Megu. I want to cherish my own 『family』 I want to be with them forever. I'll do anything to protect my 『family』!」

That's right...therefore, I.

「...Yoshi-kun, thank you」

Megu's tears fell on my desk.
I stand up...
...and rubbed Megu's back...

「Megu...It'll be fine. I'll always be with Megu!」

「...Yoshi-kun!!!」

Megu embraces me!
I embraced Megu tightly!
For some reason, the classroom claps their hand and shouts 『Oooh!』
...At that time.

「...Good morning」

One girl entered the classroom...
...She is
...Shirasaka Yukino...!

「...What's with this commotion?」
「Ah, Shirasaka-san...actually!」

When one of the girl talks to Yukino...
Megu kisses me...!

「...Ooooooh!」
「...Horay!」
「...They kissed!」
「E-Even though he's just Yoshida...!」
「That Yamamine-san is!」
「Megumi...dammit!」

Yukino is looking at us.
Yukino's face looks surprised.
Her eyes looks like she can't believe it...
A shuddered look...
Yukino is looking...
At my figure embracing and kissing Megu...



Afterwards...Megu was at my seat.,
I talk to the women while holding her hand.
The topic about Megu is already over...
The talk is now about the 『Medical examination』
But still, Megu is still holding my hand tight...
So I won't try to part from her side.

「You see, my underwear for the 『Medical exam』for today was bought by Yoshi-kun yesterday!」

Megu said in a slightly loud voice.

「Eh, you two purchased it?」
「That's right. We went to a date...right, Yoshi-kun?!」

「...Yeah」

「I chose Yoshi-kun's underwear...and Yoshi-kun chose my underwear!」

「Uwawawa...That's hot!」

「Or rather...did you really buy one? It's not a bargain one right?!」

「We bought a good one!」

「Eh, show me show me!」

「I'll show it later...in the 『medical examination』」

「I see」

The girls laugh.

...I

I thought of taking a look at Yukino's state...

I can't see it from my seat as she's shadowed by Megu's body.

When I thought of that...

I got surprised.

Why is Megu in my seat since earlier...

Why is she standing next to me...

Megu positioned to block Yukino from me since the start.

In short, between my seat and Yukino's seat...

She has always been conscious of Yukino all this time...!

「Hey, Megumi, how long are you going to hold Yoshida-kun's hand?」

Ogino-san asks Megu.

「That's right. We told you earlier this but, no one's going to take Yoshida-kun away from Yamamine-chan...!」

The girls speak in a playful manner.

「I know that but...I don't want to let go of Yoshi-kun's hand...!」

...Megu

Megu is worried about Yukino.

No...to be exact, about Yukino capturing my heart...

「Even if you say that...you can't hold hands during classes」

「It would've been nice if Yamamine-san's seat is next to Yoshida-kun」

「Well, it would be troublesome for everyone around...they'd be flirting while in classes」

「...You're right」

The girls raised a laugh, then...

...The first bell rings.

The delinquents came from outside the corridor noisily.

「...Ou!」

Then...Endou.

The baseball club were doing arrangements in preparation for the 『practice game』until the last minute.

But...Endou.

Even if it's your 『Practice game today』...Why are you coming in the classroom in your uniform?

「Everyone should come and watch today's game! Everyone should be at the baseball grounds by 12:30!」

Endou goes up the platform and tells everyone in the class in a loud voice...
Oh...the uniform is used to appeal that he's participating.

I see, it's not practice wear but a uniform with a number used for the games.

「Watch. I got the ace-number from the director!」

...Err

Does the number 『18』 have a meaning in high school baseball?

Or rather...

Endou...there's a big bandage in the middle of your face.

...Are you okay?

Your nose is completely hidden.

You're trying to show off but can you breath with your nose properly?

...Margo-san's punch had some awesome power in it...

Endou was beaten up by Margo-san in front of the restroom at the park the night before yesterday.

「Anyway, I will be showing up in the game. The whole class should come and cheer. Got it?...That's all!」

What 『That's all』!

Why is he all commanding.

Having said what he want to say, Endou takes his seat.
Somehow...his way of walking is strange...
Could it be that his waist and legs hurt too?...!
Margo-san bullies her opponent thoroughly.
There must be some quite damage remaining...
Can he play a game with such a condition?
Just how much the director of the baseball club spoil Endou...?!
As usual, Endou and his close friends are laughing.
Endou's unsightly appearance seems funny.
Endou doesn't have a natural virtue.

「...Good morning, everyone!」

Minaho-neesan comes in from the door of the classroom.
Seeing Minaho-neesan's face...the students make a stir.
That's right...there was the talk about Minaho-neesan dismissed as our
homeroom teacher the last homeroom before the holiday.
Geropa-kouchou even came here...

「My...something's wrong? I'm still your homeroom teacher until golden week
ends?」

Speaking of which, that's right.
Today is a weekday during consecutive holidays...golden week isn't done yet.

「...I'm going to take attendance. Aihara-san...!」

Minaho-neesan confirm the attendance.
...I looked at Yukino just out of habit.
...Yukino.

She's just looking down.
She's a bit hunchback...

Speaking of which, Yukino's posture is bad compared to Megu...
Somehow, it feels like the center of gravity in her body is a bit distorted.
I never noticed it until now...
...Huh?

...Was Yukino's face like this?

I feel like her face is different from my memory...

No...Yukino in my memory was beautified by my brain...

Perhaps...the Yukino I see right now.

Is the real Shirasaka Yukino.

Yukino's actual face looks similar to Mana.

It's normal since they're sisters, but...

Or rather...

I've been together with Mana since yesterday noon and until we part from the
『monitor room』

I've always been looking at Mana's face...trying to understand what Mana is
thinking, what kind of girl she really is...

Today, my impression of Mana is stronger.

I clearly remember Mana's face.

Her crying face, her laughing face...

I had sex with Mana eight times from last night until morning...

I look at Mana's face every time I ejaculated...

Speaking of which, how is Mana doing?

Margo-san is watching over her, I think there's no need to worry as Nei-san is
playing with her ...

...Ah.

Megu is looking at me with a worried face.

...This is bad.

I look away from Yukino...

「...Yoshida-kun」

Minaho-neesan calls me out.

「Ah...Present!」

「...Wada-san!」

「...Present!」

「...There's no one absent」

Right.

My name is second before the last.

Our school has the class roster a mix of 50 male and females.

I don't know why though.

「Today, we have a scheduled 『Medical Examination』and 『Fire drill』 It'll end

by 11 o'clock...!」

Then...at 11 o'clock, Yukino and Mana's mother and grandfather will come to the principal's office.

It's finally the face to face negotiations...

And, Endou's game starts at 12:30?

It's a tight schedule for today.

「The 『Medical examination』will be done on all three years on separate genders. When the class ahead ends, the teacher in charge will come to call you out, wait inside the classroom until then」

Yeah...It won't take much time anyway

It's just measuring height and weight...

The queue will only be in the X-ray.

「Once you're done, come back in the classroom...when it's confirmed that everyone has finished their 『medical examination』, it will be the 『fire drill』so come back without making a side trip」

Minaho-neesan told everyone.

「Now then...are there any questions?」

One schoolgirl raised her hand.

A slightly delinquent...dark-skinned girl who never talked to me before.

「...Sensei, Yamamine-san is wearing a ring in the school! Shouldn't you be warning her?」

Minaho-neesan laughs.

「My, Yamamine-san's 『engaged』right? Yamamine-san's guardian has come to report...」

Megu's guardian right now is Minaho-neesan.

「Eh...What? Yamamine's 『engaged』...?」

Endou asks his friend that's near him.

Endou...you're lagging behind.

「It was reported in the staff meeting a while ago. Yamamine Megumi-san is

『Engaged』...!」

Megu and my 『engagement』...is recognized by the school?!

「But...Isn't wearing accessories not allowed by the school regulations?」

The dark-skinned girl asks further...

Perhaps, she must've been watching from the shadows all this time and had antipathy against us.

「Take a look at the school regulations properly...You can wear an 『engagement ring』inside school. As long as the guardian has made a report」

The students in the class open their student handbook...!

「...There!」

「Ah, it's true, it's written here!」

「...There's an『engagement ring』!」

The classroom turned noisy.

「But...Sensei announced that high school romance is forbidden right? Yamamine-san and Yoshida-kun are 『engaged』far more than romance...what will you do, Sensei?」

The dark-skinned girl said nastily.

「Yeah, you did say that romance is forbidden...You should be forbidding 『engagement』too!」

One delinquent guy shouted.

「...Yamamine and Yoshida's engaged?! Eh...Why!?!」

Endou...shut up...

「Also...Yamamine-san and Yoshida-kun just kissed inside the classroom!」
「That's forbidden right?!」

The delinquent girls who were silent a while ago are now criticizing us in a dash...!

Everyone was waiting for Minaho-neesan to come...!

To accuse Megu and I...

To attack Minaho-neesan...!

「Wait a moment! Is it true that Yamamine and Yoshida kissed?!」

...Endou

Just die already...

「...Let's see. Should I talk about it then?」

Minaho-neesan laughs happily.

132. Could it be that Endou-kun is an idiot? (1)

「If I recall...Sensei's opinion is that high school students can't have a romantic relationship, kissing is forbidden as well...You said that it was a hindrance to your study, isn't that right?」

The dark-skinned girl said with a defiant eye.

「Yes...That is my personal opinion. You can say that is my educational principle」

Minaho-neesan answers calmly...

「But, my guidance was slightly extreme...weren't I scolded by the principal in front of everyone before the holiday?」

Certainly...Geropa-kouchou scolded Minaho-neesan in front of us.
Minaho-neesan has withdrawn her 『Love sex ban』¹

「Hee...When Sensei got scolded by the principal, you'll bend your principles?」
「Well, it can't be helped, you know? I'm on a working social status...Of course, my thoughts still remain from the bottom of my heart...!」

Those who're not in good terms with Megu...In short, those who are close to delinquents and Endou's followers speaks provocation and Minaho-neesan easily goes through them.

「But...if I recall, even the principal said 『We don't endorse romance between students. Associate yourselves like fresh high school students』right?」

「Right! Isn't 『engagement』or kissing in the classroom, and other things bad?!」

Did you think that Minaho-neesan's situation turned bad?...the men were fanning as they're getting carried away.

「My...Yoshida-kun and Yamamine-san's relationship is fresh!」

Another boy screams at Minaho-neesan's answer.

「Where the fuck is the fresh! They were kissing in the classroom while everyone's watching!」

「Sensei, isn't that strange?!」

「That's right! Even the principal said that 『Illicit sexual relationship is bad』!」

「Are you giving Yamamine and Yoshida preferential treatment?!」

「We object against special treatment!」

「We second!」

The delinquent males are getting high of themselves...

「If I recall...Yuzuki-sensei opposed Endou-kun and Shirasaka-san's relationship, right?」

The glasses girl is glaring at Minaho-neesan...

「Well of course...because Endou-kun and Shirasak-san's relationship is 『impure』...!」

Minaho-neesan smiles as if making a fool out of them...

「...What the hell! Endou and Shirasaka is 『Impure』and yet Yamamine and Yoshida is 『Clear』, that's fucking strange!」

「That's right, he's right!」

「What do you mean by that!」

「Hey...don't let Yuzuki do the talk. Someone call the principal!」

The classroom is confused.

The fueling it is Endou's followers.

Endou himself directs his companions in whisper.

With a faint smile...

He's really a vile and unpleasant man...

「By the way...What do you think is 『Illicit sexual relationship』?」

Minaho-neesan asked the students who were complaining in reverse.
The students froze from her question spoken in a gentle tone.

「...Wat?!」

「...T-That's」

「...In short, you see」

The men were careless.

In exchange, the dark-skinned girl answered Minaho-neesan.

「Doesn't that mean that you can't have sex while you're still a student?!」

Endou's follower rides on that remark!

「T-That's right!」

「That means that high-school students must not have sex」

「un un...That's how it is!」

Minaho-neesan laughs.

「...Sensei, is there something funny!?!」

The glasses student asks Minaho-neesan.

「No...I just thought that you people don't know anything...!」

Minaho-neesan grins...

The students felt chill in their spine from that mysterious smile...

「Very well...since this is a rare opportunity, I will teach you. I'm still your homeroom teacher after all...」

Then...Yuzuki Minaho begins her lecture...

「...『Illicit sexual relationship』means 『Sexual relationship of people eighteen years old or lower that hinders their healthy upbringing』」 This is prohibited by the educational institutions by their regulations, this is one of the 『delinquent acts』used by the juvenile division of the police to take someone, there's two main reasons for that...!」

The student's eyes were all concentrated to Minaho-neesan.

「One is when young people had sex...and it resulted to pregnancy and childbirth...you can't take responsibility by yourself. You don't have the financial power to support the birth and upbringing of the baby, but even abortion would create a big damage on the girl's body. That's why the immature and emotional children shouldn't have sex...is what the meddling adults think...!」

The delinquent men repels Minaho-neesan's speech.

「...Shouldn't you just use contraceptives?!」

「That's right! You should just condom! condom!」

「There are pills and other convenient things right now!」

Minaho-neesan laughs at the opinion...

「Even if you use condom, it doesn't prevent pregnancy 100% Those things are thin...and sometimes, they get torn. Oh, you still haven't used it right?...you all here are just virgins!」

Minaho-neesan grins at the delinquent men.

「Pills can prevent pregnancy to almost a hundred percent but it can't be bought without a doctor's prescription. A regular doctor will never give a prescription to a high school student without parental consent. Well...in case of a woman who's menstruation is heavy...they can get drugs with the same effect as the pill, but...that case still needs the parents to confirm it...!」

If it was an honest doctor or pharmacist...they would never sell pills to high school students asking personally...

『Kuromori』had doctor Ikeda as their friend, either way, she's a doctor from the dark world...

「Furthermore...you have to keep drinking pill everyday. Can you keep purchasing those with your pocket money?」

Minaho-neesan looks at the delinquents...!

「Then...we're going part-time and buy as many as we want!」

「That's right. You can just buy it online! Or buy it from the black market...!」

「Yeah, we can buy everything on the net now!」

「Sensei, you don't know anything! The underground has everything!」

The delinquents says unanimously.

You're the ones who don't get it.

Yuzuki Minaho is a resident of the underworld...

「The men have that opinion but...let's ask the women! Would you take a pill bought from a backdoor dealer or from the internet and let the man ejaculate inside you...?!」

The delinquent girls weren't saying anything.

They look at each other, then look below.

「...Of course...you're not stupid enough to just blindly believe the effect of the

medicine when you don't even know whether it's real or not...!」

The talk is completely advancing on Minaho-neesan's pace.

「...Well fine. Anyway, just remember that most adults that young people shouldn't have sex because it's not allowed for young people to get pregnant and give birth」

Minaho-neesan continues her talk...

「Next...The other reason why『Illicit sexual relationship』is forbidden!...This is the same reason why I prohibited romance and sex to you people the other day. In short...『Because school is a place to study, if you get addicted to romance and sex, it'll be an obstruction in your study so it's forbidden』」

「...What the hell, are you saying that we shouldn't do anything but study?」

「That's human right's violation! Human right's violation!」

「...Do you even know what's human rights?!」

「No...I don't know it well」

「Human dog...human dog!」

「Well, a human face dog!」

I think these guys should quit high school and throw themselves to a cliff...
Die in a place that won't cause trouble to other people.

「It is as you say in a sense...That's why I was scolded by the principal last time. He said I overdid it...!」

Minaho-neesan said it with an expression that she's reflecting on it.

「...Well, thinking about it carefully, it's true. When you talk about things you shouldn't do that would hinder your studies, it would be strange that watching television, playing games, watching sports, isn't banned. It's irrational to not ban all sorts of entertainment. That's why...this opinion has been criticized by various people in the past...!」

Minaho-neesan way of thinking about the definition of 『Illicit sexual relationship』...will be finished by explaining another problem about it.

「...Now then, let's return to the aspect of the talk about Yamamine-san and Yoshida-kun's 『engagement』...!」

Minaho-neesan looks at Megu.

「...Can you say that Yamamine-san and Yoshida-kun's case is an『Illicit sexual relationship』?」

The eyes of the classroom gathered to Megu and me.

「In their case, their guardian has been persuaded properly...they're officially『engaged』 They even notified the school about the『Engagement』」

Minaho-neesan herself is the one who reported to the school I guess. There's no way that Mr. and Mrs. Yamamine would make such contact... I don't have any form of contact with my parents.

「Earlier, the principal and the faculty had a meeting. The school has recognized that Yamamine-san and Yoshida-kun are officially『engaged』」

In short...our『engagement』is『officially recognized by the school』...?!

「If the school has approved of them...even I can't say my complains to the two. They are an『engaged couple』formally recognized by the school...!」

Minaho-neesan makes a regretful look.

「...Please wait a moment!」

The glasses girl ask Minaho-neesan...!

「Why can't you make a complain when it's an『engagement』? Isn't Yamamine-san and Yoshida-kun no different from a first year high school student?!」

...Certainly

Why is it okay for us to have sex when we become an officially『engaged couple』?

「...Speaking of which, you're right」

「We get that they're engaged but...it doesn't mean that they can do indecent things right?!」

「That's right...the municipality we live in has a『Youth protection and nurture law』!」

The glasses girl strongly protests against Minaho-neesan.

「Youth protection...what?」

「It's that...the 『Obscenity law』」

「Oh. If I recall, when you have sex with young people under 18, you'd get caught by the police...!」²

「Younger than 18...then, that means that you can have sex on your 18th birthday when you're a third year already?」

「...Idiot. Isn't it obvious that you can't」

「Wait, why?」

「It also includes that『Even if you're 18 years old, you can't do it as long as you're in high school』!」

「Eh, then, we can't have sex while we're still high school students?!」

「But...isn't the 『Obscenity law』just a regulation to catch adults when they try to have sex with young people?」

「No...Even minors can be caught...or rather, they'll be sent to guidance?」

「The hell is that?」

Minaho-neesan explains to the students...

「Well...it's only on just prostitution, coercion and rape, but in case that the young couple had sex with both parties giving consent, there are a lot of cases they are overlooked, but still...a violation of law is a violation of law.³ The contents of the municipality's 『Youth protection and nurture law』has become sensitive, but still...in most local governments, when they confirm that high school students had sex, they can send police to give them guidance anytime...!」

「...S-Seriously!?!」

「Well, since the police wants to avoid trouble, they won't catch students just because they're『having sex』 But...if ever the girl's parents filed a complaint to the police, that would be enough to put the boy to the protective custody. The power of 『Parents』or 『Guardians』are strong compared to the minors...!」

...Is that so?

Then, I won't get caught...

No, I'm already guilty in rape of Yukino and Mana...

Both of them were virgin so it can be upgraded to rape with injuries...

「Now then...regarding this 『Youth protection and nurture law』, a very big case happened in the supreme court in 1985」

Finally, Minaho-neesan's eye sparkle!

The students in the classroom are listening to Minaho-neesan's lesson seriously.

「A man arrested from violating the 『Youth protection and nurture law』...has claimed during the trial...『We are properly engaged』...That was accepted and the supreme court has declared that he's 『innocent』」

When you admit that you're『engaged』...you're innocent?!

「Written on the sentence...『It is difficult to think of a punishment that would be accepted by the social norm, the youth is an engaged person which corresponds to sincere relationship which includes performing sexual acts with the youth』」⁴

「...What does that mean?」

The glasses girl asks for explanation...

「In short...if they have an『Sincere relationship in accordance with the engagement』They can't be apprehended by the『Youth Protection and Nurture law』 You'll never get arrested or taken under protective custody. Even if the police has a selfish conviction and the couple was arrested and taken under custody, they will definitely win when it comes to the trial. Because the supreme court has the best official guarantee of judgement...!」

...Haa

Minaho-neesan knows a anything.

「...That means?」

「...Eh, what's going on?」

「Yamamine-chan and Yoshida-kun...are 『engaged』right now...!」

「They belong to the youth and it doesn't matter if they have sex...?!」

Once again, the class became noisy.

「Uhm, Sensei...I'd like to ask this at least, what does it mean by 『Sincere relationship in accordance with the engagement』」

Yeah...I'm curious about that too.

「Well, you see...for the time being, isn't the main principle just saying 『They promised to marry in the future』?」

「Isn't that just the same as 『engagement』!?」

「Isn't that okay if the woman just says 『Let's get married!』?!」

Minaho-neesan smiles wryly from the extreme words of the delinquent.

「...『Engagement』isn't established by just having the party concerned 『Swear by words』 You won't know if they're serious from just verbal promise you know. When it comes to the trial and you don't have a concrete evidence like letters or email sent to the other party, you can't prove it. Especially for minors...the minimum requirement for them is to have the 『Guardians』approve the relationship」

「Eh...we need the parent's consent?!」

「Under Japanese law, men can be married from 18 years old and women starting 16...in case of minors, parental consent is necessary. If you don't have the parental consent, you can't get married, of course you can't get 『engaged』 either...!」

Minaho-neesan smiles.

「Even if you insist『My parents opposed but we're assuming sincere relationship in accordance with the engagement』 the minor under parental authority will normally be arrested from violating the 『Youth Protection and nurture law』」

Sensei said happily.

「It will never be accepted. Real story, there's one case. You see...There's one man and a female high school student going out, the high school girl's parents filed a complaint for violating the youth protection and nurture law and arrested the man but, the man claimed that 『He's currently divorced with his wife and intends to marry the high school girl』he was found innocent by the trial only once. But...This is one peculiar case. Because the prosecution didn't appeal, it was concluded by the judgement of the summary court. This man who was found innocent in the trial filed a lawsuit against the local government and the country that prosecuted him...The high court declared 『This is unthinkable as a serious relationship』referring that the previous judgement is

the exact opposite, so he lost in the Supreme court... Perhaps, if the trial is fought in the Supreme Court, it wouldn't have been admitted as a serious relationship...!」

...Err

In short...As long as you don't have a concrete proof where the parents and the people around say 『These people are really having a sincere relationship』you can't have sex with a high school student?

No...Of course this is a legal talk...actually it's known that there's a lot high school students who are having sex...

In municipalities with 『Youth protection and nurture law』they can't complain if they are arrested by the police...!

「By the way, most of the local governments in Japan have created their original 『Youth protection and nurture law』 Nagano is famous for not having one but there are rules in Nagano prefecture's cities. The contents of the law have small difference for each local government」

...Haa, is that how it is?

「The ordinance of Tokyo established in 2005 is amazing. It says 『You must not perform sexual acts or any similar lascivious acts to the youth』... It is a declaration that youth can't have sex at any case!」

That's amazing.

That means that sex with anyone below high school students are banned... What the hell is the guy who wrote 『Season of the sun』doing?

「But...please wait a moment. Although the law is clearly written so far...Isn't it strange for the 『Engaged』to be okay to have sex even if they're still high school students?!」

The glasses girl still keep holding on...

「You see...the law only restricts 『improper sexual intercourse』」

Minaho-neesan answers smoothly.

「The idea is that sex between 『fiancés』is not an 『improper sexual act』...」

Eh?

My sex wit Megu isn't improper?

No...I think it is?!

I'm super aroused you know...

「Going back to that precedent set by the Supreme Court of 1985..... The 『indecent acts』 involving young people..... Obscenity was defined not only by sexual intercourse involving violent threats, intimidation, or monetary compensation..... But also encompassed developing adolescents who satisfied their sexual urges.」

Eh..... what does that mean?

「.....That is to say, For young people, boys and girls under the age of high school students, any contact with slightly perverted connotations such as kissing or petting, was enough to be classified as 『obscurity』.」

Eh..... just a little touching is already a crime?!

「Just a while ago, I spoke that in the case where there is an “engagement” set a safe precedent, I will now continue that story..... The Supreme court handed down a ruling, 『However..... Regarding the sexual activities between the two young adolescents, given the existence of an engagement supplemented with an appropriate earnest and serious relationship, dispensing punishment would be quite difficult considering the normal societal conventions. Thus this case does not demonstrate improper sexual relations as defined by the definition of obscenity.』」

.....ehhhhh?

.....w-what does that mean?

「The fact that those two are 『engaged』..... having sex is not an 『indecent act』 and does not become a sex crime. Is that what you are saying?」

The glasses girl asked the teacher.

The talk suddenly became quite advanced making it impossible for the rowdy boys and girls to even make a come-back in response to Minaho-nee-san's words 「It is as you say. Being 『engaged』 means that they've formally 『made the promise of marriage』.....」

Minaho-nee-san clearly states.

「.....For what is the purpose of marriage? Making children, leaving behind offspring? That's why, sex between a married couple is not regarded as an 『indecent act』. Rather its their duty. That's why sex incompatibility is sufficient grounds for divorce」

.....y-yeah.

「As I've said. According to Japanese law, men can be married from 18 and up, whereas women from 16 and up. This law is even applicable to high school students. In Japan, even high school students can get married with the parental consent..... The formal recognition of 『marriage』 means the formal recognition of 『sex』, don't you agree? The civil laws established by the country overrules ordinances established by local governments. In other words..... Even if a high school student has sex, because the married couple's sex is not an 『indecent act』, it does not violate the 『Youth Protection and Nurture law』 .

Accordingly..... the same can be said for a fiance, who has made a formal promise of marriage, sex would not be regarded as an “indecent act” as declared by the Supreme Court.」

「.....But, being 『engaged』 is different from actually getting 『married』!」

That's right...『Engagement』has a possibility of being broken. They have to submit documents for the country when 『Married』but... 『Engagement』doesn't need to make an official report in particular...

「That is right...But it is inevitable. When『fiancés』have sex, even if the partner is a high school student, the supreme court will decide that it's not a violation of 『Youth protection and nurture law』 Unless this precedent is overturned...in Japan, you won't be asked for your wrongdoings even if you have sex with a high school student as long as it's in an official 『engagement』...!」

...E-errr.

Somehow it looks like Minaho-neesan is making a big deception... Anyway...does it mean that no one will complain even if Megu and I have sex?

「Therefore...as a single teacher, I don't intend to make a complain their romantic relationship or their sex as long as Yamamine-san and Yoshida-kun is officially 『Engaged』and as the school accepts it. That is the decision of the country...!」

The school turned silent from Minaho-neesan's speech.

「...No, but...Our school is private, even if it's a decision of the school the school should be able to punish with the school's policy!」

The glasses girl still continues her protest against Minaho-neesan...
You can't consent my 『engagement』with Megu that much...?!

「Are you even listening? Earlier, Yamamine-san and Yoshida-kun's 『engagement』was reported by the principal during the staff meeting a while ago...! That means that our school accepts their relationship!」

...Well.

Minaho-neesan's the true ruler of this school after all...
Whatever she wants will happen.

「...I'd give a warning about kissing inside the classroom however...seeing that Yamamine-san and Yoshida-kun are 『Engaged』, I won't complain about their relationship, and sex as long as it's outside the school」

「...Even if she gets pregnant?」

The schoolgirl glared at Minaho-neesan.

「Yamamine-san get 『engaged』with the intent of getting pregnant with Yoshida-kun's child...is that right, Yamamine-san?」

Minaho-neesan asks Megu.

「I don't intend to become pregnant while I'm attending school. But, if Yoshi-kun wishes for it...I can always have sex with Yoshi-kun anytime and if I get pregnant as a result...I'd be glad to bear it!」

Megu said.

「...Yoshida-kun, what about you?」

...I

「I'm the same as Megu. If ever she gets pregnant, I'll quit school and start working. I will feed Megu and her child. I'll definitely make them happy...!」

I declared clearly in front of our class.

「With that said...is Yoshida-kun's and Yamamine-san's case done? Everyone,

please watch over the two warmly.」

Minaho-neesan brings the talk to an agreement.

...However.

「...Hey, wait a moment!」

Endou who's been silent until now...

Suddenly opens his mouth.

「What the hell is with that...Does that mean that if I reported to the school that Yukino and I are 『Engaged formally』it doesn't matter if we have sex?!」

Endou tells Minaho-neesan...

「Well, that's how it is...!」

Minaho-neesan answered Endou with a cold smile.

「Okay, got it... Then, I'm going to talk to my father and negotiate with Yukino's house...!」

E-Endou!?

「Then, we are free to do what we want...furthermore, the school and the police won't make a complain?!」

Endou...She's showing a vulgar smirk...

「Hey, let's do that...Yukino!」

Endou calls Yukino...

...Yukuno is.

...Huh?

I've been looking at Minaho-neesan and Megu all this time.

I've never looked at Yukino.

...I

..... !

...Yukino's glaring at me.

That's a frightening look...

Yukino is pouring her hateful glance on me.

She's glaring at me saying 『traitor』

...Yukino

Yukino can't allow Megu and I to be happy...

...Well, of course.

I've raped Yukino dozens of times...

Perhaps...her stomach is already...

Pregnant with my child...

「...Hey, Yukino, what's wrong?」

Endou speaks in an irritated tone to his girlfriend that doesn't look at himself.
Minaho-neesan speaks to Endou.

「...Endou-kun, I thought of this from time to time.」

With contempt...with a smile ridiculing him...

「Could it be that you're an idiot?」

Endou flips from what Minaho-neesan said!

「Hey, what do you mean by that?! I've had enough of you looking down on me! Don't forget what happened the other day?」

「The other day...Oh, the talk with the principal?」

「That's right, the principal is on my side! I can easily dismiss a useless female teacher like you!」

Endou who lost his temper is talking abusively at Minaho-neesan with a brat attitude!

「Hmm...Why is the principal Endou-kun's ally?」

Minaho-neesan grins and ask Endou.

Shit...Minaho-neesan is on her peak condition...

「Well...My dad has contributed a lot in this school...」

「Why is the principal your ally if your father has contributed to this school?」

「Because...he contributed a lot of money!」

...Endou.

You're really an idiot.

「Certainly, Endou-kun's father has contributed a lot of money to our school...」

「That's right...Hey!」

「But...It's just the fourth. Among the guardians who contributed this year. It won't trouble the school even if Endou-kun's father won't make a contribution...If you'd like, we can return it」

Minaho-neesan begins to gradually torment Endou...

「That's something decided by the school not you who's just an employee...!」

Endou is showing confusion from Minaho-neesan's composed attitude.

「Sorry...I'm the director of the school」

Minaho-neesan grinned.

「...Director?」

「I'm one of the directors on the board...It's a bit troublesome so I don't talk about it a lot but, I'm a relative of the chief director of this school. Sooner or later, I will be the chief director. The current director is just a close person I asked to be in charge for the moment」

...zawa

...zawa...zawa

「You didn't notice the situation of the school with me? Aren't I a bit too proud even though I'm just a teacher? Can't you see me doing what I want more than other teachers...!」

Minaho-neesan overwhelms the students in the classroom with her cold smile...

「Do you know which has the higher position between the board of director and the principal?」

Endou opens his mouth wide but he can't reply.

「The board of directors has the authority to make the principal quit...!

「...But, weren't you scolded by the principal the other day?!

Endou tells Minaho-neesan while having cold sweat on his forehead.

「Well, he's the principal...He'll scold me if there's a problem with my educational policy. Since he can do that, the board of director requests the principal's work...!」

...Endou.

...You can never win against Minaho-neesan by frivolous objections

...Do you not understand?

...Endou's an idiot after all.

「But, my uncle's a councilor...! if something happens to me, I'll tell father to protest against the school!

Minaho-neesan 「Ahahaha」laughs out loudly.

「I've been thinking of asking this from you before...but, is a councilor that amazing?」

「...Eh?」

Minaho-neesan makes an exploding strike on Endou's identity.

「Our school is private...Even if a councilor speaks out...they can't do anything in particular...」

「...But, my uncle...!」

「Although this school is a well known traditional local school...I also got some acquaintance from the country's congress or local parliament」

Minaho-neesan grins...

「You threatened me and the principal with your uncle's name...your father will be removed from the party on the next election so get yourself ready...!」

「...An?」

「People without a party's support will become independent I will be preparing candidates who will oppose your uncle properly...」

「W-What do you mean by that?」

Minaho-neesan said.

「You use your parent's money and threaten adults? That's why I will use the same thing...with people on higher positions...」

Endou's face flinches.

「Your father's construction company, and councilor uncle had a lot of public works project in the city...they won't be able to do that anymore. Your father's company will surely be crushed but don't think bad of me...It's all Endou-kun's

fault」

...zawa

...zawa...zawa

「Also...earlier, Endou-kun talked about his father contributing a lot in this school, but...」

Minaho-neesan drops a bomb.⁵

「Because, we have no choice...!」

Minaho-neesan laughs.

「...Endou-kun's a backdoor entry after all」

...zawa...zawa

...zawa, zawa...zawa

「W-What the fuck are you saying?!」

Endou beats his desk and stands up...!!!!

「Your entrance exam scores aren't enough...do you get it? Well, of course you don't...your head is impossible to understand that thing」

Minaho-neesan grins happily.

「Your uncle requested one of our directors and let take you up from backdoor admission. I'll clear this up on the next board meeting. We will have that director resign...and dispose all of the faculty and staff involved in your backdoor admission...You see」

Minaho-neesan declares.

「...You're lying! This are all just lies!」

Endou is shouting...

「The director who mediated the backdoor admission, Okumura-san has met Endou-kun, right...?!」

At the moment Endou heard the name 『Okumura』his face showed a surprised reaction...

The whole class saw the instant Endou's expression changed...

Thus...everyone was convinced that Endou had a 『backdoor admission』...

「...No, it's my uncle's acquaintance...we only ate at a luxury Chinese hotel once before. I just met him once. It's not that I asked him anything. Mediation or some sorts!」

Endou shouts at the class, but...

The more he speaks the more it becomes suspicious.

The students are already looking at Endou with suspicious eyes...!

「I-I'll bring this to the court! My lawyer...call my lawyer!」

...Now

The fool in baseball uniform is screaming alone

Minaho-neesan doesn't care about it and just laughs.

Endou calls out his followers.

「Say something guys...! Didn't I treat you Sushi just the other day?! Hey, if my position turns bad, I will be out of the baseball club! Didn't I buy you Matsusaka beef the other day?!...My dad told me that protein is the best so I gave you all!」

Endou is shouting at his followers...

No one's answering...

It seems that Minaho-neesan's 『Backdoor admission』gave unimaginable damage.

「You're really an idiot...with you looking down on others, weren't they just milking you out of money? Also, you say that it's all your father's support...it's not your own power!」

...That's right.

Since Endou talked about money and connection...the 『backdoor admission』 talk has become more credible...

「...No, it's wrong...!!!!」

133. Could it be that Endou-kun is an idiot? (2)

「Oh, could it be that Endou-kun doesn't know that he was a backdoor admission?」

Minaho-neesan ridicules Endou with a malicious eye...

「Right...your father must've judged not to tell an idiot like you. You might try to tell other children that 『I'm a backdoor entry so the school will do as I say』 ...!」

Endou is in blank surprise.

「No...I...I went to this school from my grandfather's suggestion...the baseball referral...」

He's already confused.

「My...Did you use your father's money and uncle's connections? You exposed yourself. You knew it as expected. That you were a 『Backdoor entry』...!」
「...That's not it!」

Endou shouts, but...!

「Here you go everyone! Here...I will show to you a recording of Endou-kun threatening me in the principal's office...!」

Minaho-neesan took out a voice recorder from her chest pocket.

「...Recently, there's a lot of over-demanding parents and complains to a school using false accusations in the court you know? That's why...our school teachers always record their conversations inside the school」

...She's really a good liar.

Even though she's the ringleader of the school's monitoring system...!

「...Wait a moment, hey!」

...Ignoring Endou...

Minaho-neesan's white fingers starts the recorder...

Endou's voice is played...

『...You see, I didn't want to enter this school. But, because of the incident during middle school...I wasn't to blame for it but the baseball club's old man is thickheaded, he didn't recommend me to a school with a strong baseball club. Well, I came to this school using my uncle's connections. You do know that it's not just my uncle but Endou-house has contributed a lot to this school. You do know that right? I think that you shouldn't anger me this much...!』

Yup...Hearing him speak that way, it's as if Endou is admitting that he's a 『backdoor entry』

「The controversial statement is after this」

The audio continues...

『...Yuzuki-sensei...I'll banish you from here. Not just from this school. I'll make sure you can't step on this land anymore so get yourself ready. I'll use all of Endou house's connection and will drive sensei to the corner! Our acquaintances aren't only the people on the surface. I send my best regards on the people who'll hang out with sensei! Well, I don't know what would happen about Sensei though』

Minaho-neesan turned off the switch there...

「This is definitely Endou-kun's remark isn't it?」

...zawa...zawa...

「...Wait, what's going on?!」

「Eh...Endou-kun's house is related to a crime syndicate?」

「Didn't he say it himself?」

「He's completely threatening Yuzuki-sensei, right...?!」

「So he's that kind of person?」

「Isn't that the way Yakuza does things?!」

From the impression that he's 『a backdoor entry』...to the suspicion of his 『association with crime syndicates』

The group of decent girl's distrust of Endou is rising...

「...No...I don't know anything about that!」

Endou tries to deny it desperately, but...

Minaho-neesan's image manipulation has already spread across the hearts of the students in the class.

「If I recall...Shirasaka-san and Yoshida-kun were there too. But, Shirasaka-san is Endou-kun's girlfriend so you won't tell the truth even if we ask you...Yoshida-kun, could you testify this?」

Minaho-neesan blocks Yukino smoothly so she can't speak...
The class' attention turned to me.

「This is Endou-kun's remark isn't it?」

...I

As a member of the crime organization 『Kuromori』...

As a 『Toy』of the boss, Yuzuki Minaho...

Her 『Little brother』...

「...Yes. There's no mistake. That was Endou's remark of threatening Yuzuki-sensei in the principal's office...!」

Endou glares at me with eyes of hatred...!

「...Yoshida, you fucker!!!」

I'm not afraid of Endou at all.

I don't fear Endou's violence nor his followers doing something.

Of course...I don't care about Endou house's power at all.

...After all, I

Am a member of 『Kuromori』

「Endou...you're already a high school student so take responsibility of what you say...!」

I look at Endou with cold eyes.

Just like Minaho-neesan does...

Only a fool exposes his feeling of anger and hatred openly...

We wrap our feelings coldly.

That way...You can damage your opponent's heart sharper...

...Look.

Endou raged with all the steam in his head from what I said...

His expression is exactly like a fool.

No one can understand a human in that state.

People don't feel sympathy nor pity from a human who lost his rationality...

Constantly analyzing the situation with cold iron will...I learn from『Yuzuki Minaho』is my 『Elder Sister』who keeps the best decision in her mind.

The correct 『Coldness』...

「It's useless to glare at me like that...it won't change the fact that you have said that...!」

Really, a lot of things happened this past few days.

Protecting Nagisa from the Yakuza...

I was attacked by an assassin hired by Iwakura-san...

Yesterday, we were chased by a horde of gangsters...

Even right now...We're in the middle of battle with Shirasaka house and Cesario Viola.

To be honest...right now.

I don't care about Endou and his delinquent followers...

My heart is much bigger...and we're attacking an 『Enemy power』baring their fangs...

Since yesterday...we've been in war preparation and cautious state.

An idiot like Endou should just kill himself.

「...Yoshida, remember this. I'll never forgive you...!」

Haa...his parting shot is so idiotic.

「Endou...you're really an idiot...!」

I move my eyes from Endou to Minaho-neesan...

「Sensei...Can I ask you something?」

「My, Yoshida-kun...what would you like to ask?」

Minaho-neesan smiles.

...I

I practice what I learned from『Yuzuki Minaho』...

「...Sensei is actually a representative of this school, right?」

「Yes...I don't mind you thinking that way」

Minaho-neesan answered lightly.

「This school has been in this area quite a long time ago right? There have been graduates who have been related to crime syndicates, right? The father related to a crime syndicate, or a graduate being a member of it afterwards, or some people who are executives of the organization?」¹

The classroom turned noisy from my question again.
...Minaho-neesan.

「Let's see...it's a privacy of an individual so I can't answer clearly but...there's a lot of people. There's people from the upper level of the organization...!」

...zawa...zawa...

「...Those people are in contact with the school?」

「Well, it's inevitable you know? The school can't cut off their relationship with a graduate and the guardians of it...! Of course, we try to decline their participation with school festival and other events as much as possible...!」

Minaho-neesan laughs.

「Even the donations in the school, we refrain to receive from those people... but, those kind of people are very loyal you know? Their child is attending the school so there's a lot of people who offers donations using a different name unrelated to the crime syndicate using the pretext that this is a profoundly memorable alma mater...there's no way we can refuse them. It's not a donation under their name. But, the school really knows who did the donation...!」

Hearing Minaho-neesan, one schoolgirl shouts.

「Eh?...The parents of the current students too?!」

「There's someone with a Yakuza as their parent...!?」

「...Ah, I know one. There's one third year senpai...!」

「I know I know...His father is the leader, right?」

「There's one in the second year too...!」

「Sensei...Is that true?」

The classroom turned noisy...!

「Like I said...It's private so I can't say it myself. Just because their parents is related to a crime syndicate, it doesn't it's related to the child, right? We decide the student's result based on the entrance exam and middle school record...」

『Basically』, Minaho-neesan emphasizes...
It's as if Endou is an 『exception of exceptions』...

「Then, please tell us within the scope of what you can say...in the recent playback, if Endou says that he'll use his crime syndicate acquaintance to shadow Yuzuki-sensei...how realistically possible is that?」

Minaho-neesan laughs at my question.

「Hmm...It's impossible I think. There are people supporting our school that has a higher standpoint than Endou-kun's father and uncle and their friends」

Minaho-neesan said with a cool face.

「I said this earlier...People in that world are really honest. If they knew that the school's staff their sons or daughters' school is being troubled by a hoodlum-yakuza they rule over...they will use their power, even beg to stop those. After all, our school is a traditional school...!

...In short, Endou's intimidation has no meaning.
The spoiled child borrows the authority of his parents.

「Therefore, Endou-kun...You better not consult your gangster acquaintance. The reason for your father's company going bankrupt is increasing...Ah, it may be too late...!」

Endou's face turned pale.

「..... ! ! ! 」

Endou has already requested the gangsters... !
During this holiday...!

「My my...it's not my fault whatever happens to you...!」

Minaho-neesan laughs happily.

「For those people...the up down relationship is everything...therefore, if Endou-kun asks them to take action...and the top of the organization discovers it and gets angry...it'll turn around and the wrath will be pointed at Endou-kun. The honor would be completely ruined...」²

Endou fell silent having a pale face.

Minaho-neesan ignores Endou and looks toward Yukino this time.

「Hey, Shirasaka-san, why did you go out with such an idiot? Could it be that Shirasaka-san is an idiot as well?」

She's provoking Yukino...!

「I-I...!」

Yukino's expression seems to be exploding with anger and disgrace.
I can tell what Yukino is thinking right now.

If possible, she'd like to announce Minaho-neesan lead me to rape her...
She wants to accuse that Minaho-neesan and I are accomplices and we're villains...

Yukino is angry since she can't do that.
She's filled with hatred.

...But.

If she does that...Yukino will lose her position too...
If the world knows that I've raped her dozens of times...
...The current life of Yukino will completely collapse.

Yukino herself knows that it'll have a negative influence to her parents and Shirasaka family.

As a result...She'll be abandoned by Shirasaka house, that's what Yukino fears the most...

That's why...while the anger and hatred inside Yukino is amplified...it lost it's exit.

「...You people are liars! Idiots! Crazy! Cowards!!!」

Yukino screams loudly as if it's a symptom of hysteria!

「Aaaaaaaa!!...Idiooot! Idiooot! I hate you aaaaaall!」

Yukino bursts into tears...
...I feel sorry but.

That doesn't tell anybody anything.

Among the classmates...There's no one looking at Yukino and sympathizing with her.

「...Yukino, are you okay?!」

No...Just one.

That's Megu.

Megu rushes to Yukino and tries to touch her.

...But.

「...Don't touch me!」

Yukino shakes off Megu's hands!

「You're just a mistress' daughter, don't be kind with me!」

Yukino glares at Megu.

Hearing Yukino's words...

The class responded!

「Eh...A mistress' daughter?」

「Speaking of which...Yamamine-san said that earlier」

「...She said that she was adopted.」

「Speaking of which...If I recall, Shirasaka-san and Yamamine-chan are relatives?」

「Un...I heard that too...!」

Minaho-neesan takes the next step backed by the rustling voices.

「...Certainly, Yamamine-san's mother wasn't married when she gave birth to Yamamine-san. And, it's true that she's also an adopted daughter. I read her questionnaire so I know it well...!」

The gaze of the class turned back to Minaho-neesan.

「Sorry, Yamamine-san, I talked about your private life without your permission but...I can't overlook Shirasaka-san's remark just now...!」

Minaho-neesan speaks with excitement like she's performing a play.

「...I don't mind. It's true that I'm adopted after all」

Megu answered with a firm attitude.

「But...It doesn't matter who my parents are, I am myself」³

...Megu.

My Megu...I think she's really cute.

「I've lived with all my best until now and I will do so in the future...!」

Megu looks down at Yukino with strong eyes.

Yukino looked away from Megu.

「...That's right, Yamamine-san!」

「Un, your parent's don't matter!」

「Megumi is a kind and good girl, we know that!」

At such times...her interaction with people everyday had meaning...

Megu's close friends called her out.

Megu...is kind to everyone, bright, cheerful, and a hardworking girl...

「...That's right, Shirasaka-san's the wrong one here!」

「No matter how much you're at your limit...that's a bit too much!」

「Yeah...In the first place, it's Endou-kun's fault!」

「That's really bad towards Yamamine-chan who worried about her...!」

Yukino has been made the bad girl by the class in no time...

「Shirasaka-san...shouldn't you apologize?」

「Or rather, apologize to Yamamine-san...!」

「That's right...!」

The schoolboys who get carried away easily urges Yukino from the side.

「...It's fine. I'm okay whatever Yukino thinks of me」

Megu smiles to her classmates.

「Sensei...sorry for making a fuss」

Saying that...Megu returns to her seat...

...Minaho-neesan.

「Now then...what should we do?」

She lets out a big sigh on purpose...and pulls the attention to herself.

「As a school...It's easy to make Shirasaka-san apologize to Yamamine-san for her current remark and to ask Endou-kun to reflect from his speech and contact but...an apology not coming from the bottom of the heart is meaningless? That's not education at all...!」

Minaho-neesan pursues her following subject.

「You see...I don't value people like Endou-kun. Of course, Endou-kun has his good points...he has his own charm...so Shirasaka-san thought about dating him right? I know that well...」

Suddenly...Minaho-neesan begins to talk like a sensible adult.
She drops it off then suddenly tries to praise Endou's human nature.
...This is to further entrap Endou.

「Endou-kun's ability to take action is apart from a high school student in some meaning...Isn't that called 『Vitality beyond average』? Always positive, obedient to his own desires...there's a lot of people playing an active part in the society」

The students can't understand the reason why Minaho-neesan suddenly praises Endou, so they're in blank amazement.

「He's tall, good-looking...and he has his charisma as well. If he manages a restaurant chain, won't it be a great success...?!」

...Nnn?

「Look...there are a lot of people coming out of television who were young businessmen owning a restaurant chain who are like Endou-kun」

Certainly...Endou has such that lineage.

「Well...there are a lot who succeeded. And there are managers who have their business suspended by the government for food camouflage or food poisoning. If they don't make a proper apology interview, they'll be flamed on the internet later...」

Ah...that's what she means.
That's definitely Endou...

「But, those kind of people takes an active part and have faith on their own work so all of them have a beautiful wife. The biker-gang's leader has a beautiful girlfriend, a gangster boss have a beautiful wife...their vitality beyond average is their charisma so it charms women...」

Then, Minaho-neesan moves her gaze from Endou to Yukino.

「...Shirasaka-san, did you start dating Endou-kun with that reason too?」

Yukino can't answer.

It's obvious.

Minaho-neesan is speaking ill of Endou in form of praising.

Even Yukino who fell for Endou too...

「If not...A proud member of 『Shirasaka clan』like you won't date a commoner like Endou-kun...」

...Eh

...Err

Endou's『My father's a local celebrity...and My uncle's a councilor』is just a『commoner』for Minaho-neesan.

「...My house is a commoner?!」

Endou reacts to the trap Minaho-neesan sets in.

「My, sorry...It's not that I'm looking down on Endou-kun's house. It's just that I'm saying that it's a 『commoner』compared to Shirasaka-san's noble family...!」

Minaho-neesan doesn't break her smile.

「...Yukino's house is a noble?!」

Endou looks at Yukino.

「My, Endou-kun...you haven't heard that from Shirasaka-san?」

Minaho-neesan provokes Endou...

「Yukino's father should've been an ordinary salaryman?」

Hearing that answer...One schoolgirl close to Yukino speaks out in response.

「...Endou-kun, are you an idiot? Shirasaka-san's father is a director of a famous advertising agency!」

「Eh...Then, salaryman is a salaryman but, isn't he an elite office worker?!」

「Endou's house is famous locally but...in the end, it's just a construction company?」

「Yeah...It's just a major contractor doing a huge work」

「Father president...and yet it's a small business」

「Which is much more amazing? A president of a small company or a director of a big company?」

「Well...of course the bigger company?」

「Or rather...It's contractor vs gyokaijin! Shirasaka house is on top!」

「Yeah...you see Genojin everyday don't you?」

「Or rather...The commercials coming out of the television and the genojin are under the advertising company, right?」

「Then, Shirasaka's father is double-amazing!」

「His salary must be absurd and he also gets bonuses」

「Haa...he's really an elite employee」

「Shirasaka-san, amazing!」

「It's not Shirasaka-san's father but...Shirasaka-san's father?」

「That's the same. They live in the same house」

...Seriously.

These students are weak to the words Genojin or Elite...

「Huh...Then that means」

「...What?」

「Endou's always saying 『We're rich and local celebrities. My uncle's a councilor』with an air of superiority...」

「...Yeah」

「...Could it be that he's not a big deal?」

「...You just noticed it?」

「...Eh?」

「Are you an idiot?...we're only going with Endou since he treats us everytime.」

「Yeah...it's convenient to have Endou」

「Whenever you feel hungry」

「...Yeah」

「You...Could it be that you seriously believe Endou?」

「...Huh?」

「Guys...earlier, Yuzuki-sensei talked about it」

「...That's right!」

「Just because his uncle is a councilor, it doesn't mean that he has an amazing power...!」

「Yeah...it's just a councilor you know? More than half of the candidates are

being elected as a councilor in our city」

「It's normal for those who are in a big political party and sticks a poster everywhere to win...!」

「Or rather, Endou's 『Councilor, councilor』is annoying to be honest」

「...Why are you so detailed with those?」

「What about you? You're a high school student too and you don't know it?」

「Look, my family is doing a local business so we have a lot of connection in the shopping district. They put posters on the wall of the shop」

...What

Endou's followers also knows.

Knowing that...they use Endou as a 『purse』

Now, they're talking about it in a loud voice...

These guys intend to break off with Endou already...

「Rather than that...Shirasaka-san's father scouts for idols?」

「Ah...can I have autographs?」

「If you get some goods, give me some!」

「What goods?」

「Look...the cup idol drank from or something like that...!」

「...The elite advertising agencies don't gather those things」

They abandoned Endou and approached Yukino.

...Seriously.

This kind of people are flooding with vitality...

「My...Everyone doesn't know that much?」

Minaho-neesan tickles the curiosity of the students even further...!

「It's not that Shirasaka-san's father working on an advertising agency a big thing...because Shirasaka house is a much more amazing noble family...!」

The people easily bites Minaho-neesan's bait.

「Eh...Sensei, what do you mean by that?」

...Yukino

「...Please stop. Isn't that a breach of privacy?」

She just won't let Minaho-neesan.

「Shirasaka-san revealed Yamamine-san's privacy though...!」

...That's.

...She certainly did.

Even so, it's definitely strange for Minaho-neesan to talk about Yukino's house...
But with the atmosphere of this place...momentum is stronger than logic.

「Shirasaka-san's father's home is an owner of a famous newspaper company.
I won't say which newspaper it is but they have a professional baseball team!」

Minaho-neesan's bomb bursts...!⁴

「I...I got it!」

「Yeah...I've seen 『Shirasaka owner』 on a sports news!」

「Right right, they're showing up in the baseball world reform...!」

「Or rather, it's famous for having players fight immediately...!」

Look look...the people were easily caught by the fire...

「That's right. The Shirasaka Owner of that baseball team is being held at the
top of the parent newspaper company right? That person is the younger
brother of Shirasaka's grandfather...」

In short...The current head of Shirasaka house.

Shirasaka Moritsugu.

It's the boss of the power opposing us 『Kuromori』 right now 「Eh...Seriously!?!」

「Then...Shirasaka-san's a super 『Ojou-sama』?」

「Yeah...it's not on the level of just rich」

「Certainly, she's a 『noble』」

「Owning a baseball team means that they have a dome stadium too?」

「Idiot, that newspaper group of company is extremely huge!」

「Right. it's tied up with radio stations and TV stations too」

「That's why, the newspaper brings ticket for various events...!」

The classroom turns noisy from the strange tension.

Yukino just glares at Minaho-neesan.

Making a face that half of her heart is closed.

「You're amazing...Shirasaka」

「Or rather」

「...What?」

「Why is Shirasaka-san...who's from an amazing house going out with Endou?」

「...What?」

「Now that you say it...you're right」

「No matter how arrogant Endou is, saying 『I'm a local celebrity』...it won't compare to Shirasaka house」

「You're right, it's fifty floors different when it comes to houses...!」

「Yeah...she must have very rich, highly educated acquaintances...!」

「Yeah...Why Endou?」

Endou's former followers speaks selfishly.

「Well look...Yuzuki-sensei said about 『Vitality beyond average』?」

「Oh...Elite's young man seems to be weak.」

「Wait...that means that it doesn't need to be Endou?」

「You're right...I think I have quite the 『Vitality』too」

「Idiot, there's no way someone like Shirasaka-san will go out with you...!」

The schoolboys laugh at each other.

The atmosphere of the school has changed before everyone's aware.

Endou lost his position completely.

Nobody will talk to him now.

And Yukino was raised up...

Nobody will talk to her.

She doesn't have the atmosphere you can hang out with anymore./

Both of them completely lost their place to stay in this classroom...

「...It's about time for you to move!」

Suddenly, the classroom door opens...

And the teacher for the next class talks to Minaho-neesan.

「...Thank you. Everyone, it's your turn for 『Medical examination』 Please separate by gender...!⁵」

134. Men's world

It's not something big even if they say that it's a 『Medical examination』
Boys go to an empty classroom on the first floor and the girls go to the gym,
they measure your height and weight, then go to the X-ray.

That's all. It won't even take 30 minutes.

...If you remove the waiting time in the line.

You form a line in the corridor and wait for your turn...

You'll leave your coat in the classroom so you're on your T-shirt only.

「You see...it seems that they're on guard assuming that we'd peek」

Hearing one of my classmate's words, I look outside the window and saw
Yamaguchi-sensei wandering around on his jersey.

「The teachers on counseling are patrolling everywhere」

「Aren't the location of boys and girls completely far away?」

「It's almost the west most and east most of the building」

「Even the X-ray, the boys are on the school building and the girls are in front of
the gym」

「Yeah...it's completely separate」

「No matter what you do, we can't peep!」

「No...you must be an expert to do something about it?」

「What kind of expert?」

「At peeping?」

「Are you an idiot?」

「Well...recently, there are cameras with high performance」

「...It would be a big problem if the photos flowed in the internet and they
discovered which school it is」

「Yeah...that won't be a joke」

「Or rather, aren't the male teachers much more probable to peep than us?」

「Well...there's those kind of scandals recently」

「Idiots, if we peek, it'll just end with suspension and reflection paper but...if a
teacher was found peeing, they'll get disciplinary discharge and they'll be out
forever」

「Yeah...It's impossible for a『peeping teacher』to be reemployed」

...Err

I can't say that I know that this school is filled with hidden cameras.

「But you see...I'd like to see one. The girls are stripping off right now right?」

「They won't...It's just 『body measurement』...they'll still be in their underwear」

「Of course...aren't we still wearing our underwear?」

「But, do they take off their bra when doing X-ray?」

「Is that so...really?」

「Look...there's the wire in the bra」

「Eh...can high school students wear bra with a wire?」

「Well...you see...I wonder what's the truth about it?」

「Hmm...that's another unknown for us」

「...Female body is the last frontier」

「Or rather...that means that becoming an X-ray technician will make you able to see naked women as much as you want?」

「You're right...this time will only be on the school's medical exam」

「I'd like to become an x-ray technician」

「Idiot, there will be days where you shoot old ladies」

「No...as long as I can see naked high school girls for free all day, I am satisfied」

「Idiot...you can only see」

「Yeah...if you're a doctor, you can touch more」

「I'd like that too...it's touch all you can on an all girls' school medical examination」

「You can flip girls' nipple with a cold stethoscope!」

「Then, the girl twitches...」

「...Iyaaan!」

「...Baakaan~!」

「Yeah...looks good」

「...Should I work hard to become a doctor?」

「I'm fine being an x-ray technician...that's way easier」

「Idiot, don't underestimate X-ray!」

「Eh, something bad with X-ray?!」

「You don't know? If your body takes in too much, it'll be a big problem!」

「That's right, your skin would turn green and your body would get muscular!」¹

「There's beam coming out of the eyes you know?」

「And missiles from your stomach...」

「Then your fart stinks!」

「And then fluorescent pink piss will come out of your body!」

「When you piss on a dark place...It'll light up like a neon」

Isn't that quite a big『Calamity』?

「You see...My uncle is a doctor in gynecology」

「...Ooh! I was waiting for that!」

「Isn't that a pussy Disneyland?!」

「Furthermore...you can touch it and say 『I'll palpate it』」

「You see. My uncle said that it's actually quite hard when it becomes work」

「What's hard?!...Isn't it unlimited watch and touch?」

「Well you see...you're looking at a body of a woman that's already inseminated by other men」

「Oh...I see」

「...Now that you say that, it makes me wither a bit」

「You even have to look and touch on old ladies too...」

「No, my uncle once said...it's a big damage to see a beautiful looking girl with a grotesque pussy」

「...I-I see」

「No...Isn't that gap arousing?」

「Could it be that you're a genius?」

「But you see...when you see that everyday, it won't feel like that anymore」

「Yeah. You're right」

「In the end...what kind of work can you see a woman's naked body for all you want?!」

「Should it be an AV actor right?」

「The other day, I saw a book where the AV actor wrote 『you'll be popular with women if you do this』」

「You read that?」

「No, it was in the house...I think it was my brother's」

「That's great but...what did you read?」

「Without omission...『It's often said that women are ****, but it's actually different. I've asked the girls around me』He wrote 『When you actually ask the girl around me, there's actually a lot of them who wishes to be *** by men』it says」

「Isn't that great?...It's a result that it was examined properly」

「Because...That's an AV actor. All the ladies around him are AV actresses」

「...Ah, I see」

「If you listen to the opinion who are comfortable with AV, it won't be the opinion of the women in the world, right?」

「You're right...that's a bit biased」

「Actually, there's a lot of strange things I've read...」

「I see...if you become an AV actor, you can only have sex with AV ladies」

「...Right」

「No, even if it's an AV lady, I'll do it as long as it's a woman」

「Eh...You'll fuck Higashiyama from the old writings?」

「Isn't Higashiyama past fifty already?!」

「You said that you want to fuck women right?」

「Higashiyama isn't a woman! She's a trans!」

「...The criminal babble incomprehensible things」

「The hell's that?!」

Seriously...if it's all boys, they do silly talk

It helps me that my name is in this column...

Endou who's name is ahead in the list is already inside the measurement room.

I'm in the last when it comes to the name order.

There's no one behind Yoshida.

To amuse myself with a silly talk...Endou's with eight people he's not good with.

「By the way...Yoshida, in the end, what the hell was with earlier?」

One of them talks with me.

「That's right...what's with you being 『engaged』with Yamamine-chan!」

「...I can't understand!」

「...I can't accept it!」

Even if you say that...

I don't know how to answer.

「Idiots, you're not looking properly...!」

That was Tanaka

The one I ran across the train the other day...

「No matter how much you look at it, Yamamine-chan's the one who's madly in love with Yoshida!」

...Err

「Yamamine-chan said that she's the one who made the approach...!」

Tanaka told everyone.

「...Now that you've said it」

「...Right」

「If you were approached by someone like her」

「...Yeah」

「Furthermore, she suddenly brings you to her parents, gave greetings saying 『we're engaged』...! Yoshida, is that all true?」

Tanaka looks at my face.

「Yeah...it's true, I went to Megu's house and greeted her parents」

I answered honestly.

「Then the 『engagement』is also reported to the school」

「Furthermore, it was announced to the class...」

「That's right. That would mean that no other girl will talk to Yoshida but Yamamine-chan. Everyone knows that you're Yamamine's 『fiance』after all」

「Eh...Why?」

「Women checks those kind of things every time」

「...Check」

「Whether Yoshida talks to another girl somewhere else...then Yamamine-chan's friends will report to her...」

「『Yoshida-kun is talking to ****-chan happily just now』...They'll say...!」

「They'll tell the girl as well」

「『Yoshida-kun is Megumi's fiance. Do you know?!』or something like that...!」

「Then...Yoshida-kun won't be able to make contact with other girls」

「...S-Scary!」

「...Yamamine-chan has a lot of friends...she also has a network in the track and field so Yoshida-kun's daily high school life will be monitored by the girls...!」

「Yeah...I got a sister so I know that feeling」

「...Is that so?」

「Look, it's rare to have a girl who has a 『fiance』 They'd feel envious of her for a moment...then I think they'd meddle the two even further with a kind face」

「...Women are like that yeah」

「Then...Yamamine-chan won't be able to talk to any other guy than Yoshida?」

「It's fine anyway...Yamamine-chan's madly in love with Yoshida」

「Rather...that's Yamamine-chan's plan isn't it? It's fine even if she comes to contact with other boys but she'd like to make Yoshida for herself only...!」

「『Cut the meat and break the bone』something like that?」²

「...How about that?」

「Rather『We die together』...right?」

「Well...actually, both of them can't afford to have a free romantic high school life. It's almost double suicide」

「Eh...It's possible to break the『engagement』right?」

「Idiot, won't you be scared to date someone who had a past of being 『engaged』even though one's a high school student?!」

「Yeah...Yamamine-chan's an amazing beauty, but thinking about it, it's a bit」

「Even if she breaks up with Yoshida...no one will make a move on her」

「Yoshida will also be cut from other women as long as he's in high school」

「Certainly...it's like a double-suicide」

Megu and I have no choice but to remain married?
The other roads are closed?

「...When you think it like that Yamamine-chan is amazing」

「...Serious girls are a bit scary」

「Yeah...if a girl suddenly take me to their parents and tell to get 『engaged』...that's not an ordinary...normally」

「Yeah...That's seriously bad」

「Yamamine-chan has been prepared that much...!」

「...Yoshida」

「...You」

The men in the class looks at me with 『eyes of pity』...

「You'll be monitored by the girls from now on...

And...if ever someone does something to Yoshida in the school, it'll all reach Yamamine-chan's ears」

「Yoshida no longer has a free school life!」

...Is that how it will be?

Nah, it doesn't make any problems though 「Speaking of which, Yoshida. I heard that you also reported to Captain Takeshiba from the track and field?」

It has already been spread.

「Yeah...we did. It's a senpai Megu has been indebt with after all」

I talked about this morning honestly

...Then.

「Oh, you're already dead...Yoshida, your life has already ended」

「Yeah...Takeshiba-senpai is a boss in the athletic clubs」

...Err

「...No, she said that she'll support us」

Yeah...she's not bad.

Captain Takeshiba is...

「That's the problem...she gave her support」

「I'm sure that it has already reached the girls on athletic clubs」

「Well, Yamamine-chan will feel safe now」

Eh...Why?

「If ever a male senpai makes a move on Yamamine-chan...」

「The girls on the club won't let that happen!」

「Yamamine-chan's body will be completely protected...!」

「Or rather...She's untouchable to other men?」

「...Well, that's better for Yoshida though」

「But...That's the same for you」

...Me?

「If you treat Yamamine-chan like a bastard...you'll be burned to the ground by other girls...!」

「You'll sieza in front of the captain of the athletic club」

「Yeah...You'll be preached and be forced to do something...!」

「Like a hundred laps on the ground...」

「That's great if it ends like that」

「Maybe making you kneel naked in front of Yamamine-chan and all the students...」

「Yeah...that's possible」

「Rather...I want that instead」

Somehow... it has become amazing
Is that how 『engagement』approved by school is?
Well...it can't be helped.

I'll just accept whatever it is in silence.

I decided to be Megu's 『fiance』by my own will 「Still...thinking about it」

「Yeah...being Yamamine-chan's 『fiance』」

「I feel jealous, pity...I don't get it at all」

...I
I feel very happy though...
But, everyone's face is so gloomy...

「...To be honest, I feel jealous that you got a woman but」
「...Greeting the parents or announcing that you're officially 『engaged』」
「...It's impossible for me.」
「...Same, I can't」
「...I can't imagine it for a bit」

Everyone looks at my face.

「Yoshida's high school life has ended with this. From now on, he's going to be monitored by his 『bride』and 『other girls』」
「Yeah...specially when his 『bride』is his classmate」

Err...
I only think of it as fun though...
We can be together 「...But you see」

「...Yeah」

「Why Yoshida?!」

「...You're right」

「Why did Yamamine-chan pick Yoshida...that's what I don't understand?!

「Why is she so madly in love with you?

「...What the hell is that?

The boys asked me.

「Sorry...Even I don't know」

I answered honestly.

「Of course...that means we won't know it too」

「There's no way Yoshida will know it」

...The hell's that?

...Then.

The『medical exam』door opens

Endou came out from inside.

Endou seems to have finished his measurements.

He noticed me and glared at me.

「...Yoshida, remember this. I'll never forgive you」

Endou says that, threatening me.

「Endou...what can you do?

I answered Endou calmly...

「...Motherfucker!」

Endou's about to hit me!

...But!

I know that Endou's body hurts that he's walking funnily.

I look at Endou's movement calmly...

...I dodged his blow.

Endou then fell to the ground.

「...What are you doing?」

I spoke to Endou on the floor with cold eyes.

「...Dammit!」

Endou shouted out loud!

A middle aged male teacher comes out from the room.

「What's with the noise?!」

I answered.

「Ah...he fell on his own. That's all」

「...Is that true?」

The teacher looks at us.

「Err...Yes」

「Ah, yes, Endou slipped by himself」

「It's not a big problem」

The boys in the class said so.

「Endou too, you must've a game with the baseball club right?...Isn't that bad if you fall and get yourself injured?」

Tanaka asked Endou.

「...Dammit! Remember this!」

Endou goes to the X-ray furiously.

「...I don't get it. but. I feel like I've solved something」

I told the male teacher.

「I see...Well, it's great if it's nothing.

Saying that, the teacher returns to his classroom.

「...You've changed」

Tanaka tells me.

「Yeah...it feels like you're settled down」

「Even if Endou was angry, you're not panicking at all...」

「Are you not scared of him?」

...I

「No...I know that there's someone scarier than Endou...」

Yeah...

I won't flinch from Endou anymore.

I have to be able to deal with it calmly and smoothly anytime.

If not...

I will cause inconvenience as a member of Kuromori 「People scarier than Endou...」

「Oh...Yamamine-chan?」

...No, you see.

I didn't say anything about that.

「As expected, you changed...Yoshida」

「It's true that men change when he gets a woman」

「...Somehow, it feels happy and sad」

...Err

I should better stop clearing the misunderstanding...

I can't explain about Cesario Viola to them...

「But...if you had sex with Yamamine-chan, report to us!」

「Somehow, treat us something」

「Canned juice will do!」

「As long as you treat us properly...okay?!」

...I

I counted the number of classmates I have here

There's eight people who are talking to me but...

There's twelve or thirteen people who's listening to the situation.

Yeah...with this.

The money I have right now won't be enough...

I don't need to treat the delinquents and Endou's former followers...

「Let's buy after coming back from the X-ray...!」

I told my classmates.

「Eh...What does that mean?」

Tanaka looked at me...

「I can do at least one juice for everyone...」

Hearing my words...

My classmates...

「Ah...I thought that Yamamine-chan has become suddenly beautiful but...」

「I can see her sparkling somehow...」

「...Could that be」

「...She has become an adult woman?」

「Yeah...Well, they said that they're 『engaged』...」

「Yamamine-chan...is an extremely serious girl, right...!」

The boys sighed.

「That's why we're 『engaged』 Megu and I」

I said clearly.

「I promise to everyone...I'll definitely make Megu happy!」

Tanaka looks at me.

「...You're going to give to for each」

Tanaka grins.

「If you do, we'll forgive you...right?!」

Tanaka tells the men.

「...It can't be helped」

「...Don't make Yamamine-chan cry」

「...Invite us on your wedding ceremony...you bastard」

The boys said then laughed.

「Got it...I'll get two for each...!」

I smiled to everyone.

135. Classroom dynamics

After the X-ray, we all go together to the vending machine corner.
Twelve people in all...two for each of them...

「Pick what you want...!」
「...Sure!」

I shove a thousand bill into the vending machine.
Then...each of them picked what they wanted.

「Yoshida, I'd like to get on this vending machine though...!」
...Okay, sure
I also shove a thousand bill in there.
Everyone's buying without hesitation...
This is for them to accept my relationship with Megu, it can't be helped.

「...Everyone, don't open and drink it yet」
I stopped the classmates who were about to open it.
「Eh...Why, Yoshida?」
Tanaka who's behind me, asked.

「How many more people not here that we should be giving juice too?」
...That's right.
Those here right now are only the people who we met up in the hallway.
Since we're lined up in syllabic order...those who have entered the 『Body measurement』 ahead didn't talk to me.
I feel sorry for treating those who only are here while those guys don't know.

「I don't plan to treat all the boys in the class. I don't intend to buy for Endou... his friends, and the delinquents...but, I want to keep it fair except for those guys」

I talked to Tanaka honestly.
「...Yeah, you're right. Should we buy some for Aihara, Katou, Kikuchi, Goda?」

Tanaka tells me.

Those were the names who were in the front.

「What about Ota?」

The other boy asked.

「Ota is in Endou's group, right?」

「No...He should be out of the group because of the trouble with Endou the other day」

「Then, let's buy Ota's share too」

I decided.

It's a sorry for the future troubles.

If the two canned juice would be enough, I don't want to cause further discord.

「Buy what you think they will like」

I throw coins into the vending machine.

「...Buy Aihara and Goda's share on the vending machine I picked」

「...Please」

Saying that, I handed money to my classmate.

「If you mind that far...shouldn't you just buy for all the men in the class?」

One of the men asked me...

「No...It's just a loss when you buy for Endou's group and the delinquents. Rather, they might underestimate Yoshida and extort him in the future」

Tanaka answered instead of me.

Right...Those people are likely to grow arrogant when you deal with them badly.

「Yoshida shouldn't give the canned juice to Aihara by himself. Let others casually pass it. Just say『This is from Yoshida』...!」

Tanaka tells me...

During the time with the female track and field team...Megu and I handed it to everyone by ourselves.

...Hmm.

The people in the same class...

May feel unfavorable when dealt badly

『Women's world』and 『Men's world』are different...

「Got it...I'll let everyone else do it」

「I will give the one's for Kato and Kikuchi」

Tanaka takes over.

「When I hand it over, I'll say 『This is from Yoshida』 Then, when Kato and Kikuchi looks at Yoshida, just say 『Drink』...Just lightly, and don't make it look you're pushing them...!」

He gave me an advice.

「You do Ota and Hirabayashi...」

Tanaka instruct another boy...

「Eh...Me?」

「You were in the same middle school as Ota, right?」

「...Right, but」

「Ota went out of Endou's group and tries to get into a different group. Since it's a good opportunity, let's have him on us」

Tanaka...he's quite the boss type

「Then, I'll hand this to Aihara and Goda」

The buy who bought juice for the two a while ago has declared.

「...Thanks. I'll leave it to you」

He smiled at me.

「I never knew that Yoshida's an honest guy」

「Yeah...I thought that you're just a strange guy who's always absentminded」

「As expected... your head gets clearer when you throw away your virginity?」

...Eh?

「...What? Didn't you do it with Yamamine-chan?...You're already an 『Adult』 right?」

「Y-Yeah」

...Err

I threw away my virginity to Yukino though...

Of course, I can't say that here 「But...how does sex feel?」

「Yamamine-chan's tits maybe small but her style is great...!」

「Is it true that girls who play athletics are tight?」

...Err

「Idiots, it's Yoshida's first time too...there's no way he can compare it to others!」

Tanaka laughs.

Yup...Let's just shut up for now.

About Misuzu, Nagisa, Katsuko-nee, or Mana...

Also...Yukino.

「Well, in exchange of Yoshida popping Yamamine-chan's cherry, he has to devote the rest of his life to Yamamine-chan...!」

「Really...He no longer has a free life anymore」

「Well, good luck!」

Tanaka and the others speaks out open-mindedly...

「But...Is it really okay that we don't buy the share of those delinquents?」

One timid boy asked me.

「Those are the people who have a grudge」

I answered him.

「It's fine...I don't want to get along with them anyway」

I don't need to waste time to be concerned with them.

「But...they have contact with delinquents outside the school too...」

Timid-kun said in fright.

「That doesn't matter...Even Yoshida knows the『blonde senpai』」

『Blonde senpai』...It's Nei-san.

「Oh...Right」

「That 『Blonde senpai』and the foreigner woman who graduated last year seems to have been the worst combination in this school...!」

Margo-san...

「...Didn't they burn down the Kendo grounds?」

「It seems that they have beaten up a teacher and left him paralyzed」

「Eh...I heard that it was three people?」

「Wasn't the Karate-club abolished?」

「...I heard that boxing club was annihilated?」

A month since the entrance ceremony...

Nei-san and Margo-san's infamy has already spread to the first years...

「I was seriously surprised when the 『Blonde Senpai』came to our classroom the other day...!」

「Yeah...She was such a beauty...」

「Her tits were huge」

「Also, her waist is so tight...!」

「Even though she's such a beauty...」

「...This world is unfair!」

「She even threatened Endou...!」

...That happened too, right.

「Yoshida...where did you come to know that 『blonde senpai』?」

Tanaka asks me.

The gaze of the men gathered at me.

...Err 「On the rooftop, the other day」

「...Rooftop」

「I was hit by Endou...my face was swollen and I skipped classes」

「Oh...right」

「That happened too」

「...I met her that time」

...Yeah

That was my encounter with Nei-san.

I fainted after I was beaten up so Nei-san let me rest on her lap.

「I see. There's the talk that the 『Blonde Senpai』is always on the rooftop skipping classes. Then, she found Yoshida who was beaten down...!」

「Did she come knowing that Yoshida was hit by Endou?」

「I see...so that's how it is」

No...It's not that easy.

...Well fine.

「But...is the 『Blonde Senpai』that caring?」

Tanaka asked me.

「She's kind. A very gentle one」

I want everyone to know the real Nei-san too...

「Is her character unforgiving or illogical?」

「...It's tough」

「No, she maybe thinking of Yoshida as her 『new plaything』?」

「That's possible...!」

「You're right...She was having fun when she broke to our class」

「Yeah...She even bullied Endou happily」

「Insanity is contained in her eyes...!」

「She sure is a dangerous one」

...Err

Everyone thinks that way.

「Well fine, it's 『blonde senpai』after all Rather than that, Yoshida, if the delinquents say something about the canned juice, just hit them...!」

Tanaka said.

「...Hit them?」

「Yeah...Even if they're delinquents, they're still students of this school in the end. They're not a big of a threat. They're just first years like us...!」

...That's certainly true.

「When your opponent shows a chance...just hit them with a 『Stranglehold』」

A glasses boy said.

「...Stranglehold?」

「That's right. Hold down your opponent's throat with your hand. This seems very effective during fights...-is what's written on a famous book written by a

karate teacher」

...Oh.

So you read that thing?

「『Competition one-on-one fights are far from real fights. A man's battle is normally 1v3 or even 4』is what the teacher said」

...That's.

Isn't that just fighting whoever in the town/

「He said that you should aim at your opponent's inhaling breath」

...Inhaling breath?

「Look, you breath out when you're going to take some powerful action right? That's when you hit them. On the contrary, don't you have to hold your breath when defending? Their muscle turn tense...that's why the opponent breathes out everything, then they'll make the attack once they breath in. That's the moment when the opponent has no power to attack or defend」

...I see

Margo-san catches the opponent off guard when she attacks...

She might be looking at her opponent's breathing pattern.

I'll ask her about it later.

「It's Hamamoto's martial arts talk again?」

The glasses boy seems to be called Hamamoto

「Hamamoto is a martial arts otaku after all...」

Tanaka described Hamamoto.

「To be accurate 『Martial arts book』otaku」

「Yeah...he's only good at reading and talking about it...」

「It's not that he's doing martial arts though」

「Hamamoto, what club are you in?」

「Shogi club」

「...You must love fighting?」

「...He doesn't like practices that make you sweat」

「I'm a theorist!」

Oh...So he's that kind of guy.

「Well fine...let's go back to the classroom for now」

The boss Tanaka told everyone.

「If the delinquents complained about it...just don't mind them.」

「...Thanks」

I thanked Tanaka

「If they only complain...I don't know what will really happen」

「Got it...I'll do something about it myself」

I answered.



Everyone goes back to the classroom...

Almost all of the men came back but there's not even a third of the women in here.

The girls seems to be taking time.

Well...the gym is far away.

The girls also have trouble changing their clothes.

「...You guys are late. What were you doing?」

The boys who returned to the classroom ahead...if I recall, he's 『Kato』...asked us who came back together.

「...Kato, this is from Yoshida」

Tanaka gave two canned juice to Kato.

「...Kikuchi too. This is from Yoshida」

Kikuchi who's on his desk was given a canned juice too.

「...Eh, Yoshida?」

The two looked at me in surprise.

...I

I did as Tanaka told me...

「Oh...Drunktards!」

...I-I bit myself.
What「drunkard」?

「O-Ota...This is from Yoshida」

Ota was also given a juice.

「Eh, are you sure...Yoshida?」
「Yeah...drink it」

I said it properly this time...
The juice reached Aihara and Goda too.

「This is Yoshida's treat. Let's all drink」

Tanaka took the lead.
Everyone opened their juice, and...
...drink it...¹

Hmm...for the time being, it『proceeds in a logical manner』...?²
...Endou is glaring at us with a astonished face.
Endou's followers gather together and ignored me.
...Well, it can't be helped.
I think it's great that they don't pick a quarrel...
...Then.

「Hey, where's my share?!」
「That's right, where's our juice?」

...As expected.
The delinquent Kobayashi and Omiya³

「Sorry but no juice for you」

I answered clearly.

「Huh?!...Why?!」

Omiya stands up from his seat.

「I don't intend to get along with you guys...!」
「What the hell did you say you piece of shit!!」

Omiya comes closer to me.

「...Don't fuck with me! Are you underestimating me you fucker?!」

Omiya shouts to my ears.

He seems to think that this will work...

Yakuza who's three times scarier than Omiya had done this to me...

It's too late for me to be scared of this.

Rather...I'm aiming at the time she's out of his breath.

Following Hamamoto's advice earlier...

No...I intend to be Margo-san this time...

「.....Nn ! ! ! 」

At the moment Omiya tries to breath in...!

I chase that gap and thrust my hand on Omiya's throat!

...Err

If it was Margo-san...She'd accelerate here!!

「...Suu!!」

While I was holding down Omiya's throat...I hit his body on the classroom's wall at the same time!

Omiya's back hit the wall strongly!

Omiya's face has turned red as I hold his throat.

「...Sorry, but there's no share for you...!」

...I'll never let out a loud voice.

A small and low voice...but sharp, I throw my will to my opponent!

I must not entrust it to emotions...

Hold down your emotions and talk only using repulsive power.

That is deeper and sharper...those words pierces the opponent's heart.

That's what I learned from Minaho-neesan.

「...That's how it is」

I pushed Omiya's throat once again then released my hand.

Omiya sinks down the wall and coughs out.

He has completely lost his fighting spirit...

「...Hamamoto...that was really effective」

I speak to Hamamoto who taught me about 『Stranglehold』

「Y-Yeah...o-of course」

The『martial arts otaku』, Hamamoto has a slightly surprised expression.

「Was that Karate?」

「Y-Yeah...you're right, it's e-empty handed karate...!」

Huh...that's strange?

I did as Hamamoto told me but...

The boys and girls in the class are looking at me with a surprised face.

「Yoshida...you're surprisingly a fighter...」

The one who said that is...Oh, it was Kato

「Is Yoshida the type that's dangerous when he lose his temper...?」

「Nothing less from the 『blonde senpai's』pupil」

「Yeah...that was a dreadful charging power」

...Hey

When did I become Nei-san's pupil?

「But you see...that was Omiya's fault just now」

「Yeah...It's Yoshida's freedom who to treat」

「It's wrong to force him」

「...Anyway, drink the juice you were given」

...Tanaka said.

「Everything's fine...Anyway, we know that Yoshida proceeds in a logical manner」

Having someone who says that really helps me.

「T-That's right.」

「Thanks for the drink」

「Thanks for the feast!」

「Thanks, Yoshida!」

「Itadakimasu...Yoshida-san」

Hey...Who's the one who just said 「Yoshida-san」?

Oh...the timid-kun earlier 「Stop the –san even as a joke...you can just call me 『Yoshida』」

「Ah...yes」

「Yes」is also strange...well fine.

「Shirasaka-san...what are you doing there?」

Hearing that voice...I turned behind.

...Yukino is

...in the classroom's doorway 「You don't need to stand over there, you can just come in you know?」

The girl standing behind Yukino complains to her as she stands at the entrance.

「...Ah, yeah」

Yukino let the complaining girl pass through.

Yukino seems to have seen my 『stranglehold』just in time when she was about to return to the classroom.

Her face looks surprised after all.

「You're in the way...Shirasaka-san」

Another girl behind Yukino complains again.

「Shirasaka-san's fundamental attitude is quite big」

The girl sitting in the chair told Yukino.

「She only wants big panties right」

The girl who came inside the classroom after Yukino has said.

「...Big panties?」

One of the delinquent...Kobayashi has asked that girl.

Oh, this girl is from the delinquents too.

「Well you see...Shirasaka-san is wearing a very huge panty! It's even hiding her navel!」

The delinquent girl said in a loud voice.

「...That's so bad!」

「To be honest, it stinks like an old lady!」

The girls laugh at Yukino.

「Eh...Shirasaka-san, you have a bad stomach?」

A girl from the serious group asks Yukino.

「...Y-Yeah...A bit」

Yukino answered.

「That's wrong...Shirasaka-san's house is rich so her panties are big too!」

「That's right...the cloth is surely different!」

「Is the brand dekapan?」

「There's no way that's true. It's something like a very thick fabric!」

「Wool panty?」

「...Shirasaka-san's panty is a nice panty, it's big, Biig!」

「Let's call Shirasaka-san 『Dekapan-chan』from now on!」

「Ah...That's good!」

Minaho-neesan's plan has won perfectly.

Yukino's house...by announcing the Shirasaka family...Yukino will be incurring antipathy from the delinquent girls.

Noble, rich...a family on the top of mass media.

The girls who were told that Yukino is in such an environment will feel jealousy, hatred.

This flow will spread throughout the whole class.

Yukino will be isolated.

「...Hey, Yukino」

Endou called out Yukino.

「...Leave me alone...don't talk to me right now!」

Yukino answered Endou coldly.

「Aaah...Poor Endou-kun.」

「It can't be helped. Endou-kun's house won't be a match for Shirasaka-san's house after all...!」

「『My father's a president and my uncle's a councilor』won't be reaching her anymore?」

「It's impossible you know...Dekapan-chan's relative own a baseball team, and his father is a Gyokaijin!」

「Ahaha...that's completely impossible!」

The delinquent girl group who should've been close to Endou is now targetting Endou and Yukino with their attacks.
The state of the class has changed completely.

「If you wear a big panty too...you might become an 『Ojou-sama』like Shirasaka-san you know?!」

「No way, impossible...I don't want to wear such big panties so I don't want to be an 『Ojou-sama』or something!」

Yukino was wearing a big panty during the 『body measurement』...
She stick it to her abdomen to hide the tattoo.
The shining green 『吉田』tattoo
So that no one will see that tattoo...

「If he sees those panties, Endou-kun will cool down too right?」
「Yeah...a love of a hundred years will cool down too」
「There's no fragment of sexiness there」

...That's when another girl jumps in.

「Hey hey hey hey...Yamamine-chan's wearing an amazing underwear you know!」

Megu...
She's a 『Yamamine』so she's the last person by name order
She's not back in the classroom yet.
This girl who have seen Megu's underwear must've been with her in the measurement room.

「Amazing...what is?」
「No, it's Yamamine-chan so it's a plain white bra and panty that follows the school regulations...but, it looks expensive. I think it's a top down set. I think that costs more than 10k yen」
「Uwa...really?」

「Well look...it looks completely different judging from the appearance. It's a very adult-like design. Furthermore, Yamamine-chan's style is good, right?...It looks like a model is wearing it!

...I'm glad that we took the 12k yen one.
I'm very happy that Megu's being praised.

「Hey hey...Yamamine-chan's underwear!」

Another girl jumps to the classroom.

「...We're just talking about it now!」

...But
Why are the delinquent girls are so loud?

「You see...I heard this when Yamamine-chan was talking to another girl」

The girl who jumped in said.

「That underwear was bought by Yoshida-kun...!」

The classroom's eyes turned to me.

「Eh!...Is that true, Yoshida-kun?」

...I
...Eeei!
I'll just break through saying the truth!

「Yeah...we went shopping yesterday...」

「Uwa, you two bought underwear!」

「...I chose Megu's underwear...and Megu decides my underwear」

...Somehow.
...It's very embarrassing.

「How much did that set of underwear cost?」

「...12k yen」

「Did Yoshida-kun really buy it with his money?」

...I
「Isn't that obvious?...I plan to pay for Megu's needs from now on」

Megu is my 『woman』after all.

「Yamamine-chan's engagement ring was also bought by Yoshida-kun then, of course?」

「...Yeah. Uhm...I had some revenue after all」

Minaho-neesan paid me with money for doing work for 『Kuromori』

「Eh...Yoshida-kun's money? Weren't you abandoned by your parents?」

「Uhm...my parent's divorced so I don't see them that much」

Rather than 'that much'...I've never seen them for a while.

My mother has abandoned me and went back to her parent's house...

My father disappeared...

「Yoshida's working part time」

Tanaka told the girls.

「I came across him the other day on the train. I saw Yoshida wearing a patch while he's on work. If I recall...it was a flower shop, right?」

Oh...that happened, didn't it?

「Yeah...That's right. The flower shop in front of the station. It's named 『Schwarz_Wald』」

Well, I helped loading the car at the floral market so I'm not lying.

I also promised to help them out too...

Since I've made an appointment to go to Nagisa's house once a week...I will have to help in the shop a lot.

「Eh, the cute and famous shop?」

「Yoshida-kun, you're working part-time on 『Schwarz』?」

Not just the delinquent girls but the normal girls joined our talk.

Nagisa's shop is that popular?

「Yeah...I'm acquainted the owner-manager of the shop」

Should I say she's one of my 『women』instead of acquaintance.

「That manager is so beautiful...!」

「Or rather...I heard that shop is famous for their cute girls, isn't it?」

「That's right...I heard that even if a normal girl asks 『please let me work here』 they won't be employed...!」

「Rather than that...I heard that the manager of the shop scouts beauties」

「Then...why was Yoshida-kun employed?」

「...Eh?」

「A shop with only cute girls...so why only Yoshida-kun?」

...Well

「No...I don't come out of the store. I just work in the background, like purchasing in the flower market, that's when they need men's hand the most」

「Oh, I see...because the clerks are all girls, they need men for heavy work」

「If you're working there...introduce us too!」

Tanaka said such a thing...

「No, they don't need that many people. It's the kind of work just one man would do」

「Then, it can't be helped...but, if ever they need other hands, just call us!」

「...Yeah」

「I want to do it too!」

「I want to be friends with the girls there too so I want to do it too!」

「...If you were recommended, Yoshida will be fired!」

They laughed.

Yeah...I was somehow able to fool them.

「Then, you bought Megumi's present with the money you earned from part time?」

「Yoshida-kun's very manly...!」

「Well...they're 『engaged』so he has to do that much at least」

「But you see...That's amazing. Yeah」

It's not that amazing...

I have to support Megu and Mana's life from now on...

I have prepared myself already.

「But you see...if he works on a shop with only cute clerks, won't Yamamine-san worry about him?」

「Eh, Megumi?」

「Yoshida-kun might be NTR'd or something?」

「No way...That's impossible you know?」

「Rather than that...Yoshida-kun might be distracted by the beautiful clerks...!」

「Ah...That's possible...!」

...Hey hey.

The girls are saying what they want.

「...That's no problem!」

When I turned around.

Megu is standing at the entrance.

Megu seems to have finished the 『body measurement』and 『X-ray』...

「You see...I will work on that shop too...!」

...That's right.

Megu has to work on Nagisa's shop in exchange of Misuzu...

「That's why there's no need to worry!」

Megu smiles.

「You're right, if it's the current Yamamine-chan...it's not strange for her to work on that shop...!」

「Really...She's gotten cuter right」

「Yeah...women in love are different」

「No no no...it's an 『engaged』woman, right?」

The girls laugh at each other.

The delinquent girls, the normal girls...everyone, together.

There's no girl who has hateful emotions towards Megu.

I feel relieved.

...No

Yukino's here.

Yukino is looking at us with gloomy eyes...

136. Just the two in the classroom.

Now then, Minaho-neesan comes back to the classroom as soon as all of the students came back to the classroom.

「...Take your seats」

Everyone returned to their seats.

「As everyone knows, there will be a 『fire drill』after this...!」

Fire drill...I feel that it's not something you have to declare beforehand...
But, today everyone knows that they will do fire drill...
It seems that this school has always been doing a day in golden week's weekday
the 『Medical Exam』and 『Fire drill』for years...
Well...I guess it can't be helped.

「You can dismiss yourselves after the drill. There's no need to come back for the return homeroom...」

Minaho-neesan said.
Looking at the clock...it's now 10:20.
Yukino and Mana's grandfather...Old man Ichikawa will be coming by 11:00

「Sorry but I will have to meet someone after this. I can't go to the 『Fire drill』
I'll leave my class to Hasegawa-sensei on the other class. If something happens,
please consult Hasegawa-sensei」

Minaho-neesan seems to have prepared beforehand.
It'll take more time to evacuate all the students to the ground...
Also, according to Geropa-kouchou...someone from the fire department will
come?
Perhaps, they'll teach how to use fire extinguisher or something...
Yeah...if she participates the training, she won't make it in time.

「Also...the two representatives will remain in the classroom. You can get
excluded from the fire drill. I will have you two help us transport some
materials」

...Err

The class representatives are...

Megu and I...!

「...The one who'll do the roll-call on the ground...who was the representative before Yoshida-kun?」

「Ah...Me!」

One of the guy I bought juice earlier...Goda raised his hand.

「Then, I'll leave it to you...as for the girls」

「I will do it...!」

Ogino-san raised her hand.

「Then, please...please report to Hasegawa-sensei for the roll-call」

「...Yes」

「Then...that's all. I don't have anything else to report. Tomorrow will be a usual class. Don't loosen up just because it's consecutive holidays」

...That's right, this year's golden week is a series of holidays with workdays on between.

Today, May 1, and May 2 are weekdays...

Although...there will be four consecutive holidays after that.

「...Then, please wait in the classroom until the drill starts」

As soon as Minaho-neesan says.

The fire alarm rings loudly...!

...Jiriririririririririririririririr!

The broadcast speaker of the whole school...

『...The fire drill has begun. The fire drill has begun. The fire outbreak is from the chemistry room, second floor. All students must evacuate to the ground immediately. The stairs on the north side can't be used...I repeat. The fire outbreak is from the chemistry room, second floor. All students must evacuate to the ground immediately....!』

This voice is Geropa-kouchou

It feels like he's having fun.

Well, he's making all the students move with his voice...

Humans with such strong desire to rule must be having pleasure from giving out such instructions.

「Then...Everyone, please evacuate! Yoshida-kun and Yamamine-san will remain」

By Minaho-neesan's instructions, the students head outside of the classroom.

「Don't do anything lewd just because you two are alone okay?!」

Tanaka told me laughingly.

「...No way we'd do that」

「Right! You can just flirt a lot with Megumi later~」

「There's still half of the golden week left」

「...Well, have fun!」

「Yamamine-chan, get pampered a lot!」

「Eeh? Isn't Yoshida-kun unreliable?」

「That's not true...He even bought a ring from his part-time work」

「Oh, I'd like someone to give me a ring too」

「Want to be『Engaged』too?」

「...Well, I'll pass on that」

「Thanks for the juice...!」

「Bye, Yoshida」

The boys and girls called me and Megu out as they go out of the classroom one by one.

...N?

Yukino's talking to Minaho-neesan.

The only people remaining in the classroom are Minaho-neesan, Yukino, Megu and I...

「...Uhm, Sensei?」

「My, what is it...Shirasaka-san?」

Minaho-neesan smiled to Yukino calmly.

...With her cold eyes.

「I'd like to talk」

Yukino speaks to Minaho-neesan with a gloomy face.

「Sorry but, I don't have time like I said earlier. There's a person coming to visit the school...!」

Yukino doesn't know that it's her own mother and grandfather.
In addition to that...her little sister is captured naked in a hidden room under the principal's office.

「...It's just quick. Uhm, it's about this...!」

Yukino took out a small batch with a LCD from her pocket.
...Oh right, that.
The liquid floating on the LCD shows how many times Yukino still needs to have sex with me.

Yukino has promised to take my semen a hundred times in one week.

No, the number floating above the badge is...『53』

...Eh?!

...『53』????!!

「...The number has decreased before I was aware」

...That's right.

I should've done it 35 times with Yukino.

That's why the remaining number has to be 『65』

Err... $65 - 53 = 12$

...It decreased by 12?

「...I wonder what happened? I don't know it...could it be that it's broken...!」

Minaho-neesan laughs with her cold eyes.

...Eh?

Could this be...?

I desperately remember it in my head.

...That's right. This is.

The numbers I violated Mana...!

Yesterday...I ejaculated inside her vagina three times in the rainy courtyard.

After that...two more times in the mansion's bedroom.

Seven more times until morning at Tamayo-san's love hotel.

Total...12 times.

The numbers fit perfectly.

「You can decrease it as you want...I'll let the badge decide the number of times you have left. Isn't that helpful to you that the numbers go down?」

Minaho-neesan has subtracted Yukino's quota by the number of times Mana was violated!

「...That is」

Yukino's puzzled.

Minaho-neesan has been deceiving her a lot of times.

Even if it's Yukino...she should be learning soon.

She needs to suspect that something's happening in the background...

「...Rather than that, what would you do? Want to continue?」

Minaho-neesan reads Yukino's mind and changes the topic on purpose.

「...Continue?」

「As long as I confirmed your pregnancy...you don't need to fill up your quota」

「...T-That's」

The 『Forced pregnancy』was emphasized once again.

Yukino looks down...

Her pregnancy has to be fixed to escape the hell of being continuously fucked by me.

「Well...It's highly possible that you're already pregnant. But, we won't know it until a few days later」

Yukino's silent.

「It's okay. With your figure, your stomach won't stand out until you're pregnant for eight months. I will allow you to be excluded in physical education. We also think about the child in your belly first. You can be absent from school for the last two months and give birth to either Hawaii or Australia」

Minaho-neesan speaks like it is natural.

「...What will happen to me after I give birth?」

「I don't know. I will take the child and I'll say goodbye to you. I will free you. Go wherever you want. You can love freely as well」

「...That's」

「...Are you dissatisfied with something」

Minaho-neesan's cold gaze looks through Yukino's heart.

「...I don't want to be pregnant. Not with that person」

Yukino glares at me who's on my seat.

Megu comes near to me and obstructs Yukino's view.

「...Yoshi-kun」

Megu holds my hand tightly.

「If you don't want Yoshida-kun, would you do it with others? In that case, I'll have you take on the homeless in front of the station, are you okay with that?」

Minaho-neesan smiles.

「...Yoshida-kun, is still kind to you I think」

「..... ! 」

I look at Yukino from Megu's shadow.

Yukino is glaring at Minaho-neesan.

「...That eye looks good. It won't be fun to bully you if your eyes are gloomy」

Minaho-neesan provokes Yukino even further.

「In case you don't want Yoshida-kun or the homeless...the next one would be dogs」

...Dog?

「Do you know bestiality? A big dog's penis will ejaculate inside you. You'll take a dog's semen and give birth to a puppy...!」

Minaho-neesan threatens Yukino.

「...No. I definitely don't want that... !」

Yukino is trembling.

「I will do that far if you disobey my instructions. I have the the organization and power to do anything to you」

Minaho-neesan's threat continues...

「...I'm always ready to release all of your foolishness in the internet. They can discover your name and address too. You do know that once your embarrassing videos are uploaded to the internet, it'll follow you around

Yukino can't answer.

「It won't be just you...your parents, little sister...and everyone in the Shirasaka clan will be affected」

Minaho-neesan looks happy.

「...Do you want to be a disgrace of the whole clan?」

...Yukino.

「...I don't want that. I definitely don't want that」

「Then...you better not go against me, right? Give birth to Yoshida-kun's child. That's the minimum condition...if you refuse that, I'll make you fall into a much deeper and horrible hell...!」

「...You're crazy! Abnormal!」

「I'd like to tell you...Yoshida-kun and Megumi can also release your embarrassing videos to the internet」

...Eh? I don't know that though.

Minaho-neesan looks at me and Megu.

「Both of you...if ever Yukino-san becomes selfish unreasonably, you can release it as you want. You don't need to take permission from me...!」

Yukino looks at Megu and me with eyes of despair.

「Yes understood...Minaho-san」

Megu answers.

「If Yukino resists us, I will ruin Yukino」

Megu said with a serious face.

Yukino's trembling in humiliation.

「Yoshida-kun...what about you?」

...I

「Yes...if Yukino disobeys us, we won't go easy on her」

I...as a member of 『Kuromori』...

Added a threat to Yukino...

「Sorry but I don't have time to talk to you right now」

Minaho-neesan looks at the clock at the wall...

「Please go and support Endou-kun's practice game as planned」

Minaho-neesan orders Yukino

「...Eh?」

...Yukino's confused.

「I'll break up with him already. I will...!」

「This is an order! Go and watch Endou-kun's game!」

Minaho-neesan ordered her strongly...

「...Yes, understood」

Yukino responds while shivering.

「Yoshida-kun and Megumi will go watch over too right...?!」

No...I don't want to watch Endou's match though.

It's not that interesting...

But...If Minaho-neesan says that...

She must be planning something...

「Yes...we'll go!」

Megu replied instead of me.

「Then, Yukino will watch the game with Yoshida-kun and Megumi...!」

Minaho-neesan orders Yukino.

「Remember that Yoshida-kun and Megumi's orders are my orders...okay?!」

Yukino can't answer.

「...Do you want the Shirasaka house to be involved and perish?」

...Hearing Minaho-neesan, Yukino

「...Understood」

Yukino shed tears.

「Very good...Ufufu, I love Yukino-san's crying face the best...!」

Minaho-neesan is pleased.

「Then...Yukino-san should should participate the fire drill...!」

「...Uhm, I...!」

「...Hurry up and go!」

「...Yes!」

Yukino left the classroom while crying...

She looked at me for a moment.

With eyes of hatred and rejection...

Yukino hates me from the bottom of her heart...

「...Megumi」

Minaho-neesan looks at us.

「Yes...Minaho-san?」

「Come to the principal's office after 15 minutes. And you'll be with Mana-san during the negotiation with Ichikawa-san」

「...Understood」

Megu answers.

「Stay in this classroom for fifteen minutes...Also, Megumi, settle your emotions」

Settle Megu's emotions?

「Yes...Understood」

「Then...I will be going ahead. See you later...!」

Minaho-neesan came out of the classroom laughing.

「...Yoshi-kun」

At the moment we were alone...Megu snuggles to me.

「...Megu?」

「Hey...Kiss me. I want a kiss」

「...Sure」

I pile my lips to Megu.

「...I love you Yoshi-kun」

「...Megu」

Megu pulls my hand.

「...Here」

「...Eh?」

「Just come...!」

「...Sure」

Megu pulled me to Yukino's seat

「...Kiss me here again」

「...Megu」

「...I want Yoshi-kun to remember me whenever he looks at Yukino」

「...Eh?」

「Yoshi-kun looked at Yukino multiple times today」

...I

I was being careful about it myself and yet...

And yet I still looked towards Yukino?

「...Look」

Megu took off her blouse's buttons...

「...Megu?」

I can see a pure white bra under her blouse.

「Everyone praised the underwear Yoshi-kun bought for me.」

「Yeah...it's beautiful. You're cute, Megu」

「...I'm glad」

Megu lifts her skirt.

「...Look down there」

I can see a pure white cloth in between her long legs.

「...Megu」

「...It's okay if you look at Yukino unconsciously. I know that you can't help it.

But...I want you to think of me whenever you look at Yukino. Megu's body is all for Yoshi-kun. I want you to do all you want with it. Megu loves Yoshi-kun...!」

...Megu

My Megu...!

I embraced Megu...!

「...Yoshi-kun...Yoshi-kun...!」

...Oh.

This body feels good to touch.

I enter her slim arms.

Still...it's soft.

I can feel a hot surge inside Megu...

「I want Yoshi-kun to violate me on top of Yukino's desk...」

...But

「It's impossible to do it in 15 minutes.」

The grace period is too short...

「...Right」

Megu said in regret

「Minaho-neesan means 『Hold back for now』with only 『Fifteen minutes』I think」

「You're right...Yoshi-kun had ejaculated a lot since last night...are you not feeling pain?」

「...I'm fine」

「Megu will pat it...!」

Megu's white hand caresses my abdomen.

「Megu...I want to lick Megu's breasts」

I'd like to do as much as I can with the given time.

I want to share pleasure with Megu's body.

「...Un, lick it」

Megu pushed up her bra and exposed her nipples.

...I

I suck that pink nipple.

「...Aaaaahn! It feels good...Yoshi-kun!」

When I was rolling the tip of my tongue...Megu's nipple turned sharp and hard...

Megu's hand is touching my crotch gently.

「You can't...If you touch me that much, I'd want to do it...!」

Even though I ejaculated so much...

I get erect again...

「...You want to do it as expected, right?」

「...Megu?」

「Let's have sex for 15 minutes...Yoshi-kun!」

Megu removed my belt.

Her white hands pull down my pants and exposed my penis.

Inside the classroom I was with my classmates a while ago...

My erect penis is exposed.

「...Sorry. Megu can't endure it by all means...!」

Megu lowered her panties.

She put her hands on Yukino's desk...

She rolled her skirt and turned her naked ass to me.

「Violate me here. Ejaculate inside Megu...!」

Megu's pussy is already wet.

Megu turns to me to while showing her wet vagina.

She's waiting for my invasion bashfully.

...I 「...Megu!」

I gripped Megu's waist from the back...!

...Then pierced inside Megu!

...Guchuuuu!

The part of the penis that was pushed in pushed the love nectar outside.

This soft vagina meat that's really wet....

Is welcoming me...pleased.

「...Aaaaaaahn!」

Inside a classroom where no one is in.

The two of us are amusing ourselves in sex...!

I grabbed Megu's thin waist and piston intensely!

Half-naked sex while wearing our school uniforms...!

We're in a hurry as we need to finish in 15 minutes...

Megu and I rush our hearts...!

Violent...beast like sex...

『...There's only 9 minutes and 32 seconds until the roll-call finishes from the confirmation of the start of fire drill. It'll become a catastrophe at that moment...!』

I can hear the voice of the principal from outside the window.

Oh right...all the other students are lining up in the school grounds, and yet...

We're having sex.

On Yukino's seat...desk.

We're connected in the back like animals...!

「Ah...Ah...Yoshi-kun...Yoshi-kun...!」

Megu calls out my name...

Being wanted by Megu makes me happy more than anything.

「...Megu...Megu...Uuuuu...!」

「Ahaaan~!...Megu...Megu wants to be more of a bad girl...aaaahn...I want to become a bad girl loved by Yoshi-kun...!」

「We already are...we're having sex at this time...!」

「Un...Megu is being violated...I'm being violated by my beloved Yoshi-kun!...
Aaahn!~!!」

「...We're like animals」

「Megu's like a dog...Yoshi-kun's pet dog...you can violate Megu anytime anywhere!」

「Yeah...I'll embrace you anytime!」

「Yoshi-kun...touch Megu's collar...!」

I touch Megu's green collar.

I pull the metal filling where you put the chain with my finger.

「...I'll become Yoshi-kun's cute dog!」

「...Yeah, you're cute...Megu!」

I massage Megu's breasts from behind.

「Ah...That's great!...Squeeze my breasts!」

「...Does it hurt , Megu?!」

「...I like the pain! Megu wants to be hurt by Yoshi-kun!」

I gripped Megu's breasts with all my strength.

「...Aaah...It feels good!...The pain feels good!!!! Yoshi-kun!!!!」

「...Megu!!!!」

...Aaaah

...In a situation where I have to hurry

It rises inside me in a dash...!

「...M-Megu...!」

「It's okay! Yoshi-kun! You don't need to endure! Ejaculate inside Megu...Yoshi-kun's warm stuff...leak it inside Meguuuuu...!!」

...Aaaaaaaaaaaaaa!!

Megu's vagina is clamping tightly!!!

...Aaaaaaaaaaaaaa!!

「...Meguuuuuu!!!!」

I shout Megu's name...!

I gripped Megu's tightly!

Then ejaculate inside Megu with all my might...!!!

...Byurururururu!!!

「...Hyaaaaaaaaaaan!!!!」

Megu shouts while trembling!!

My hot white liquid flows in like a jet!

Megu's womb is getting filled up...!

...Byurururu! Byurururu! Byubyu!

「...Aaah, it's so hot...it's spreading in my stomach!!!!」

Megu's body accepts my semen and arched!

It clamps my penis...the womb's drinking until the last drop...

...It's tightening!

...It's clamping!!!

「...M-Megu!!」

White liquid spills out from where Megu and I are connected.

In top of Yukino's desk.

「...Haa, haa, haa, haa」

We breath hotly on top of Yukino's desk.

「...Yoshi-kun...I love you」

「...I love you too. Megu」

The two of us are still connected...



The fire department people are talking outside the window.

15 minutes will pass if we don't hurry.

I wipe Megu's vagina with the pocket tissue Katsuko-nee handed me.

「Thank you...Megu will clean up Yoshi-kun too」

Megu licks my half-withered penis.

She took in the tip of my penis and sucked the remaining semen in my urethra.

「Now...let's go」

I made Megu wear her panty.

If she wears it like this...my semen would drip and it'll get dirty.

「...Sorry, Megu」

「Eh, what?」

「Even though I bought you a beautiful underwear...I've made it dirty」

Megu smiles at me.

「Idiot...I bought it so Yoshi-kun can dirty it...!」

...Megu.

「Please soil Megu a lot. You can make Megu's body and underwear messed up. Megu loves being violated by Yoshi-kun」

Megu hugs me gently.

「...With this...it's okay even if you turn to Yukino」

Megu whispered to my ears.

「If you look on Yukino unconsciously again...just remember your sex with Megu here okay?」

「...Y-Yeah」

Megu seems to want to pull me away from Yukino.

「Hey, Yoshi-kun...I heard it from a girl in the club...is it true that men gets erect even during class?」

As usual, Megu's a girl with superficial knowledge about sex...

「Yeah...there are those times too」

「If ever Yoshi-kun gets erect...You can just tell the teacher 『My stomach hurts』 and wait in the nurse's office. Megu will come immediately...!」

「...Megu?」

「It doesn't matter if it's in the middle of the class...Whenever Yoshi-kun wants to do it, you can cum inside Megu anytime...」

「But...everyone will know if we go together...!」

「It doesn't matter...we're 『engaged』after all...also」

Megu smiles.

「I'd like to let everyone in the class know...Megu is a woman that will do anything for Yoshi-kun's sake」

Megu's eyes are serious...

「I will devote my mind and body to Yoshi-kun! I want the whole world to know that all of Megu is Yoshi-kun's!」

「...Megu」

「I love you...I love you so much...I'll never let you go...please don't let go of Megu...!」

Megu embraces me...

I also embrace Megu.

『...Then, next will be explaining how to use fire extinguishers』

To us who are making love in the classroom...the sound we hear from outside the window seems like isekai¹

137. Megu's feelings...

We head to the principal's office holding hands.
The fire drill still continues outside the school building...
We walk through the corridor being careful not to approach the window.
Someone might be looking up from the ground after all.
It would be bad if someone sees Megu and I head towards the principal's office...

We walk close to the classroom as much as possible.

「...Ufufufu!」

Megu is laughing.

「...What's wrong?」

Megu puts her hand on her abdomen and said

「Thinking that Yoshi-kun's hot stuff is in here...I feel relieved」

...Relief.

「As expected...I'm worried. I thought that Yukino might take Yoshi-kun away」

...Megu.

「She has always been the young lady of Shirasaka house so I thought that I will never win against her. No...I thought that I shouldn't win」

Shirasaka house and Yamamine house's relationship is...
It's close to master-slave relationship though they're relatives...
Megu has grown feeling inferiority complex to Yukino all this time.

「I like Megu more than Yukino」

I strongly hold Megu's hand...
Somehow, it's embarrassing.
Even though I can say even more than that when we have sex...
When I say that while the two of us are walking in the school corridor...it's embarrassing
I'm troubled...

「I know...I believe Yoshi-kun. But...I'm scared」

...Megu looked down worriedly.

「Yukino has always been a selfish princess...so I'm scared that she might take away Yoshi-kun from me...」

Megu has received various harassments from Yukino.

She wasn't allowed to dress up...

She was made to withdraw the baseball club during middle school...

She wasn't able to pass on the first school she desired.

For Megu...Yukino's existence exists strongly as 『The one to suddenly torment her』

The 『Complex』that has stuck with her for many years can't be taken out.

「Sorry...Yoshi-kun」

「...Eh?」

「When I said 『Whenever Yoshi-kun wants to have sex, you can do it anytime』 earlier...it's actually the opposite」

...Megu?

「I feel insecure when Yoshi-kun doesn't embrace me. Even earlier, I was the one who asked. I'm no good...!」

「What no good?」

「You see...I'm afraid of Yukino as expected」

Megu said.

「I'm scared so I want you to embrace me. Whenever I have sex with Yoshi-kun, I feel Yoshi-kun's warmth in my whole body. That's when it tells me that Yoshi-kun wants me seriously. ...Whenever you ejaculate inside me...I feel so happy that I would cry. I can feel that I'm being loved...!」

Megu leans her body to me...

「But you see...when Yoshi-kun loves me...I feel as scared as happy I am. Because, every time I try to become happy...Yukino will hinder me by all means...」

「...Megu」

「Even though I finally became I regular in the basketball club...when I finally

passed to the high school I wanted to go...whenever I feel happy, Yukino will surely appear...!」

I see...

That's why...Megu wanted me in the classroom a while ago.

She's scared from Yukino.

「...Megu. If Megu feels scared, let's have sex immediately. Whenever you want to be embraced, just ask me anytime. I don't mind if it's in the middle of the class. Don't say 『I'm going to the nurse's room』...Let's just get out of the classroom...!」

「...Yoshi-kun」

「It's fine even if the class thinks that we're going to have sex...no, we're going to show it off to Yukino. I'll tell the teacher that...『I feel horny, I'm going to have sex with my woman』...!」

Megu laughed.

「...You can't do that. That's embarrassing」

「It's not...I love Megu. There's nothing much more important than this...!」

...That's right

If she forgets the fear using sex...

I'll embrace her as much as she wants.

「Un...Thank you」

「...megu」

I kiss Megu...

「Promise me...don't ever hold back」

「Got it...I'll definitely say it whenever I want it」

「...Yeah」

「Yoshi-kun too...just tell Megu anytime」

「...Got it」

Megu smiles at me.

「Misuzu-san said yesterday inside the car...」

「...Eh?」

「...Love that's 『eros』 For humans, love sex is very important」

「Oh...she did say that...」

「...It's true. I feel I'll become no good unless I have sex with Yoshi-kun everyday...」

「You'll become no good if you have too much sex too though...」

「It's okay to overdo it...as long as it's Yoshi-kun」¹

Megu's eyes are moist.

「You'll forget about your fear of Yukino soon...Megu's much more beautiful and kind than Yukino. I really like Megu more than Yukino...!」

...I

I thought of 『graduating』from Yukino taking this chance...

If I stop looking at Yukino and look at Megu...

Megu's anxiety will surely be gone...!

「That's not true...after all, Yukino will bear Yoshi-kun's child...!」

...Megu?

「Yoshi-kun...should I stop drinking pills?」

Megu looks at me.

...I

「Yukino will bear a child for Minaho-neesan's sake. It has nothing to do with Yukino」

「...But」

「You do know that Nagisa's wanting a child too right?」

「Nagisa-san is okay. I also want Nagisa-san to give birth...I'll love her child. I'll take care of it. I'll think of Mao-chan as my own daughter too. All the other 『women』are the same...!」

Megu speaks with her strong eyes.

「I'm fine with the other 『women』 giving birth to Yoshi-kun's child! But...I don't want Yukino! If Yukino becomes pregnant...Megu wants to be pregnant too! I don't want to lose!!!²」

...Megu!!!

...I

「Megu...just wait for two...no, wait until I'm 20」

I told Megu.

Two years later, I'll be 18 years old and we're on the age we can get married.
...but

That's not the case.

「...20?」

「Yeah...I'll graduate from school and desperately work for two years. I won't have a big salary but let's get married when we turn 20. Then, I want you to bear my child」

Megu...

「...Why 20 years old?」³

...Well

「...I want everyone to bless Megu's marriage and pregnancy」

「...Yoshi-kun!」

「I really want to invite the class and hold the ceremony. Of course, Megu's Yamamine parents are coming. We'll get blessed by everyone and get married. Then, let's make children」

Just a couple of days ago...I don't know what will be the month ahead of me.
My father disappeared and I became alone in the house...

I can't think about my future...

It's still the same even now.

I don't know what will happen to me in the future.

I don't have anything to do...I don't want to do anything.

Just...I would like to make my 『women』happy

...I want them to be happy.

I offer my all and...

「...Thank you, Yoshi-kun」

Megu looks at her own engagement ring.

「You're right...I'll hold back for now. If I hurry and get pregnant with a child...it won't be blessed. If we get married as proper adults and receive everyone's blessings, that's much more happier」

「...Yeah」

「...I love you. Yoshi-kun」

「...Megu」

We pile our lips together once again...

We're kissing like small birds.

...I love you, Megu



When we arrived at the front door of the principal's office...the door automatically unlocks.

Someone watching with the surveillance camera must've opened it remotely.

We enter inside holding hands.

Minaho-neesan and Katsuko-nee were in the principal's office...

Minaho-neesan and Katsuko-nee are wearing a matching black suit.

That must be the official clothing of a member of 『Kuromori』

「...Megumi, have you calmed down?」

Minaho-neesan said laughingly

As expected...she was watching over us through the camera

「I didn't want Yoshida-kun to be exhausted there but I know that Megumi's heart is unstable」

That's why she gave the two of us time.

「Here...drink this」

Katsuko-nee handed me an oral medicine bottle.

「...What's this?」

「It's energy drink...we don't want to use it as much but it would be troublesome if you're not at your best after this...」

...Best?

「...If ever Ichikawa-san go against his words...violate Mana-san in front of Ichikawa-san」

Minaho-neesan said.

So we're going to do that far.

No...Minaho-neesan doesn't think of old man Ichikawa and Mana's mother as her ally.

She's only thinking of them as a tool to disturb the enemy 『Shirasaka house's』 power

Rather...if she lets down her guard, they will become an『enemy』that will attack...

「Where's Mana right now?」

I asked.

「She's down there playing with Nei」

...Nei-san?

「Nei-san's good at managing that girl...!」

Certainly...Mana has a feeling of admiration towards Nei-san...

「Anyway...just drink that. Then rest your body or a while on the lower room. Megumi too. Katsuko and I will be the one to negotiate with Ichikawa-san...」

Minaho-neesan said.

Certainly...we can't show Megu's figure to Mr. Ichikawa.

Mana's mother knows that Megu is a distant relative of Shirasaka house...

For the head of Shirasaka family, Megu has been kidnapped by 『Kuromori』...

I opened the bottle and drank the contents for the time being...

...Bitter

But...my body feels warm deep inside.

Katsuko-nee took the empty bottle from me.

...Oh right.

「...Katsuko-nee, teach me how to make bread today」

I said.

「Sure...but why?」

Katsuko-nee is surprised...

「I'll work at Katsuko-nee's bakery. I have to be a baker who can earn neatly when I become 20 years old...!」

「Eh...You want to work on my bakery?」

Katsuko-nee's moved, but...

「I will also help on Nagisa's flower shop...but, that shop's popular with their beautiful clerks, right? I can only do heavy labor when stocking with them...」

Yeah...I can't do anything big there.

I don't have the talent for flower arrangement too.

「I'm sure that Katsuko-nee's bakery will happen. I'll leave the store front to Katsuko-nee...then I'm fine making bread inside the shop all the time. That's why, I'd like to learn how to bake bread for now...」

There's nothing this foolish me can do but this...

「...Are you really sure about that?」

「Yeah. I'd like Megu to attend college...and I have to earn Mana's living expenses right?」

「...You can do other work you know?」

...I

「I'm Katsuko-nee's 『man』 Isn't it normal for me to help Katsuko-nee on her work?」

「...Dear!」

「Of course, I will help on Nagisa's shop too...if Misuzu, Megu and Mana starts something in the future, I will help them too. But...Katsuko-nee's bakery has to go first」

A future vision arises one after another inside my mind.

「...Got it. I'll teach you starting today」

Katsuko-nee smiled happily.

「Please teach me too, Katsuko-neesan」

Megu said...

「No...I won't teach Megumi-chan」

...Eh?

「Do you intend to steal the happy time for the two of us?」

「Uhm...I don't have that intention」

Megu looks down embarrassed.

「We don't know what will happen to my bakery...there's a possibility that it won't sell at all in the opening, right? That's why Megumi-chan should look for another job.」

「...Another job?」

「That's right. Think about your lifetime job and think what you can do to live with him. Spend your school days meaningfully for that sake. You don't need to ride on my dream...Megumi should find her dream too...!」

Megu smiled.

「Yes...I will look for it」

Minaho-neesan speaks to us while looking at a laptop.

「...Ichikawa-san's car has come to the school grounds. Yoshida-kun and Megumi should go to the lower room」

The time is 10:50

...They're here..

「Yeah, got it...Minaho-neesan」

Megu and I hurried to the hidden lower floor...



「...Welcome back!」

Coming to the lower room...

Nei-san and Mana are playing...

They're playing...cards

I know that Mana is naked with a collar since this morning, but...

Why is Nei-san in her underwear?

「Iyaa~...Mana-chan's strong!」

The two of them seems to be playing poker.

「I take off a piece when I lose and I'll scribble on Mana-chan's body when she lose, that's the rule」

Certainly...when I look at the naked Mana.

There's 『正』written on her stomach and thighs.⁴

「...What will happen when you win?」

「Absolutely nothing...the rules are only to punish the loser...game!」

Nei-an Mana exposes their cards...

「...two pairs of 2 and 6」

「...Ufufufun, 4 cards with a joker!」

It seems it's Nei-san's win.

「Okay...show me your stomach.」

Nei-san adds one on the incomplete 『正』tally.

Mana seems to have lost 11 times so far.

Considering that Nei-san is on her underwear...

Oh...Nei-san's much stronger, isn't she?

「Mana...are you feeling cold?」

She's been naked in this room all this time.

「I'm okay. I've already gotten used to it...Nei-san is also playing with Mana naked...」

Mana says as she deals out new cards.

It looks like she became a bit more stable when she's together with Nei-san.

After all, the atmosphere is dark.

She's not talking that much...

No...in case of Mana, her talking brightly is just an act...

The quiet one might be the right one...

She continues to play the game silently without hiding her breasts, crotch, or the tattoo on her stomach.

「Yo-chan, it's rude to stare on a girl's naked body that much!」

Nei-san scolded me.

「Ah...sorry」

「Just kidding...It's fine, it's fine...Mana-chan's Yo-chan's 『slave』after all」

Nei-san said something obvious...

「Yo-chan and Megu-chan, want to play poker with us?」

Nei-san invites us, but...

「Sorry...I'll take a rest」

I answered.

It has become a somewhat peaceful atmosphere...

But I have to violate Mana in front of her grandfather and mother depending on the situation...

I wanted to stay away from Mana even a bit.

「Oh right, Yo-chan just had sex with Megu-chan right」

...Nei-san?

「...You were watching?」

「Obviously...this is a room for that purpose. We have a system to monitor everything in the school」

Nei-san stands up and starts the monitor...

The multiple monitor displays the school in a dash.

「I show it to Mana to...the basics」

It seems that Nei-san had showed Mana the state of classrooms reflected on the surveillance cameras.

That must be the reason why Mana isn't cheerful...

This monitoring system shows the power behind us 『Kuromori』

As long as she's inside the school...even if she sees a gap and tries to escape...

Mana would get caught immediately.

...With that said.

「Also...I recorded a video Yo-chan would want to see...!」

Nei-san laughs and pushed a switch...

The screen changed to playback mode.

The video reflected on the monitors...

「...This is?!」

This is the girl's state during the 『Body measurement』a while ago.

The girls in their underwear appear one after another.

「There's something more amazing than that!」

Nei-san switches it again.

...That's.

The image of the girls before taking X-ray.

All of the girls are removing their bra.

Their cute breasts exposes themselves./

Oh...Isn't this Ogino-san from our class?

So Ogino-san's areola is big.

「Girls in all grades have it!」

What Nei-san shows next is...

...Captain Takeshiba?!

Captain Takeshiba's body is trained well...her breasts point out like a rocket...

「...Nei-san, what is this?」

Nei-san answered.

「We do this for every year...it also continues this year too」

...Each year?

「The girls in our school has always been candidates to be prostitute of the mansion you know? That's why there's physical measurement every year...and we record their naked bodies and growth data. After that, Shirasaka Sousuke will take a look and decide...『This one is a candidate』or 『Watch over her for another year』...all this time」

That's the 『body measurement』is for...?!

「...But, Shirasaka Sousuke has lost his position. Why are we doing it this year too...?!」

Nei-san said sadly.

「Among the school's faculty and staff...there are still some people involved in making school girl prostitutes」

...Oh right, like Geropa Kouchou

There surely are others too.

「Those people aren't told about Shirasaka's downfall yet...so Sensei would like to dispose all of the members in a dash. That's why the 『Body measurement』is happening as usual...!」

...So that's how it is

「Of course we don't show the videos or data to those people so don't worry. We don't tell those people how to access this system」

I see...You can't see it except from this room or Minaho-neesan's 『English Preparation room』

You can't enter that room without permission too...

I feel relieved somewhat as the naked data of the schoolgirls is not misused.

「Ah...Yo-chan can take a look. If there's a girl you want to see naked, go on. I'll teach you how to use it...」

No...Even if you say that.

「...Go on, Yoshi-kun」

Megu looks at my face.

「If ever Yoshi-kun wants to have sex with someone...I'll bring her to you...!」

...Megu?!

「...Why are you saying that?」

Megu looks down.

「I don't have confidence in my own body. That's why...if ever Yoshi-kun wants to embrace a girl sexier than me⁵ I think it's inevitable」

「I'm satisfied with Megu's body...!」

Even though I answered like that...

「...But my breasts are small」

No matter how many times I try to deny it...Megu seems to be unable to leave there.

Somehow...she seems to have a complex in her body.

「That's why, it's okay...even if Yoshi-kun have sex with other girls...⁶」

...Err.

...What should I say?

「Geez, Megu-chan...you're really speaking the opposite!」

Nei-san laughs.

...Eh?

「I've been watching with Mana-chan since your interaction in the classroom a while ago. Megu-chan...saying that you won't hand over Yoshi-kun to anyone, it was a menacing⁷ look!」

...They were watching that too.

From the morning exchange...to Minaho-neesan's homeroom...until I handed the canned juice to my classmates...

「...That's...!」

Megu turns red.

「If they see Megu-chan like that...other girls in the class will never meddle with Yo-chan...!」

So it's like that from outside perspective.

I don't know as I'm the person concerned.

「Megu-chan...say your true feelings. Actually, you don't want Yo-chan to be taken by anyone, right?」

「...I don't want him to be taken by Yukino」

Megu muttered.

「That's right...it's not just Yukino-chi, right? Actually...You want to monopolize Yo-chan right? It's written in your face that you want him to be only yours...!」

Nei-san laughs 「nihihi」...

「...!」

Megu looks at me.

「Yoshi-kun...I will tell you the truth」

「...S-Sure」

「You see...I don't have confidence in myself so I think it can't be helped if Yoshi-

kun wants to have sex with other girls. That's true, definitely...!」

「Y-Yeah」

「But you see...Yoshi-kun has multiple 『women』, right?」

「...Y-You're right」

I have...Katsuko-nee, Nagisa, Misuzu, Mana, then Megu.

「That's why...I don't want Yoshi-kun to like girls who are much better than me anymore」

Women that are better than my current 『women』...

「If not...Yoshi-kun would feel pity and pick up that girl because of that...!」

Megu condemns me making Mana my 『woman』indirectly.

And...saying that Yukino should definitely not become my 『woman』...

「I agree with that opinion! Yo-chan is too kind!」

Nei-san told me.

「Of course...I will accept Nei-san. Nei-san is much more beautiful, kind and wonderful than me...!」

Megu tells Nei-san.

「Eh...Me?! Hmm, about me...!」

Mana's surprised on the embarrassed Nei-san.

「Eh?! Nei-san is Onii-chan's sex partner right?!」

...Err

When should we tell Mana that Nei-san's a virgin?

「...Apart from Nei-san...Yoshida-kun, if you are still willing to make others your 『woman』, I'd like you to look for talented people we don't have...!」

...That voice?

Margo-san comes from the underground stairs.

「The target has arrived safely. There are escort guards but they didn't enter the school」

Margo-san has been watching Ichikawa-san's movement outside...

「Margo-san...what kind of people we lack right now?」

Megu goes back to the topic.

It seems that she's interested...

「I'd like someone to support me⁸」

「...Margo-san's support?」

「Yeah...I'm the only one who can do combat work right? Also, I destroy the enemy with an unexpected partner...I'd like an orthodox fighter. Someone who can be left to guard Minaho and Misuzu-san. A person who knows where to look and who to guard」

Margo-san speaks very specific.

Certainly...we only have Margo-san as our fighting ability.

Minaho-neesan's the brain...

Katsuko-nee and Nei-san have the power to take action but...it's impossible to fight.

Misuzu...belongs to the brains too.

Megu is smart and I think she has the physical ability but...she's a kind girl so I think fighting isn't suitable to her.

Mana's out of the question. She's not an ally for now...

And...I'm just a drag, not even a fighting power.

「...Is that so?」

「Ah, Megumi-chan...you can't look for the girls in the athletics club. I've checked most of the girls there. There's no girl who's promising in martial arts...!」

Margo-san said.

◇ Shirasaka house Arc

138. Negotiation 1

「But you see...won't it be a bit easier when Kyouko-chan comes back?」

Nei-san told Margo-san...

...Kyouko-chan?

「Nei...Kyouko-san is...!」

「Ah...Sorry...!」

Nei-san apologized to Margo-san...

...Err

Megu and I look at each other.

Mana's making a blank face.

「It can't be helped...Kyouko-san is my master」

Margo-san's master?

「Kyouko Dothnomechey...The one in charge of 『Kuromori』brothel's guard」

...That means?

There are guards in the mansion other than Margo-san?

「I was a high school student until last year...It's just a few years ago since I came to Japan with Minaho. There's an absolute guard in charge of 『Kuromori』 before me」

Certainly...『Kuromori』...is a criminal organization with a long history. There's naturally some guard before Margo-san becomes a member. There's always a need for armed group to protect the organization. Just the prostitutes can't oppose the men...

「Where's that person right now?」

I asked Margo-san.

I'd like to have that person cooperate with us by all means.

She's Margo-san's master so she surely has excellent abilities...

Or rather...why did she disappear as the one in charge of guard now?
Even though 『Kuromori』is in the middle of a fight with two big enemies...

「...She's in Gold Coast」

Margo-san answered.

「Gold Coast is in Australia isn't it?」

Megu tells Margo-san...!

Mana got startled when she heard the word 『Australia』...!

「It is as everyone imagines...Kyouko-san is detaining Shirasaka Sousuke in Australia right now. Minaho sent her most trusted person to keep Shirasaka...!」

...I see

Minaho-neesan's cannot leave Shirasaka Sousuke's abduction and confinement in another country...

...to people other than members of 『Kuromori』...

Kyouko Dothnomechey takes that job by herself...!

「She's just the only person making Shirasaka's absurd 『Australia hell sightseeing』...those idiotic events are almost planned and carried out by Kyouko-san」

...Oh

Shirasaka Sousuke has lost it's communications in Australia...

Her staying on a gay hotel and being preached on a church all night...

The only one who can think about it and carry it out is quite a playful person.

Or rather...Could it be that she's not just Margo-san's master but also of Katsuko-nee?

「Kyouko-san originally seems to have been sent by Kouzuki-san when Minaho took over the management of 『Kuromori』」

...Misuzu's grandfather?

Kouzuki-san has been a customer of 『Kuromori tower』during the era when it was a high class brothel build by Minaho-neesan's grandfather, before Shirasaka Sousuke dominated the mansion.

Shirasaka and Minaho-neesan's father took over 『Kuromori』...and turned the luxury brothel to a prostitution organization to just satisfy their own desires...

The old prostitutes who can't endure the tyranny of Shirasaka has complained to the old customers such as Kouzuki-san... and those people are big shots in industry and government...

『Kuromori』has received Kouzuki-san's intervention...

After that...The mansion was revived parallel to the old 『Kuromori tower』and stood by the side of Shirasaka Sousuke who just want to satisfy his own preference...

「When Minaho has joined the management of 『Kuromori』, she was just 16 years old...furthermore, a former prostitute...In the first few years, it was difficult to resist Shirasaka's selfish behavior. Then...when Megumi-chan's mother passed away, Kyouka-san was summoned to the mansion ...Megu's mother.

Megu's mother was forced by the guests to take drugs...and despite her suffering, Shirasaka Sousuke has refused to let her go to the hospital...thus she died.

「Kouzuki-san has sent Kyouko-san to monitor Shirasaka and the other's action more than as a guard of the mansion so the same thing won't happen again」

...So she's that kind of person.

「When Shirasaka took all the leadership, it seems that Shirasaka's friends who are like hoodlums are loitering around the mansion. Those kind of people do horrible things to the women in the mansion. Kyouko-san literally beats out those are not 『guests』it seems」

I see...Minaho-neesan's 『Kuromori』reform has been shielded by Kyouko-san so it can begin.

「Kyouko-san is capable...and she's a person who can do anything on the background. Kyouko-san has been teaching me a lot of things since I came to Japan. To be honest, I'm still no match against Kyouko-san. In fighting, investigation, and background work...」

That's Margo-san's master.

「That's why...it's best if Kyouko-san comes back!」

Nei-san said.

「Even Minaho thinks the same...That's why we decided to change plans and negotiate with Ichikawa-san...」

Margo-san makes a wry smile.

「Actually...we intended to take the fight with Shirasaka house a bit more slowly. We are at advantage as long as we have Shirasaka Sousuke you see...」

In short...Minaho-neesan is speeding up the solution?

「Anyway...if we talk to the head of Shirasaka house...if he decides to abandon Shirasaka Sousuke...Kyouko-san can return with Shirasaka...!」

With that said...

Minaho-neesan wants to hurry and negotiate with Shirasaka family now...

Does she think that the matter with Cesario Viola more dangerous...?

We need the person named Kyouko-san in order to fight with Mr. Viola...

She's hurrying up her plan to make Kyouko-san home...!

「Somehow...I hope everything ends with this negotiation. The return from Australia to Japan will take a while day no matter how fast it is...」

Even if the negotiations conclude right now and Shirasaka Sousuke doesn't need to be hidden anymore...Kyouko-san will return by tomorrow afternoon...

「Well...anyway, just remember that you have another Onee-san to rely on!」

Nei-san smiles to Megu and I.

「But...Like I said earlier, we need a personnel that can serve as a guard separately from Kyouko-san. Kyouko-san is the type that don't go out of the surface just like me. I'd really want a person who'd guard in front. The 『Kuromori』right now has increased the number of people needed to be protected」

Margo-san said.

「...What does that mean?」

「This one...we're making a deal with the old man Ichikawa with this child caught here...」

That's right...we're holding Mana as a hostage and a card for dealings.

「In that case...the enemy might try to kidnap Misuzu-san, Megumi-chan or Yoshida-kun」

...I see.

Even the enemy might take hostages as their strategy...

「It's good to only guard only Minaho until now. Just Nei from Mr. Viola. But...I have to guard multiple people at the same time from now on. That's why there's a need for guards」

...Is that how it is?

「But still...while Kyouko-san and I guard stealthily from the shadows, it's great to have someone standing directly in front of the enemy as a guard at the same time. Once we take an attack, you know that there's people devoted to protecting and those who will attack Yup...I see

「To be honest, it's fine to have someone that just looks like a guard. Just making the opponent cautious is already effective...!」

It's great if we have that person.

Certainly, there doesn't seem to be one in our high school...

「...N, Maru-chan...they're here」

Nei-san changes the image of the surveillance cameras.

A black painted Benz is stationed at the entrance of High school...

Old man Ichikawa appears.

Coming down of it is a beautiful middle-aged woman.

「...Mama」

Mana mutters.

Inside the screen...A woman with an anxious expression wearing a green suit chases after old man Ichikawa¹

This person is the food critic...Shirasaka Youko...

Another camera captures the face of the woman from the front.

Surely, it looks like Yukino and Mana.

「...Oh, another camera's getting off」

Margo-san's voice...looks at the image of the former camera...

Certainly, there's another man wearing a suit and black glasses coming down.
He's holding a black bag...

「...Do you know who that is?」

Margo-san asked Mana.

Mana...

「...Shirasaka Koutarou-san He's the lawyer of the head of the clan」

Old Man Ichikawa has brought a lawyer of Shirasaka family...?!

We focus on the video.

An office worker from the high school comes out and guides Ichikawa-san.

They ascend to the second floor.

They walk heading to the principal's office...

We are watching their state while changing cameras.

Before long...they arrived at the principal's office.

The office worker knocks on the door.

『...Come in』

Minaho-neesan's voice...

The door opens...

The camera switches to the principal's office...

『...I'm very sorry for making you come over』

Minaho-neesan who's sitting on the principal's desk stands up and greets her visitors.

『You can go back now. These visitors don't need tea. We will prepare it ourselves』

Hearing Minaho-neesan...the office worker bowed her head and left the room.

When the door closed completely...Minaho-neesan lowered her head again.

『...Please to meet you, I'm Kuromori Minaho』

Old man Ichikawa looks at Minaho-neesan with strong eyes and answers.

『I'm Ichikawa Shinichiro...This is my daughter』

『...Shirasaka Youko』

Mana's mother look at Minaho-neesan.

『Where's Maika?! Please give back Maika already!』

Minaho-neesan smiled.

『That depends on the negotiations...isn't that the reason why you came here?』

Old man Ichikawa speaks with a stupid expression.

『Please call Maika here first...We'll do the talk later』

Minaho-neesan...

『...That is up for us to decide. We don't mind if you go home and leave the young lady here...!』

She pushes pressure to the old man Ichikawa...!

『Maika-san...is under our management just like Shirasaka Sousuke. Please do not forget that』

Old man Ichikawa continues.

『...At least, I want to see her cheerful face. Can you bring her here?』

『...I refuse』

Minaho-neesan decides immediately.

『We cannot show the young lady on her flesh and blood until the negotiations conclude...please be relieved. The young lady is in the premise of this school...』

Minaho-neesan smiles maliciously.

『...Please stop your subordinates standing by outside the school on their search. The school forbids entry of people unrelated to the school. It's been noisy recently...if you act rashly, we will call the police Mana's mother shouted at Minaho-neesan.

『Then we will report to the police as well! Return Maika to us right now!』

Minaho-neesan speaks to her with cold eyes...

『...Then, you do not mind the Shirasaka house and Ichikawa house be in

trouble? You won't be able to work as a food critic anymore. Your young ladies' future will be damaged as well...』

Mana's mother still doesn't stop.

『...It's all Sousuke-san's fault right?! We're not related to this!』

It seems that Mana's mother...have heard Shirasaka Sousuke's evildoing from Mr. Ichikawa.

Knowing that...she says that they're unrelated to it...

『...Aren't you Mr. Shirasaka Sousuke's wife?』

『...Husband is a husband. He's a different person from us』

『Do you really think that reason will be accepted...?!』

Minaho-neesan's word made Mana's mother hesitate.

『...You might not know that Mr. Shirasaka Sousuke manages a prostitution organization. But still, forcibly assaulting multiple women, kidnapping, confining, raping...and turning them to prostitutes...』

『Yes...we didn't know anything. All of it are Sousuke-san's action. My mother and daughter Maika aren't related at all...!』

『...Certainly, your young daughters might not be related. But, Mr. Shirasaka Sousuke's wife, Youko-sama...has a moral responsibility, right?』

『...Responsibility?』

Mana's mother whos a surprised face.

『Even if you had not imagined that Mr. Shirasaka Sousuke is doing a prostitution organization...you do know that he acts risky legal actions. Having relationships with multiple women...and even giving birth to children...』

『...T-That's』

Minaho-neesan laughs.

『There's no way you don't know that...madam is already considering divorce with Mr. Shirasaka Sousuke and has already sent a detective to investigate』

Mana's mother cramps...

『...You do know that Mr. Shirasaka Sousuke's committing criminal acts...?』

『...That doesn't matter to you!』

Shirasaka Youko misplaces her anger.
...Seriously.
She actually resembles Yukino and Mana.
Looking at such places...they're really parent and child.

『I am...after all, I am one of Mr. Shirasaka Sousuke's victims. I'm okay with you calling the police. I will talk about everything. Mr. Shirasaka Sousuke raping me when I was twelve years old and forced me to prostitution. There are still videos and photos as well...Mr. Shirasaka Sousuke is a pervert that likes to film the rape he has done...!』

Mana's mother can't answer anything back at what Minaho-neesan said.

『For legal couples...the wife has the responsibility to remonstrate the husband's wrongdoing if she knows about it. If she tolerates the husband's act, won't that be irresponsible to say that one's unrelated to it?』

Minaho-neesan stares at Mana's mother.
Mana's mother...turned her eyes to Minaho-neesan.

『...Youko, apologize to Kuromori-san』

Old man Ichikawa tells his daughter.

『But father. Why do I have to...!』
『Chose your words! Maika's a hostage here!』

The old man scolds his daughter severely!

『We're in a bad position...now, Youko!』

Ordered by her father...Mana's mother reluctantly lowers her head.

『I've gone a bit too far...I'm sorry』

The tone of Mana's mother doesn't have any apology at all.

『...Let me speak for my daughter. We admit that we overlooked Sousuke-kun. I'm very sorry』

Mr. Ichikawa also bows to Minaho-neesan...
I understand that they're not apologizing from the bottom of their heart.

『Anyway...please sit down. We can't talk while standing...』

Minaho-neesan suggested Mr. Ichikawa and his daughter to take a seat.
Mr. Ichika took his seat.

Minaho-neesan sits on the principal's desk too...

『...Katsuko, please prepare tea for Ichikawa-sama』

『...Certainly』

Katsuko-nee has already prepared tea.
She puts the tea before Mr. Ichikawa...

『...I'm also one of the female raped by Shirasaka Sousuke-san. Abducted and confined when I was 16, forced to prostitution...!』

Katsuko-nee tells Mr. Ichikawa while smiling.
Those eyes were cold.

『...By the way...who's the other person? I should've called for Ichikawa-sama and his daughter only...』

Minaho-neesan's eyes head to the other man wearing a suit.
The man bows his head...

『I'm very sorry...I'm Shirasaka Koutarou. I'm a lawyer that belongs to Ohata-sensei's office who's Shirasaka's legal adviser, I'm a lawyer』

Minaho-neesan looks at Mr. Ichikawa.

『...What do you intend to do bringing a lawyer here?』

The lawyer answers instead of Mr. Ichikawa.

『No...I'm a lawyer but...A person of the head of Shirasaka house. I came here to represent the Shirasaka family...』

...Shirasaka family's...representative?

『Does that mean...the current head of Shirasaka family, a representative of Mr. Shirasaka Moritsugu?』

Minaho-neesan's word made the lawyer wipe his forehead sweat with a handkerchief.

『No...That's not the case』

『You shouldn't be able to represent the Shirasaka house without Mr. Shirasaka

Moritsugu's will, am I wrong?』

Minaho-neesan shoots the lawyer with cold eyes...

『Well...you see. The head, Moritsugu-sama, is currently very emotional...he's not in a state where he can make a calm judgement』

his lawyer came here ignoring the head of the family?

『The members of Shirasaka family apart from Moritsugu have reached the same opinion. Therefore...there is no problem to think that our opinion is the opinion of the Shirasaka family. Either way, Moritsugu-sama will accept it eventually...!』

Minaho-neesan raised a laughter...

『Isn't the opinion of Mr. Moritsugu, the head of the Shirasaka family is absolute? I heard it's that kind of house...!』

『Well...that is...!』

『Shirasaka's family business isn't just owning the newspaper...they're a major shareholder of all group companies, is it not?』

『Yes...indeed, our house is united around Moritsugu-sama. But, this time is a big problem related to the survival of the house. Mr. Moritsugu will absolutely be persuaded by us. I'd like you to believe us』

...That's

Why would we believe words coming out of Shirasaka house?

『Well fine...let's talk about the opinion of the family apart from the head for now』

The lawyer starts talking when Minaho-neesan said that.

『First...Shirasaka house will banish Mr. Shirasaka Sousuke. We do not mind what happens to Mr. Sousuke』

『...That means that Shirasaka house abandons Shirasaka Sousuke, is that correct?』

Mana...raised an『uuu』voice

Shirasaka house has cut ties with Mana's father.

『Yes. However...we would like Mr. Sousuke to be returned to Shirasaka house

temporarily』

『...What do you mean?』

『No, it doesn't mean anything, but...Mr. Sousuke is currently abroad, am I wrong?』

『Yes...in australia. She's confined by our companion』

『Then, could you please return her to Shirasaka family at the time he comes back? Then, we will hand him over after that』

...That's just

...Can you agree with that?!

What's the logic?

『Making such promises...You do intend to dispose of Mr. Sousuke within the Shirasaka family...!』

...Eh?

...Dispose?

Do they intend to kill him...!!!

By the hands of his own Shirasaka family...!

『...No, we do not have such intentions...it's just a formality. Please return Mr. Shirasaka Sousuke...for the face of Shirasaka family』

...The lawyer speaks unreasonably.

『Also...we would like for you to hand over Yamamine Megumi as well』

...Megu?

『Yamamine Megumi is a member of our clan...I'm very sorry for the troubles she have caused. We will take responsibility for it...』

The lawyer's face is expressionless.

It's as if she's giving Megu a death sentence...

「...Yoshi-kun」

Megu holds my hand strongly.

「Don't worry...I'm here with you...!」

I embrace Megu's body...

『Oh...you intend to lock her in a local house somewhere...do you intend to keep Megumi until she dies?』

『No, no, that is not our intention...we'll educate her well with our hands and have her marry a house that is right for her...!』

A house that is right for her...

『...We don't have Moritsugu-sama's approval but, it is a consensus of Shirasaka family. We want you to believe that. I have prepared a signed memorandum as well』

The lawyer took out a piece of paper from his bag.
Even making a signed memorandum...
There's no way it can take effect if the head doesn't approve.
...They're underestimating us
...They're making a fool of us.
We...

『Kuromori』...

Just saying groundless things and thinks that we'll do as what Shirasaka family wants...

「Seriously...we're being disrespected」

Margo-san muttered.
Nei-san too...

「Oh god...Sensei's seriously angry...!」

Minaho-neesan smiles darkly.

『...In the end...you're thinking of that. Shirasaka Sousuke, Megumi...you plan to bury it in the dark! Once it disappears, Shirasaka family won't be damaged』

The lawyer...

『Getting straight to the point...that is correct. Please do not underestimate the power of Shirasaka family. We can control media freely. You do know that right?』

The lawyer laughs.
They don't intend to concede here in the first place.

...Dammit!

『I will promise of it instead of Moritsugu-kun. We will return Sousuke-kun. You can trust my promise』

Old Man Ichikawa speaks calmly.

This people don't understand their own position at all.

They think that people like us cannot go against the nobles like Shirasaka house and Ichikawa house...!

139. Negotiation 2

『Of course...we're not saying it's for free』

A member of Shirasaka family...the lawyer Shirasaka Koutarou tells Minaho-neesan.

『...How about 30 million yen?』

Margo-san smiles wryly while looking at the monitor.

「...Too cheap. It's completely out of question...!」

...Right.

I don't get it though...

『We'll pay 15 million in advance...and another 5 Million in return of Maika-san and Yamamine Megumi-san...When Mr. Shirasaka Sousuke has returned, we will split up the remaining 10 million. How is it? I don't think it's a bad deal for you...!』

『I'll make it 10 million for Maika. How about now?』

Mr. Ichikawa joins the lawyer too.

『In total...40 million yen, you won't be dissatisfied with it either...!』

Hearing Mr. Ichikawa's selfish remarks...Minaho-neesan finally started to laugh...!

『Fufu...Kukukuku... !』

『...What's wrong?』

Mr. Ichikawa pressures Minaho-neesan with strong eyes.
But...Minaho-neesan...

『No, but you see...I never thought that Shirasaka house and Ichikawa house are just like this...!』

『...What do you mean by that?』

Minaho-neesan smiles coldly and speaks to Mr. Ichikawa.

『Then, let me ask just in case...how do you intend to pay that money to us...?』

『...Well...if you tell me your bank account, I will contact my secretary and transfer it now...!』

Old man Ichikawa answers.

『Can you let your secretary mediate such a thing?』

『My secretary is faithful to me so there is nothing for you to worry about...!』

Old man Ichikawa answers resentfully, but...

Secretary...I guess it's Mr. Ichikawa's company employee.

Even I know that person shouldn't be involved in this case.

『Bank transfer...is that okay to send ransom where it maintain the shape?』¹

『...T-That is』

『It will clearly show in the bank record how much money is transferred...!』

『...Ugh!』

Old man Ichikawa falters from what Minaho-neesan said.

...as expected, they didn't think about anything.

They're just only making demands saying 「Yeah, do it this way」...But they don't have any specifics to make it real...

...What are they doing?

『In the first place, even if Ichikawa-san lets out 10 million and the lawyer sends 30 million as he says...where will the money come from? There's no way the two of you would pay with your individual assets...!』

Minaho-neesan grins and laughs.

『That doesn't matter to you...!』

Old man Ichikawa shouts loudly.

『No...If ever the two of you raises a fund from Shirasaka group company and Ichikawa-san's family...that would be an embezzlement in business. Both of the companies are listed in stocks. Don't you think a large amount of unexplained expenditures will be a problem in the audit...?!』

That's right...the tens of millions of money can't be worked out so easily. The 『40 million yen』can't be trusted unless there is a proof of concrete expenditure.

That means that the chance of it being a verbal promise is higher.

『...D-Don't make a fool of us. I can pull out 10 million from my personal account anytime...!』

Old man Ichikawa gets enraged.

『Yes...Ichikawa-sama is right. But, Shirasaka house cannot use the assets of their family unless there's an approval from the head』

That's right...as the lawyer said earlier, the head of Shirasaka family didn't approve of this talk.

If so...it's impossible to draw 30 million yen from the account of the head.

『What will you do?...There's no way you would try to scrape money from everyone in the clan...am I right?!』

『...That is』

The lawyer is at loss.

Eh...he really didn't think about anything?!

I don't know how many people are there in the Shirasaka family but it would be tough to collect 30 million...

Who will collect, and how much for each person...

『...That is, we will be discussing it with the main people in Shirasaka house. I think we'll manage somehow with 5 million per person...』

What...『Somehow』?!

Isn't that just all speculations?

『...Who will take out? Until when can they pay up? Will the money be returned eventually? Or it won't come back? if it does, who will compensate for it?...I think your problems are stacking up』

Minaho-neesan says lightly.

That's right...this is originally caused by 『Shirasaka Sousuke』who's a member of Shirasaka family.

There's no way other people from the clan would take out their money for this. If it was me, I won't even pay a thousand.

As long as they don't promise to return it later, I don't think they should be able to gather that much money...

『...T-That's, Mr. Shirasaka Sousuke will be disposed of eventually and his personal assets will be used to repay the clan. Perhaps, Mr. Sousuke's house would amount 30 million yen』

The lawyer replied while wiping the sweat on his forehead with a handkerchief.

『...Hey, wait a moment!』

Old man Ichikawa interrupts the lawyer.

『Sousuke-kun's asset isn't him alone. Half of the assets belong to the wife, Youko!』

『...That is right, however』

『Youko will divorce Sousuke-kun before this raises to be a scandal. You do know that right?!』

『Yes...The people of Shirasaka family feels very sorry for the inconvenience it has caused to Ichikawa-sama』

『Then, Shirasaka house will of course pay half of Sousuke-kun's assets as compensation...!』

Mr. Ichikawa's anger transfers from Minaho-neesan to the Shirasaka lawyer. My my, Shirasaka Sousuke's assets will be halved and it'll be taken as compensation money.

『Also...There's also the support for Yukino and Maika until their college graduation...!』

『...About that』

Mr. Ichikawa's word made the lawyer incoherent. What?...There's nothing decided on what to do between the Shirasaka and Ichikawa house...?! With this, it's impossible to sell Shirasaka Sousuke's house and compensate for the ransom the clan will pay...

『...Well you see...I will take this back to Shirasaka house and discuss about it. No, please let me consult them. I can't bring an answer on this occasion by myself...!』

They can't promise anything with this.

The negotiations is a complete failure...

『Also...Uhm, about Sousuke-kun's daughter...Yukino-san and Maika-san...』

The lawyer said...and Mr. Ichikawa...

『...I will take over Youko's daughters...We don't intend to be in touch with Shirasaka family in the future』

『Well...that...the head, Moritsugu-sama has been affectionate with the two, especially Yukino-sama...that he strongly insisted to take over the two children to Shirasaka family...』

Mr. Ichikawa shouts at the lawyer in rage!

『I will never allow that!...Both of them are my granddaughters!』

『...B-but』

『Well fine...I will talk about that matter with Shirasaka-kun later...you don't need to talk about it...!』

『...Y-Yes, I'm very sorry』

...W-w-w-w-what the hell is this?

Do that talk somewhere else.

Or rather, these guys seriously think that Mana would be returned after this mediocre negotiations...

Margo-san speaks to me while looking at the monitor in disgust.

「...Yoshida-kun, what do you think about Mana's mother?」

「Eh...what?」

「Do you feel any sex appeal from that middle-aged lady?」

...Even if you suddenly ask me that.

Once again...I look at Yukino and Mana's mother reflected on another monitor.

Her father, Mr. Ichikawa is in the front so she's silent most of the time, but...

She's glaring at Minaho-neesan with an awfully angry look...

As if saying 'why do we have to experience this'...

There's not a a piece of sociability shown like when she shows herself in mass media as a food critic.

Anyway...She's just looking down on Minaho-neesan angrily.

She's having a very cruel face...

「...Hmm. To be honest, I don't want to approach her. That's an old lady with a self-important attitude...」

「Of course. Then, let's not plan to rape that old lady」

Eh...Margo-san?

「Yoshida-kun...You've been growing all this time without a mother...I know understand that you don't have the mother complex nature. In this case...you don't even know what a real mother is before having a complex...!」

「...What?」

I don't get what she's talking about.

「Yoshida-kun, how can you describe your mother in one phrase?」

...That is

「...『Untrustworthy』」

「...In other words?」

「『Enigmatic』...」

Yeah...I don't get that person

Also...I don't want to know.

I don't want to see her again.

I don't want to meet her.

I want to forget her existence.

「You're like that so Katsuko-san and Nagisa-san's maternal instincts are tickled」

Margo-san says.

「...Eh?」

「You never know the feeling of 『your mother caring for you』right? You have lived obliged to be independent at all times so you never think of relying on someone... You lack the sense of 『wanting to be protected』...」

...Is that so?

...me?

I turn to Megu.

「Yes. My heart is always tickled by Yoshi-kun too」

Eh...Megu?!

「Yoshi-kun always does all the hard work alone so it makes me want for him to rely on me more and more」

「That's why...your 『women』wants to hug you」

Margo-san said.

...I-Is that so?

...To be honest, I don't get it though.

「Uhm...Let's go back to the topic...Does Minaho-neesan's revenge plan include raping that old lady?」

「Yeah...Minaho has worked every plan to harass Shirasaka Sousuke. That includes raping Shirasaka's wife」

「...Well...If that's what Minaho-neesan wants...I'll do it...!」

I'm Minaho-neesan's 『brother』

I will do anything if that's what Minaho-neesan wants...

「Well...there's no need to force yourself. Won't you make Mana-chan worry?」

I look at Mana...

Mana's listening to us...

She sees our situation.

「Perhaps...Minaho won't wish for it too. If you rape that old lady...that will only be a reward for her. 『I'm embraced by a young boy²』you see」

Margo-san said and laughed.

「Also...if you look at the wife, you can't imagine the existence of their love as a couple. If that's the case...there's no revenge on making Shirasaka Sousuke watch his wife being raped. The people in question won't care any less」

True...she's not asking about Shirasaka Sousuke's safety since earlier. She doesn't care about what happens to Shirasaka Sousuke./ Nobody worries about him.

They're only worrying about the scandal of the house...

Speaking of which...even Mana...

I can't see them worry that much though...!?

...What's going on?!

「Now...let's focus on the video, I think Minaho is about to cut the next card」
Margo-san said and we return our eyes to the monitor.

『...Looking at that state, you two seem to now know』

Minaho-nesan suddenly talks to old man Ichikawa and the lawyer.

『Mr. Shirasaka Sousuke has a lot of debts with a certain crime syndicate...if you repay that, there will be nothing left from his assets...!』

Mr. Ichikawa and the two makes a startled face...

『A couple's property is legally a joint property. Youko-sama is still Mr. Shirasaka Sousuke's wife, therefore...don't you think you have the obligation to pay Mr. Sousuke's debts...?!』

『Why do I have to pay such money...!』

Mana's mother shouted!

『...Youko, shut up』

Mr. Ichikawa tries to control his daughter...!

『But father!...Why do we have to be made fool by such a woman?!』

That's her true feelings?

『Being made fool of a prostitute! And yet Father's still not angry?!!!』

Yeah...I

I don't want to embrace this old lady.

I'd rather die...

『...Even we don't want this to happen...!』

Minaho-neesan speaks calmly.

『We were forcibly turned to prostitutes by Mr. Shirasaka Sousuke』

『Didn't I tell you that I am not related to that?!』

Mana's mother shouting doesn't stop...

「Ah...This is no good」

Mana muttered from my side.

「Mama, you can't help me like that...!」

I embrace Mana's shoulder.

「...Onii-chan」

Mana looks at me.

「It's okay...it'll be fine」

「...Y-Yeah」

Mana nods slightly from my words.

Reflected in the monitor...

『...Ichikawa-sama』

Minaho-neesan looks at the old man with cold eyes.

『...W-What is it?』

Mr. Ichikawa who's calming Mana's mother was called out by Minaho-neesan suddenly...

『I've given more than 12 hours grace time since I reported about Maika-san on the phone yesterday evening. But it seems that Ichikawa-san haven't used that time more efficiently...!』

Minaho-neesan's face smiles suspiciously...

『W-What are you saying...I-I talked to Shirasaka house and intended to present a profitable tems to you...!』

...You're saying that

But isn't that just a talk convenient for yourselves.

『...Then, will the ransom be 40 million yen?』

Old man Ichikawa holds his breath from Minaho-neesan's cold words.

『...T-That is right...Isn't that an exceptional term for a prostitution organization like you?! Am I wrong?!』

Old Man Ichikawa expresses his feelings!

『...In this case, I will tell you clearly! We are the core of the national mass

media! We know a lot of people on the surface and on the back too. We can easily crush a small criminal group like you! We'll never give in to a lowly group of people like you! Hand over Maika and Sousuke-kun to us! They're not people that should be detained by people like you!』

Margo-san laughs at what old man Ichikawa said.

「...Yeah...they're really idiots. Truly idiots. He exposes the lie he spat himself!」

...Eh, what do you mean?

「Earlier, the content of the deal suggested by them is...『We have abandoned Shirasaka Sousuke so please let him return to Shirasaka family for the moment』...that was their promise」

「...Yes」

「They don't sound like they're going to keep it When we return Shirasaka Sousuke...they're not going to hand him back over...」

I see

That's why they speak like that.

「...Afterwards, they will be keeping him until he dies inside the Shirasaka family...but either way, they want to rescue Shirasaka Sousuke from 『Kuromori』alive」

...I see

「With that said...saying that the head of Shirasaka family opposing to this matter is also a lie...」

...Eh?

「After leaving the memorandum...they just intend to push that 『It's invalid as the head of Shirasaka family haven't approved of it』 Actually, the head of Shirasaka family knows all of it. Even that lawyer was dispatched here by the will of the head」

...All of it are lies.

They came here to negotiate with Minaho-neesan like that?

「...They're just underestimating us more than being dirty. They're really helpless people...!」

Margo-san spit out.

...Dammit.

I'm getting angrier.

『...Or are you saying that you're unsatisfied with 40 million yen?』

Old man Ichikawa is aggressively expecting a gratitude in return.

...That 40 million yen.

I wonder if they really intend to pay...

No...no way they would do that.

That's why these people didn't come here with concrete details...!

『...yes, I'm unsatisfied』

Minaho-neesan tells old man Ichikawa.

Her lips smiles wryly and distorted...!

『I have used 120 million yen in this twelve hours after all...!』

100...+20 million yen...?!

Old man Ichikawa opens his eyes wide in surprise...!

Mana's mother...and the lawyer too...

Minaho-neesan talks almsly...

『Normally...when such a problem occurs, Ichikawa-sama's company and Shirasaka house uses their underground organization acquaintance's power, right? Only giving instructions to the people on the background, trying not to dirty one's hands...that's how you people do it...!』

Minaho-neesan's strong eyes...freezes Mr. Ichikawa, the lawyer and Mana's mother.

『That...the usual organization didn't move this time. No matter how much we offer them...nobody worked for you...do you know why?』

...That means?!

『That is right...I also put measures on the back. Using connections...and quite a lot of money to intimidate them horribly. I deliberately set up a bluff, imitating the other party...!』

Minaho-neesan has kept fighting for the same twelve hours...

In the underground society...

『In the first place...why is Shirasaka Koutarou is the lawyer here? Shirasaka house's counselor is Ohata-sensei. Ohata law office is a powerful office with a lot of customers in the political and financial world...』

Minaho-neesan's eyes is fixed strongly on the Shirasaka lawyer...

「But...in the Ohata law office, the matters related to the underground community is being taken care of Tsujimoto or Sagizaka. Shirasaka Lawyers keep the young lawyers on the Shirasaka family...Even if this is a case involving the Shirasaka family, it should've got nothing to do with the dirty work this time...!」

Minaho-neesan spent 12 years for this revenge.
Normally...she has investigated the enemy, about the circumstances of Shirasaka family...

『And yet, Shirasaka Koutarou is the lawyer that came here...Ohata-sensei must've judged that he doesn't want to engage in this case...!』

...I see.

I wonder why is Mr. Ichikawa is presenting unreasonable demands here?
Mr. Ichikawa and others...have been refused by the people who usually cooperates with them in such cases.

The people from the underground...

Their own legal adviser...

Everyone of them don't want to be related to the trouble with 『Kuromori』

To create that flow...

Minaho-neesan have done all this work all night...

The money, threat...making use of her full power...

『What do you think?...Normally, you don't do a dirty job on your own. To be clear, Ichikawa-sama's negotiation skill is the worst. Your bluff is not even a bluff, you don't even know the market price you should be presenting if you want to solve with money...that's the minimum rule in business too, am I wrong?』

Minaho-neesan snorts...

『At least you could've prepared a display money. People on the underground never uses bank transfer. Money used for trading are old bills that don't have their numbers circulating...cash Wrap it on cheap wrapping cloth, inside a white paper back and hand it over to the other party. That is the rule. We only trust the money in front of us...!』

Mr. Ichikawa and the lawyer fell silent.
Mana's mother still doesn't get the situation?...She's still looking at Minaho-neesan with a devilish look.
In the end...Mr. Ichikawa and the Shirasaka lawyer don't know anything about negotiation with the underground people.
They usually 『leave it to someone else』.
Just letting their own will execute by ordering from above...they don't know the specifics of negotiation.
They don't know the hardships of the people who throw blood, sweat and tears at the negotiation site.
No, they don't want to know.
That's why...they just do like usual even if they don't understand anything even today...
They respond to Minaho-neesan as if they're pushing orders from the top...
Either way, they underestimate everyone below them.
These people are scums.
The worst kind of people...

『We spend everything on this revenge...we won't be swayed by 40 million yen now...!』

That's right...Minaho-neesan is ready to die if her revenge ends.
She scattered money last night...ready to lose all the assets she own.

『Also...we've made our reputation bad in the underground for this day.
『Kuromori』doesn't move with money. 『Kuromori』crushes their opponents thoroughly. 『Kuromori』are cruel and brutal, they won't go easy on anyone...!』

Margo-san speaks while staring at the screen.

「That's right...That's why we were running wilde in the downtown every night. 『Kuromori』is a terrible 『mad dog』 We made our reputation bad so they

won't know what will happen if they meddle with us badly...!」

「Yeah...That's why even if it's a delinquent or hoodlum, we never go easy on the opponents we bite」

Nei-san mutters...

「Yeah...we thoroughly injure those we see until they get the impression of 『Those guys are crazy. You'll only be hurt if you approach them』...」

So the violence every night...was all to make the name 『Kuromori』roar in the underground society.

All those activities to make the people underground recognize that 『Kuromori』 is an untouchable existence, was done for this day...

「We don't know how effective it will be but...as long as it made Mr. Ichikawa and Shirasaka house's colleague think that 『We can't help if it's Kuromori』...it was worth the rampage.」

Margo-san said.

「In the end...the investigation group that received Shirasaka house's request withdrew when they discovered what stage the 『Kuromori』organization is. To be exact...Minaho made them withdraw...I guess. Because we are approaching the other company from here...!」

Minaho-neesan did that far.

「Then...Mr. Ichikawa and Shirasaka house has asked other investigation groups one after another but all of them declined. We can read the movement on that side completely. We're ahead of them all the times...making a rumor that『Shirasaka house has no way to win this match』 Nobody bets on the losing horse...to be honest, that was the fight for the twelve hours...」

Even if Shirasaka house and Mr. Ichikawa are big people in the mass media industry...

They're only a 『Surface world』existence.

In order to fight against the criminal organization 『Kuromori』they absolutely must seek cooperation from the 『Underground society』

Knowing that...Minaho-neesan goes ahead of the enemy and hold down the other parties that might cooperate with them...

「The large organizations surrender from money and power, and the small organizations were threatened by the notorious name of 『Kuromori』! In the end, they talk to the small crime syndicates. But, those people experienced cruelty from Maru-chan and me before, so...those people won't cooperate either...Mr. Ichikawa and Shirasaka house has come to negotiate without any weapons at hand...!」

Nei-san taught us.
...I see.

「And yet...Mr. Ichikawa and Shirasaka house tries to oppose us with bluffs we can see through. I honestly never thought that they were going to make light of us this far...!」

Margo-san's inner anger is passed to Minaho-neesan in the monitor.

『...Now then, what should we do, Ichikawa-sama? You do not have any allies in the underground society. Would you still make unreasonable requests to us?』

Old man Ichikawa...

『Go it...120 million yen...No, I will pay 135 million yen』

What's with that subtle amount?

『I'm not saying that this is a problem of money...we are very angry at your insincere correspondence...!』

Minaho-neesan smiles...

『That...does that mean that you will not return Maika and Sousuke-kun to us?』

Mr. Ichikawa still doesn't break his confident attitude this late in the talk...

『Weren't you the one who's not negotiating properly...am I wrong?!』

Minaho-neesan's word...

『Father! I can't hold back anymore! It is not right for someone as low as a prostitute to ridicule us! Give back Maika to us right now!!!! Who do you think I am!!!!』

Mana's mother yells in hysteria...

「...Onii-chan」

Mana looks up at me.

「...What's wrong?」

Mana speaks to me while crying.

「Mana is going to be raped in front of Mama and Ojii-chan right?」

...Mana?!

「And...I just have to shout that 『Papa is in Gold Coast Australia』, right?」

...That means?

「Papa's no longer in Australia isn't he?」

140. Negotiation 3

「The talk earlier was just to deliberately trick Mana, right?」

Mana looks at Margo.

Margo-san smiles wryly...

「We're not trying to trick you...we're just testing Mana-chan」

I see...they purposely say that Shirasaka Sousuke is in Gold Coast Australia to know Mana's heart.

To test whether Mana will tell it to her grandfather and mother...

Of course, Gold coast is a fake information...

『Kuromori』always tests people...

They don't trust people easily.

They will keep trying until they get convinced.

「...We've already told Mr. Ichikawa yesterday that Shirasaka Sousuke is in Australia」

Margo-san grins.

In short...when that phone call started, Shirasaka Sousuke has already been taken out of Australia...?!

「Of course...we won't tell you the truth in this place. Shirasaka Sousuke might still be in Australia...he might've been moved to a different place too. Which is it?!」

Mana answers Margo-san...

「But...It's nowhere near Gold Coast?」

「...Well, that's how it is」

Margo-san nodded at Mana.

「If Shirasaka house focuses on the Gold Coast...they'll divide the staff and they will lack on other places. It's just a disturbance information. In the first place, we're not in trouble even if the disturbance doesn't succeed...!」

If ever Shirasaka Sousuke is no longer in Australia...the Gold Coast is not a big

problem anymore.

No, I don't know.

Margo-san's words might be a feint as well...

「Rather...it would be troublesome if they prevent his entry in Japan...!」

If they put a net on the airport...

They will know that Shirasaka Sousuke has returned either way...

「Let me tell you just in case...we're not stupid enough to use direct flights from Australia. Direct flights from Australia tend to decline every year. If the number of flights is limited...it'll be discovered fast won't it?」

Margo-san tells Mana.

「...Via Incheon Airport?」

「I wonder? It might be Hong Kong...there's a way to go via Shanghai too.」 In any case, there will be flights to Japan airport from China or Korea」

I see...once you get out of Japan...

From there to Japan airport...

If you do that...Shiraska house has to expand their observation to the airports all over the country...

「We've got a lot of options. Also, Kyouko-san is an expert on this kind of underground work...!」

Margo-san seems to trust Kyouko-san who's her master from the bottom of her heart.

Or rather...Kyouko・Dothnomechey seems to really exists¹

I've been doubting all of Margo-san's words...that's trouble.

I don't know what's real or fantasy anymore.²

『...Are there any more suggestions from Ichikawa-sama and Shirasaka house?』

Minaho-neesan faces old man Ichikawa and the two inside the principal's office.

『Indeed...that's all our proposals so far』

Old man Ichikawa answered while glaring at Minaho-neesan.

『...Certainly...I admit that our proposals weren't so smart. Either way, it seems that you totally outwit us. However, you haven't suppressed all the power in the underground society. If we give them money, there are surprisingly a lot of people who will do it...!』

Old man Ichikawa still threatens Minaho-neesan even this late.

『You're right...we know that it'll be disadvantageous for us if it takes time. Our funds are limited...』

Minaho-neesan answers laughingly.

『Indeed...at this current stage, we thought about our appearances and weren't able to do the minimum. We never expected you people would oppose using money and work. I've understood that you're a competent game player. You win the first round. But, the match is just starting...We won't hold back anymore...!』

Old man Ichikawa says that but...I can see the impatience in his eyes. His sweating around his neck.

『At such times...his talkativeness is a proof that he lost. Remember that...at any time, respond calmly, with short words, and quietly pressing and killing your emotions. You must not think 『Keep calm』 On the contrary, you will be impatient and talkative. You're just going to tell unnecessary words to the opponent...and you will let them know your psychological state. 『Short and quiet voice』...Just concentrate on those. Just like Minaho right now...』

Margo-san tells me.

Old Man Ichikawa continues to talk desperately while sweating inside the screen.

『Listen...you should think about this very carefully...If Shirasaka-kun and I seriously make a move, this situation can easily be reversed. We are in a position where we can benefit the underground society for a long time. We can bear the shame and ask help from political and business circles. We also have a close relationship with Mass media and judiciary industry...!』

Compared to that...Minaho-neesan's having a cool face.

『Yes...you're righty. Therefore, I acted thinking that the match will only be for

12 hours...!』

Minaho-neesan smiled coldy...!

To me...

I can see the game is already done.

『...Well fine. Then, let's hear your proposal. How will you return Maika and Sousuke-kun to us? Let me hear your conditions...how much do you want? What should we do? We'll follow it depending on your request. You can even make me talk to Shirasaka-kun...!』

But still...Old Man Ichikawa tries to rule this place by somehow looking from above.

『Ufufu...we're not offering a single condition...!』

Minaho-neesan's cold words...

Startled old man Ichikawa...!!!

『...Then...The negotiations break down and we'll rush to the second round?!』

...Minaho-neesan.

『Ahahahaha...There's no second round!...This will be the last time I will talk with Ichikawa-sama...!』

『...W-What do you mean by that?!!!!!!』

Old man Ichikawa shouted in a loud voice!!!

Minaho-neesan answered calmly.

『We don't intend to negotiate with Ichikawa-sama nor Shirasaka house since the beginning...!』

『...What...did you say!?』

『I just needed the 12 hours to negotiate with another person...!』

Minaho-neesan stands up and heads to the machine next to the principal's office desk.

That's like a broadcast machine for notifying the whole school.

A microphone is coming out of the machine.

Minaho-neesan pushed the switch...

And talked to the microphone...

『...It is as you see. Kakka³』

K-『Kakka』?!

Then...I hear a dignified voice of an old man
from the big speaker inside the principal's office...!

『...It seems that Ichikawa-kun and Shirasaka house has no capability to clean
themselves... !』

W-Who's this voice...?!⁴

I feel a strong will that's likely to control people with his voice alone.

『...I've been listening since the beginning...!』

Old man Ichikawa got irritated from the low voice.

『...Who is this person eavesdropping from us? knowing that I am Ichikawa
Shinichiro and you have been rude...!』

The voice answered from the speaker.

『I do not think this is rude. The way you have responded after summoned to
this situation is the one rude to the world...!』

Old man Ichikawa raises a voice entrusted to anger...!

『Who are you...reveal yourself...!』

The voice answered.

『...Ichikawa-kun, It's me⁵ Kouzuki Shigetaka...!』

...Kouzuki?

Misuzu's grandfather?!

『...Didn't I say 『Kakka』 earlier?』

Minaho-neesan laughs at old man Ichikawa...
...『Kakka』?!

I look at Margo-san.

『...Kouzuki-san was appointed as an ambassador of Japan in UK when he was
young. In Japan, we give ambassadors a title of 『Kakka』 That's why...even now,
Kouzuki-san is called 『Kakka』by his close friends...!』

I-Is that so?

A historically noble family from before Meiji era...a big shot in the political and economic world...a former UK ambassador...

Isn't he an extremely powerful person...!

『...I-Is this really 『Kakka』?!』

Mr. Ichikawa turned pale immediately...

『Ichikawa-kun...do you remember when you were young...when I told you that imagination and inspiration is what business owners need?』

The voice from the speaker says

『Y-Yes...I remember...!』

『Your imagination and inspiration seems to be completely inferior to Minaho-kun who's right there...!!』

Mana's mother look at old man Ichikawa.

『...Father, is this true?』

Mr. Ichikawa...

『...There's no doubt. This is Kouzuki-sensei』

『...M-My!』

The Shirasaka lawyer behind also turned pale...

Does Misuzu's grandfather hold power that's beyond old man Ichikawa and Shirasaka house...?!

『Ichikawa-kun...Minaho-kun should've told you enough information. But...you were too fixated about your house's honor that you missed something important...』

The voice from the speaker criticizes old man Ichikawa.

『Me...important?』

Old man Ichikawa opens his mouth absentmindedly...
He looks like he doesn't get it.

『...Minaho-kun, please explain』

『...Yes, Kakka』

Minaho-neesan turned to Mr. Ichikawa and the two.

『I've clearly told Ichikawa-sama yesterday during the phone call... Mr. Shirasaka Sousuke has betrayed us...and tried to hand over our customer list to crime syndicates...!』

Minaho-neesan smiles.

『W-Well, I know that...That's why you're trying to kill Sousuke-kun, right?!』

Mr. Ichikawa answers Minaho-neesan like that...!

『As expected...you do not understand anything. Mr. Shirasaka Sousuke didn't betray just us people of Kuromori brothel...!』

The voice from the speaker continues from what Minaho-neesan said...

『Have you not thought that Shirasaka Sousuke using the Kuromori brothel is a betrayal to the customers...?』

Old man...is trembling intensely.

『...Kuromori brothel...was founded by Minaho-kun's grandfather shortly after the war. It was a refined brothel which targets the leading figures in Japan political and financial circle and high-ranking US military officers. The women in the mansion weren't only young and beautiful, they're holding deep education and elegant character...they always prepare the best dishes and music』

Kouzuki 『Kakka』...knows the best times of 『Kuromori tower』
He was a guest of the mansion at those times.

『From the time of defeat to the high economic growth, Kuromori tower is a social gathering place for representatives of Japan...it is a status to enter and exit the mansion. It's not just for embracing a woman. There were a lot of people attending the Kuromori tower to associate with the high class people. Some regular member must've taken you there while you were still young?』

Old man Ichikawa...answers while trembling.

『Y-Yes.... I-I was taken by Mr. Sugiuchi who was the president Sakizaki about twice. But...it has nothing to do with the prostitutes!』

『No wonder...it would've been impossible to buy a woman from Kuromori with your salary back then. There's also a rule where a guest's visitor can't buy a

prostitute. But still...there was a worth on just going, is that correct?』

『...Y-Yes. Certainly, I've talked to a lot of well known people』

That is the original high class brothel『Kuromori tower』Minaho-neesan's grandfather has made.

It's not just selling women...it's also a social gathering where there are high class prostitutes.

『The people who were regulars of Kuromori tower are mostly retiring from active service. There are many of them who are already dead. But...the child and grandchildren would inherit the parent's business and knows that there are many cores of political and business world...!』

The voice on the speaker answers calmly...

『...All of the former regular customer's names are written in the Kuromori contact list. With photographs too. Kuromori tower was a secret club membership system. What do you think would happen if such a list falls into the hands of crime syndicates because of a little scoundrel like Shirasaka Sousuke?!』

...I-I see

The crime syndicates may blackmail the former customer based on the list...!

『It won't be interesting to threaten the fathers and grandfathers who went to the prostitution mansion before, is that correct? However, there are people like me who's a former regular and still in active service. It would be troublesome... to have such a list flow on crime syndicates. It's a serious annoyance...!』

Shirasaka Sousuke's betrayal...

Is a betrayal against all of the guests who visited 『Kuromori tower』before...!

「When Minaho's father and Shirasaka Sousuke took hold of the mansion with a coup d'etat...all of the customer information so far was taken by the manager, Morimoto Shirasaka banished Morimoto-san, however...it was actually the opposite」

Margo-san explains.

「When Minaho became the owner of the mansion, and she recalled Morimoto-san, it was after Kyouko-san's dispatched by Kouzuki-san...they

handed over the old list of clients to Shirasaka's hands. Well, Shirasaka Sousuke is just a fool who wants to satisfy his perverted nature so he didn't notice the importance of the customer list...」

So that's why when he told the crime syndicates 「I will make a new prostitution organization for you so bring the customer list of 『Kuromori』」he followed without questions...

「The contact list that Minaho's father took to Australia is a false information...!」

I see...so that's how it is...!!!!

『After Shirasaka Sousuke took over Kuromori mansion...the former luxury brothel has completely disappeared. It has turned to a childish...worthless...a vulgar prostitution organization. I was very disappointed in those days. I loved the world with the influence of the old Kuromori tower』

『Kakka』continues to talk.

『...However...I gave up on thinking that it will change at that time. In the It was the prime age of bubble economy, it was the era that raised Japan. The regulars including me have not stepped on Kuromori mansion since then...!』

The 『Kuromori tower』that was taken over by Shirasaka Sousuke...kidnapping women, confining, raping...turning them to a prostitute, 『Kuromori』has fallen to a vicious crime organization...

『But...that was 12 years ago. We were called for help by the women of Kuromori mansion. Yes...there were still prostitutes whom we patronized before in that mansion. When I heard the terrible experience of the women in the mansion...I felt pity on them. I thought that I want to help them even a little』

That is the time when Minaho-neesan's sister was killed...?

『Of course...It's impossible for a man in the surface world be involved in the management of a prostitution mansion. But, I want to regain the light of the old Kuromori Mansion...I selected Minaho-kun here to become the operator opposing Shirasaka Sousuke...!』

The voice...『Kakka』keeps speaking.

『Minaho-kun, you have met our expectations. You have worked hard to regain the atmosphere of the destroyed Kuromori tower bit by bit for twelve years. The prostitutes you have found and polished have exceptional talents. I am deeply impressed by your past efforts...!』

『...Thank you very much. Kakka...!』

Minaho-neesan bows..

『...Compared to that...what is this failure of a human, Shirasaka Sousuke doing?』

『I-I'm very sorry...!』

The Shirasaka lawyer apologizes to 『Kakka』on behalf of the house...!

『I should've intervened thoroughly twelve years ago in this case. Shirasaka Sousuke was really close with the son of Kuromori-san who passed away. I wasn't able to dispose of Shirasaka Sousuke as I feel compassion on Kuromori-san's son. As a result...Minaho-kun had suffered a lot. I apologize for that』

『No...Kakka. I was just a little girl at that time...Without the cooperation of Kyouko-san who's sent by Kakka and Morimoto-san who knows the old Kuromori, I won't be able to go against my father and Shirasaka Sousuke. I always want to appreciate my gratitude from Kakka's help...!』

Old man Ichikawa and the two were stunned by the connection of 『Kakka』 and Minaho-neesan.

『Now then...Ichikawa-kun, about the future...!』

『Kakka』talks to them.

『Y-yes...What is it?』

Old man Ichikawa is completely frightened.

『I have talked to the former regulars of Kuromori, Kyogoku-san and Ohara-kun...also Godai-kun in Kobe...』

Mr. Ichikawa trembles every time he hears a name.

I don't know them but...They must be powerful people in the financial and political world of Japan.

『We all decided to accept Minaho-kun's proposal...!』

...Minaho-neesan's proposal!?

...I see

Minaho-neesan has been negotiating with Kouzuki-san and others, the old customers...!

The twelve hours...the purpose of that time...!

『...The news about Shirasaka Sousuke arrested by the local police of Australia will flow to the mass media by 3:00 this afternoon』

Shirasaka Sousuke is arrested by the Australian police?!

『...The charge is serial rape of women in Australia, manufacturing underage porn and selling it. The 5 o'clock news from each and every station will feature the arrest of Shirasaka Sousuke...!』

...Eeeh?!

「This is not a made up story...Shirasaka Sousuke has actually raped three Australian high school students three years ago. Then he sold the videos and photos to his friends. That's the charge of the Australian police this time...!」

Margo-san said.

Far from Japan...a news of a ridiculous sex crime committed on a different country was announced by a top news...

Shirasaka Sousuke's social status will be completely lost.

No...the influence will reach his clan.

On top of that...Shirasaka house is a famous noble family...

I-It'll become a big problem⁶

『...We don't know what the newspaper company and TV station of Shirasaka-kun will do...please circulate this news thoroughly to other news organizations. That will happen. Carry this order without exceptions. You can't overturn this anymore』

『Kakka's』voice sounds like a sentence of a judge...

『Shirasaka-kun is widely known to be an owner of a baseball team and a newspaper company to the world. His nephew, an elite businessman working for a major advertising agency was arrested for committing a crime that can

only be described as a national disgrace. This will become a very big scandal...!』

...Y-Yeah.

...His serial rape in Australia and manufacturing and sale of child pornography...

It can't be helped if that's called as a national disgrace...

The entire Japanese people will look at Shirasaka Sousuke with white eyes...

And, his family too...

『P-Please wait...that would mean Shirasaka house's collapse!』

The Shirasaka lawyer pleads to the voice on the speaker!

『...It is you people to blame for not dealing the pest Shirasaka Sousuke inside you. Let me tell you, I am very angry about this situation. It's not just me...

Kyogoku-san, Ohara-kun, and Godai-kun as well...the people who went to the old Kuromori tower are completely angry. They obviously want the Shirasaka house to pay a penalty to some level...!』

『Kakka』said with a strong voice...

『...Ichikawa-kun, you're the same』

Old man Ichikawa crumbles on the floor.

『...Retire. Your daughter's marriage partner committed a crime. Naturally, you are responsible for it too』

『...Ooooooooooh!!』

Old man Ichikawa howls while holding his head on the floor...!

『...Father, what will happen from now on?! What will happen to me!?!』

Mana's mother rants hysterically...!

『...It's no good. There's no human who survived after making Kakka angry』

Old man Ichikawa looks at his daughter with eyes of despair.

『...N-No』

『Both of us are done...we'll be a family of disgrace in Japan...!』

Mr. Ichikawa will have to retire from the position of company representative. Mana's mother cannot do any showy work of food critic.

From now on...they can't live on a place with sunlight to escape from the eyes

of public.

『...It is inevitable...this is a reward for your treachery against us...!』

『Kakka's』voice...pushed away old man Ichikawa.

『P-Please...At least give us time to consult the clan!』

The Shirasaka lawyer begs desperately...

『You also are repetitious』

『Kakka』rejects

『Ichikawa-kun have said it earlier right?...You're the existence that's leading the mass media of this country, you have a lot of acquaintances in the surface and the underground world, right? If you are dissatisfied with our decision, do something with your own power! There's more than three hours before the arrest of Shirasaka Sousuke's arrest news is delivered...!』

『We can't do anything within three hours!』

The lawyer complains half-crying.

『If it was Minaho-kun...she can reverse the situation within three hours. That's the difference between you and her』

『Are you saying that we're inferior to a prostitute?!』

Mana's mother screams...!

『You and her are similar...if she's filthy for being a prostitute, are you not as dirty as her who's having an affair with a man other than her husband? Our difference as a human is that you people were arrogant...and left the villain Shirasaka Sousuke run loose』

The voice said.

Oh...Minaho-neesan has showed all of the material of Shirasaka Sousuke to 『Kakka』

Of course she knows about Mana's mother's affair too.

『That is all about the punishment we will be giving to Shirasaka Sousuke』

Mr. Ichikawa, Mana's mother, and the Shirasaka lawyer are just in blank surprise.

「...I've lost my place to come back home」

Mana who's been watching the situation on the monitor has said quietly.

「I can't go back home anymore...no. My house will disappear soon. Because of Papa...」

...Mana.

「If everyone knows that I'm a daughter of a person who had a serial rape in a foreign country...I can't go to school anymore. I can't go anywhere anymore...!」

Mana shivers.

「...I'll lose everything...!」

Mana's frightened.

「Eh, what are you saying? That's not the case!」

Nei-san brightly talks to Mana.

「...Nei-san?」

Mana looks at Nei-san with a surprised face.

「Mana-chan has Yo-chan!」

Mana looks at me.

「Mana-chan, as long as you're Yo-chan's 『slave』...Mana-chan will be my 『little sister』!」

Nei-san grins.

「That's right...you're already Yoshida Mana aren't you? You're no longer Shirasaka Maika...!」

Megu tells Mana with a smile.

「If you don't like being pointed at your back because of your father, just enroll to another middle school with the name Yoshida Mana!...Should I ask Sensei?」

Nei-san says that, but...

「No...I will be the one to ask Minaho-neesan about that」

Nei-san smiled at me when I say that.

「You're right...Yo-chan should be the one to ask...!」

Mana's looking at us with a surprised face.

「Why can Onii-chan say that calmly?」

...Eh?

Mana...let's out her emotions...

「I have lost my place to come back home!」

...While she shivers.

Ah...yeah

Err...what should I say?

「We're all the same if that's the case!」

Nei-san smiled at Mana.

「...Eh?」

Mana was shocked by the smile.

Nei-san...

「I haven't told Mana-chan about it yet, right...My parents were killed in US. My twin brother and I were kidnapped after that...then my brother was killed too. Then, when finally escaped from the criminal..., I was sold as a slave to a bad woman...that's when Sensei took me. You see, I had a time when I was the slave just like Mana-chan!」

Nei-san said with a smile.

「I was born in an American-Indian settlement. I was raped by two men when I was 12. My father sold me. Then, I shot the men with a gun...it was a legitimate self-defense. Afterwards, I was sent to a facility...But, I wasn't able to make friends as I'm a woman who killed her rapists. I met Minaho during my rough times」

Margo-san smiles at Mana.

「I'm the same...I've lost home too」

Megu follows.

「You know about me don't you?...I was on the verge of being made a prostitute by Shirasaka-san. I can't go back to Shirasaka house nor Yamamine house...」

Megu smiles kindly to Mana.

「You also know about Minaho and Katsuko-san don't you?...Both of them were turned prostitutes by Shirasaka Sousuke...unable to see the parent's funeral. After all, they don't have a place to return to」

「Mana-chan, we're the same!」

Margo-san...Nei-san...

「We're finally the same... Mana!」

...Megu.

「...I'm the same?!」

Mana mutters.

「That's right. And, we have Yoshi-kun...!」

...Me?

...I

...Is it okay for me to be here?

I still have a house to come back to.

The my sleeping sofa with no lights.

I'm different from everyone who really lost their home. ⁷

「As long as Yoshida-kun accepts Mana-chan...I will accept Mana-chan too」

Margo-san says.

「Yeah...as long as Yo-chan loves Mana, I will also love Mana-chan too!」

...Nei-san.

「I intend to be Yoshida Megumi from the bottom of my heart already. That's why if Yoshi-kun says that Mana is his 『Little sister』I will accept you as my 『little sister』too」

...Megu.

「Sensei and Katsun thinks the same too...it's all up to Mana-chan

afterwards!」

Nei-san tells Mana.

「Depending on me?」

Mana looks at me...

「Yeah...You can go back to your mother and grandfather in the upper room too...Mana」

I tell Mana...

Mana...

「Onii-chan...please violate me in front of Mama and Ojii-chan...!」

...Eh!?

「I'm planned to be violated in front of grandfather...right?」

Mana asks Margo-san.

「Yeah...that's in our revenge plan」

She admits it's existence in the plan honestly.

「I have been raped by Onii-chan multiple times unknown to Mama and Grandfather...」

Mana said sadly.

Yeah...I've raped Mana twelve times already including yesterday's virgin rape...

「If Mama and Ojii-chan still accepts me even when they see me raped by Onii-chan...I will return to Shirasaka house」

Mana's face is serious.

「I'm okay living being talked behind my back forever...I will do my best living with Mama and Ojii-chan. But...if ever...!」

...Mana?

「Mama and Ojii-chan sees me as dirty after seeing me raped...!」

Mana's eyes have tears stocked up.

「I'm okay living as Onii-chan's 『slave』forever. I'll live as a 『slave』...!!!」

141. Mana's birth.

「Then, Yoshida-kun, take everything off...」

「...Okay」

Being told by Margo-san...I took off my school uniform.

「Mana-chan, come here...!」

Mana who's naked with only her collar is called by Nei-san to the sofa on the corner of the room.

「...Uwan, what's this!？」

Mana sits on the sofa and jumps around.

「Ah, be careful, this sofa's spring is special made so you'll jump around a lot with just small movements!」

Nei-san warns Mana.

「...Why is such a thing made?」

Isn't it difficult to sit down if the springs are so sensitive and powerful?

「Well...It's a sofa for sex」

Margo-san laughs.

「Just a small shake and the spring will move up up and down strongly...It will be a bit fun if you have sex on top of this」

I-Is that so?

「When you pierce the girl's body from top...The spring below will bounce up...if the girl is riding on top of a man's body...you jump like a frog and thrust up deeper in the woman's vagina...!」

I-I see.

「Yoshi-kun's penis is already hard.」

...Ah.

It looks like the energy drink Katsuko-nee handed is working

My penis is rock hard already.
The root of my penis is really hot.

「...Megu will lick it up...!」

Megu takes off my underwear and sucks my penis.
She's sucking the glans with her mouth.
Licking it up with her red tongue.
Mana straddles on the sofa wide meanwhile.

「This is a special lotion Katsun prepared!」

Nei-san took out a bottle with a red liquid.

「We might as well make Mana-chan's grandfather think that she just lost her virginity right?!」

She says as she pour down the lotion to Mana.
A thick red liquid spill from her vagina...
It's as if it's virgin blood.¹

「Yoshida-kun, take this...!」

Margo-san handed me the black mask with the usual『吉』on it.

「You can't expose your face to the people above right?...You can emphasize that Mana-chan is being violated one-sidedly with that mask」

...True.

Mana's tragedy would stand out if she's fucked by a masked man.
I put on the mask.

「Thanks Megu... I'm going」

I thanked Megu for giving me a fellatio.

「Yes dear...do your best」

Megu kissed my glans in the end.
Now then...
Mana's public rape will begin now.

「Onii-chan...please make a mess out of Mana...」

Mana stands from the sofa and welcomes me.

There's tears on Mana's eyes...

「...Mana」

「Don't hold back...」

Mana's trembling.

I embrace the small naked body. 「Got it...Shout with all your power, remember the time when I first took your virginity」

「Un...I'm going to cry with the feeling that I just lost my virginity right?」

I replace Mana sitting on the sofa.

I see, the repulsion of this spring is awesome...

「...Onii-chan, how do you want to be connected?」

Mana asks me the position while trembling.

...I

The camera in front of us will be recording the foolery we will be doing after this.

「I'd like our connection to be clearly seen by the camera...」

I answered.

「Un...what should Mana do?」

「I will be sitting on this sofa...Mana will sit on my knee and take my dick in...」

I will be violating Mana in the so called sitting position...

「...Got it」

Mana replied lightly.

Mana stands with her back facing me who's sitting on the sofa.

I gently stroke her tense back.

「...Then, stick out your butt slowly. Until Mana's entrance hit my dick」

I instructed her.

「...L-Like this?」

Timidly, Mana brings her cute butt close to my erect penis...

「...Wait a moment」

Margo-san calls us out.

「The chain will be obstructing the camera with that position...」

Margo-san looks at the camera and adjusts Mana's collar.

The chain dropping down straight that it draws a center line on Mana's body.

She's right...You can't see the connecting part with this.

I throw the chain of her collar on the back of her right shoulder...

「Also, her hands should be bound so it really looks like rape!」

Nei-san said and took out leather handcuffs.

「It's dangerous when she's overturned when she's bind on the back...let's bind her in front」

Mana's hand is restrained with leather handcuffs.

「Take care Yo-chan...the spring has an amazing power so try not to fall in front of Mana-chan...!」

「Yes, I'll be careful」

I grab Mana's waist from behind.

Mana's 14 year old back is right in front of me...

Looking at her like this...it's still a child's body.

A soft girl like that's not growing as an adult yet...

I lick her back with my tongue.

「...Kyaaun~!」

Mana wriggles her back.

I touch Mana's ass...

She's nervous?...Her skin is cold.

After enjoying the soft feeling of her ass...I hold her waist with my hands again.

I will not let go of this hand whatever happens.

「Now then...are you two ready?」

Margo-san asked.

「...Yes, we're okay. Right...Mana?」

「...Yes, Onii-chan」

I raised my waist a bit from the sofa and apply my glans to Mana's vagina.
The tip of my glans got wet with the lotion on Mana's genital.
The temperatures of our bodies exchange at the place we feel the most.

「...Stick our your ass a bit more. Stand by so you can put your weight on me anytime...!」

「... Yes」

Mana answered with a dry voice.

「Listen. We will start the video on the upper floor when Yoshida-kun's penis is inserted to Mana-chan...!」

Margo-san tell us.

I whisper to Mana's ear.

「Okay?...Mana」

...Mana's eyes are completely wet.

「...Yes, Onii-chan」

Mana spill her first tears.

「...Minaho, the side show is ready」

Margo-san contacts the principal's office with the microphone on the wall...
The state of the upper room is reflected on a big monitor behind the camera...

『Now then, Ichikawa-san...let's show the current state of Maika-san』

Minaho-neesan tells the old man depressed Ichikawa.

『...Maika?!』

Mr. Ichikawa looks up.

Mana's mother, and the Shirasaka lawyer looks at Minaho-neesan.

『...Yes. I will show you Maika-san's charming figure...!』

At the same time she says that...a white screen comes from the ceiling behind Minaho-neesan.

Our foolery will be reflected there using a projector from now on.

The grandfather and mother will watch Mana get violated.

「...Standby!」

I concentrate on the tip of my penis after hearing Margo-san.
The tip of the glans is already kissing the vagina wet with lotion...
It's making a lewd wet sound., 『...This is the current Shirasaka Maika-san』

The screen behind Minaho-neesan...
Shows the naked Mana about to be violated right now...
It's clearly projected...!

「...Action!!!!」

Along with Margo-san's signal...!!!
...!!!
...Nnnn!!!
I penetrate my dick inside Mana!!!

「...Iyaaaaaaaaaaaaa!!」

Mana screams...!
Mana's waist that's held down by my hands is stabbed to the bottom in one go!
Mana's second year middle school body is so light!!!
Mana broke her posture and gets on top of me as if sitting!!
My erect penis breaks inside Mana's vagina...!

「Aaaaaaaah...Ooooooooouuccchh...!!!」

The screen reflects Mana's eyes wide open as she screams out loud...!

『...M-Maikaaaa!!!』

Old man Ichikawa screams!!

『...Kyaaaaaaaa!!!』

Mana's mother screams at the gruesome view on the screen...!

「It's coming inside my stomaaaaach!!!!」

Mana groans in pain while shedding tears!!

「Hey...more!!! I'm going to screw it to the root!」

I pull Mana's waist downwards...!
I push my hips upwards...!

Mana opened her legs wide and entrusted her weight to me...!

Oh...I feel Mana's soft ass in my knees.

I'm connected with Mana...!

My penis is reaching Mana's womb...!

It's completely clamped to the root inside the small and narrow vagina hole.

I exposed the connecting part to the camera clearly!!!

『...M-Maikaaaaaaaaaaaaaa!!!!』

Old man Ichikawa becomes speechless in front of the monitor.

『S-S-S-S-Stop this! What are you doing!!!!!!』

Mana's mother is in half-frenzy as she looks at the video of her daughter being fucked...

『You do know that this will happen if the negotiations break down, don't you?』

Minaho-neesan speaks to old man Ichikawa coldly.

『You people said that you guarantee Maika's safety!!』

Old man Ichikawa enrages.

Minaho-neesan laughs at Mr. Ichikawa with contemptuous eyes...

『...Isn't she alive?』

『...What are you saying?』

『...I didn't kill her.』

『...Y-Youuuuu!』

『Shouldn't you be thankful that we didn't kill her?...We're a crime syndicate you know...!』

Mr. Ichikawa shivers from Minaho-neesan's cold eyes...!

『Now...Maika-san, Be violated in front of your mother and grandfather...!』

I slowly start my piston when Minaho-neesan says that...

I can't push out my waist from the bottom like normal...

I just push my waist on the sofa and the spring recoil makes it jump up...

I sit down firmly and...Biyoon!

「...ah, Aaaaaaah!」

The vaginal path forcibly opened by man is being rubbed by the glans...!
It goes to the deepest part of her body...!

「Iyaaa...iyaaa...don't rape meee...!!!」

Mana shouts...!

Half of it is an act...

Half of it is true...

She's resisting my insult² in front of her mother and grandfather.

「Iyaaaaan...I...I don't want thiiiis...aaaahn!」

Mana cries

I have my hands fixed on Mana's waist...

Mana can't run away from me.

The spring of the sofa is the bow, and my penis is an arrow...³

Mana's womb becomes the target...

Again, and again...she's taking in the hard genital of a man...!

「Ouuuuch!! Help meee, Ojii-chaaaaan...Mamaaaa!」

Mana sheds tears and screams to the camera!

I push down my waist and...Biyoon!⁴

I attack Mana's small flesh...!

Mana's whole body is sweating profusely from the pain...!

「...H-Help me, help me...I don't want this...Ojii-chaaaaan!!!」

I push down my waist and...biyoon!

「It hurtssss!...It hurts down thereee...I'm being violated...I'm being rapeeeed!!!」

The red lotion shines from the light...Mr. Ichikawa and the others can only see it as blood of deflowering however.

『...H-Hey, stop this right now!!!!』

Old man Ichikawa shouts at Minaho-neesan!

『Right now! Release Maika!!!!!!』

Even in this situation, Mr. Ichikawa still keeps his commanding tone...

『My...why...?』

Minaho-neesan smiles maliciously.

『...Why you ask?』

『Yes. Because, didn't this happen because of you...?!』

『...I-I...』

Mr. Ichikawa stares at Minaho-neesan while his whole body trembles in anger.

『It is as Kakka said earlier...Ichikawa-sama seems to lack imagination and inspiration』

Old man Ichikawa is startled.

『Isn't it natural that this will happen if you anger us who's holding your granddaughter...!!!!』

Minaho-neesan says while laughing coldly...
Katsuko-nee who's standing behind too...
They're mocking old man Ichikawa...

『Aaaah, Maika, Maika...how could this?!』

Mana's mother just cried sorrowfully.

『Father...it's father's fault!』

Mana's mother blames her father.

『...I-I...!』

『Aaah...Maika...Maika's experiencing such a cruel thing...!!!!』

Mana's mother is in panic...

『H-How can this be』

The Shirasaka lawyer is looking at Mana's rape scene in blank amazement.
A horrible rape is happening in another room.
Ichikawa and the Shirasaka adults just look at the screen...they can't do anything...!

『...I will never forgive you. I will kill all you...!』

Mr. Ichikawa speaks words of hatred...
Minaho-neesan speaks calmly.

『...We also thought the same』

Old man Ichikawa's eyes opened wide.

『When I was violated by the man named Shirasaka Sousuke...lost everything...
that's what we thought. We will definitely take our revenge...!』

Minaho-neesan's eyes are burning in hatred a hundred more times that Mr.
Ichikawa.

『How is it?...This is Shirasaka Sousuke's method. You have calmly overlooked
this...!!!』

But...Old man Ichikawa is!

『You're raping Maika for the sake of your revenge?! Maika's 14 years old!!』

Minaho-neesan calmly answered.

『My little sister was raped when she was 12. She was forced to prostitution
when she was 12 years old...!!!』

『But...Maika is my granddaughter...!!』

Hearing that...I strongly thrust inside Mana!!!

「...Ouuuuuchhhh!!!」

Mr. Ichikawa looks at Mana on the screen in surprise.
Minaho-neesan throws her hatred to Mr. Ichikawa...

『We're humans...we have parents too...!』

Katsuko-nee too...

『I also had a mother...I was forcibly pulled away from my mother, kidnapped
and raped...unable to return home...』

『A lot of women have fallen to hell by the man named Shirasaka Sousuke...』

But...old man Ichikawa...

『...Then what!? Don't lump us together with you people! Maika is my
treasured daughter!!! They're not vulgar like women like you...!!!』

Hearing her grandfather's words.
The raped Mana...
...Lost her temper!!

「...Ojii-chan you idiot!! If you say that, there will be no one who can save me!!!」

The young vagina is being attacked by my penis...
Shedding tears of anger, sorrow, and humiliation...
Mana screams facing the camera!!!

「Why have you not tried me using all the means!!! Isn't it okay to think doing anything even kneeling just to save me!!!」

The granddaughter blames the grandfather while she's collar naked, handcuffed, and being violated by a man...!!!

『...I-I never thought that these people are outrageous!』

The grandfather's excuse just pours fuel into Mana's anger...!!!

『These people are genuine crime syndicates! They hate Papa from the bottom of their hearts! It's easy to imagine what they will do when these people caught me! You're an idiot Ojii-chan!!!』

Mana's eyes spill tears violently...!
The anger and hatred accumulated from being violated by me yesterday was thrown to her grandfather in a dash!!!

『M-Maika...I just...』
「Ojii-chan just feared the Shirsaka house and believed these people won't make a move on me?! Are you an idiot Ojii-chan?!!!! These people are betting their lives for their revenge on us!!!! You don't get that...?!!!!」

Mana's vagina is tightening my penis...!

『M-Maika...I just want...』
『T-That's right, Maika, your grandfather thinks about your safety first...!』

Looking at her father losing power at the scolding of his grandchild...Mana's mother speaks out.

『...I hate you all!!!! Papa, Mama, Ojii-chan too...I hate all of you!!!!』

Mana screams!!!
She's moving her waist by herself while screaming!!!
She's trying to escape by having sex with me...!!!
That's right...our bodies are connected.
Our skins...mucous membranes...
Our genitals being connected is far thicker than the blood connections.

『...Papa made these people's lives go crazy...if Ojii-chan and Mama stopped Papa...my people won't be driven mad by these people!!』

Mana's ass shrinks tightly in front of me!
She's clamping my penis!!

「...Papa should just die! Just kill him already!」

Mans' words...
Mana's mother...shouts!!!

『...Maika! What are you saying about your parents!!』

...Mana.
...Screams back.

『...Don't spout bullshit on me!!』

She turned her eyes of hatred to her mother...!
「...What kind of parent would let her daughter experience this!! Hate, hate, hate!!! I hate you all!!!!!!!!!!」

Mana shook her head side by side.
「I don't want thiiiiiiiis!!!!」
Mana's sorrowful scream pierces my heart.
...Mana.

...My mana.
I stopped moving...and hugged Mana's body gently from behind.

「...Mana. Let's stop if it hurts...okay?」

I whispered on Mana's ear.

「...O-Onii-chan?!」

Mana shook her head and looks at me...

I stare at Mana's eyes.

「...Mana, are you okay? It's okay now We can stop...okay?」

Hearing me, Mana...

「...It's not okay! There's no way it's okay!!!!」

She spill tears again...

She turned to the camera again...!

「...Mama! I'm being raped right now! I'm being violated! My virginity was forcibly taken away...turned to a mess! I can no longer return to being a virgin!!!」

She desperately appeals to her mother...

It doesn't reach Mana's mother...

Mana's mother closes her eyes and covered her ears with her hand.

『...I don't know, I don't know...this is...this is just...a dream...a nightmare...!』

She's not acknowledging it for her own convenience...!

Mana endures her sorrow.

「...Why?! Why is my rapist much kinder than my blood relatives...!! This is strange...I don't want this...!!!」

...Mana.

...I.

「Mana...Let's continue」

「Yes...Onii-chan...!」

Mana answered while crying worn out.

「...Let's go until I ejaculate!」

「Go on...please do as you want, Onii-chan」

「Let out everything in your heart...just shout everything you think...!!!」

「...Eh?」

「Your anger, hatred, sorrow...let it all out! Fling it to those people in front of us...!」

...Mana.

「...Un, got it...I get it, Onii-chan...!」

I resume the piston once again!

I use the spring's effect to the maximum...

Intense...reckless speed...

I violate Mana's body...!!!

I violate, violate, violate this 14 year old body...!!!!

「...Iyaaaa , ouch, it huuurrrts!!!」

Mana screams with all her strength...!

「Help meeeee...I don't want thiiiiisss!!!」

She lets out everything in her heart...!

「Don't violate me...get out from my body!!!」

She lets out all the suffering in her chest...

「I'm scared! It's painful!! It huuuuuurtsss...I don't want thiiiiisss!!」

Mana screams!

Mana screams!

Mana is no longer saying 「Help me Ojii-chan」or「Help me Mama」...

She's just letting out the pain from being raped...!

The pain in her body...

And the suffering of her mind...

She continues to shout without hiding anything...!!!

『...M-Maika...』

Old man Ichikawa is staring at his granddaughter being raped in blank surprise...

Her mother closed her eyes and ears...

The Shirasaka lawyer turned his face away already...

That's horrible they see Mana's rape.

Watching them is Minaho-neesan and Katsuko-nee.

Both of the prostitutes have a cold smile in their face...

Those eyes were crying...

The Mana being raped by me is their past selves.

They're facing their past selves...

「...M, Mana...here I go, I'm ejaculating...!!!」

But still, the final time has come.

Mana's womb will be filled by my semen...her virgin body will be completely soiled...we'll show that moment to her grandfather.

「...I-I don't want it...I don't want thaaat...don't cuuum!! I don't want to be pregnantttt!!!」

Mana shouts.

「...I don't want iiiit...! Please, nothing but thaaat!!」

Those were the same words Mana have told me when she accepts my semen in her womb for the first time.

『Hey, please...stop this...Maika...please spare my grandchiild!!』

Old man Ichikawa...kneele in front of Minaho-neesan and Katsuko-nee.

『I'll do anything...I will do whatever you want...please, just spare Maikaaaaa!!!』

Old man Ichikawa begs while grinding his forehead on the floor.

『It's too late』

Minaho-neesan said with contempt

『Why didn't you do this in the beginning...?!』

Old man Ichikawa's face dyed black in despair!

「...Aaaaaaah, cumming...I'm cumming!!」

...I

「...Aaaaah, it's coming ouuuuut!」

The burning hot liquid squirts into Mana's womb!!!

「...Kyaaaaaaaaaaaaa!!!」

Mana's young body receives a man's semen in her womb and turns into an

arch!!!

「Hoooooot!!!! It's coming iiiiin... it's pouring iiiiin...!!!!」

Mana speaks out the sensation of the cloudy liquid spreading in her body!!

「I-It's pouring in...my inside is being violateeeed...!!!!」

The body of a 14 year old shivers after being pierced by a man's finishing blow.

『...aaaah, Maika...』

Old man Ichikawa spill tears like rain.

『Father...what happened to Maika?...What has happened...?!』

The mother desperately closing her eyes asks her father.

『...T-The man has ejaculated. Maika's no more...』

Old man Ichikawa collapses.

「U...Uuuu...Uuuuu...!!!!」

I poured inside Mana until the last drop...

Then...I spread Mana's legs so the camera can take a good look...

I pull out my penis...

My white semen drips from Mana's small vagina.

『...Aah, this is cruel』

The Shirasaka lawyer muttered.

He's shaking his head...

It's as if Mana has received a mortal injury making her unable to survive anymore...

「...I'm no good anymore」

Mana said in a small voice.

The whole Mana rape scene is seen by her grandfather.

「...Hey, Ojii-chan, am I useless already?!」

The grandfather shouts while semen spills from her crotch...old man Ichikawa...

『...T-That's not true. N-No matter what happens to your body, Maika's my granddaughter. O-Ojii-chan will never abandon you...!』

To that state of her grandfather, Mana...

「...What do you mean by『No matter what happens to your body』...?!」
『T-That's?』

Her grandfather hesitates to speak.

「I'm alive! I'm still whole! I was just raped!...I haven't lost anything yet!」

Old man Ichikawa...can no longer look at his granddaughter who's been restrained naked with sperm dripping on her crotch...
He closed his eyes and shouted.

『...Indeed. Even if you're stained...Maika is my grandchild!!!!』

...Mana.

Threw everything away from those words.

Her house, name, past, even herself...

「Enough...Goodbye, Ojii-chan Mama」

Mana speaks while her naked body is hugged by me from behind.

『...Maika?』

Old man Ichikawa doesn't understand Mana's heart.

「...Onii-chan, am I stained?」

I look at Mana.

「No...You're my 『treasure⁵』」

I touch the tattoo on Mana's lower abdomen.

Mana puts her hand on top of mine.

「You're right...I'm Onii-chan's 『treasure』right...! What are those people saying...!」

Mana calls her grandfather ...『those people』

Old man Ichikawa speaks to that Mana.

『Mika, let's come back home. Ojii-chan will take care of you forever. Even if

you're stained, Maika is Maika. Your school, employment, and marriage...Ojii-chan will help you on all of it...」

Mana glares at her grandfathe .

「...No thanks. Please think that Shirasaka Maika has already died. I'll become these people's ally」

『Hey...Maika, what are you saying...!』

「Ojii-chan...you saw me as a filth. Just like how you see Yuzuki-san and Katsuko-san earlier...!」

Mana looks at her grandfather with angry eyes.

「Then that means that you people are my enemy!!!!」

『...Hey...Maika...calm down. I just.....』

「Shut up, shut up, shut uuuup!!⁶」

Mana screams!

「...Let me tell you one thing at least...Papa seems to be in Gold Coast Australia. You have three more hours to fins Papa. If you rescue Papa from the Australian police, Ojii-chan might not be perished!」

Mana screams to the camera.

「...That's enough. Please turn off the camera」

I tell Margo-san.

「...It would just be pitiful for Mana if this continues」

Minaho-neesan no the screen nods.

Margo-san stops the camera.

The red light indicator disappears...

「...Mana, it's okay now」

I embrace Mana tightly...

...Mana

「...Onii-chan...I'll be Onii-chan's slave forever okay」

Mana said in excitement.

「I've had enough. Mana's body and future, I'll give it to Onii-chan. You can

make a mess out of Mana...!」

...I

I slapped Mana's cheeks lightly.

「...O-Onii-chan!?!」

Mana looks at my face in surprise.

「Is there a self-important 『slave』?!」

I scold Mana.

「...I-I'm sorry」

and...Mana is attacked by an intense fear.

「...I'm sorry, Onii-chan. Mana was bad. Please don't throw me away...please don't throw Mana away...I'll be a good girl...I'll become Onii-chan's 『slave』...so please don't throw Mana away...!」

Mana has nobody but me anymore.

Mana has already thrown her family away.

「Yeah...If Mana's a good girl, I'll never throw her away. I'll be loving you forever and ever...!」

I gently stroke Mana's cold skin from the fear and tension.

「...Onii-chan.」

Mana's eyes have tears piling up.

「Mana...It's an order」

She looks at me with moist eyes.

「...Yes, what is it?」

I said.

「I'll hug you...so cry all you want in my chest」

「...Eh?」

「...You can cry, Mana」

I embraced Mana's body tightly...

This small body that has been tense all this time...

...immediately weakens.

「...Onii-chan.」

「I'll be here with you...I'll be with Mana forever」

「...O-Onii-chaaaaaaan...!!!!」

Tears spill out of Mana's eyes in a dash...!!!

「I...I...aaaaaaaaaaaaah! Aaaaaaaaaah!」

Mana buries her face to my chest and screams while shedding tears...!
I hugged Mana as hard as possible...!

142. To scold

I embrace the naked crying Mana.

「...Waaaaaaaaaaaaa...Uaaaaaaaaaaaan!!」

Finally...Mana loses everything.

Her house, family, and her friends...

She can no longer go back on being Shirasaka Maika.

「...It's okay...everything will be all right」

I've comforted Mana so many times since yesterday.

Every time I do...Mana betrays me in her heart.

She has been thinking about escaping in her mind...she's always been acting.

Getting conceited when Megu and I pamper Mana...she took a familiar and impolite attitude to Minaho-neesan and Tamayo-san.

But...Mana cannot betray me anymore.

Mana doesn't have anything but me.

「Now...it's about time the upper room opens」

Margo-san looks at the monitor.

The state in the principal's office is reflected on the big screen on the wall.

『...Kakka, how was it?』

Minaho-neesan says quietly.

『Umu...it was a spectacular show.』 It was a bit wasteful that it's just a side show...!』

The voice from the speaker says so.

Mana's sorrowful breakup...is a 『Show』

『...That was the man you have mention?』

...Me?

『Yes...That is right』

Minaho-neesan answers...

『I see, he's certainly an interesting one...however...!』

『Kakka』...what does he think about me and Misuzu?

He says『But』...as expected, he'll object.

...I get that.

I'm just a commoner...

No...I'm even lower than a commoner.

I'm a child abandoned by my parents...

And...I belong the underworld group 『Kuromori』...

I'll never be a match for Misuzu who's a member of Kouzuki house...

Above all...I have multiple 『women』

Even Kouzuki『Kakka』...must've hate giving his granddaughter to such a man.

On top of that...Misuzu has a fiance 『Kakka』has decided

...But.

I love Misuzu.

I don't want to part with Misuzu.

『Kakka...let us talk about that matter on another occasion...』

Minaho-neesan said.

『Umu...certainly, this isn't a talk these people should hear』

...That's right.

The room still has old man Ichikawa and Shirasaka house's lawyer.

This isn't something that should be talked in front of them.

The match hasn't been finished yet.

Actually, until the news about Shirasaka Sousuke's crime in Australia flows...

Until the return of Shirasaka Sousuke himself...and the revenge is accomplished.

『Kuromori』and Shirasaka house's fight is still not finished...

It's just a mere passage right now.

『Tomorrow night...will you come to the Konpeki-style family's dance presentation?』

『Kakka's』voice said.

『Yes...we will be making a visit』

『Of course I will be going too...Minaho-kun. Should we talk about the details at that time?』

...The national theater?
They're going to talk about Misuzu and my future?

『...Certainly』

Minaho-neesan bows to the voice.

『Now then...Ichikawa-kun』

『Kakka』...calls out old man Ichikawa.

『Y-Yes!』

Mr. Ichikawa who's struck dumb from the declaration of breakup by Mana, hurries to correct his posture.

『What should we do about you after this...?』

Old man Ichikawa looks like he has grown ten years in just a minute.

『...I will follow all of Kakka's instructions』

Mr. Ichikawa surrenders brokenheartedly.

『A good decision. Well then, please prepare a press conference matching the news at 5 o'clock...!』

『...Press conference?』

Mr. Ichikawa looks up the speaker where the voice comes from.

『That is right...You didn't know anything about Shirasaka Sousuke's evildoings. You don't, however...you will take responsibility for the situation that has occurred as his father-in-law and will go down from your seat as company's representative...that will be the content. It's a retirement interview』

Kouzuki『Kakka's』words...made Mr. Ichikawa tremble.

『...Is there no other way?』

『...If you do that, you will suffer minimal damage. If you cut your stomach yourself...the people and mass media won't need to blame you. Anyway, it's about time for you to retire. I think it's a good time for that...!』

Misuzu's grandfather is this kind of person.
He is far higher than old man Ichikawa or Shirasaka house...
He must be the most influential person in Japan...

『As for your daughter. Show in the press conference and say that you'll refrain yourself from your food critic work. Hold yourself for a while. If it cools down, you may be able to work as a food critic again...if you are lucky.』

『...Father』

Mana's mother looked at Mr. Ichikawa...

『We will do as Kouzuki-sama says...we don't have any other paths to take』
『...Y-yes』

Mana's mother begins to cry...
She's much more sad about losing her work than losing Mana?

『Now then...Shirasaka lawyer...Ichikawa-kun and her will do as I say, but... what about Shirasaka house?』

『Kakka』...turns towards the Shirasaka lawyer.

『Uhm...I'm not in a position to respond to anything. I will come back home and will consult Moritsugu-sama...!』

『...I don't mind if it's just your opinion. Do you think that Moritsugu-kun will agree to this?』

...The lawyer.

『...No. Moritsugu-sama won't agree to this situation.』
『Of course...He's quite stubborn after all. You can say that he's persistent...!』

『Kakka』comments on the head of Shirasaka house, Shirasaka Moritsugu...

『...However, as I have said earlier...the news about Shirasaka Sousuke will reach the media and it would be a hot item at 5 o'clock news. That would exclude Shirasaka house's newspaper and television stations. From now on, you cannot escape the other newspaper and television companies...that decision won't be overturned』

I see...the press will be contacted at 3 o'clock and the television news at 5 o'clock.

Shirasaka house has the room to continue their work until that time.

『This will become a big scandal of Shirasaka family who is taking the lead in media. There are a lot of people in mass media who dislikes the domination of

Shirasaka family. You will be beaten up thoroughly. In addition, I will let it happen that way...』

『...P-Please wait. Moritsugu-sama will be making contact with Kouzuki-sama... please discuss this subject with Moritsugu-sama by all means...』

『Kakka』interrupts the Shirasaka lawyer from speaking.

『...Why do I have to discuss with the likes of a newspaper boss?』

For Mr. Kouzuki...Shirasaka house and the newspaper company controlled by Shirasaka family is nothing big.

『But...Shirasaka house will collapse with this』

『...It can't be helped that it will collapse. If the news won't be reported by the other mass media controlled by Shirasaka family...that would be misappropriation of media. Or, if you can't report the shame of your relative... it's inevitable to collapse, isn't that correct?』

『...Kouzuki-sama, are you suggesting that you are favoring that Shirasaka family be gone from the newspaper and television?』

The lawyer still clings to him.

『...The only one collapsing will be Shirasaka house. Shirasaka house has earned profit from running newspaper and television stations...it doesn't mean that the newspaper and television stations have flourished thanks to the Shirasaka family? Just because the Shirasaka family collapses, it won't mean that the newspaper and television stations will disappear. If you'd like, shall I introduce a good assignee?』

『Kakka』...intends to take over the newspaper and television stations from Shirasaka family...

『I think that it would be better to reduce the number of newspaper companies and television stations in Japan...Oh, Shirasaka-kun's pro baseball team is different』

『Kakka』said.

『Of course...Shirasaka-kun has made too much moves that prioritizes the interests of his team so I think that the popularity of pro baseball has declined in Japan. Shirasaka Moritsugu is the type of person that would leave it soon. As

a business owner...a baseball team owner』

That is a declaration of war to the Shirasaka family.

『Now...Let's start the game. Play ball. Can can just insist that the arrest of Shirasaka Sousuke in Australia is a false alarm, a misidentified arrest to those media only you control. But...We have Ichikawa-kun. Even if Shirasaka Sousuke's wife and father-in-law admits of his crime in a press conference...will you continue denying it? This will be interesting... I'm looking forward on Mr. Moritsugu's movement. Either way, I'd like him to confront me thoroughly... I haven't played this kind of game for a while...!』

『Kakka's』words has stunned the Shirasaka lawyer.

『...It will be noon before long. You should be going. A cruel game about double-dealing, stealing a march, betrayal, slaughter, anything. Shirasaka Moritsugu-kun will have fun and enjoying this kind of game as much as I do...!』

The voice of 『Kakka』coming from the speaker is laughing...

『Ichikawa-kun...Well, it's possible that you will make a call with Shirasaka-kun after this but...I don't mind even if you betray me. As long as you're prepared for a retaliation...』

Mr. Ichikawa...

『P-Please don't be absurd. I merely obey Kouzuki-sama's instructions. I won't make a call with Moritsugu-kun...My daughter as well』

『...I'm really thankful if you do. Well, I'm expecting it』

『...Y-Yes!!!!』

Mr. Ichikawa rubs his forehead on the floor...

『Then...dismissed. Are you fine with that...Minaho-kun?』

『Yes...Thank you for the troubles. Kakka』

Minaho-neesan bows her head to the voice too.

『You have proven that you are sincere and competent human for these past 12 years. I highly evaluate your talent...By the way』

『Kakka』...says

『...You do intend to close the brothel by all means?』

Minaho-neesan...

『That is my dream』

『...That's regrettable. I thought that you can rebuild Kuromori tower...』

『I don't have such power』

『...Well fine...Let's talk about it tomorrow. It will be a consultation about you and your organization』

『...Yes, Kakka』

Mr. Kouzuki wants Minaho-neesan to continue the brothel.

And...She intends to intervene with the future of 『Kuromori』as well.

『Then, everyone...spend a fun afternoon...!』

Then...『Kakka's』voice stopped.

Minaho-neesan speaks first...

『...Katsuko...please send Ichikawa-sama back. I will be taking a look down there』

『...Certainly』

Katsuko-nee answers.



We're watching the situation at the lower room.

「...What will happen to us?」

When I say that absentmindedly...

「There's no helping even if we think about it now...Don't mind it!」

Is what Nei-san answered.

「But...aren't you worried?」

「But...there's nothing we can do right? Just leave it to Sensei. That's why she's our leader!」

「I know that, but...」

「At this times, we just have to let Sensei do the small worries and we should just smile. That's all we can do!」

Nei-san said while smiling...

That's right...it is as Nei-san says.

Coming this far...this isn't on the level we can do anything.

What we can only do is to not let Minaho-neesan worry...

「...Hey, Mana. Isn't it about time for you to calm down?」

I talk to Mana who I've been hugging all this time.

「...Y-Yeah. Onii-chan」

Mana's still unsettled, but...she's calmer than a while ago.

「There's a bathroom back there so...Yo-chan and Mana-chan, go and take a bath」

Nei-san said.

This monitoring room has been made so one can barricade anytime.

「I think Katsun's going to come back soon...Then, Mana will help me and Katsun make lunch!」

Nei-san is really kind.

「Yes...Nei-san」

Mana replied.

「...Mana, go ahead and take hot bath」

I ordered Mana

「...Yes , Onii-chan」

Mana...answered me 『Slave』-like

「Ah, I'll guide you around」

Nei-san sticks with Mana.

I wore my underwear and pants then go to Margo-san.

Margo-san is already investigating something on the computer.

「...What do you want to talk about?」

Margo-san smiles at me.

「Uhm...I'd like to hear Margo-san's opinion on why Mana's grandfather and

the two are in such a horrible state」

...That's right.

Minaho-neesan cut off all the routes of cooperators in the underground society...

Even though they're in a situation where they don't have anything, why can't they break their arrogant attitude?

They thought they can make us submit with just a verbal promise amounting 40 million yen.

Above all...They're completely negligent of Mana's safety.

Those people are on top of a big company...

I thought people in those position are more careful and reliable.

「...Mr. Ichikawa was a obotchan¹ of a good house. Since the beginning」

Margo-san answers.

「He joined the advertising company that his father founded...and he was a director in the company when he entered thirties. It was a literal elite life」

「Is elite bad?」

「It doesn't matter if you were an elite, but...he became an adult that's not scolded by people」

Scolded by people?

「This is what the priest on the facility said...『People become impossible to be scolded by others when they grow up』 That is why you have to be scolded with affection while you are young...and you must not forget that experience」

You have to be scolded with affection?

「You do know the difference of『Telling someone off』from『Scolding someone』²?」

「Ah...Yes. Telling someone off is about getting mad and yelling emotionally...to scold someone is thinking about the other side, preaching and talking about the subject, is that right?」

I...think that way.

「Well, you're right. ...When I was a child...the adults gather and drink at night in the Indian settlement. Then, badmouthing about the people not there will

begin. 『He's useless』or 『He doesn't get the work』 They speak precisely and accurately about when and what behavior is wrong at all times. I was listening from the side and I was wondering why don't they tell them directly」

「...Not tell them directly?」

「Hmm...there are those who speaks out complains when there's a fight, but... it's not a bad idea to call one out and say 『You're bad at this, so you better fix it』」

「...Why?」

You should just tell the person if there's something that you think is bad.

「You see...That's the adult society」

Margo-san smiles.

「Scolding someone is something you never do in the adult world as long as there's no affection or fellowship to the other party. If you say something unnecessary, you'll just be in trouble with the other party. It's stupid to poke your nose on all of the troublesome things. It just invites unnecessary troubles. Therefore people don't like that. Even though they think it's better to correct it, everyone just shuts themselves up. Even if it's a direct boss, as long as you don't suffer direct damage from that person...don't tell the person himself, endure it. Then just backstab that person on tables with alcohol...」

...Is that how it is?

「Ichikawa-san has entered the company as the son of the top...He's still young to be a director...a president, right/ There has never been an adult to scold Ichikawa-san like his parents」

「Then...Why did it become like earlier?」

「Ichikawa-san knew that Mana-chan has been taken hostage and Shirasaka Sousuke is bound by us...Why do you think he thought and acted everything all on his own?」

「...Err, I don't understand」

「Ichikawa-san have consulted various people...his employees, subordinates, his own lawyers, the big people in the crime organizations he depends on...I can grasp the general people he contacts」

...Is that so?

「But...Those people don't listen to Ichikawa-san kindly. They only have a business relationship to the end. It's not about how they deal with the situation...how should I say it, Ichikawa-san speaks when he gets in a good mood. Then, he strayed off...」

...I-I see.

「Nobody must've told him that『Make the rescue of your grandchild as your top priority, take a modest approach and don't throw everything』 Since Ichikawa-san thinks that we're only a lump of prostitutes, he got angry about us doing what we want, so he'll say... 『They're not a big deal, let's just threaten them a bit』 If it's not just one or two...Ichikawa-san will gradually be convinced『that's how it is』...」

So he came here without any defense but their arrogance?

「Even if he was worried about Mana-chan in the beginning, when the people around him say 『They won't make a move on the hostage』or 『They should be afraid of Ichikawa-san's power』he'll stop worrying and think that it's okay. Well, that is Minaho's strategy though...」

「...Eh?」

「Yesterday...when Mana-chan called Ichikawa-san...we ate dinner at the hotel and aimed to relax a little. Mana-chan's voice was bright at that time so Ichikawa-san had the wrong judgement that there's nothing to worry about Mana-chan...」

...I see

「But...In the end, the people around him. They didn't say anything against Ichikawa-san's mood, there was no one to tell Ichikawa-san that it's a severe assessment of situation even if it would make Ichikawa-san angry」

「Is that how it is?」

「Yeah...But still, if he has experienced being scolded properly by someone, this won't happen. He will have the person who scolded himself in his heart. He'll ask himself,『What will that person tell me at such times』 That's why, he'll never make a naive judgement...Ichikawa-san don't have that person in his heart. In short...He didn't experience being scolded by someone with affection」

Margo-san said.

「Margo-san...who's the person in your heart?」

Margo-san smiled.

「In my case...the pastor in the facility, Kyouko-san...also, Minaho and Katsuko-san」

「...That many?」

「Yeah...I'm somewhat an obstinate girl in the old days so I was often scolded by everyone. I'm grateful about it now. If ever I'm in some trouble, I always think. What will the priest say at this case? What about Kyouko-san? What about Minaho?...I ask. I sometimes make tough choices for myself. But...I can jump into hardships with courage. The people in me boosts my courage...!」

Margo-san smiles bashfully.

「Won't the people in your heart have conflict?」

I asked my doubt.

「Well...the priest is sensible, and Kyouko-san is an underground person...it often happens that if I think what they will say about this situation, their opinions are completely opposite. At such times, I will chose the best action I think...well, usually I would tell the priest 『Sorry』...I'm a woman in a criminal organization」

Obliged to chose the unethical choice...

「But...What's important is that you have someone like that in your heart. Someone who you can consult...someone who doesn't pamper you, corrects you strictly...someone you can trust」

...For me.

...Is there a person like that?

...I don't know.

「...The hot water's ready. Onii-chan」

Mana comes over.

「Yeah, I'm going...Margo-san, thank you for teaching me a lot」

I thanked her.

「I don't mind it...Look, Mana-chan is waiting」

「Yes」

I go to the bathroom.



When I go to the bathroom...Huh, it's not Mana but Megu...?
Megu's already naked.

「...Where's Nei-san?」

「Nei-san went to the kitchen. She said that she'll prepare lunch...」

I know that, but...

Why is Megu naked here?

「...From now on, Us sisters will be making Yoshi-kun clean!」

Megu said and took off my pants.

「...Wait, Megu?」

「I won't allow you to be along with Mana in the bath...!」

Megu says that she intruded the bathroom because of jealousy...
In truth, she's worried about Mana...

「Ah...As expected」

Megu said when she took out my underwear and saw my half-erect cock.

「Mana...come over here and take a look」

Mana who's observing the temperature of the bath water...has come pitter-patter 「...What's wrong?」

As expected...she's slightly unenergetic.

「Katsuko-san's energy drink is too strong so Yoshi-kun can't be satisfied after ejaculating inside Mana once, right?」

Megu smiles at me with a horny face.

「Megu and Mana...who will you take?」

...I

「Should I have to let it out now?...I feel like I have to let out even more after

this for today...」

It's not just feeling.

It's almost definite...

Misuzu will be coming over after this...

It's normal to have sex if Misuzu comes over too.

「Megu wants it right now」

...Megu?

「...What about Mana?」

Megu looks at Mana.

「...」

Mana remembers her public sex in front of her grandfather and mother a while ago.

She's making a gloomy face.

「Is that so?...Then Megu will be taking it!」

Megu pulls down my underwear...

Then puts my penis inside her mouth...³

...Chupa, chupa, chupa 「Look...Mana, even though you did it a while ago, you didn't clean it at all. There are still semen remaining in Yoshi-kun's penis...!」

Megu said and sucks the tip of my glans...sucking out the semen in the urethra.

「Okay...It's clean now」

Megu smiles.

「...Mana, I will take all your work if you don't want to do it!」

Megu tells Mana while caressing my penis.

「...」

Mana's puzzled.

「...You're Yoshi-kun's what?」

Megu asks Mana while rubbing her cute breasts to me.

「I'm...Onii-chan's 『slave』」

Megu answers.

「...Then, do your work as a 『Slave』 A useless child who can't become a 『slave』 will be kicked out by me. Someone like that is only a nuisance for Yoshi-kun ...!」

...Megu

She really intends to be Mana's 『elder sister』

She intends to 『scold』 Mana with affection.

「Megu...Onee-chan」

Mana speaks to megu.

「That's right...I'm Mana's Onee-chan. If Mana-chan can't do her 『slave』 work properly then Onee-chan will be Yoshi-kun's 『slave』 with you. I don't intend to help Mana. If Mana is inefficient, Onee-chan will take all of the 『slave's』 work. If you're useless, you'll be kicked out...you do know that much don't you?」

「...Yes, I understand」

That's right...Everyone in the lower room spoke to Mana before the negotiation with Mr. Ichikawa.

Mana will be accepted by 『Kuromori』 as long as she's related to me.

Megu adds further conditions now

If she's useless for me...Mana will be kicked out...and.

Mana must not get herself spoiled but to act by herself.

「...Onii-chan」

Mana looks at me.

「What is it Mana?」

「Mana will wash Onii-chan's feet」

...Feet?

「Un...Mana wants to wash your feet...」

Mana makes me sit down on the bathroom chair.

She kneels before me...

She pours hot water on my feet and applied soap on it...

She's washing my feet with both hands...

Between each fingers...carefully...

「...H-How is it?」

Mana looks up at me.

「...Does it feel good?」

...Isn't this?

Yesterday...after I raped Mana for the first time...

The thing I did to Mana in the bathroom...?

「...Onii-chan, you see, I」

Mana speaks.

「I...don't know what I should do to make Onii-chan pleased...」

Her small thin fingers washes my toes carefully.

「I feel happy having an Onii-chan...」

...Mana

「Mana is an idiot so I can only start from this but...is this okay?」

Mana looks up at me with moist eyes.

「...Yeah, I'm happy too...Mana」

Seeing that...Megu kneels before me.

「Mana...just that much is no good」

Megu?

Megu reaches for my other foot Mana isn't washing...

「We're Yoshi-kun's 『slave』... so you have to think about what you should do to please Yoshi-kun before thinking about your own happiness...!」⁴

Megu says and licks my toes.

She's making her tongue crawl on each finger.

「...Yoshi-kun, does it feel good?」

「...Yeah, it does」

Mana's startled...she wash the soap away from my feet with hot water and made her tongue crawl on my toes too.

「...L-like this?」

Mana's doing her whole best on sucking my toes.

「Yeah. Both of you...I will lick your toes after this...」

I said happily.

「...M-Maika doesn't need it」

Mana shook her head and said, Megu...

「Yoshi-kun is saying that he wants to do it...『slaves』should let Yoshi-kun do whatever he wants, right?」

She scolds Mana.

「Y-Yes. I understand. Later...please...lick...Mana's foot a lot. Onii-chan...!」

Mana's learning how to be a 『Little sister slave』little by little...

Megu is watching over Mana with warm eyes.

Having such a kind sister.

Mana...will surely be a good girl.

I'm sure of that.

143. Next order

The three of us get out of the bath...

Various things have happened but...Mana's regaining a bit more cheerful face while we're watching each other.

IN the end...I didn't ejaculate nor had sex in the bathroom.

Megu and Mana licked it for a bit but...I'm satisfied just entering the bath with these cute 『sisters』

「Are you really sure?...Yoshi-kun still looks energetic」

Megu said that, but...

「We can do it later...Misuzu's coming soon anyway」

It's about time she call Katsuko-nee.

「You're right...I feel bad for Misuzu-san too」

Megu said.

「Eh, why...Megu?」

「Well...」

Megu looks at Mana...

「Ever since yesterday evening...Mana and I have been monopolizing Yoshi-kun」

She's right...

After we part with Misuzu...I did it once with Megu on her house...afterwards, twelve more times in Tamayo-san's love hotel...

I had sex with Katsuko-nee and Nagisa once there but...it was all Mana and Megu after that.

「Yeah...This is for Misuzu-san...!」

Saying that, Megu kisses my penis.

「Ah...Me too」

Mana kisses my glans.

「...You're cute Mana」

I pat Mana's cheeks.

Mana's still not used on being a 『Slave』

Even if I tell her she's 「cute」she's making a puzzled face.

We wipe each other's body with a towel...

Megu and I wear back our school uniforms.

We have a change of underwear here...

「I'll wear this expensive underwear next time...」

Saying that, Megu puts away the 12k yen underwear for the 『Body Measurement』

「Is there a laundry room here?」

「I wonder...Let's ask Katsuko-nee later」

「...Yeah」

Perhaps, we're going to live by shutting ourselves in this secret 『Monitoring room』

If we assume that Shirasaka house will still make a counter-attack...Megu and Mana should hide themselves here...

Also...There's also Cesario Viola aiming at Nei-san.

「Here, Yoshi-kun...please!」

Turning around...Megu is holding the bra and panty she brought from her house.

「...Sure」

I first make her wear her panty...

Attaching Megu's underwear when the two of us are alone is supposed to be my job.

I also attach her bra.

Somehow...I feel regretful hiding women's nipples.

But, Megu's proportion is like a model so her body line stands out when she's wearing an underwear=.

It's really beautiful.

「Here...I'll put on Yoshi-kun's!」

Megu...put on my pants.

「...I will do this even if Yoshi-kun becomes an old man」

Megu laughs and look up at me.

「Then...I'll do the same」

「...Un」

Megu is smiling.

I put on my pants...

...Now then

What should we do with Mana...?

「.....」

Mana's on her bath towel...

Looking down.

As expected...She's has not shifted her mood yet.

...Then.

The door opens and Nei-san came in.

「You see, about Mana-chan's clothes...!」

Nei-san's holding a cardboard box.

「Eh...can Mana wear clothes?」

Mana was naked with only a collar since this morning as a punishment for yesterday's attitude.

And, she was made to kneel in front of Tamayo-san and Minaho-neesan naked.

「Sensei said that Yo-chan should decide on what to do with her!」

Nei-san said.

Yeah...Mana is my slave so I am the one to think about everything from now on.
I must take responsibility for Mana's anything.

「Then...let her wear clothes」

I said.

「She'll catch colds if this continues」

Nei-san smiles.

「I thought that Yo-chan would say that so I brought clothes she can wear!」

As expected of Nei-san...!

「Yo-chan, which would you like?」

Nei-san opens the cardboard box...

...What?

...I-Isn't this?!

「Err...This is a loli race queen. This is loli bunny girl. This is loli school swimsuit plus nekomimi. Which would you like?」

...Right.

『Kuromori』is a prostitution organization...they must've small girls like Mana before.

Of course they have clothes like this here.

「...There's no normal clothes right?」

「...Yup」

「...Or rather, why all of them have a『loli』prefix?」

「Well, they're costumes for that lewd purpose」

「...School swimsuits aren't for lewd purposes right?」

「Well, the color of the school swimsuit is white. It's material becomes transparent when it gets wet with water...!」

...That's lewd.

...But.

Is there nothing with a bit more cloth?

「At least...is there a loli maid, loli nurse, or loli miko?」

「...None!」

Nei-san laughs happily

「...Then, the bunny」

I answered.

The school swimsuit is too perverted...

It's somewhat unsettling to see her in the race queen form.

「Nfufufufu! I thought you will say that!」

...Nei-san?!

「Yo-chan...you thought that Mana-chan would look good with the bunny clothes right?」

...W-Well

「...Is that right?」

Nei-san's grinning.

Megu and Mana looks at me.

「...I do」

I answered.

「Yeah, It's great that you're honest!」

Mana's surprised.

「Onii-chan...you want to see Mana on a bunny girl suit?」

...I

「Bunny girl looks better on the full-breasted like Nei-swan and Katsuko-san right?」

What Mana said is reasonable...

「For Mana who's on her growth period...I think that is suitable」

It's not that I'm a lolicon...maybe.

「Mana's eyes are big and you have an adult-like face...I thought that the bunny girl will surely be sexy」

...Mana.

Her eyes opened wide from my words...

「Got it...If Onii-chan likes it」

Mana took off her bath towel and walked towards Nei-san naked.

Nei-san looks at Mana's stomach.

「Yup...the 『正』I wrote a while ago has disappeared!」

Speaking of which...they had a punishment game using cards 「Even though I

have written it with all my efforts...Mana-chan's grandfather didn't notice it at all!」

Eh...Nei-san?

「...Look, girls raped multiple times have a graffiti of the number she was raped right? I tried to make that kind of image...」

...Nei-san? That's for EroManga world only.

...Wait, could it be?

「Even though I matched the numbers Yo-chan had sex with Mana」

Eh...12?

If I recall, the number written on Mana's body is...『正正T』?

「That was the number of the card game outcome, right?」

Nei-san loses and undresses...

But still...she won against Mana 12 times to just match the number?

「Well, it's poker. You can control how much you win or lose you know?」

...Eeeeeeeh?

「Ah, I see...normal people can't do it」

N-Nei-san...?

Could it be that you're an esper?

「Look...I was used as an accomplice for fraud in American casinos before...by Mr. Viola」

Nei-san said it nonchalantly.

Nei-san's past...?

「But...they never looked at my 『正』or the 『宝』tattoo...Mana's grandfather didn't really look at Mana-chan」

Nei-san goes back to her topic.

She doesn't want to talk about the casino anymore.

「...In the end...he was just pretending to be worried, he never thought about me」

... Mana said.

「Mana...had slipped in the school before, a big bandage was on my knees when I came home. My knee hurts and I can't walk straight, but...Mama never noticed. After three days, she said...『My, what happened to your leg?』」

She still noticed it even after three days.
If it was my mother, she won't notice it.
Even if she does, she won't say anything.

「Ojii-chan too...whenever we meet. He won't say 『You've gotten big』 He'll say that when we just met three days ago. Or rather...He doesn't even remember that we met three days ago...

Mana said sadly.
When I got home from the all boys middle school during summer vacation, my mother severely angry and said 「Why are you here!」
「This isn't your home, ask for my permission before you come here...you ungrateful」she shouts...
That was probably the last time I face mother ahead when talking.
After that, even when we're in the same house...I only talk to my father. I was forbidden to talk to her directly.

「Thinking about it now...Ojii-chan and Mama, doesn't look at my face and listen to me talk」

Mana said.

「...Every family are like that. It's quite hard to look at the face of the person you're talking to」

Megu said.

「A famous photographer wrote it in an essay...『This is why you take a photo of your family. You'll forget it anyway』...」
「You're right Megu-chan...I'm the same, even if we have been living together all the time, I feel like I don't have to look at Maru-chan and Katsun's face when talking. I say『Wait, take this』or 『Yup, thanks』properly, but...I might not be looking at their faces」

Nei-san...said.

「That's why Yo-chan's amazing」

...What?

「Un. Yoshi-kun, looks at the other person's eyes when talking...」

「Yo-chan, is always listening seriously...」

...Is that so?

I'm not conscious about it.

「Look...I'm not that smart. Even if I listen desperately, I don't get everyone's feelings...」

Minaho-neesan, Katsuko-nee, Nagisa, Margo-san, Nei-san, Misuzu, Megu, and Mana...their real feelings and their words are different.

Even if an idiot like me desperately sticks to it...I won't understand the real form.

「Normally...everyone just lives by compromising. They pretend to know to keep their human relations」

Nei-san said.

「But...I'm not good with that.

「Yeah...Yoshi-kun's clumsy

「But, that's what's cute about you...you don't compromise... you always do your whole best to understand. If you can't understand, you stare at the other party's face...!

...I

「Sorry, I didn't notice that...You must hate being stared so much. I'll take care from now on」

I bowed to Nei-san.

「...I don't hate it so just continue」

Megu said.

...Eh?

「That's right...It makes my heart throb when Yo-chan stares at me with his diligent eyes!」

...Nei-san?

「Me too...It makes my heart throb always」

...Megu

「That's right...Onii-chan is always watching. Whenever it is」

Mana said.

「I was scared at first...but now I understand. Onii-chan has always been trying to understand what kind of girl Mana is, persistently, ever since yesterday...」

Mana looks at me.

「...Thank you. Onii-chan¹」



We return to the monitor room, taking the small bunny girl.

As expected...Mana's bunny-chan is remarkably cute.

The rabbit ears are excellent.

She's just 14 year old and is still growing but...Mana's body seems to be amazing in the future.

I can see her still puffed up breasts and her ass growing from now on.

Her thin arms and long legs...her height is still growing.

The bunny girl clothes makes Mana's body stand out more than being naked a while ago.

There's the usual collar though...

「My...What a cute rabbit」

Minaho-neesan's drinking tea.

「Huh...Where are the others?」

When I asked.

「Katsuko's preparing lunch...Margo is going to meet Misuzu-san」

Minaho-neesan answered.

「Margo-san will meet her?」

Huh?...Wasn't it Katsuko-nee who's scheduled to pick her up...?

「It's gotten dangerous in various ways, isn't that right?...That's why Margo's coming instead」

...I see

「This is until the mass media transmission at 3 o'clock, and the TV news at 5 o'clock is over...also」

...Cesario Viola's secret maneuvers.

「Well...I think Misuzu-san will have a guard from Kouzuki house already but...as courtesy, we should send to pick up our best guard」

A guard of Kouzuki house?

「Kouzuki-san...knows about Misuzu coming over today and everything else?」
「...He does」

「He knows...and Misuzu today too?」

If he knows that Misuzu is having a sexual relationship with me.
We'll be having sex today too...

「Kouzuki-sama...isn't opposed for Yoshida-kun and Misuzu-san having sex. As long as you don't make a child」

...That means?

「Kouzuki-sama himself had several mistresses...he's a tolerant person when it comes to sex. He's not someone who's stubborn about his granddaughter's virginity. He also thinks that Misuzu-san fully enjoy sexual intercourse」
「No but」

His atmosphere looks like he's opposed about my relationship with Misuzu.

「In the end, Yoshida-kun is Misuzu-san's『lover』 Kouzuki-sama wants Misuzu to marry the 『fiance』he has planned for her. If she marries her fiancé and gives birth to a child...I think he won't mind Yoshida-kun continuing his 『lover』 relationship with her」

...T-That's.

「But...Misuzu-san and you don't want that right? Misuzu-san doesn't look like she wants to have sex with a man other than you...I think she wants to have

your child too. If she's that serious, Kouzuki-sama will surely be troubled...

...Yeah.

Misuzu getting married without love...

I don't want her to give birth to a child from a man other than me.

「...What should I do?」

Minaho-neesan answers.

「Talk about it with Misuzu-san. It's okay...you can just think about it tomorrow night」

...Tomorrow night

...Misuzu's Japanese dance presentation.

「...Now then, let's talk about what will happen for today」

Minaho-neesan speaks to me with the face of 『Kuromori』leader 「Yoshida-kun, Megumi will be watching Endou-kun's practice game...」

...Eh?

Why do I have to support that guy's game...?

「...Yukino too」

Megu answers.

I see...Minaho-neesan instructed Yukino to go to Endou's match.

「Yoshida-kun...after the commotion a while ago, do you think that Ichikawa-san and Shirasaka Youko-san will inform Yukino about something?」

Normally...we catch Mana in this situation...

Yukino would be told「Take care」via phone call.

Or rather...she'd be ask where she is and take her home.

They even came to Yukino's school.

「Both of them are busy with themselves.」 There's no traces of Yukino-san using her phone...Yukino-san is also still in school」

Minaho-neesan operates the monitor.

Inside the classroom...Yukino's depressed and listless figure is seen.

...Yukino.

She has forgotten her grandfather and mother.

「The Shirasaka lawyer heads to the newspaper company. It would be impossible to explain the situation to Mr. Shirasaka Moritsugu by phone...He intends to talk to him directly」

...I see

「Even if the lawyer talks to him...Shirasaka house won't stop attacking us」

...Minaho-neesan said.

「...We'll kidnap Shirasaka Yukino」

That's the next order

「Yoshida-kun and Megumi...I'd like you to watch the game outside the fence. The location where you watched the baseball club practice with Misuzu-san will do」

The other day...The time when I kissed Misuzu in front of the baseball club?

「Eh...But, that's outside the school grounds?!」

Minaho-neesan grins.

「That's why it's good...It's outside the school so it's no trouble even if you're with Misuzu-san right?」

Certainly...that would be the best location if we're going to watch with Misuzu...

Isn't it dangerous to be outside the school?

「...Please secure Megumi and Misuzu-san's safety」

...Minaho-neesan

「You do know your role in『Kuromori』don't you?」

...That's right.

My role is the same as always.

...A decoy.

「...Got it. I'll protect the two of them」

I resigned myself and answered.

「Then, you two should go soon. The lunch will be delivered with Misuzu-san later」

I look at Mana.

「Mana-chan will be helping Katsun and me. That's why Yo-chan doesn't have to worry about anything!」

Nei-san said.

The cute bunny girl is having an anxious face.

「Don't make that face already! Like I said, Mana-chan will be starting over as a 『slave』!」

Mana's surprised from what Nei-san said.

「Make a smile at any time...especially to your family and friends」

Nei-san smiles as an example

「But, I...can't smile well」

Mana tells Nei-san.

Nei-san...

「But still, smile. People...smile to show a smile to someone else more than smiling when they want to laugh. Smile is a communication. Animals in the wild don't laugh do they? Laughing is only a function humans can do」

Nei-san touched her face with her finger.

「Did you know?...There are only about ten muscles on a human face making a facial expression. Making full use of those muscles, humans can make various expressions. As Maru-chan says, making facial expressions is the first way of communication before words...it's the first culture of human!」

Facial expressions...is not the only thing that appear naturally.

Human themselves show themselves to someone...

Making one, showing one...conveying one.

「Everyone wants to be sent off with a bright smile, right? That's why the 『slave』 Mana-chan has to begin by sending Yo-chan off with a smile!」

「...Even if I lie to myself」

Mana asks Nei-san with a serious face.

「That's right. You can think of that from the start...you'll understand the power of smiles soon!」

...Nei-san's always smiling.

No...She's always smiling to us

Anytime...

「Now...Let's try it together! Smile!²」

Nei-san and Mana moves their lips to smile.

「Yup...Looking good」

No...That's a weird smile. Her eyes looks like crying.

But...As a result, Mana will notice about communicating while thinking about other's feelings.

「Mana...don't trouble everyone」

「...Yes, Onii-chan」

Mana answered with a stiff smile.

「Nei-san...I'll leave Mana in your care!」

「Leave her to me!」

Nei-san's smile is cheerful as usual.



Megu and I left the principal's office holding hands.

I stuff the beat up stick on my school uniform sleeves.

I don't have any other weapons.

「Anyway...let's take Yukino」

「...Yeah」

First, to the classroom...

Most of the students apart from those with club activities have already gone home.

Yukino's the only one in the classroom.

「...Yukino」

As soon as Megu calls her out, Yukino who's face is stuck in her desk got startled.

...Yukino, you

You're touching your crotch just now?

It is as Mana reported...Yukino's completely become a masturbation girl.

「...W-What?!」

Yukino looks at us with a frightened face.

It's useless to glare at me.

Earlier, in the same building but different room...

Her mother and grandfather were crying...

And her younger sister was seen having sex...

Yukino...just masturbates lonely in a deserted classroom...

Somehow, it feels sad.

「Yuzuki-sensei's message. You're going to watch the practice match with us」

Megu tells Yukino

Yukino is glaring at Megu.

Megu glares back without giving in...

「Got it...I should just do as you say right? You coward...!」

Yukino stands up from her desk.

I feel annoyed a bit.

I thought of ordering Yukino to show her wet panties that's in the middle of masturbating...

...No

I should not do anything here yet...

Yukino has been masturbating so much, means...

Yukino right now is quite frustrated right now...

「Hurry up!」

Megu pulls my hand showing it to Yukino.

「...Yukino, follow us」

Megu glares at Yukino.

...Yeah. This is a good strategy.

「Megu...let's link arms」

Megu smiles happily to me.

「Un~! Yoshi-kun!」

Megu and I link arms and walk in the corridor flirting like crazy.
My elbow hits Megu's breasts occasionally.

「...ufufu, Yoshi-kun, you can touch it more」

Megu is showing off to Yukino who's following behind.

「...All of my body is for Yoshi-kun. You can tease it anytime」

I can feel Yukino's eyes from behind
A strong gaze of desire.
In the middle of the stairs...Megu speaks with moist eyes., 「...Kiss me」

I kiss Megu.
Our tongues twine with each other...a passionate kiss.
Megu gives Yukino a glance while sucking my tongue.
Yukino...
Is putting her hand on her crotch again...
The daily rape since her virginity...
Has completely turned Yukino a lascivious one.
She totally drowned in the pleasure of sex.

「...Yukino won't have it. He's my husband」

Megu looks at Yukino with eyes of triumph.

「...I-It's not like I need it」

Yukino said weakly.
But...her eyes are dazzling.
Same age 『sisters』from different mothers
The two of them have inferiority complex in each other...
They throw each other with hot eyes of jealousy...!!!!

◇ High School Baseball Arc

144. Play ball!

「...Where are we going?」

Yukino asks me from behind.

「Isn't that obvious?...The baseball ground」

Megu answers befor me.

Megu's linking arms with me, sticking our bodies closely.

「...Isn't the route different?」

If we want to watch the practice match on school premise...this isn't the way.

「We'll be watching from outside the school...from outside the wire net」

Megu speaks to Yukino who's behind...

「...Why?」

Yukino's cautious.

We can watch the game even from inside the school

Or rather...almost everyone would be there.

We're taking trouble to detour...get out of the school and behind the wire net fence.

That place don't have much people.

「I don't know...That was an order from Yuzuki-sensei...!」

Megu turned back to Yukino and said.

Megu who's been living afraid of Yukino.

Now...Megu has the higher position than Yukino.

But...There's still Megu's complex about Yukino remaining strongly.

Megu is clinging to my arms powerfully...

She's confused being in such a situation...

「...Megu」

I call out Megu

「It'll be fine...」

Megu...nods and replied 「Un」

「...Thank you, Yoshi-kun」

We get out of the school's back entrance and walked on the outside road around the site.

Before long...we can see the baseball club's ground.

The first base is in our school and the third base is off-campus.

There's a cone-shaped slope ahead of the wire fence outside the ground...It's a road with a margin where a car can pass through.

There's a lot of students gathered on the first base side.

The opponent for the practice match today is a prestigious baseball team who's name is known even in the nearby high schools.

There must be a lot of students going to watch the game.

It's not just students, but there's a lot of teachers.

Ah...Geropa-kouchou.

As usual...he looks like Maradona...

「...Yukino, why are you there?!」

...What?

Endou wearing his uniform is shouting from the ground!

Should you be doing that when the game is about to start?

「Or rather, why are you with those people!」

Endou looks at us and feels suspicious.

「You've got nothing to do with it...I just happen to pass by them!」

Yukino shouts back at Endou.

It doesn't look like a lover's conversation at all.

Both of them are just roaring at each other!

「Well fine, but...Why are you there?!」

Endou shouts at Yukino outside the wire net fence!

「I'm the one who decides where I watch!」

Yukino shouts at the ground back...!

Looking from outside perspective, this couple's already done.

「Don't be an idiot!」

Endou shouts at Yukino...

But...Endou has a huge band-aid on his nose and his back seems to be still in pain, his walking is strange...

Even though he look so horrible...he's still going to play the game?

No...he's wearing a regular uniform with an embroidered name of the school.

Yup...He'll play.

Amazing...he really bribed the baseball club's manager.

「That's the third base...enemy's side! Do you even know that!」

「I don't care! I'm not even interested in baseball!」

...Endou's angry but we're beyond the wire mesh fence...and we have the high ground...¹

...You can only see them as idiots screaming alone in the ground.

Well, Yukino shouting here is quite strange too.

Compared to most of the students and teachers on the first base...there's only three of us outside the fence of the third base...

「Hey, Endou...the match is about to begin, come over here!」

The third year baseball club senpai calls out Endou, unable to stand it any longer.

Yup...the other high school students in the practice game are already preparing for the game...

The principal and other students are also watching...

Really...Endou isn't concerned at other people's eyes.

I think that's amazing in some meaning...

「I'm going!...Can't be helped. Yukinoo! Just stay there, support me!」

Endou shouts at Yukino and runs towards the bench of his team on the first base.

Haa...It's not 『Us』or 『Our team』...

Endou's baseball is an individual competition?

Somehow...it doesn't go through.

「Yukino's boyfriend looks interesting. Shouting out hard like a monkey in the zoo」

Megu tells Yukino

Though she's speaking harshly...Megu's hand holding my arm is trembling
...Megu's on her edge.

「...Your boyfriend isn't a big deal either, is he?!」

Yukino bares hostility to Megu.

「He's not my boyfriend...he's my fiancé」

Megu won't yield.

「Hmm, being engaged to a despicable rapist...I don't know how vulgar blooded people think」

Yukino talks badly of Megu's mother again.

「Don't we have the same bloodline...?!」

Megu counterattacked Yukino by switching to Shirasaka Sousuke.

「I'm different from you...! I'm a Shirasaka, you're a Yamamine. Don't lump me together with you!」

Yukino's words don't have an impact because we just saw the Shirasaka lawyer and Old man Ichikawa kneel in front of of Kouzuki『Kakka』who has the strongest blood.

「I'm a Yoshida...Yoshida Megumi...!」

Megu who was thrown by Yamamine house...and the humiliation she has received from Shirasaka house has already been in the past.
Even though there's still an inferiority complex inside her heart...she can reject it with her will.

「Is that so?...Well, a rapist and a daughter of a whore is a good combination...!」

Yukino looks at Megu with mocking eyes.

Yukino's tension is completely high after her shouting match with Endou.

Megu's not yielding to Yukino's abusive language like the usual.

Megu's fighting the complex within herself.

She's trying to overcome the trauma 『I can't win against Yukino』for all the years since she was a child.

Yukino doesn't notice that!!

「Yes...I'm very happy. He's someone I love. He also loves me...!」

Megu confronts Yukino with a strong heart.

「Last night...I went to a love hotel with Yoshi-kun. He filled me with love until morning. I finally understood the pleasures of sex. Yoshi-kun loved me very gently...!」

Megu strikes back.

「Is that so?...That's great?」

Yukino pretends to be uninterested, but...she looks like in slight shock.

「Un. Having sex with someone you love is amazing. Yukino has no way of knowing as she never experienced anything but rape...!」

Yukino glares at Megu!

「Aren't you just a plaything for that man? Does he have no taste in women...?!」

「Yoshi-kun met my parents yesterday. He bowed and said『Please give me your daughter』 We're actually engaged. I'll be Yoshi-kun's wife...and Yoshi-kun's eyes are perfect. The women Yoshi-kun loves are all wonderful ladies...except Yukino」

The two glare at each other.

「Is that so?...Then, I would like to be not involved. Actually...I don't want to be violated by that man already. It feels disgusting. Just remembering it makes me want to puke...!」

「That's great. We no longer need Yukino... Yukino's turn will never come. We enjoy it with Yoshi-kun. We'll have lots and lots of sex...!」

Megu said with strong eyes.

「...Ah...Is that so, that helps me. I'm really tired being violated by that man

already. I would really be grateful if a whore like you takes over...!」

Yukino's hands are trembling bit by bit.

I know from Mana's testimony.

Yukino has been masturbating like mad at her home for these past days.

Minaho-neesan's sexual assault is definitely eating up Yukino's body.

The body forcibly made to remember sexual pleasure can't be satisfied with ordinary sex anymore.

But...on top of Yukino's vagina is an emerald green tattoo with the letters 『吉田』

Yukino who has a high pride can't release her sexual desire to Endou or any other men.

In order to release Yukino's frustration her own pride has kept...she has to continue being violated by me.

If so, she can drown herself with the excuse 『This isn't what I wished for, I was forced to have sex』

And yet...now

Megu has declared 『Your turn will never come』 to Yukino.

Yukino's secretly shaking.

Her eyes are restless.

「From now on...I'm going to receive a lot of pleasure that Yukino can't experience...we will have sex everyday!」

Megu's voice is shaking...

These are two girls fighting each other while embracing each other's complex.

Exposing their complex...

The two of them confronts each other...!

「We're officially 『engaged』...we can have sex as much as we want. That's what Yuzuki-sensei said in the classroom earlier right? The supreme court will acknowledge sex between 『engaged』 couples...!」

Megu desperately stretches her own standpoint to be higher than Yukino.

「Hmm. Then do as you like...just take care not to get pregnant from having too much sex...!」

Yukino tries to ridicule Megu...

「Yes...It's okay for only Yukino to be pregnant...!」

Hearing Megu...

Yukino's body trembles.

She puts her hand on her belly.

「How is it? Pregnant already? Isn't it about time your body shows changes?」

Megu looks at Yukino's stomach.

「There's no change...My next menstruation will surely come. Definitely...!」

Yukino's eyes are moist as she say that.

Yukino cries immediately when she feels in mental pain.

She cries and blows her feelings...then that's it.

She doesn't try to solve the cause of situation with her own power.

She just cries and gets with the flow. Just waiting for someone to help her.

That is how the woman named Shirasaka Yukino lived.

「That's not true...Yukino's definitely pregnant」

Megu won't lose.

Megu tries to escape her own destiny by her own will...

Above all, she's trying to get out of Yukino's mental rule.

She'll say anything no matter how cruel it is for that sake.

Megu wants to win against Yukino.

「Look...There are magazines for pregnant women, I think Yukino should read those magazines before giving birth. I will read magazines for child care after birth...!」

Yukino finally fell silent from what Megu said.

Tears spilled from her eyes.

「Yukino only needs to give birth...we will be the one to raise the child so don't worry...!」

Oh...this manner of speaking.

It's Minaho-neesan's way of talking.

...Megu is imitating Minaho-neesan.

But...Megu's trembling.

Her trembling hand desperately clings to me.

「...I hate you. I'll never ever forgive you」

Yukino tells Megu.

「Unfortunately for you...I hate you much more than you hate me. Yukino...I will never forgive you. Never, and absolutely never...」

Yukino is Megu's natural enemy.

An opponent she can't lose against...

「How dare you talk to me like that...even though you're a prostitute's daughter. I'll ask my uncle and let you have a horrible experience! You and that man, your lives will be ruined...Yuzuki-sensei too, and the other people...all the people who made me fall to hell」

Yukino also won't lose.

But...for『Kuromori』members like us, those words won't do.

We're already in a fight with the head of Shirasaka house, Shirasaka Moritsugu already.

「That threat isn't scary at all...I'm no longer related to Shirasaka house nor Yamamine house. Also, I have Yoshi-kun...!」

Megu holds my school uniform with her trembling hands.

「Just what's useful with that scum of a man?」

Megu criticizes Yukino's snort

「What about you?...Do you really think that Shirasaka house will help Yukino?」

「I do! Moritsugu-sama is very kind to me!²」

The two of them glare at each other.

「Yukino has been raped dozens of times, had a tattoo, and a child in her stomach...would Shirasaka house even try to save such a girl?」

Megu's words made Yukino glare at her with all of the hate...!

「They will! Everyone in the Shirasaka clan is kind to me!!!!」

The players in their uniform gather in the ground one after another.

The cheers from first base is rising up.

「...Megu, let's take a seat. It's about to begin」

...Both players line up.

The game is about to start...

「Un...Yoshi-kun」

Megu and I sits on the slope in rows.

Yukino sits 5 meters away from us.

I look around again.

As I thought...there are spectators only on the first base.

There's only the three of us on the third base outside the fence.

I see...I get why Minaho-neesan told us to watch the game from here.

There's no place to hide around when someone approaches because the shape is a mortar, you will know soon if there is someone ahead.

Above all, we're in full view from the baseball club in the ground and the students cheering from the first base.

There will be a lot of witnesses if we're attacked or kidnapped here.

First of all, no normal guy would attack here.

As long as he's not stupid and at his wits' end...

「...Play ball!」

The coach of the baseball club shouts...!

Then...the practice game started.

Our school is batting first 「...Megu, do you know anything about baseball?」

Well, she's a sports girl...I think she knows the rules at least.

「I'm not that informed about it but my father does. He's always watching baseball news」

Megu answers.

「Yamamine-san likes baseball?」

「Rather than saying he does...he worked on Shirasaka family affiliate company you know?」

Oh...that's how it is.

「That's why he's cheering that baseball team」

「...I see」

「Rather than a supporter...the president on my father's company is an enthusiastic fan? So much that he'd be in a mad mood the next day they lost the game...」

「Haa...That's troubling」

Or rather, there are those people too

「Like I said...It's not my father but all the people in the company checks the content of the game. Even if they don't watch the game broadcast...they'll surely know the results of the game. Just to match with the president」

Office work is hard.

「My dad's company is a small place with only 20 employees...that's why the president can talk to anyone. It seems that the winning streak is much harder to deal than defeat and bad mood. People in good mood talks a lot. 『This player strikes well recently. I wonder what's his average now』or something like that...」

Oh...So they have to check the data of the players.

While we're having such talks...the first batter was out from a pitcher's fly ball.

「...Yoshi-kun, sleepy? Take a rest even for a while」

Megu said.

「You had a hard time since last night, right...?!」

Well...I just had 12 rounds of sex...

I even had a public sex with Mana a while ago...

「...How about resting on Megu's lap?」

...Err

「But, look...if someone suddenly attacks us it would be hard」

I'm being a watchman for the time being.

「It's okay...I will wake up if someone approaches us」

Megu dusts off her legs.

「Megu's hizamakura³ will surely be pleasant, I think」

...I

...I lost to the temptation

「...How is it Yoshi-kun?」

Having my head on Megu's lap...Megu's smiling above me.

「Hmm...Megu's lap feels soft and pleasant」

「I'm glad... 」

Megu strokes my cheeks kindly.

She's looking at my face smiling...

「...Megu?」

「What is it, Yoshi-kun?」

「Are you okay not watching the game?」

「I'm much happier watching Yoshi-kun's face...!」

Megu said happily.

「Hey...that first year over there!」

When I looked towards the voice from the ground...it seems it has changed before I noticed it.

The third baseman from our high school screams at us from the defense position while the pitcher is practicing its pitch.

「We're playing a game seriously here! If you're going to flirt then do it somewhere else!」

Perhaps, it's a second year or third year.

True, it might attract eyes watching the practice game when there's a couple doing a lap pillow.

I was trying to raise my body to say 「sorry」, but...

Megu holds my shoulder, she's not letting me get up.

「We're flirting here seriously! Senpai's the one who should concentrate on the game more!」

Laughter comes from the people watching the game on the first base...

「She's right, concentrate!」

There's even a guy who shouted that.
We have completely attracted their attention.
No...Thinking about what's ahead, it's better if we attract their attention.
I decided to remain in lap pillow.
I look on the ground while lying down.
Endou is protecting the right field.
He's quite far away from the position where we are.
Hmmm, he's seriously trying to play.
The director too, why is he sending out such an injured guy to the field?
In the first place...he's a first grader that became a regular...
Disregarding the seniors, he's defending the infield.
It's good as long as the ball doesn't fly to the right field...

「Play!」

The referee signals, it's the first lining.
The pitcher throws the ball!
Uwa...That's pretty fast.
Is this the ace, Takimoto-senpai?
You can't bat that speed.
When I thought of that...

...Kakiiin!!!!

The metal bat makes a clear echo...

「Right...Back, back...!」

Ah...the ball flies to Endou right away.
Endou walks totteringly...
He's moving briskly.
It was a simple right fly, but...
As expected...it fell.
Endou throws the ball in panic, but...

「...Hey, where are you throwing it!!!」

His arms was also beaten up by Margo-san.
The ball thrown first from the right was bound to bounce on the other side.
The runner has crossed the second base and quickly advances to the third base

while the ball is being chased.

Just a right fly has reached to a no-out runner third base.

「Hey, Endou you fuck, die!!」

Everyone knows that Endou is forced to play because of a mysterious power... Booing comes from the first side.

The booing from the seniors of baseball club not in the game is the most severe.

「If you can't move then switch already!」

「That's right, you idiot!」

With this...if a ball fly to the right a few more times, it would be trouble. The pitcher throws the ball to the second batter.

...Kakiiin!

That was a sacrificial fly in theory.

...But.

The sacrifice fly flew to the right.

...Heey, Endou.

.....As expected, it fell.

「Mother fucker, die! Kill yourself! Commit Seppuku!!!」

The bench baseball club members screams again.

「S-Sorryyyyyyy!!」

Endou who's his redeeming factor is just his impudence...can do nothing but bow his head for the two misses.

At this point...This will turn to a no-out runner first base with one point taken.⁴

...Bubu!

I can hear a car horn afterwards.

When I turn around...Katsuko-nee on her blue minivan is running on the slope. Yup...It's definitely Katsuko-nee in the driver's seat.

Megu waves on the car.

The car stopped behind us.

The windows of the car are smoked so we don't know who's inside.

...Then.

The rear door opens...

The usual Misuzu on her uniform comes down.

「Ooooh!!」

Since the game is just in pause...voices of boys and girls comes from the first base.

From that side...a beauty suddenly appears from the embankment...

But...everyone knows that Misuzu is wearing a super ojou-sama high school uniform...

It's almost like an idol concert.

「...C-Cute!!!」

「...Huh, the girl from the other day!」

Our baseball club points at Misuzu and said.

Then...the men focused their attention to Misuzu...

Ignoring all the gazes...she looks at me from under the slopw.

Then...She smiled happily...!

「...Danna-samaaaa!!」

She waves happily towards us...!

「...Ha?」

「D-Danna-sama?」

「...W-Who?」

「There's no way that first year over there?」

「I'm sorry for being late! I brought the lunch!!!!」

Misuzu shouts while having a smile on her whole face!

All the men who were looking at Misuzu cut lose obviously...

「...W-What's with him!!?」

「E-Even though he's having a lap pillow with that girl over there!」

「He's also related to that girl!?!」

「Or rather...he was kissing with that girl the other day」

「Then, who's the girl he's resting his head on now?」

「Or rather...Isn't the lap pillow girl quite a good girl?」

「What the hell is going on?」

「Someone go there and ask!」

「Don't be an idiot...it would take 15 minutes to go around the school to there!」

I can hear voices from the first base.

Seriously...they're all too loud.

Everyone seems to have forgotten about Endou in the ground when Misuzu appeared.

Or rather...what about the game?!

「Quiet down! The game's about to resume!!」

The coach shouted at the spectators on the first base.

「That is right...please concentrate on the game!!!」

Geropa-kouchou even warns the students.

...Then.

The side of the car opens.

「...W-What?!」

「This one's cute...she's small though」

「It burns the lolicon blood!」

A 150cm tall beauty stands there.

Wearing the same uniform as Misuzu...holding a big basket on her hand.

Black hair trimmed in bangs.

A well featured face like a Japanese doll.

「...Katsuko-sama, thank you very much」

The girl holding the basket greets the driver seat with a cute voice.

Katsuko-nee, seems to have replied to the girl but I can't hear her voice from here.

...Arere?

...That's strange.

Wasn't it Margo-san who came to pick up Misuzu?

Katsuko-nee should have been preparing lunch.

Then that means...Misuzu and this girl has stopped by the『Monitor room』

Well, if they have brought lunch, they should've been.

The driver changed from Margo-san and Katsuko-nee

...Nnnn?

...eeeeeeh?

「Hey...Yoshi-kun」

Megu speaks to me.

「Yeah...I noticed it」

The window on the passenger seat is slightly open...
Rabbit ears crawl out of it.

「...Mana's on the car?」

Mana looks at us through the smoked car window.
Therefore...the bunny girl ears stick outside the window.
The girl with the basket closes the door and the car gets off.

「...Eeeeh?」

Katsuko-nee...where are you bringing Mana?

146. Kudou style old martial arts.

「...Nice to meet you, I'm Kudou Michi」

The petite girl with a forelock says hello expressionlessly.

「You are Yoshida-sama...and Yamamine-sama?」

A white beautiful Japanese doll like face looks at us...

「I have heard about the two of you from Misuzu-sama...I maybe inexperienced but please treat us well...」

This black haired small beauty lowered her head to me.

「...Ah, here too」

Megu and I lower our heads for now...

Err...What 『Please treat us well』?

Who's this abnormally polite Japanese style beauty?!

「This girl's Misuzu's guard!」

Misuzu said with a smile...

「...What?」

...This small girl?

「Yes, as per Kouzuki Kakka's orders...I will be escorting Misuzu-sama as of today. In addition, I will also be guarding Yoshida-sama and Yamamine-sama, everyone along with Misuzu-sama」

...Kouzuki『Kakka's』orders?!

「Normally, it would be outrageous to have a guard because of Misuzu's standpoint in the Kouzuki house but...Grandfather is worried about me」

Misuzu said bashfully.

Haa...This girl's really a guard.

...Guard, huh?

「Michi-san's whole family is responsible for guarding the Kouzuki family. Her father, Kudou-san is a house with a hand-down old-style martial arts...He's one

of Grandfather's escorts. Her mother and brother is working on the security department involved with the Kouzuki family...Michi-san's elder sister is guarding Ruriko-san who's the Ojou-sama of the head family」

Their whole family protects Kouzuki house...

Well, they're an old-fashioned noble family...so it won't be strange even if those kind of people serve them.

「Then...this girl is Misuzu's guard?」

「...Just for the few days from now on...We're in quite a dangerous situation after all...!」

Misuzu said with a smile...

「I have asked everything that happened before coming here. I've asked Yuzuki-sama and Katsuko-sama...」

Misuzu seems to have learned everything that happened since we part with her yesterday evening.

Of course...about Kouzuki『Kakka』earlier 「...The situation seems to be urgent」

...Yup

Shirasaka house and Cesario Viola

There's two powerful enemies approaching us.

It'll certainly be a climax from now until evening.

「But still...Kouzuki-san didn't stop Misuzu from going to our place?」

I think it's strange.

Why didn't『Kakka』stop his treasured granddaughter from going to us?

He knows all of the current situation of 『Kuromori』in detail and yet, why can he send her off without concern?

I don't understand the person named ...Kouzuki『Kakka』

「...Grandfather is a very severe person so he will not hold Misuzu back no matter how dangerous the situation awaits as long as I continue to chose my own way...!」

Misuzu said.

「...Why?」

「If you don't take risks, you won't get what you want...!」

Misuzu speaks to me with serious eyes.

「Grandfather never gives anything to his relatives for free. Anything has a value and you have to show that you can pay the price to obtain it」

A corresponding value...a price.

「『Always have courage in your heart』 is what my grandfather always say...
『Be ready to bear the risk for what you do』 『If you don't put yourself in danger
and fight it yourself, nothing will be yours』」

He's really a severe one.

...But.

We are surrounded by the 『danger』that's nor normal.

...Is this okay?

I have involved Misuzu to a situation.

「...Danna-sama, please don't make that kind of face!」

Misuzu smiles kindly to me.

「Misuzu has to show it to grandfather...I must be prepared to not leave
Danna-sama no matter how hard it is...!」

...Misuzu

「I'm prepared for it.」

This girl is strong.

Multiple times than me.

「But...grandfather is a kind person. She has lent Michi to Misuzu...!」

Misuzu looks at the petite girl.

The expressionless black haired beauty...brings a short stick shining black in one hand.

Yup. The length is around 30 cm...

Rather than a stick...should I say that it's like a dagger brought by a princess on a historical drama?

「Uhm...What's that?」

I asked Michi-san
Michi-san spoke without changing her complexion.

「If ever a thug tries to attack Misuzu-sama, I will punish him with this...」

P-Punish?!

Michi-san waves the short stick up and down as if she's practice-swinging...

Ah...Is that so?

As expected...that's a knife or something?

Or rather, can she do something with such a short sword?

...Err

What to do?

Since she's someone from old martial arts.

I don't get it though...

「...Michi-san, how old are you?」

Megu asks.

「...『Count』?」

...No you see.

「W-『Whole』please...」

Hearing me...Michi-san.

「...I'm 15 years old on this year's birthday」

「That means...you're in third year of middle school?」

Megu asks.

「Yes...I'm enrolled on the middle school under the same school of Misuzu-sama...」

I see, they look like they wear the same uniform from afar but when you look at them closely, the details are subtly different.

She's already a part of guards even though she's 15.

That's somewhat amazing.

「This is Michi's first job...!」

Misuzu smiles at Michi-san.

「Yes...I will do my whole best to accomplish my work!」

The small beauty answered with a serious look.

...I-Is that so?

...Err.

She's seems reliable...seems not.

Anyway, I know that she's a small and lovely girl.

「...Out! Change!!」

The umpire's voice echoes from the ground...

I look towards the scoreboard.

From the first inning...it seems that the opponent high school has taken over three points...

The two points were Endou's blunder.

「Endou you shit, die you bastard...!」

Endou comes back from the right position he defended...and the baseball seniors cursed him.

Endou can't sit on the bench...he has to stand outside.

The second half of the innings...it's our High school's attack.

「Now, Danna-sama...let's have lunch!」

From what Misuzu said...Michi-san took out a picnic sheet and spread it on the slope without saying anything.

「Now...Danna-sama and Megumi-san, come here」

Misuzu puts the basket Michi-san has carried to the middle and opened it.

「Katsuko-sama has sent this to you...!」

The contents of the basket were sandwiches.

「There's tea as well」

Yup...there's also a thermos bottle.

「Ah...Danna-sama, this is Megumi-san's home ground so please stay close to Megumi-san」

Speaking of which...

Misuzu's not clinging to me like always for today.
She's taking a bit more distance than usual...

「...Misuzu-san」

Megu looks at Misuzu

「There are other people looking so I will leave Danna-sama to Megumi-san here. Misuzu will behave like a close friend of you two」

Misuzu thinks of Megu's position...

「In exchange...When we're on Misuzu's home ground」

「...Got it」

Megu answers.

「I will take a step behind at those times」

Misuzu and Megu look at each other.

「But still...Misuzu-san, thank you for your concern」

Megu bowed to Misuzu.

「Please don't mind it...Megumi-san is Danna-sama's 『Wife』and Misuzu is his 『Mistress』 I know that it actually is Megumi-san's position at any time but...」

...Misuz

「No, I only do my job as a 『wife』 I know that Misuzu-san is much more suitable as the legal wife than me」

Megu said.

「Misuzu-san's a very intelligent person...I think that you will be our leader next to Minaho-san...!」

Megumi thinks that Misuzu will be the next generation leader of 『Kuromori』
...?!

...Eh?

Minaho-neesan is thinking about crushing 『Kuromori』doesn't she?

「I understood earlier that Kouzuki-sama thinks that it's a waste to dismantle 『Kuromori』 I think we need to keep 『Kuromori』existing in some way for

Kouzuki-sama to accept us」

Megu tells Misuzu.

「Katsuko-sama has said that as well...Yuzuki-sama didn't say anything however...」

Misuzu answers.

『Kuromori's』continuation...that means continuing the prostitution brothel. As for Minaho-neesan who knows the suffering of the prostitutes captured in the mansion...

It's a choice she can't accept.

But...Kouzuki『Kakka』has the power.

『Kakka's』request can't be refused easily.

「...Either way, we have to think about the future from now on」

Misuzu said with a serious face.

『What's ahead』...『Future』

「Bring courage in your heart...you have to win the『future』even if there's a risk...」

Misuzu and Megumi have already begun thinking about 『Future』
...Yet

I'm doing my whole best on the present...

「...Misuzu-sama」

Suddenly...Michi-san looks at Misuzu with a scary face.

「What's wrong, Michi?」

The Japanese doll-like beauty answered.

「...Let's hurry and eat our meals」

Before I noticed, Michi-san has already prepared sandwich and tea for everyone.

She's not just a guard.

She's also doing maid work...

「You're right, should we eat?!」

On top of the picnic seat...
Megu and I sit in a row.
Sandwich is in the middle...Misuzu and Michi-san is on the other side.
...Yup.
The students watching the game on the ground from the first base...
Megu and I who were having a lap pillow a while ago
Can only see Misuzu and Michi as our close friends...
Only the baseball club knows that Misuzu and I have kissed before...
Only Endou and some of my classmates knows my face.
The other seniors in the baseball club doesn't know who I am...
They're only looking at the beauties who are wearing the super-oujou-sama
school uniform...
They'll only be confused if they look at the current situation.
...Furthermore.

「Yukino-san...come here」

Misuzu calls out Yukino who's sitting away from us.

「We have your share too...!」

Yukino ignores Misuzu's voice.
She's looking at the ground silently.
She's not watching the game.
As if she's thinking about something...just absentmindedly staring into nothing.

「...Yukino-san!」

Misuzu loudens her voice.

「I was told by Yuzuki-sama...If you don't eat with us, we will sent Yukino-san's
videos to the students' phones」

Yukino's videos.
Her nudes or the video being violated by me?
Either way...there's dozens of photos taken from Yukino that it would be
outrageous to be seen by public.
She's photographed every time she's violated after all.

「...What will you do? Would you like your photos to be seen by everyone?」

Hearing Misuzu say that...
Yukino stands up quietly 「...I'm coming right now」

Yukino joins our circle.
I look at our high school baseball club on the first base.
The regular players on bench concentrates on the game...
The guys who are outside the bench ignores the game and just looks at us.
They're pointing this way and whisper at each other.
Well of course.
Everyone knows that Yukino is Endou's girlfriend.
They were shouting at each other before the game...
Then...she's eating a meal with us.
Yup...the baseball club doesn't know what's going on anymore
Anyway...Yukino's existence is a camouflage.
Ah...Endou's looking this way with a dumbfounded face.

「Come...Yukino-san please eat as well」

Misuzu hands a sandwich to Yukino.

「I don't care whatever happens to you if you don't eat」

Yukino takes a sandwich and puts it in her mouth silently.

「Let's eat too」

「Itadakimasu」

We also begin eating.
...Delicious
AS usual...Katsuko-nee's homemade bread has a different flavor.
The sandwich, eggs, ham, cucumbers...homemade jam...
Anyway, there's a lot.

「...Time!」

The baseball club supervisor comes out from the bench of the first base.
A middle aged man close to 40s wearing a sunglasses is coming to us.

「Hey, you first year over there!」

Although the game is in progress...the baseball club coach comes to the fence

and yelled at us.

「Don't eat meals at this place! You're obstructing the game!」

What's with this old man?

Even though he was bribed to make an injured person a regular.

「The players are distracted! Go somewhere and eat!」

No...Getting distracted by this?...

What logic is that?

「This is outside the school grounds. I think it's our freedom to eat where we want!」

Megu protests to the coach.

「What's with you...What year and class are you?!」

Misuzu speaks to the supervisor shouting at Megu.

「There's no need to answer. This person will just be putting false charges on us...!」

Then...Misuzu looks at the players on the ground.

The game paused when the coach has called 『time』

Everyone's looking at the coach's anger with a surprised face.

「Am I bothering anyone?」

Misuzu calls the players with a smile on her whole face.

「Am I bothering anyoneeee?!」

Michi-san repeats Misuzu's question for some reason.

The players are our baseball club and another high school baseball club...
They shook their heads.

「Do you mind me if I eat my meal here?!」

「...Do you miiind?!」

The smile of the beautiful high school girl...is repeated by the cute middle school girl...

The baseball players shook their heads again.

No...it's not just the athletes.

Most of the students watching outside the ground and even Geropa-kouchou is nodding while looking at us.

That is how amazing Misuzu's elegant smile is.

With the lovely figure of Michi-san too...

「Look...everybody replied that they do not mind!」

Misuzu told the coach with a smile.

「Tsk...What are you doing? Resume the game!」

The coach returns to the bench on the first base.

「Amazing...Misuzu」

I tell Misuzu.

「You made the coach withdraw by just smiling」

Misuzu smiles at me.

「...That is the power of being embraced by Danna-sama!」

...Me?

「Misuzu isn't scared of anything as long as she's with Danna-sama...!」

Misuzu...has changed.

When I first met her in Nagisa's shop, she's quite an introvert and docile girl depending on Nagisa.

It has only been a few days since then and yet...

I can feel the composure on Misuzu now.

She's independent, smiling without relying on anyone.

I think it is just as Megu said a while ago.

Quick-witted, her decisiveness excels...You can feel her broadmindedness.

Misuzu might be the leader of our generation.

「Yukino-san, please eat more...」

She doesn't even forget to pay attention to Yukino.

...Kakkin!

A metal bat sounds again...

「All right, All right!」

Shoot fly, out.

The game enters the third inning...

The score is 3–0, our school is losing.

「Misuzu, are you detailed about baseball?」

I asked while eating the ham sandwich with butter and mustard.

「Misuzu isn't detailed about sports」

Misuzu holds a paper cup with tea and said bashfully.

「If I recall...the hat-trick is three points right?」

Hmm...she doesn't know anything.

「But...the players were wearing hat since the beginning is that correct?」

...Err

How should I explain this?

「Ah...Endou-kun's batting it seems」

I turned around when Megu said that.

Endou enters the batter's box.

Endou's the 8th batter?

He really is forced to be a regular.

「Endou! Bat that properly!」

The batter in front of Endou is no-out on the first base.

He chose the the fourth ball and got to base.

It's a sacrifice bunt in theory, but...

「Strike!!!」

Endou...swings it.

It seems that the team was centered on Endou until middle school...

He looks like a slugger, but.

Endou today is injured...

Above all...This must be his first time for a hard ball match.

I think it's not the place to show his strange guts here.

「That person's movement is strange...」

Michi-san says as she looks at Endou .

「Yeah, he was beaten up a couple of days ago」

...By Margo-san.

Since Yukino is nearby, I can't say Margo-san's name.

「That is the person Yukino is dating」

Megu tells Misuzu.

「Hmm... Yukino-san likes a person with a bandage on his nose?」

Misuzu states her impressions.

No you see...he doesn't always have a bandage there.

「A crude person it is...」

Looking at Endou making a strike after a big swing...Misuzu has declared.

「He's injured, but...I think he's attention is distracted since the beginning...」

Michi-san said.

It seems that old martial arts people can understand the character of their opponent by behavior...

「Yukino-san...are you okay with that?」

Misuzu looks at Yukino.

Yukino doesn't look at Endou during this game at all.

No, she's not even looking at the game itself.

She just looks down as if rejecting everything.

「That person...feels like he will only have sex selfishly. I'm sure it won't feel good having sex with that person...!」

Misuzu speaks to Yukino whisperingly.

「He's different from our Danna-sama. Danna-sama always makes Misuzu and others feel happy...」

Yukino looks up hearing Misuzu...

「...What are you saying?」

Yukino looks at Misuzu.

Yukino knows that Misuzu is a Kouzuki.

Unlike Megu...She can't show words in antagonistic manner.

「No, nothing. I'm just talking about Danna-sama giving us a very wonderful sex...!」

Misuzu smiles at Yukino.

...Err

What does this mean?

Did Misuzu receive any order from Minaho-neesan concerning Yukino?

If ever Shirasaka house doesn't stop attacking us, our next move is...

『Kidnap Yukino』that's what Minaho-neesan said.

As preparations for that...

Misuzu's already acting...

「Strike, batter out!!!!」

I didn't see the last one...

Endou...you're already hopeless.

「What the hell are you doing!!」

「You can't even bunt!!」

「Even if you die there, a runner would pass through you!」

「Or rather, try to make a hit by yourself!」

「Get hit by a pitch and die!」

The baseball club seniors turned even harsher...

「...Yoshi-kun, show me your hand」

Megu holds my hand.

「This hand always makes me feel good. I love being touched by Yoshi-kun...」

Megu kisses my hand while looking at Yukino.

She puts my fingers in her mouth.

「Misuzu loves Danna-sama's hand as well. Sex with Danna-sama feels very pleasant...」

Misuzu looks at me with moist eyes.

Usually...she would lick my fingers, not wanting to be defeated by Megu.
It seems that she's enduring it here on the public.
In exchange, she licks her fingers with her tongue.

「I love his hand but...Misuzu loves being licked by his tongue even more.」
「Yeah...I feel you. Yoshi-kun makes me really feel glad that I was born a woman when he licks my breasts」

Megu rides on Misuzu's talk...
The two of them seems to be communicating with just eye contact.
In short...They're doing a sexual topic in front of Yukino.

「Misuzu loves being licked there. But in the end...」
「...It feels the best being connected with Yoshi-kun」
「Yes...it feels so good that my body feels like it's melting」
「I know...I had my sexual orgasm last night」
「Is that so?...That's great, Megumi-san」
「Yes...I thought that it would be enough to serve Yoshi-kun until then but...It feels really happy when you orgasm at the same time」
「That's right, Megumi-san...Misuzu loves it when Danna-sama pours his semen into the womb when he reaches climax. There's nothing happier than that」
「I know! Misuzu-san...!」

Yukino's throat sound like gulping.
Yukino's aroused by the sexual conversation by the two.
...Then 「...What?」

I hear a military song flowing through a broken speaker from afar?
There's three black vans on the road.
...It's blasting off it's way to us.
There's a large 『Political Organization』written on the cars.

「That's a fake right wing」

Misuzu said when she saw the name of the political organization.

「...Fake right wing?」

When I asked, Misuzu...

「It's a crime syndicate pretending to be a right wing political organization」

Those guys are coming over here...
The three cars stopped right above us.
The door slide opens...
Bad guys wearing matching black dress come one after another.
There's 15 people in all coming from the three cars.
The sunglasses man speaks...

「...Where is Yamamine Megumi?!」

They're here to capture Megu...?!
Not me nor Misuzu...
With that said...they're the people hired by 『Shirasaka house』
There's finally guys who were hired after the continuous refusal of cooperation
by the underground organizations.

「...That's Yamamine Megumi!」

Yukino points at Megumi.
...Seriously, this girl

「Everyone...please do not move from here」

Michi-san stands up
She holds out the short black stick...
She gets up the slope towards the men.

「...What's with you?!」

The man speaks to Michi-san in an intimidating manner.

「I will be your opponent...!」

Michi-san stares at the man with an expressionless face.
Grasping the black stick...she thrust it out towards the men.

「...Ojou-chan...we don't want you to get injured so back off!」
「...We're only hear for the girl named Yamamine Megumi」
「...Ojou-chan is still too young to be our opponent」
「Liar! Isn't that girl in the center of your strikezone you lolicon!」
「Ah, I know!」
「Aniki, I like that girl!」

「We can just gangrape them after catching them...」

The fake right wing laughs vulgar.

They're going to capture Megu and rape her!

I will never allow that to happen!!

I put my hands on the beat up stick 「...What what what?」

I can hear a voice from the ground.

The baseball club members and the students are looking this way from the sudden entry of the fake right wing...

「Hey...Is she alright?!!」

A black haired girl stands alone in front of the men a bit apart from us.

「Ojou-chan...could you move away ?!」

「...We're not playing. Oji-san is busy」

「Aniki, let's kidnap this girl too!」

「That's right...should we gang-bang her too?」

「Let's bring them all!」

「Hm...now that I look at them, they're all beauties...」

「Let's kill that brat and kidnap everyone else!」

I won't let that...!

I stand in front of the girls.

「I will punish you from here」

...Michi-san said with a serious face.

「Punish...What are you saying?」

「Are you crazy?」

The men laughs at Michi-san.

Michi-san sets her black stick straight.

Facing the top of the men...the leader...

She put the stick on the man's forehead.

「...Kudou style martial arts, Kudou Michi...Here I come!」

...Then.

Bashu!!!

Along with a dreadful launch sound...

The tip of the black stick was shot at a high speed!

A black chunk hits the leader's forehead and made a dull sound!!!

「Ugyaaaaaaaaaaaaa!!!」

The man was blown off several meters away!!!

W-w-w-w-w-w-what the hell is that????!!

「...Prepare yourselves!!」

Michi-san took out a round steel ball and thin chain from inside of the empty black stick.

「...Haa!!」

Michi-san swings the steel weights with a speed tearing up air...

S-Scaryyy...!

This is old martial arts...?!

147. Lunch on the grass

「...but, how did they know we're here?」

I asked Margo-san.

We resume our lunch again.

The rest of the lunch Katsuko-nee has prepared was safe because Megu quickly put them in the basket when the fake right wing broke in.

Now, Margo-san who was just rampaging picks a sandwich with us.

「That's obvious...Minaho's leaked info gets into them」

Margo-san's face looks natural.

「Eh...Why?」

Why did she invite the enemy on purpose?

「Well you see...」

Margo-san looks at Yukino...

It must mean not to talk about the 『Shirasaka head house』in front of Yukino.
I nod.

「If have established the fact that the『enemy』has made an attack...we can fight the 『enemy』thoroughly with a cause」

Earlier...Minaho-neesan told the lawyer of Shirasaka family a lot of things.
But, that is just a 『Punishment』against the villain Shirasaka Sousuke...
It's not a 『declaration of war』against Shirasaka head family...
...But...the fake right wing hired by the Shirasaka family attempted to kidnap Megu.

This is an attack of 『Shirasaka head family』to 『Kuromori』

That's why will go on an all-out fight with 『Shirasaka head family』

The one who has crossed the line was 『Shirasaka family』...

Is that what it meant?

「Of course...This leak is concerned with Kouzuki-san too. Those strange fake right wing 『Enemy』who came to us might be mediated by Kouzuki-san from behind」

Margo-san analyzes...

Minaho-neesan has completely obstructed the connections of the underground society to Shirasaka family completely.

And yet...Suddenly an organization cooperating with Shirasaka family appears, those kind of possibilities should be fully considered too.

「...Kouzuki-san thinks of it as an opportunity to introduce each other」

...Introduce each other?

「Me to Kudou-san...and Kudou-san to me... Instead of talking and taking time, it would be easier to understand by showing the fighting ability of each other. How one thinks and how one moves...!」

Margo-san looks at Kudou-san while smiling.

Kudou-san...drinks the tea Megu prepared expressionlessly.

「...It's inevitable if it's Kouzuki-sama's order but...my only master is father. I don't intend to ask others for their teachings」

She's a small and cute girl on the outside though...

Her personality is obstinate and stubborn.

「It's not that I intend to teach you anything...」

Margo-san said clearly.

「But...if you are a pro, you have to work on people from other teams...」

「That's right Michi! You're still inexperienced. I think you shouldn't stick to your own style!」

Misuzu tells Kudou-san.

「But...I'm Kudou Martial artist」

Kudou-san sticks to her own position to the end.

「...Then, you won't be able to protect anyone, you will also die」

Margo-san...

「...I don't care about your style...I don't even care on who you are. If you're someone who knows what to prioritize...I will accept you」

Kudou-san's eyes opened wide in surprise.

「But...if you are a foolish and stubborn one...I will knock you out and have Kouzuki-san take you back...」

Margo-san's spirit makes Kudou-san bend her body straight.

「...Do you intend to eliminate me?」

Calmly...Kudou-san stretches her hand on her bag.

「No matter how combat efficient you are, someone who doesn't know priorities are just a hindrance...」

Margo-san also raises her feet...

With Margo-san's muscle strength, she can move to Kudou-san's place in a moment and attack.

「...Are you saying that I'm hindrance!」

The middle school girl who's a self-proclaimed a student of old martial arts seems to be offended...

She moves her hand inside the bag immediately...!

...Ah, geez.

...What a troublesome child.

It would be troublesome if she takes out her 『Missile punch』or 『Jupiter Thunderbolt』again.

I grabbed Kudou-san's hand.

「...Eh?!」

Kudou-san blinks her eyes and looks at me.

「...W-w-w-w-w-w-what are you doing?!」

Kudou-san's face turned red.

「...You're not allowed to use weapons. Kudou-san, I think you should calm down」

I said.

「I think the same」

Misuzu affirms my words.

「Michi, you're too bloodthirsty for a guard. Guards don't stand out that

much!」

Yeah...I think so too

This girl likes flashy things.

But...Kudou-san right now isn't listening to Misuzu.

She's in a feverish haste looking at my hand holding her down...

「...M-Misuzu-samaaa?!」

「...What's wrong, Michi?」

Looking at the panicking girl who's usually expressionless...

Misuzu asks wonderingly.

「T-This man is touching my hand!」

...Ah

...Was it rude of me touching her all this time?

「...Oh, sorry sorry」

I release my hand.

But still...Kudou-san looks at her own hand.

「...I wasn't able to feel the bloodthirst」

Kudou-san mutters.

「...Bloodthirst?」

When I asked, Kudou-san glares at me...!

「Yoshida-sama...which school are you from...?!」

「...School?」

「...Iai? Aikido?」

Kudou-san looks at me with serious eyes.

「No, I'm not doing any martial art though...」

「...There's no way that's true!」

Kudou-san shouts!!

「...Normal men can never erase their presence and touch me!!!!」

...Even if you say that.

「Any men...will have a unique presence when they approach me...!」

Kudou-san observes me.

「...When men approach me, they feel a bit nervous...they're holding a complicated 『thoughts』」

Well...Kudou-san is an amazing beauty...men would be nervous just from looking at her.

「...Especially on the street on the way to school, sometimes, men turn their evil 『thoughts』to me...!」

...Eh?

...E-Evil 『Thoughts』?

「...Could that be a molester?」

I asked it.

「No, there's no way a vicious man like a molester can get close to a Kudou style practitioner!」

「I-Is that so?」

I see...so you can know『thought』that much

「Yes...I absolutely ride only a female exclusive vehicle when going to school!」

...Err

...Kudou-san

That's unrelated to being a practitioner right?!

「『Evil Thought』is you see...that!」

...That?

「...『Letters』!」

...『letters』?

「Occasionally at the station platform in the morning...a man brings a letter filled with 『evil thought』 while saying 『Uhm, please read this』!」

...T-That's.

...Could that be?

「Those kind of men emits a very strong wicked 『aura』! And of course...the 『letter's』content is wriggling with 『Evil thought』as well!」

Kudou-san speaks passionately...
Now then...what should we do?

「That happens three times in a day! There's also five waiting to ambush me in front of the school gate!」

Yup...She's popular.

「I think everyone of them are sent out buy a different martial arts group hostile to Kudou style! They intend to exhaust my spirit by throwing their evil 『Thought』!」

...Aaaaaaaaaaaa.
...W-What should we do?

「Kudou-san...Could it be that you never read the contents of the letter?」

I try to ask that at least.

「Obviously! Why should I open an envelope filled with such fearsome 『Evil thoughts』!」

...A-As expected.

「Then...How do you dispose of the letters?」

When I asked...Kudou-san's eyes flared up...!

「...I burn them!」

...Burn...?

「...Such evil『thoughts』needs to be burned by flames of purification...!」

...F-Flames of purification

「For that sake, I always bring this 『Burning Plazma』close to myself...!」

Saying that, Kudou-san takes out a red electric lighter from her pocket.

「...That lighter」

「Yes...with this 『Burning Plazma』I completely purify it with the flames in front of the person who have given it to me...!!!」

...She's burning it without reading?

...With that 『Burning Plazma』?

「...Misuzu. Uhm, could it be that Kudou-san is...?!」

While we're amazed from hearing out Kudou-san's talk...Misuzu from the side calmly drinks her tea.

She's already used to it.

It seems that she already knows this talk since Kudou-san's younger times.

「Yes, it is as Danna-sama thinks...Michi has been on an all girl's school since she was a child. Just like Misuzu...!」

The super ojou-sama school Misuzu is going, I heard that it is complete from nursery to high school...

In short, this girl has no immunity towards men?

「To be honest, Misuzu is surprised as well...This is also my first time seeing Michi talking to a man for a long time...」

...I-Is that so?

「Anyway! Whenever men approaches me, they surely emit evil『thoughts』 I can feel that! Therefore...No man has ever touched me other than my father and brother!」

She's a boxed lady in some meanings.

Even though she's swinging iron balls...

No...Speaking of which.

This girl didn't beat up the men unless she used steel ball or the baton...

She's avoiding direct contact with her opponent?!

「Even my father nor brother haven't touched my body for these three years!」

Kudou-san pats her chest.

「Especially father, his『Bloodthirst』is strong so...even now, at times he try to touch me, I can dodge him on whatever situation it is...!」

That's not martial arts...

That's just his father wanting skinship from his daughter...

No, it feels pitiful for him so let's not think about it.

「And yet... Why I wasn't able to notice Yoshida-sama's thought and why was he able to touch my hand?!」

The petite beautiful middle school girl stares at my face.

...W-Well

...E-Errr 「...Michi, you don't get it?」

Misuzu laughs./

「...I don't. Misuzu-sama. Please teach this one...!」

Kudou-san looks at Misuzu with a serious face.

Misuzu answers with a smile.

「Danna-sama doesn't have any evil thoughts towards you...!」

...No evil thoughts?

「My Danna-sama...completely opens his heart to his allies he can believe in」

「...Is he accepting me as his ally?」

Kudou-san looks at me.

「That's right. He thinks of Michi as his ally already so he stopped Michi's hand so you won't fight Margo-san. That's the only thought he had... There's no 『Evil thought』nor 『Blood thirst』so Michi wasn't able to reject Danna-sama's hand touching her」

「He doesn't feel 『Evil thoughts』nor『Blood thirst』towards me?」

「That's right, for Michi who can feel the 『danger』...you were unconsciously avoiding Danna-sama's hand right? Your heart felt safety from Danna-sama's 『Hand』...therefore, Danna-sama was able to touch you...」

Misuzu explained.

「...Is that how it is?」

Kudou-san looks at me with eyes of surprise.

Err...How should I answer her?...

「I don't intend to fight Kudou-san. You're protecting Misuzu so I think of you as an ally. Also...As expected, I don't want you to fight Margo-san who's my ally as well so I purely wanted to stop Kudou-san...that's why I hold Kudou-san's hand. That's all. There's no special reason for doing it...!」

...Somehow, it feels strange.

I don't intend to make an excuse but it looks like I'm making one.

「...I'm very sorry, Yoshida-sama!」

Kusou-san bows her head with her hands on the ground.

「...Eh?!」

「I have never thought Yoshida-sama relies on me that much!」

Haa...Someone save me.

This girl is quite troublesome.¹

「Michi...you're still young. You need to meet various people and learn...」

Misuzu tells Kudou-san.

「That is the same for me. In these several days...I've met a lot of people starting from Danna-sama. I was taught various things I never knew about... each and every day」

Misuzu smiles at Kudou-san.

「I love Danna-sama, I respect him. I think he's a very wonderful man. He's my pride, my treasure...!」

...Misuzu?

「I also respect Megumi-san the same. I love her. This one has a stronger heart than me...a much more wonderful woman than me」

「That's not true...」

Megu who's on the back this all time spoke to Misuzu.

「I respect Misuzu-san more. Misuzu-san's always bright and cheerful...she's always bearing kind feelings to everyone around her. I also love Misuzu-san」

... Megu

「You have said 『Let's get along forever』before, didn't you? I was very glad that time...very grateful of Misuzu-san」

Megu said.

「Even I always envy Megumi-san's strength. I also want to throw my family

like Megumi-san and jump into Danna-sama to be alone with him...」

「...Misuzu-san」

「But...I don't have the courage to abandon my house. That's why I'm envious of your courage. As a person...as a woman...I respect you」

Misuzu said.

「It's not just Megumi-san...Margo-san's excellent physical ability and judgement is wonderful...Katsuko-sama's strong kindness to the core...Nagisa-sama's broad-mindedness...Nei-san's brightness...Yuzuki-sama's iron-like will... everyone is wonderful. Ten times more charming than me, much more intelligent, filled with energy and judgement...!」

Misuzu isn't a formal member of 『Kuromori』

She's only related somehow through me.

Misuzu looks at the women of 『Kuromori』like that.

「I feel happy because I was able to meet women who are superior at me at this time. And I think that this inferior me must not grow jealous, nor depressed, accept it upfront and polish myself. I don't know what will happen in the years ahead but...I want to be a fantastic woman that's able to stand on par with everyone...!」

Misuzu looks at me.

「...Me too... I want to be with you forever」

Megu said...

「Misuzu-san...I feel the same as well. I'm no match against any of the other women but...I'd do my best to be as strong as everyone someday...if not, I can't live together with Yoshi-kun...」

...I

「...W-What are you saying? Aren't Misuzu and Megu much more amazing than I am? You two are charming...strong...kind... Even though I'm the one thinking that I have to do my best so everyone won't run out of patience for me...!」

Even though I'm the most useless member of the society, a fool, inferior.

Even though I'm just being helped by everyone out of pity...

「...I love you」

Misuzu tells me.

「Danna-sama who does his best like that is what I love the best!」

「I love you too...Yoshi-kun!」

Megu...smiled and said.

「I love you too...Misuzu...Megu...!」

The three of us look at each other.

Then...smiled at each other.

「Hey...Michi」

Misuzu turns to Kudou-san.

「You're the practitioner of the Kudou style martial art you're proud of, but...」

Kudou-san looks at Misuzu's eyes as she listen to her talk.

「I think it's not bad...you don't have to rely on the power you have acquired but look for something you need to learn in the future」

...What you need to learn in the future

「We're still young after all...」

Misuzu smiles kindly.

「You need to have feelings of respect even to the people who don't have power currently...you also need to learn from the people you respect」

Misuzu's words sinks inside Kudou-san...

「...『Learn』?」

「That's right...Humans are evolving creatures. Unable to do it yesterday, able to do it today...tomorrow they'll be good at it. You have to think about improving yourself like that...!」

Misuzu said.

「Can I say something?」

Margo-san interrupts the conversation of the two.

「Yes please」

Misuzu accepts happily.

「Kudou-san...You're small and you don't have the power and weight so how about select a method of attack for the current you?」

Margo-san seems to be talking about the 『combat efficiency』and 『strategy』 in a way easy to understand for Kudou-san.

「...Yes, that is right」

「Then...Kudou-san, how old are you right now?」

「...15 years old」

「You're not growing taller anymore?」

「No...I've grown taller by five centimeters since last year」

「...Do you have no intentions of growing taller in the future?」

「...What do you mean by that?」

Kudou-san seems to be annoyed again.

「Well...If the you right now don't intend go grow taller, I can't see you practicing your current techniques」

...True.

The 『Chains and steel ball』the 『Missile Punch』and the 『Baton』

She has to think of what to do to remove the disadvantage of her small body.

「That...this is the only thing I can do right now...」

Kudou-san objects making an unpleasant face.

「Hmm, then every time you grow taller and heavier...You have to look for a strategy suitable for that figure from scratch again...」

「...That is」

Kudou-san fell silent.

「Of course...if you do that, you won't reach the time to make it suitable. You won't be able to master one technique seriously」

「...That is not」

「It was okay with the small fry like today but...incomplete techniques like that

won't go through the real 『enemy』 You do know that much right?」

「...Yes」

Kudou-san looks down

「That's is why we all spend years to polish our techniques. Even I'm the same...I'm quite big after all. Making tight turns don't work. And my main job is to guard Minaho and Nei. I have to polish my hand to hand combat as I use my body to protect them. I train everyday with that kind of thought」

Margo-san said.

「Kudou-san...you should have a mental image of your ideal figure after a few years...」

「...My ideal in the future?」

「That's right...you're a middle school student currently, imagine your ideal self in the future and think what you should do to achieve that. What kind of training you should do...what kind of experience you have to acquire...」

Kudou-san exhales.

「I...have never though of that myself until now. My father always thinks 『Just do what you can right now』, 『Keep yourself in the best state at the moment』」

Margo-san laughs.

「What Kudou-san's father said and what I just said isn't that different」

「...Eh?」

Kudou-san's surprised.

「Kudou-san...Your father's word of 『Accepting』is different」

Suddenly...Misuzu shouts

「I see...so that's why!」

...Misuzu?

「This is why my grandfather...he understood that Michi has already reached her limit of understanding under Kudou-san...that's why he sent out Michi to train outside...!」

Train...outside?

「...There are a lot of opinions from various people in the world. Just like how my world has expanded when I met Danna-sama...Michi should also meet various people too...!」

「...Misuzu-sama?」

Misuzu smiles and speaks to Kudou-san.

「First...you should embrace the thought of respecting the people much more excellent than yourself. Learn from those people's perspective and thought... Michi's outlook on the world has changed because of Margo-san's opinion, right?」

「...Yes」

「Go and change even more. I will be the same...!」

Misuzu looks at me.

「After coming to love Danna-sama...everyday is a heart throbbing experience. Anything makes my heart throb for the first time in my life. When you experience those heart throbbing things...that will become an experience. Even if it won't make your heart throb on the second time it would feel comfortable...but you see」

Misuzu laughs.

「The throbbing won't be lost. Once you experience something heart throbbing...something new will make your heart throb again in the future! I'm very happy right now. Being together with Danna-sama...I always come with something new to make my heart throb! I'm sure, I will continue to feel this heart throbbing for all my life...!!!」

...Misuzu!

「That's why...Michi should also feel her heart throb while learning with us!」

...Kudou-san.

「Yes...Understood. Misuzu-sama」

She answers.

「What's with you people...Are you really idiots?!」

Yukino who's been hanging her head all this time ahead of us has said.

「I'm fed up with this already! Let me go already! I already had enough going through this idiocy! I can't endure this already!」

148. Yukino is Yukino

Yukino...lost her temper.

「...I can't endure this anymore! Let me go already! I don't want the scary and painful thing anymore!」

Yukino screams while shedding tears again.

Why is Yukino so easy to cry?

She cries and just let out all of the minus feelings outside.

She just let it out without making any solution.

No...Yukino will never try to move by herself to solve something.

She'll always tell others to 「***this!」...

She'll leave her body to the situation without doing anything.

No matter what happens, she'll never stand up with her own power...

And yet, she'll continue to complain to other people...

That is the woman named Shirasaka Yukino.

「...We don't care if you do, but can you do anything by yourself?」

Margo-san said nonchalantly.

「...What do you mean by that!」

Yukino glares at Margo-san.

「The attack from the fake right wing a while ago...do you think that you're completely unrelated to that?」

Margo-san laughs at Yukino.

「Isn't that obvious!...I don't have anything to do with those people who attacked you! Everyone's going for all of you right?!」

... Oh.

The crying girl has changed her face to the angry one...

In the end...crying and getting angry are the only emotions coming out of Yukino.

An undisciplined child rudely 『letting out her emotions』...the people around her just think of it as trouble.

「...Your father has caused trouble to some crime syndicates. Didn't we tell you that yesterday?」

Margo-san looks at Yukino as if investigating.

「Shirasaka Sousuke has quite the debt on those crime syndicates though...!」

Margo-san laughs.

Margo-san seems to be teaching us how to control Yukino.

She looks at Misuzu, Megu and my eyes while speaking calmly to Yukino.

We nod in a way Yukino won't notice.

「...W-What are you saying!」

Yukino's weak to threats.

Her burning anger was put down quickly.

「Yukino-san's still 16 years old...then I think those people would be pleased to earn for five years」

Margo-san takes out a bluff card.

「...Five years...?」

Yukino took the bait.

「That means you're expected to work for five years on the underground prostitution...or rather, it will only be for five years」

Margo-san smiles.

「Within five years...your skin will be worn out, your hair would turn gray and your breasts would sag down tragically I guess. Your vagina and anus would be completely loose...after all, you would be taking 30 people every day for five years Yukino's face tremble in fear.

「Ah, but it's okay...those people won't hesitate to use dangerous drugs. They'll drug Yukino-san's brain hard for five years so you'll feel always happy...in exchange, I think you will forget your own name. There will be some intelligence left for you to at least add one digit numbers...!」

...Yukino's body tremble in fear.

「...The first three years would be easy I think. High school girls on their active

years will have quite a lot of guests so I think it will be emotionally painful. But... it will be physically painful once you exceed 18 years old. If you don't meet up the perverted kind of requests, it would be impossible to earn the same as before. And when you pass 20 years old...those crime syndicate managing you will think 『It's about time her body breaks so it's inevitable』...and they'll arrange for request of forcible 『body destruction』 Well, be prepared to have an artificial anus...the muscles on your anus would already snap so it's inevitable』

Won't that make you want to die instead?

「The people your father has caused trouble do that in normal basis...!」

Margo-san laughs.

「Shirasaka Sousuke himself don't have any methods than selling his internal organs for money right? Even if you force that old man on manual labor, he can't do anything great. Even your mother will only be sold to maniacs. When it comes to it...it is normal for them to want to use Yukino-san's body to repay her father's debt...that is how crime syndicate thinks. Your body would be the one to earn the most...!」

Margo-san switches the talk amazingly.

Certainly, Yukino's father may have created problems with those people... Those that attacked earlier, the fake right wing were hired by 『Shirasaka house』...

In short...they're irrelevant to the crime syndicates Shirasaka Sousuke have caused trouble with.

And yet...Margo-san is using the fear from being attacked by the right wing to Yukino.

「If Yukino-san walks out there alone...those people would kidnap you. First you would be gang-banged by everyone in the crime syndicate then tomorrow you would be sold to a prostitution ring」

「...!」

「Do your best alone...let me tell you this however, we still hold your father. He won't come to save you...or would you cry on the Shirasaka head family? Do you want to tell them『My father caused problems with crime syndicates so I want you to help disposing them』」

「...I can't say that」

...Yukino doesn't know that the 『Shirasaka Head family』can't move on Shirasaka Sousuke case anymore.

If Yukino asks to be rescued by the head of the Shirasaka family, Shirasaka Moritsugu...Shirasaka house will rescue her immediately.

Shirasaka Moritsugu seems to have taken a like at Yukino...

But, Yukino's pride is too high.

She won't speak out about the problem his father has caused to the Shirasaka head family with her own mouth at all.

Much more about herself being raped...

「We do not care a single bit about you...please go on and try to protect your own body!」

Margo-san makes her parting shot while laughing.

「As long as you're being with us...it is inevitable so I'm guarding Yukino-san for the moment, but...to be honest, I hate girls like you so it would really help me if you disappear from here」

Yukino is trembling.

「Well...if we part right now, it would be impossible to meet you again. You'll be abducted by the guys like earlier by the end of the day...and tomorrow, you'll be in some island on an inland sea somewhere. There are those kinds of prostitution island. Earn as much as you can for five years there okay? Your father's debt might be repayed. Though...your look after five years would make even your family unable to identify you」

...Logically.

...Concretely

...Using words that is easy to imagine by the opponent.

Also...trying to throw those to Yukino while make it sound as violent and disastrous image.

Yukino will say 「there's no way that will happen」while desperately imagining it happen, she's unable to object the idea and logic of her opponent.

Yukino's...a bit of a dull thinker.

No...I'm the same though.

...Yup.

Yukino and I are on the same level of dumbness.

I know that but...

However...Yukino fundamentally lacks the vitality to overcome fate with her own power.

She's mentally weak, a girl that only lives under someone's protection, and yet...only her ego and pride is huge, what an unbalanced girl...

「T-That's all lies...I-I don't believe you」

Look...even though she's saying 「I don't believe you」...

...She's already believing it

She's completely caught into Margo-san's plan.

「I don't mind it if you don't believe me either way...Also, I don't think of anything even if you were to be kidnapped by the crime syndicate...!」

Margo-san scorns Yukino.

「Did you forget?...We're all people who have grudge against Shirasaka Sousuke. Actually, we don't want to save you. We're only considering of Yoshida-kun's feelings so the revenge on you is weakened... !

Yukino rejects it.

「...You're weakening it?! That's already too cruel!」

...Margo-san.

Turns her eyes filled with 『Blood thirst』to Yukino!!

「...I think it's already a bonus for you that you're alive」

Yukino felt the blood thirst upfront and trembled.

...She let out a 「Hii」frightened voice 「...We have been in contact with you all this time with that sensation. If it wasn't for Yoshida-kun...You would've been sold away already. Everyone knows that right?」

Margo-san turns to Megu and Misuzu.

「Yes...Minaho-san have said it. She has intended to sell Yukino away to a prostitution ring on a foreign country」

「Yes...Misuzu have heard it too. The plan was to send her to a prostitution cave

on the slums of south east Asia」

「But...she said that she won't do that as long as Yoshi-kun doesn't abandon Yukino」

「You're right. Yukino-san's future all depends on Danna-sama」

The words let out by the two of them makes Yukino tremble.

「That's right...that plan is still in pending state...it's not cancelled at all!」

Margo-san throws sharp eyes to Yukino.

「...I-I...What are you telling me to do then?!」

Yukino who's gone back to her crying has asked Margo-san.

「...I don't know. How about you loiter around there and get caught by those crime syndicates quickly?」

「I don't want that. I can't endure that...」

Yukino cries again.

「If you don't want that then stick with Yoshida-kun for the time being」

Margo-san looks at me.

Being guided by the glance...Yukino's eyes also looks at me.

「...Well, when Yoshida-kun has abandoned you, it would be the time you have exhausted your fate. Once Yoshida-kun judges that he doesn't need Yukino-san...we will immediately dispose of you」

Margo-san said clearly.

Yukino...looks at us with frightened eyes.

「...You don't need this girl anymore, do you? Danna-sama」

Misuzu speaks to me.

「...You're right...Yukino is just a hindrance 」

Megu too...

They're cooperating on Margo-san's 『cornering』...

「I don't get what's going on but...for the time being, I didn't receive orders on guarding this person...!」

Kudou-san said that.

「Kudou-san, what would you do if this girl was attacked by someone when she's alone? Would you save her?」

Margo-san asks Kudou-san.

「Why do I have to save someone who's not my ally?」

Kudou-san answered with a serious face.

「I'm not a hero of justice. My job is to receive my master's command and accomplish the duty. If I get myself involved into unnecessary troubles, it would cause trouble to my master so I must never do that—is what my father strongly ordered me」

Yup...she thinks like a warrior

「Let me ask you just in case...Who is Kudou-san's master? Is it Kouzuki『Kakka』?」

I wanted to ask as I'm curious about it.

In the case if ever I turn hostile against Kouzuki『Kakka』...

I'd have to think about Kudou-san becoming our enemy as well...

「No...My father's master is Kouzuki-sama, however...My father has ordered me to think and act with Misuzu-sama as my master...!」

Misuzu looks at me.

「Grandfather is already giving Misuzu a trial in this case. Therefore...I asked Kudou-san to make Michi completely my subordinate」

...That means

...In short?

「If ever...for argument's sake. Misuzu has confronted Kouzuki『Kakka』... Kudou-san, whose orders would you follow?」

Kudou-san answered immediately.

「Misuzu-sama. Even if I fight father, mother and brother, I will be protecting Misuzu-sama. That is how I was educated...!」

...Kouzuki『Kakka』, assuming the worst case.

And on top of that...

He's going to confront us fair and square.

To show that we can overturn the situation with our own state of power...

Kudou-san will be under Misuzu...

「Michi isn't grandfather's spy...she will never betray us when she's ordered by grandfather. Isn't that right...Michi?」

Misuzu asks the petite girl.

「Yes...I promise that」

Kudou-san tells all of us.

「Also...Yoshida-sama」

Kudou-san said.

「Please put familiarity on calling me...please call me 『Kudou-chan』」

She said with her cheeks dyed red.

...Err

「...K-Kudou-chan?」

「Yes...My father is called by his allies『Kudou-chan』he's really close with.

Yoshida-sama has trusted myself as his ally. Therefore I wanted Yoshida-sama to call me 『Kudou-chan』...!」

...Now then.

...What should I do?

「Then...you can call me 『Yoshida-chan』too」

「That's...I can't call a gentleman older than me with a suffix of 『chan』」

...G-Gentleman

This『Samurai girl』...

「...Yoshida-sama is Yoshida-sama」

...Hmmm

There seem to be a lot of pickiness inside Kudou-chan.

I don't understand a single one of it however.

「Hey...Can I call you 『Kudou-chan』too?」

Margo-san talks to 『Kudou-chan』laughingly.

「...We're already allies aren't we...?」

If Margo-san is on a standpoint of being a 『Senpai』in her fights or a 『Teacher』, Kudou-chan would've repulsed it.

She laughs and propose this to improve their relationship.

「Yes...please call me that way. I will also...」

Kudou-chan, hesitated to speak for a moment...then said.

「Can I call Margo-sama...『Aneue』?」

...Aneue

「In Kudou style, a senior who has entered even just a day earlier will definitely be called 『Nii-san』or 『Neesan』as a title of honor...」

...Err

Kudou style doesn't have anyone but Kudou-chan and her father right?

「I myself...call my father 『Aniue』in our usual training grounds」

Could that be just Kudou-chan's father's hobby?

Or rather...is he an artistic comic storyteller?

「...Father has tried to make me call him 『Onii-chan』once but...I'm no longer a child, thus I call him 『Aniue』in present」¹

As expected...it was her father's hobby.

Yup...she's such a small and cute beautiful girl.

He's her father and yet...he wants to be called 『Onii-chan』...

「Okay...I'll become Kudou-chan's 『Onee-chan』...!」

Margo-san answered laughingly

「Thank you very much」

Kudou-chan bows her head

Yup...all is well for these two.

I'm convinced they are...

...By the way.

...What's with Yukino?

Yukino...is irritated that the people's attention has moved from her to Kudou-chan.

She's looking at Kudou-chan with the thought of『What's with this girl』?

「By the way...about Yukino again」

It can't be helped...I took the lead and returned the topic to Yukino.

「As I was saying a while ago...you don't need her anymore, don't you? Danna-sama」

Misuzu said lightly.

「Danna-sama has Misuzu and Megumi-san...and other women as well. I think we can continue satisfying Danna-sama mentally and physically more than Yukino-san」

「Un...we'll do anything as long as Yoshi-kun hopes for it. No matter how embarrassing it is, we can do anything as long as it pleases Yoshi-kun」

Megu said.

「Yes, Misuzu and others can always serve to please Danna-sama. Therefore... isn't it about time you abandon Yukino-san?」

Misuzu said while looking at Yukino.

「Misuzu and Megumi-san...Katsuko-sama, Nagisa-sama...and others, there are women that will offer their mind and body to Danna-sama...!」

Misuzu said while taking care of not saying anything about Mana.
Yukino still doesn't know that her own little sister has become my 『slave』

「...Are you unsatisfied with us?」

Misuzu looks at my eyes.

Half of the meaning of the phrase must be a remark to corner Yukino.
But, half of it is already Misuzu's real intent.

Misuzu wants to know my current feelings towards Yukino.

I look at Yukino.

「...Misuzu and Megumi are much more intelligent, kind than Yukino. Even your faces are much more beautiful than Yukino...」

I speak out what I think.

「...What about Misuzu's body? Are you satisfied having sex with Misuzu?」

Misuzu appeals with her body.

「Yup...Sex with Misuzu feels really good. I'm satisfied. It is the same with Megu. I love embracing Megu's body... !」

Megu leans to me.

「...I'm the same, Yoshi-kun」

She piles her hand on mine.

Megu really loves to hold my hand.

「Please show it clearly...sex with Misuzu and Megumi-san compared to Yukino's sex. Danna-sama, which do you like more?」

...That is

「...Misuzu and Megumi's better. Our feelings reach each other...that kind of relation is nonexistent with Yukino. Misuzu and Megumi is ten times much more pleasant than Yukino」

I answered honestly.

Yukino received shock.

「It's not just us. Danna-sama has a lot of other women. Katsuko-sama is there with her wonderful proportions and beauty...in case of tolerance, Nagisa-sama's over the top. When it comes to beauty, Nei-san wins over anyone by a mile...」

Misuzu said.

To add another one...A little devil like and lovable 『Little sister』and 『Slave』 Mana.

「...In the end, isn't just Yukino-san a girl with no redeeming feature?」

Yukino has tears collected in her eyes again.

「Nothing will happen even if you cry. Yukino-san, is there at least one thing you have that will surpass us?」

Misuzu criticizes Yukino.

Misuzu wants to keep Yukino away from me.

Therefore...she's being severe with her words.

The usual kind and calm Misuzu, is being unimaginable...!

「...I-I」

Misuzu is refuting all of the pride Yukino has.

「...Surely, you won't talk about your own family?」

Misuzu warns her beforehand...

「Misuzu is a member of Kouzuki house...you do understand that, don't you?」

The flames of resistance disappears from Yukino's eyes.

The basis of Yukino's pride...isn't a power Yukino has gained by herself.

Born in the『Shirasaka』family...That is all.

Even though that's all...she's looking down on other people.

Therefore...she'll be overpowered by a 『Noble family』with a stronger existence.

Shirasaka house and Kouzuki house...it's not even a competition.

Compared to 『Kouzuki』who's a noble family that succeeds a tradition of an old noble...

『Shirasaka』family is only an upstart.

Yukino herself knows that the best.

「Let me ask you again...Does Yukino-san have anything that can beat us?」

Misuzu asks her strongly.

Yukino...

「...None. I don't have anything...!!!」

Yukino's true feelings was an inferiority complex she hold against Megu's beauty and skill since before.

She can't beat Misuzu's family too.

Yukino also surrenders to Margo-san when it comes to physical strength.

And if you add Nei-san's goddess like beauty...

Yukino's heart will break completely.

「...Yukino-san has admitted it. Danna-sama...would you still obsess yourself on a woman without any charm?」

Misuzu tells me.

「...Misuzu won't mind if you say 『I feel pitiful so I want to help her』 But, if that is the reason, please say it clearly. You don't feel any charm in Yukino-san. If you do not like her, please point it out to us...!」

That is...what Misuzu's pride want to say.
Or, a complex inside Misuzu...
She appeals to me to deny thinking about Yukino...

「You're right...if Yoshi-kun feels 『pity』towards Yukino...I will cooperate on helping her. But, that's the only feeling to it...there's no other emotion towards Yukino inside Yoshi-kun, right?」

Megu looks at me with serious eyes.
...I

Yukino begins to cry...
She's being denied as a human...
Yukino's crying.

「It's not that I feel pity towards Yukino...」

I answered.

「...I think Yukino right now has the charm that Yukino only has」

Yukino looks at me in surprise.

「I can't express it in words properly but...I feel charm even from Yukino...」

Yukino looks at me.

...Kakkiin!!!

Another baseball bat sound is heard...
Oh right...the baseball club practice match has resumed.
I'm not paying attention to it at all though...

「Now then...lunch has ended. I'll go back to Nei」

Margo-san stands up
She covers the hope she has gone out a while ago.

「I can't go back from here. This is designed that you can't go back here after coming out once...」

Seriously...just what the hell is with this school underground.

「Oh...let me return this basket to Katsuko-san」

Margo-san goes up the slope with the empty basket.

I'm sure she'll return from the personnel parking lot of this school.

She stops halfway.

「Ah...Minaho has come...!」

...Minaho-neesan?

Looking at it...there's a yellow minivan I've never seen before coming up the slope road.

It's certainly Minaho-neesan on the driver seat.

Minaho-neesan stops the car right above us...

Then...she get out of the car and looks at the distance.

「...What is she looking at?」

The eyes of Minaho-neesan is looking at...Geropa-kouchou?!

Geropa-kouchou looks at Minaho-neesan and nods.

And after that...Geropa-kouchou shouts to the coach of the baseball club.

「Coach...it's about time you take this seriously or I'll be troubled?」

...Does that mean?

「It's 5-3 right now. It's a defeat as usual」

Megu taught me

Oh right...The practice match is already on the fourth innings...

One out, is the state of the runner on the second base...

The next batter is...

...Endou?!

「Minaho-san came here on that timing」

I agree with Megu's opinion.

Minaho-neesan won't let go of such timing.

「...Dammit! I will definitely make a clutch play!」

Endou goes towards the batter box while practice swinging.

Even though he made that much mistakes in sequence...

He still thinks that he's the king of the game.

Seriously...he's so foolish...or how should I say it.

「...That person is Yukino's girlfriend」

Megu tells Misuzu.

「My...that's quite another unrefined person」

Misuzu tells Yukino

「Someone like Endou-kun looks like he's bad in sex」

「Misuzu thinks the same. I think he's a selfish one and the type that doesn't think about making a woman feel good」

Yukino's listening to the two say it.

While staring at Endou in the ground...

「...Hey, Yukino-san」

Misuzu whispers to Yukino.

「Megumi-san and I will be embraced by Danna-sama after this...!」

Yukino doesn't turn around.

「We're going to have fun having sex with the three of us this afternoon」

Misuzu smiles suspiciously.

「The three of us will get naked and receive Danna-sama's love with all our heart. Danna-sama will be releasing a lot of his hot stuff inside us...」

Yukino's throat gulps.

「...Yukino-san, what would you do?」

...Yukino.

...Has become still, she can't move.

「...Hey, what is going on there!!!!!!」

Endou screams from the ground!!

Looking at it...The coach stands up from the bends and walks to the umpire.

「...I'm going pinch-hitting? Don't fuck with me!!!」

149. Screams and Desire

「...Pinch-hit, follow¹」

The coach informs the umpire with heartless determination.

「Oh...It's finally my turn!」

A giant third year with a bat appears from the bench of the first base.
Endou protests to the coach.

「Hey, wait a moment! There's no way you're going to substitute at this moment!」

No...if they don't substitute in this case.
It would be unknown how to deal the practice game...
In the first place...Endou who's a first year that just entered the school taking a part in the game in special treatment is strange.
Endou's been making a mistake since earlier too...
Even in batting...far from making on a base, his bat hasn't even touched the balls.
it's already in the middle go the game...it's normal for the team to pinch-hit on the chance.

「I won't accept this!」

Endou is being obstinate without knowing what he's saying.

「Get out already, you useless!」

The senpai that came out to replace him has hit Endou's ass with the bat!

「Ouch! What the hell are you doing!」

Endou's anger turned from the coach to the senpai.

「You're being obstinate so this is your punishment!」

The senpai laughs at Endou.

「Do you even know who I am? Fucker!」

Endou tries to hit his senpai...!

The senpai throws the bat away and grips Endou's arm...!

Then Endou was thrown to the ground using a shoulder throw with all his power!

「...Gueeee!」

「Waahahaha...I'm not someone from here in the first place!」

It seems that the substitute senpai is doing Judo.

Ignoring Endou who fell down...he picked up the bat and goes to the batter's box.

「The coach has already called for a substitution...you should just withdraw!」

The substitute senpai set up his bat.

「Sorry to keep you waiting...!」

The umpire declares 「play」!

The opponent pitcher takes a set position.

The runner is in the second base.

The ball was thrown in quick motion!

...Kakiiin!

The substitute senpai caught the ball in dead center!

「...It's nothing!」

The ball then easily crossed over the center fence

Homerun!

「Guahahahahahaha! This is my real power!!!!」

The substitute senpai runs a lap the diamond while shaking his gigantic figure with his laugh.

「...It seems it has properly worked. Substitute-kun」

Before I noticed...Minaho-neesan has already gone down to us 「That senpai... is he really a student of our school?」

Megu asks Minaho-neesan.

「...Just for today」

...Eh?

「He enrolled just today and he's no longer here tomorrow」

...Does that men?

「...He's actually not a high school student. He's a pro player who belongs on an independent league in Shikoku. Keep it a secret okay...!」

Minaho-neesan laughs.

「It's a practice game so it won't matter...Endou-kun has his nose broken, and we have searched for a person just right for it...!」

These people won't regret using money nor time for their revenge.

「Endou-kun has sent out a lot of thoughtless words in the principal's office before...Ufufu, there's no way he will be spared...!」

Minaho-neesan's having fun.

In the ground...the substitute has stepped on the home base.

The baseball club members all come to meet the substitute senpai.

Endou's still lying down on the ground.

「...Dammit, what the hell, what the hell, what the hell is this!」

Endou screams loudly.

「Endou-kun has been confident with only his baseball since childhood...」

Minaho-neesan says.

Naturally...she has already investigated Endou's details.

「But...It seems he didn't have the intention to improve himself in a team with people better than himself. Endou-kun has it best when he's the king of the hill. Therefore...he has never entered a veteran team」

...Endou.

「Using his father and uncle's connections...it feels like the little league days. Those who have talents and seem to be a player that would become the team's pillar would be driven out by Endou-kun. Doing it that way...once his team loses the game, he'll blame it to another guy. If he does, his pride won't be hurt right?」

...What's with this small human?

「It is the same during middle school...He won't go to prestigious school with a baseball club with achievements. He won't stand out there...and he feels scared that someone will beat his skills. Therefore he goes to a school without strong baseball team on purpose. Then...Endou will buy-out the baseball club as a one-man team. Of course, he chose this school for the same reason...the supervisor, the coach, and his seniors can be bought with quite the money it seems」

Doing that far...he can be bossy in the baseball club.

「Even on this case...he directed the supervisor to apply for a practice match with a school where their baseball is weak. He intends to take an active part in this game and solidify his position with the third year high school baseball club...」

She was beaten down by Margo-san...

His chance to be on his batter box...was stolen by the substitute senpai.

This perfect timing of sending Endou to pinch-hit...must've been instructed by Minaho-neesan to Geropa-kouchou and the supervisor beforehand.

And...the substitute took the homerun without fail.

The present hero is the substitute senpai.

Endou's plan was torn off completely.

「Now then...how would he respond from receiving such disgrace. Don't you think this are the times the men's value decides this...Yukino-san?」

Minaho-neesan tells Yukino but...

Yukino doesn't answer.

She's just looking at Endou who's lying on the ground.

「...What the hell! Dammit! How the hell is this happening!」

Endou stands up slowly.

Endou who was at pinch-hit and is replaced can't go to the game anymore.

He should be just cheering on the game at the bench along with the other first years.

...But.

Endou's pride won't let that happen.

「...I'm going back!」

...Going back?

...On what judgement?

「Coach, I was thrown by that senpai to the ground, I'm returning though my waist hurts. I will tell you about my father so get yourself ready...!」

Endou speaks selfishly...and threatens the supervisor in front of the spectators.

...His idiocy is bottomless.

「I'll tell my father and I'll have you coach and supervisor be replaced on the regular games. I can't play baseball happily with people like you!」

...Amazing.

If Endou quits the baseball club since he can't agree with the situation then I can understand it, but...

He wants to remain in the baseball club and dismiss the coach and supervisor? What happened to him to make him this arrogant...?!

Endou dusts off his uniform filled with dirt...

Then he looked at us.

「...Hey, Yukino! We're going back!!」

Endou...is disgracing himself in front of the spectators...!

His actions is done to protect his pride...he threatened the supervisor.

Then...He orders Yukino.

He must've wanted to make a cool exit along with Yukino.

「...I will send you to your house!」

Yukino who's being ordered arrogantly by Endou...

...doesn't answer.

She's just staring at Endou.

「...Now then, it's about time we go?」

Minaho-neesan tells us.

「You're right...Misuzu still has her practice this evening. If I don't hurry, I will lose my time to be embraced by Danna-sama!」

「I had my fill last night so it's okay to have Misuzu-san be the center」

Misuzu and Megu speaks in a way Yukino can hear them.

「Misuzu...wants to be embraced by Danna-sama along with Megumi-san. We haven't done it with the three of us yet...!」

「...Are you okay with that?」

「Misuzu loves Megumi-san...I wanted to do it together all this time. The three of us having sex」

「Me too...I want to do it together with Misuzu-san」

「Is that okay...Danna-sama, the three of us...!」

Misuzu looks at me with suspicious eyes.

「Oh...sure」

To be honest...I wanted to do it too.

Misuzu is formerly Nagisa's pet so she has experience in lesbian plays.

I think I want to jump in while Misuzu and Megu twine with each other.

「Then get inside the car...let's move to a location where you can have sex」

Minaho-neesan tells us

「Yes...Minaho-san」

「Michi...Let's go」

「Yes...Misuzu-sama」

「...Danna-sama too」

「...Ah, sure」

We try to climb up the slope.

...Then.

Yukino turned to us.

「...W-Wait!」

Yukino looks like she's slightly aroused.

「T-Take me too...!」

Yukino looks up at us with moist eyes.

「...What do you mean by taking you?」

Misuzu looks down at Yukino and smiled.

「There's no way Yukino-san intends to say that she wants to be embraced by Danna-sama as well?」

...Yukino.

Is trembling...

But, she looks up at Misuzu and said...

「That's right...I want to be violated! I want to be violated by that man!」

It's not『I want to have sex』...

Yukino says 『I want to be violated』.

That is Yukino's pride...

Or is she completely addicted to be raped forcibly by man...

「...Then, there should be something you should to first I think」

Misuzu said.

「Your boyfriend is looking at you」

Yukino turned around.

Endou from the ground is looking at us with a horrible look.

「Don't talk to those kind of people! Just come over here already! Yukino!!!」

...Yukino.

...Endou said.

「I'm breaking up with you!!!!!!」

Voices 「Ooooooh!!」comes out from the baseball club members!

「...Break uuuuup?」

Blood is rising on Endou's head!

「Don't fucking joke with me, youuuuuuu!!!」

For Endou, those are words that he cannot accept...

If he breaks up with Yukino...

That would be because of Endou's will in the end...

The possibility of Yukino breaking up with him...

Is unimaginable inside Endou's head.

「...I won't accept that! I won't accept thaaaat!!」

Laughter comes from the baseball club members and spectators.
That is how funny Endou's state is.
He can only be seen as a helpless fool.

「That's so uncool! Disgraceful...! There's no way I would be dating a useless man like you! You should just die! Don't talk to me ever again...!!!」

Yukino shouted and then turned to us.

「...You're satisfied with that?!」

...Her eyes are wet.
...It's not sadness.
...Nor it's not painful
wShe feels proud...aroused!

Yukino is feeling aroused as she dumps her『Lover』in front of multiple people.

「Take me!!!!」

Yukino is in intense sexual excitement!!!

「...Yukino-san, isn't your pussy dripping wet right now?」

Minaho-neesan asked maliciously.,

「Yes that's right... I'm wet! What's wrong with that?!」

Yukino's already taking a defiant attitude.

「...You wanted to be violated by Yoshida-kun that much?」

Yukino looks up at me.

「I-It's not that I'm okay with that man...!」

...Yukino

「Is that so?...Then you can just do compensated dating on the town」

Minaho-neesan gives her parting remark and turned her back to Yukino.

「...W-Wait!」

Yukino calls out to Minaho-neesan's back.

「Anyone's fine for Yukino-san, right?」

Minaho-neesan looks down at Yukino with cold eyes.
...Yukino.

「...That man will do」

「...What? I can't hear your voice...!」

「...That man...will do!」

Yukino wants me...?

「Then...is there a proper way to ask for it?」

Minaho-neesan laughs.

「P-Please. Please take me with you...!」

Yukino bows her head.

Perhaps, the hot liquid drips from her crotch again.

「...Come, Yukino-san」

Minaho-neesan tells Yukino

Yukino run towards us with a happy face.

She climbs up the slope...

「Hey...Yukino, where are you going!」

Endou barks from the distance.

「Don't fuck with meeeeeee! I'll never...never allow thiiiiiiiiis...!!!!」

Endou who's been dumped by his girlfriend is being watched by the baseball club members and spectators grinning.

This looks like Endou's a clown.

「Every last one of you...I'll never forgive you!!!!」

Nobody's playing along with the idiot's bullshit anymore.

「...Be quiet you bastard!!!」

The screaming Endou was thrown to the ground by the substitute senpai again.

「Now...get in the car」

Following Minaho-neesan's instructions, we entered the car.
Minaho-neesan on the driver's seat.
Passenger seat...Misuzu's guard, Kudou-chan.
Second row of the three row seat...Yukino
Megu, Misuzu and I seat on the third row.

「..... ! ! ! 」

Yukino's aroused...
She's sending glances towards us from time to time.
...Seriously.
Minaho-neesan's plan was 『If Shirasaka house continues to attack, we'll kidnap Yukino』
...And yet
Yukino who's planned to be kidnapped rides to our car by her own will.

「...Now, should we go?」

Then...the car begins to accelerate.
Endou in the ground looks at our car.
He's screaming something again.
And...the substitute senpai constricted him...



「You have been masturbating since yesterday, haven't you?」
Minaho-neesan asks Yukino.
「...Eh?」
Yukino's surprised.
「You do know my investigation power don't you?...I know everything you have done yesterday」
Minaho-neesan speaks through the mirror.
「...How many times have you done it?」
「I didn't count it」
Yukino looks down.

「Then let me teach you...You have been masturbating 15 times since yesterday. You didn't do anything for the whole day but masturbate, did you?」

Yukino's face dyed red.

「T-Then...what are you trying to say?」

Minaho-neesan laughs.

「What were you imagining when you were masturbating? Being violated by Yoshida-kun? Or could it be that you remember the time when a lot of women made a mess out of you?」

「I don't want to say it」

Yukino grips the hem of her uniform.

「If you won't say it we'll go back on the ground. We'll drop you off the car in front of Endou-kun...!」

Minaho-neesan...won't allow it.

Yukino's still hesitating to speaking.

「...Then, let me change the question. Did Yoshida-kun come in your imagination when you were masturbating yesterday?...Answer at least that much」

...Yukino

「...He did」

「As expected...You imagined being violated by Yoshida-kun, weren't you pleased?」

Minaho-neesan speaks like making fun of her...

「By the way...what about Endou-kun?」

She makes a follow up question.

「Did Endou-kun ever come in your imagination?」

Yukino answered.

「...He didn't」

...Yukino

「Was that just for yesterday? Or...even before?」

Yukino answers.

「Before I was violated by that man...I masturbate thinking of Endou-kun embracing me」

「...And what about after you lost your virginity?」

「...It has always been that man. I wasn't able to imagine being embraced by a normal guy...」

「Nothing comes to your head but rape, is that correct?」

「...Isn't this all your fault? You made my body like this!」

「I think being lewd is your original constitution however」

Minaho-neesan adds further.

「Usually...when you're raped by a man, you would become androphobic. It happened to me...and a lot of other women. There's not much girls like Yukino-san who feels happy when being violated...!」

Minaho-neesan's words made Yukino look down again.

「...I don't care even if you call me a lascivious one」

Yukino mutters.

「That's what my body is...it can't be helped...!」

After losing her virginity...she has been raped violently, repeatedly...
Her body was made to experience fresh stimulation one after another...
...She was given a rest just yesterday.

Yukino has fallen.

She has accepted being violated by me.

「This thing won't happen normally...」

Minaho-neesan said.

「In the end...It was because Yoshida-kun embraces Yukino-san with violent tenacity...and he didn't abandon Yukino-san...!」

...Me?

「This is a strange story but...Yukino-san feels 『trust』 to her rapist.

Being『raped by Yoshida-kun』has become a normal sensation I guess?」

「I was violated by that man multiple times after all」

Yukino mutters.

「...I'm used to it already」

...But.

With the numbers piled up...

The connection between Yukin and I...is 『rape』

Our body relationship will never be 『sex』with love.

Attack, steal, completely violate...nothing but 『rape』

「...But, Yukino-san is okay with 『rape』, am I wrong? You wanted to be violated by Yoshida-kun, don't you?」

Is what Minaho-neesan said...Yukino

「...I'm fine with 『rape』 No...I prefer 『rape』」

Yukino looks at me.

「My pride won't allow me be embraced by this man other than 『rape』...!」

Those eyes have no love.

It's just overflowing with desire.

That's is our relationship.

「...By the way, where are we going?」

Misuzu asks Minaho-neesan.

「We have already passed the mansion though...」

Misuzu doesn't know we take shelter in the school instead of the mansion.
But...

Where are we really going?

「...You'll know soon」

Minaho-neesan's eyes in the mirror are laughing...

◇ Infiltration Arc

Chapter 150 : Final secret– Eternal

「...Danna-samaaa!」

Misuzu leans her body towards me.

「...Yoshi-kun!」

Megu holds my hand.

On the backmost seat of the van Minaho-neesan is driving...

I'm being sandwiched by the approach of two beautiful girls...!

Yukino sends a look this way from time to time...

I ignore that for now.

Her eyes looks scary...

「...You can touch Misuzu's breasts or everywhere else」

「...Touch Megu's legs!」

The two of them whispers to my ear...

「...Everyone's watching」

When I muttered that...Minaho-neesan...

「I don't mind even if you three flirt...!」

No...Even if it's good for Minaho-neesan...

Yukino and Kudou-chan is in the car too...

Especially...flirting in front of a middle school girl...

「You don't have to mind about Michi okay...!」

...Misuzu?

「I have already told Michi that Danna-sama is someone important to Misuzu.
Isn't that right...Michi?」

The petite girl sitting on the passenger seat turned towards us...

「Yes...I am Misuzu-sama's guard...therefore I will be guarding Misuzu-sama while she enjoy time with her beloved」

「Then that means that you're going to stay by her side and watch even if we're having sex?」

Kudou-chan answered with a serious face.

「...Of course!」

...S-Seriously.

「But...Kudou-chan, that...do you know what sex is?」

This girl looks like a sheltered daughter...

It's possible that she doesn't understand things like sex or something...

Basically a slightly off-point kind of girl.

That part of her is cute though...

「Sex is...that's namely a『copulation』of a male and female, right?」

...Copulation?

「...Copulation...fornication...secret affair...that is what it means on ancient Japanese language isn't it?」¹

Kudou-chan stares at my eyes.

...Ancient Japanese language it is?

「Yes...You're right」

I answered.

「I know the theory about the intersection of a man and a woman」

T-Theory.

「I am a top placer on all of my subjects in the school year」

W-Why?

...Why can having good grades result in knowing about the theory of sex...?!

「I've memorized the textbook about human's sexual nature...!!」

...S-Sex education.

...Health and physical education textbooks in middle school.

It's not the level you will reach that from starting there...!

「It's when a man's secondary sex characteristic produces semen inside his body, right?」

「...Yes」

「Then...if the semen is saved up inside the body more than three days...it explodes, or so I heard」

「...Explode?...What is?」

「...Of course, the man's article!!」

A-Article?

「...Also known as penis」

Kudou-chan looks at me with a serious face...

...Err

...How should I answer her in this case?

「Danna-sama...Michi is talking about men's wet dream」

W-Wet dream?

「Ah...right if it's saved up for a while it would be released but...it doesn't explode」

Kudou-chan's eyes opened wide in surprise...!

「Eh...I've heard that it explodes! It flies away like a popcorn...!」

「Where did you hear that from?」

I tried to ask just in case.

「Suenaga-san, a friend in school...!」

...Yup.

Kudou-chan's school is the same as Misuzu...it's a super ojou-sama school being fought as one or two in Japan...

I'm sure all of them are not accustomed to men.

Everyone would believe such a strange joke even if it's strange...

「Err...It doesn't explode. It does spout out...something like spilling out...」

「What...!?」

Kudou-chan's surprised.

「Michi...Then, should I show you the moment Danna-sama ejaculates later?」

M-Misuzu?

「Misuzu-sama...would that be okay?」

「It'll be a lesson for Michi...isn't that fine, Danna-sama?」

Misuzu smiles at me.

「Misuzu will show all of her sex...therefore observe the wonderful time when a man and a woman love each other to your heart's content」

「Yes...Thank you very much!」

...H-hey hey

「...Misuzu, are you sure?」

Misuzu whispers to my ears...

「Michi is my pet...!」

...Eh?

「It is on the form of me borrowing her from Grandfather right now...But Misuzu doesn't intend to return her」

...That means?

「I'll make this girl my 『Little sister』...!」

Misuzu smiles.

「If Danna-sama wishes for it...please give Michi love as well. It doesn't need to be done right now. Misuzu wants this girl to be by my side forever...」

Misuzu looks at Kudou-chan.

「Misuzu has to establish her firm position in the Kouzuki house. Misuzu will be needing a lot of people she can trust. Michi and I know each other since childhood...」

You'll make Kudou-chan your own brain trust?

「...Misuzu-san. I will do anything to help Misuzu-san」

Megu talks to Misuzu when she heard the whispers from the side.

「Thank you very much. But...Megumi-san is my 『Little sister』that is loved the same by Danna-sama. I want to be in an equal relationship」

Misuzu smiles at Megu.

Yesterday's 『Sister's association』is still healthy inside Misuzu.

No...That was just one of Minaho-neesan's plan to make Mana feel relieved... After that, they won't mind if the 『sister's association』continues for real.

「Misuzu will never use Megumi-san as a 『subordinate』...and Michi too...」

Misuzu looks at Kudou-chan...

「She's not my vassal...but please think of her as Misuzu's 『Little sister』...!」

In short...

She'll be my 『woman』?

This petite...cute girl.

「Err...can I think about it?」

I answered.

She's a school year older than Mana but...I see Kudou-chan as the younger one.

Even her chest is tsurupeta(Washboard)...

Having sex with such a small girl like her...

...Is a bit 「Yes. There is no need to hurry...Michi will surely become an amazingly beautiful woman in a few years」

Misuzu smiles.

「Michi's mother and sister are really beautiful...!」

Yeah...I can really feel that she'll be a beauty in the future...

Right now...she's a cute chibi.

「...In my case, I don't want to force her to have sex. It'll only be on the case Kudou-chan wishes for it...If not, I won't embrace her」

I warned Misuzu.

「Yes...understood」

Misuzu smiles.

「Danna-sama is also thinking of Michi as important」

That's not what my intention is however.

A child ignorant of knowledge when it comes to sex...I feel bad fooling her with just clever words.

...Or rather.

Kudou-chan's the type of beauty that's too cute 『I want to protect』...

...Also 「...Hey, Kudou-chan」

I talk to her.

「Yes, what is it?」

Kudou-chan, turned to me.

「Uhm...I think you have heard about this from Misuzu already, but...」

I said something that's hard to say.

「I love Misuzu, we have a sexual relationship. But, I have others...I love Megumi and have sex with her too...and I have multiple of those people」

Yukino stares at me.

Her eyes say「Why are you not saying my name?」

Well...Yukino is.

She doesn't love me...I also don't feel love towards Yukino.

Our relationship is just carnal...violated and the violator...

...We don't have our hearts connected.

I always think of the possibility that Yukino will betray me...

Even Yukino doesn't trust me at all.

Yukino is just drowning herself in the pleasure of abnormal sex...

She doesn't have any partner in sex but me so she rode this car.

Even that is just to protect her pride.

She doesn't want the other people to know the feeling of being violated by me, therefore...Yukino can't hunt men in the town to release her own sexual desire.

Therefore...She will come to me to be surely violated.

The other one is the tattoo on her abdomen.

As a daughter of Shirasaka family, she can't show the 『吉田』tattoo to someone else.

Therefore...Yukino can't have sex with anyone but me for now.

That is her reason...

There is no love nor friendship in it.

It is only desire.

Her body that was continuously violated has awakened Yukino's 『lewd blood』

「Anyway...I'm have relationship with a lot of women, a dirty man...a human that should be scorned by a girl like Kudou-chan...」

I talk honestly.

Kudou-chan is an orderly girl so I thought that I have to talk to her properly.

I'm fine if she hates me as a result.

Kudou-chan is Misuzu's guard...Misuzu will have her on her side for all the time so I thought of telling her.

She's a girl I'll be with for all the time so I thought I should be honest.

「...Yoshida-sama, is a very honest gentleman」

Kudou-chan said.

「...Eh?」

「Kudou house, father has always been a guard of Kouzuki-sama...I know the upper-class men's sex life and relationships are」

...What?

「Kouzuki-sama has a lot of mistresses other than her wife. I've heard that there are gentlemen among the clan that changes partner every night. 『Upper class men's sex life has a lot of special cases so take care』...Is what my father have strictly instructed. Therefore I do not mind it...no matter what fetish you have!」

...Err

「...Uhm, it's not that I'm someone from the upper class though」

Rather...I'm the lower class.

If you ask me, I think it's on the lowest area.

「...Such modesty」

Kudou-chan said.

「Yoshida-sama, the house you were born into doesn't matter...Being loved by

Misuzu-sama puts your legs walking in the upper class...」

...Eh?!

「...Yoshida-sama...you are prepared to love Misuzu-sama for long after this?」

The small girl's eyes looks through my heart.

「...Yeah, that's my intention」

「Then...doesn't Yoshida-sama need to ready himself living among the upper class...?」

...This chibi.

...She knows Kouzuki house much more than me.

I see...Loving Misuzu means...

Shouldering Misuzu's Kouzuki『Blood』as well.

「Yeah...you're right」

I steel myself.

「I will do anything for Misuzu's sake. I'll support her whatever happens」

「...Danna-sama」

Misuzu snuggles to me.

「...Thank you very much」

「I don't understand the upper-class that well...I know that someone like me isn't suitable for that kind of world but...I want to help Misuzu」

Misuzu looks at me.

「...You'll always be with Misuzu, will you not?」

...I

「...Isn't that obvious? I don't intend to break up with Misuzu...Never」

Therefore...I have to make Kouzuki『Kakka』accept my relationship with Misuzu.

No matter what...

「Ooh...Danna-sama!」

Misuzu kisses my hand.

「...I love you, Danna-sama」

I kiss Misuzu's hand too.

I smiled and Misuzu returned a smile back.

Kudou-chan looks at our state and nodded.

「You really are an honest person...」

...Is that so?

I myself don't know.

「I know Misuzu-sama since I was a child. Just as my elder sister who is Ruriko-sama's guard being together constantly...I will be appointed as Misuzu-sama's guard someday, therefore I've kept training repeatedly」

Ruriko-san is Misuzu's cousin.

Kouzuki『Kakka's』eldest son's daughter.

Misuzu is 『Kakka's』second son's child.

Perhaps, the head of Kouzuki house in the future will be Ruriko-san, her marriage partner...

Therefore, Ruriko-san is already being guarded by Kudou-chan's sister.

If it's a girl on a close age...she can guard in school and other familiar places.

「Misuzu-sama has always been bad at dealing with men. Rather, I thought that she likes women more」

Kudou-chan said.

「In fact...when I suddenly heard her talking about a man she likes...I was surprised. Truly surprised. Furthermore, when I heard that he has other lovers...I held some doubt」

...Doubt?

「I am Misuzu-sama's guard therefore...I thought of burying Yoshida-sama in the darkness if he's not suitable for Misuzu-sama...」

...Bury in the darkness?

「I was prepared to use my final secret『Eternal Force Blizzard』...」

...Err

「Eternal what...?」

「『Eternal Force Blizzard』!」

「Let me ask you just in case...what technique is that?」

Kudou-chan answered seriously.

「First...I'll lure out the person to eliminate」

「...Where?」

「...The refrigerated storage in the port」

...R-Refrigerated storage?

「And...confine them for two weeks」

「...Y-Yeah?」

「...The confined enemy will definitely die...!!!」

...Well

...They'll die of course.

...Definitely.

But...

Where's the martial arts there...?!

「My father had told me that during Edo Period, they seem to be confined on an ice cave in Mt. Fuji」

...No

Kudou-chan...I think your father's lying to you...

「H-How do you take them to Mt. Fuji?」

I asked just in case.

「Palanquin...!」

...Palanquin?

「Yes, it's in Edo period...!」

I see...palanquin.

「It'll arrive at the foot of Mt. Fuji in two days with a fast palanquin...」

...Two days.

「If it was in Meiji era, it'll become a rickshaw...!」

She even go as far as using a Palanquin or a Rickshaw to lock them on Mt. Fuji...

They would freeze in two weeks...

「...Is there something strange in what I have mentioned?」

「...No, nothing 」

「Even now going to the foot of Mt. Fuji is a coming of age skill of Kudou style, humans confined in there seems to be pierced by ice pickles」

「...While freezing」

「Yes...It's 『Eternal』after all」

...I see

...What the hell is that!!!!

「Then...what kind of person Danna-sama is after seeing it with Michi's eyes?」

Feeling irritated that the talk doesn't continue, Misuzu intervenes.

「Yes...as far as I have seen from his behavior...I can see Yoshida-sama as a decent gentleman. He does looks like he treasures Misuzu-sama...」

「That's right, he loves me very dearly」

Misuzu answered in satisfaction.

「Rather than that, what feels very mysterious to me is that...Yamamine-sama who should originally be Misuzu-sama's love rival is getting along with Misuzu-sama very well...!」

「...Rival? Me?」

Megu shows a surprised face.

「Speaking of which...that's not how it should normally be」

Misuzu smiles at Megu.

「I was embraced by Yoshi-kun after I saw him and Misuzu-san made love...so I understand Yoshi-kun and Misuzu-san's relationship very well...」

「Misuzu too...It's me who suggested that Danna-sama should have sex with Megumi-san...I have accepted Megumi-san since the start」

「...Am I being a hindrance to Misuzu-san?」

「What are you saying...Megumi-san is the lawful wife of danna-sama. Misuzu

doesn't mind to be taken out of pity...!」

「No way...I'm fine being just a 『Lawful wife』as pretext. I know that Misuzu-san's is much suited to be Yoshi-kun's wife essentially. Misuzu-san is much more intelligent, much kinder, much more elegant than me...!」

...Err

...Uhm

...Girls

「...I think you should stop being modest on each other soon」

Minaho-neesan who's been listening all this time speaks up happily.

「If you keep belittling yourself...Yoshida-kun will be monopolized by Katsuko and Nagisa. Nei's there too...!」

Surprised...Misuzu and Megu look at each other's face.

「That's right...」

「Yeah...that's right...」

「While we're giving and taking the position of 『Lawful wife』...The ladies will take away Danna-sama」

「They have given us the chance of 『enjoying the high school life』for now however...」

「...The ladies are powerful」

The two of them let out w sigh.

「You see Kudou-san...Yoshida-kun has the thee power to attract peculiar women. His charm might not be working on normal girls.² But...the charmed girls can't separate themselves with him anymore. It's not that Yoshida-kun is the one seducing the girls greedily」

Minaho-neesan told Kudou-chan.

「I do get that. Yoshida-sama has a strange performance that makes women like him」

Kudou-chan said.

「You're right...Yoshi-kun never speaks flattery on the girl's surface」

「Danna-sama never boasts about himself!」

「Eh...Boast?」

I understand that them saying I'm being liked by girls is just a flattery but...
Why do I have to boast myself?

「It's often said that men always makes strange boasts as "Take a good look at me"」

Misuzu told me.

「Look...Endou-kun is always talking loudly in the classroom right?」

When Megu gave an example, I understood it.
He was talking to the girls in the class.

I was sure that Endou would die if he doesn't talk boasting himself...

「Or rather...Danna-sama's always been quiet, isn't he?」

...Eh?

「Yeah...He must be thinking a lot inside his head but Yoshi-kun only says what he needs to say」

...Right

I never noticed it myself.

「You're right...Yoshida-kun won't say anything unnecessary, I like that」

Even Minaho-neesan says that.

「Therefore...Whenever Yoshida-kun asks questions, you know that he seriously want to know, I think you have to explain it properly」

「T-Thanks」

I don't get it but...

Anyway, I said my thanks 「Idiot...we're not forcing ourselves to praise you」

Minaho-neesan laughs.

「Danna-sama's really an honest one, I love how he never tells a lie...!」

「Yeah...Whenever Yoshi-kun says 『I like you』, you'll know that he seriously think that he does from the bottom of his heart...it makes me happy. It warms up my heart」

「Even when in sex...I can feel him wanting me from the bottom of his heart...」

「Yeah...It feels you're really being 『loved』...!」

「It makes you feel very happy from the bottom of your heart...being worn as a woman...as Danna-sama's 『woman』...!」

The middle school girl is seriously listening to the talk of the two high school girls from the passenger seat.

Her eyes are sparkling...!

「...Are you people idiots?!」

Yukino breaks that sweet atmosphere.

「This man is a liar...you do know how much he has deceived and how much horrible experiences he has given me?」

...That's right.

I deceived Yukino and raped her.

Again and again...

「That person is the worst kind of scum!」

Yukino glares at me with intense eyes.

An expression of contempt.

...Then.

Misuzu and Megu are laughing...?!

Minaho-neesan's laughing out loud.

Kudou-chan's surprised like a kitten.

「W-What's funny!?!!!」

Yukino shouts!

「Yukino-san...do you know what it means when I say Danna-sama is 『honest and doesn't lie』?」

Misuzu said.

「...W-What do you mean?」

Megu laughs.

「You see...everything that Yoshi-kun thinks shows in his face. He can't keep a single secret. Therefore, you'll immediately know it if he lies」

「...Right, isn't he very honest?」

「He also lied to me once...When I asked him about the wound Endou-kun had given him, he answered 『I fell on the stairs』 But...I immediately knew it was a lie. That's the kind of face he's making. Furthermore...it's 『I said a lie, I'm sorry』 while making a crying face」

That also happened, right.

「That face was very cute...Thinking about it right now, I think that's the time I got interested in Yoshi-kun」

Megu said.

「Misuzu thinks he has never lied to her even once. Just... Danna-sama is keeping things that is hard to say inside his heart. But, at those times...He's making a 『I'm sorry for not saying it』just as Megumi-san has said. That face is very cute. It makes Misuzu's heart go tight!」

Am I just an uncontained leak?

「Therefore...being deceived by Yoshi-kun?...Yukino is just lacking in caution, could it be that you didn't take a proper look at Yoshi-kun's face?」

「Misuzu thinks the same...Yukino-san, are you lacking in observation power when it comes to people?」

When the two points it out...Yukino.

「W-What! Are you saying that it's my fault!!!」

...Minaho-neesan raised out a loud laugh.

「...Well, isn't that okay Yukino-san? It's about time we reach our destination」

Hearing that...Yukino look at the scenery outside the window and got startled.

「...Here?!」

...Yup.

I do remember this road.

This is close to Yukino's house.

「That's right...We're going to your house...!」

Yukino's expression turned horrified.

「...N-No way」

「It's okay...your maid isn't supposed to come today. Your mother is out at work right?」

Yukino doesn't know that her own mother has come to the principal's office of our high school.

She should be with old man Ichikawa right now.

It's impossible for her to come back to Yukino's house.

「But...my little sister is in the house」

Yukino shouts

「My...Didn't your little sister stay out home last night...?!」

Minaho-neesan speaks to Yukino in a state that's thoroughly investigating. Yukino fell silent.

「Anyway...we'll be going to your house」

Minaho-neesan's eyes are smiling inside the mirror.

「...By the way, Misuzu-sama」

Kudou-chan asks Misuzu.

「What is it Michi?」

「...I've been curious about, but」

Kudou-chan looks at Yukino.

「Is this one our enemy? Or ally?」

...Oh right.

We didn't explain about Yukino to Kudou-chan at all.

「...Enemy」

Misuzu answered lightly.

「Ah...as expected」

Kudou-chan glares at Yukino.

「She's an enemy so she'll experience rape and all the sufferings but, Kudou-chan shouldn't go easy on her」

Minaho-neesan said.

「...Roger!」

Yukino shivers when Kudou-chan has said that.

「W-What's with that?!」

.....I

「No way...Yukino, could it be that you don't get it at all?」

...That's right, Yukino is Mana's sister.

If I recall Mana yesterday...

Mana...didn't noticed that she's a subject of revenge...

『It's obvious that everyone's kind to me』she misunderstands...

Getting conceited in front of everyone, she kept her selfish speech...

As a result...she has 『kneeled naked』this morning.

「You...rode on an『enemy's』car」

Misuzu only asked Yukino. 『We're going to have sex after this, what will you do, Yukino-san?』

Only『What will you do?』...

She doesn't speak any 『invitations』like 『Yukino-san, want to have sex together with us?』or『Should we have fun together?』

Megu didn't invite Yukino.

It was only Yukino who said 『Take me with you』or『I want to be violated』...

Minaho-neesan has only answered 『Come』to Yukino-san...

She didn't say anything about『making her an ally』

「...Is there anyone here who's a friend of Yukino-san?」

Minaho-neesan...speaks to everyone in the car.

...No one responded.

Yukino's face has distorted in fear.

「...Yukino-san, you really have changed」

Minaho-neesan has said.

「It's my first time seeing a child who wants to be 『abducted』by her enemies」

That's right...

Yukino is 『abducted』right now.

By the criminal organization...『Kuromori』

「Now, Yukino-san. You're going to suffer again but you don't mind it do you?
This time, you followed us by your own wishes...!」

Minaho-neesan's revenge still continues...!!!!

Chapter 151: Parting

Before long... the car arrived at Yukino's house.
It's a three story house in a high-class residential area.
White walls and blue roof...is the first floor a garage?
The second floor terrace is wide, it looks like a garden.
It's quite a mansion...
As expected of a director of a top advertising agency...

「...There doesn't seem to be any chasing cars」

Minaho-neesan has said

「If ever that was the case, I changed the route three times...repeated left turns too」

「...Repeated left turns?」

「What will happen if you turn left four times on a close spot?」

Minaho-neesan smiles at me through the mirror.

Err...

Turn left, turn left, turn left, turn left...

「...We're just going back to the same place?」

「That's how it is...and if there's still a same car coming after us, you should consider that someone's coming after you right?」

...I see

So you can confirm it like that.

「AH...It seems that they noticed us」

When our car has approached...

...Gigigigigigigigigi!!

The iron door of Yukino's house has opened automatically.

「...Eh, why?」

Yukino's surprised.

「There should be no one in the house right now...!」

Minaho-neesan laughs.

「...That's not necessarily true」

I already have guessed who it is.

「Now...Shall we enter Yukino-san's house?」

Minaho-neesan enters the car in the garage.

The garage is wide that it can fit five cars in it.

The Benz inside must be Shirasaka Sousuke's.

...Next to it

...As expected.

One car is parked there.

...Blue minivan.

That was the car Katsuko-nee was driving a while ago.

Mana should be inside that car.

In short...Mana used her key to open the house.

Perhaps it's also her who operates the garage...

...Gigigigigigigi!

...The iron door of the garage closes once again.

After confirming that it's completely closed...Minaho-neesan speaks out.

「...Everyone, get off」

I confirm that Yukino can't run away.

No...Kudou-chan has already gone ahead and stare at her.

「I won't let the enemy escape!」

The petite middle school beautiful girl looks up and says that to a high school girl, it looks funny, but...

Yukino has seen Kudou-chan's martial arts and knows .

It would be a problem if the 『Victory Hammer』or the 『Jupiter Thunderbolt』 would be taken out again so...she follows quietly.

「...Yukino-san, where's the entrance?」

Minaho-neesan asks Yukino happily.

「On top of the stairs there」

As expected...the front door is on the second floor.

「Is that so...please guide us」

Minaho-neesan orders Yukino.

「...I get it...I should just go there shouldn't I?!」

Yukino takes the initiative and leads the way.

After climbing a ten step stair...A big door was there.

It's a big door...even a piano can enter here.

Another stone staircase continues from the garage to outside the house.

Yukino tries to take out the key to her house from her uniform.

...But.

At that moment...the lock from the house clicked and unlocks.

「...Eh?」

Yukino looks frightened.

「...Open the door」

Minaho-neesan said.

Yukino turns to Minaho-neesan.

「What are you planning?」her eyes say.

「...Hurry up already!」

Minaho-neesan urges her...

Yukino opens the big door...

...Gachan!

The door opens to the outside.

...Inside the house.

Mana on her bunny girl suit is standing...

「...Welcome home, everyone」¹

Mana bows deeply to us.

Yup...Middle school girls in bunny suit looks good.

The bunny suit makes Mana's growing body line emerge clearly.

Unlike Kudou-chan who's a washboard, Mana's plump and her breast is swelling...

The subtle budging is indescribably great.

Also...Her legs are long and the proportion of her body was originally good.

「Maika...W-What are you wearing!」

Yukino speaks out her complaint to her sister's obscene appearance instinctively.

However...Mana ignores Yukino completely.

Mana goes to the stone where you take off the shoes from the entrance.

The entrance on Yukino's house is wide that it has a wider space to take off your shoes than ordinary houses.

「...Kouzuki-sama」

Mana puts her hand on that floor and kneels in front of Misuzu.

「...M-Maika...W-What's going on with you?」

Yukino's surprise isn't odd at all.

Her own sister greets us on her bunny costume and suddenly kneels in front of Misuzu.

「...I've been extremely impolite yesterday. I'm very sorry. From now on, I intend to be reborn with my body and soul and all my best...please forgive me...!」

Misuzu smiled at Mana.

「Okay...Misuzu is fine as long as you understand...!」

Misuzu turned to Megu.

She smiled happily.

「You properly disciplined her...well done, Megumi-san!」

Megu...

「Yoshi-kun and I did our best. Minaho-san and Tamayo-san has given us a lot of advice too...Katsuko-san and Nagisa-san has helped us as well」

...Hmm.

It has been a lot of trouble since last night until morning.
Speaking of which, where is Katsuko-nee?

「...What is going on with you, Maika?!」

Yukino demands an explanation from her sister.
Mana doesn't answer.
She's kneeling and looking up at Misuzu...ignoring Yukino.

「...Do you mind introducing the person I meet for the first time?」

Oh...Kudou-chan?
Kudou-chan's wearing the same uniform as Misuzu...
To be accurate, Misuzu's on the high school and Kudou-chan is on the middle school...the details on the uniform are slightly different...
But still, you can clearly see that she's someone Misuzu brought in.

「I do not...This girl is Kudou Michi. She's Misuzu's guard」

Kudou-chan comes in front.
「Kudou style old martial arts...Kudou Michi. Instructed by Kouzuki-sama, I'm here to guard Misuzu-sama...!」

Kudou-chan bows dignified to Mana.
Yup...She's really a warrior.
All of her actions are sharp...
Mana bows down to Kudou-chan while still kneeling.

「I'm Yoshida Mana...I've been made as Onii-chan's『slave』 I became a 『slave』 recently so I still don't know the ropes. But, I want to serve as a 『slave』with all my heart. My best regards...!」

The warrior girl's eyes turned round...

「...『Slave』is it?」

Misuzu laughs.
「That's right...She has become Danna-sama's 『slave』」
Kudou-chan looks at me.
U-Un.

Certainly, it's a problem in various meanings.

「...I became a 『Slave』on my own will!」

Mana tells Kudou-chan...

「I...had an ugly heart...a bad girl. Therefore, I decided to start over again as Onii-chan's 『slave』...!」

Mana looks up at me while her hands are still on the floor.

「...It is what she has wished for so there's no helping it, is there?」

Misuzu tells Kudou-chan laughingly.

「Are you okay...being a 『slave』?」

Kudou-chan asks Mana.

「Yes...If I don't fall to a 『slave』, a girl with a bad personality like me cannot start over」

Mana says.

「Kudou-san too, please treat me as a 『slave』. I'm a foolish girl who gets conceited when people gets nice to her after all...」

...Mana.

「She'll be Danna-sama's 『slave』in the end...You can't give her selfish orders just because she's a 『slave』...!」

Misuzu smiles at Kudou-chan.

「Yes...Mana is Onii-chan's 『Little sister slave』and 『sex slave』...!」

The middle school girl in her bunny suit speaks with her cheeks blushing.

「...M-Maika! Just what happened to you!!」

Yukino who turned speechless from the overwhelming change of her sister... shouts at Mana.

Mana speaks coldly to her sister yelling aloud.

「Please be quiet...Yukino-san」

Mana calls her real sister『Yukino-san』.

「...I have been living with Yukino-san for a long time but that ends now. Thank you for taking care of me in various ways」

Mana bows to Yukino in a cold manner.

「W-What are you saying...!」

「I am already Onii-chan's 『slave』...therefore I have to live serving Onii-chan everyday」

I noticed three bags put on the entrance.

...I see.

Mana came to pick up her personal items.

She's really determined to get out of her home and live with us.

「Stop this already! This kind of joke isn't funny at all!」

Yukino scolds her little sister.

But...Mana.

「This isn't a joke...Mana will really come out of her house and live with Onii-chan. Goodbye...Yukino-san」

Tears pile up in Mana's eyes.

「...Maika?」

Yukino turned speechless.

「...Shirasaka Maika is no longer here. I'm Yoshida Mana. Therefore...Yukino-san isn't Oneesan anymore...!」

Mana looks up at Megu.

「My Oneesan is only Megu-Oneesan...!」

Hearing that...Yukino got shocked.

「That's right...Mana became my little sister. Don't worry...I will take care of this girl, I won't let her suffer...!」

Megu tells Yukino...

「It's okay to think of Misuzu as your Oneesan too! We're members of 『sister's association』after all!」

Misuzu smiles at Mana.

「...Thank you very much. But, Mana is an inexperienced 『slave』...so I don't think it's good for everyone to treat me as a 『sister』yet. First, I need to be supervised strictly by Megu-oneechan...I want to be able to function as Onii-chan's 『slave』」

...In the end.

Due to the blunder of her grandfather and mother...and his father downfall becoming definite...Mana's thought has changed from the root.

Mana knows that she can no longer continue her current life.

From now on...she has to live relying on me and Minaho-neesan.

No...Mana chose this herself.

Instead of being labeled by Ichikawa-san's house as 『stained』and live bathing in cold eyes...

This 14 year old girl chose and prepared...

To live with me and among 『Kuromori』...

She abandons her home and family.

「Megumi...do you intend to take away my little sister from me?」

Yukino glares at Megu with a frightful look.

「Let's see...that might be the result」

Megu answered calmly.

「But...that is what she chose」

Megu looks at Mana.

「Yes...Mana is the one who asked for it. Yukino-san has nothing to do with this!」

When Mana said that...Yukino!

「...Maika!」

She tries to slap Mana!!

I hold down her hand!

「What are you doing!」

「Don't do anything selfish to my 『slave』!」

「She's my little sister!」

「...Not anymore!!」

Hearing what I said...Yukino trembles in surprise.
Mana looks up at Yukino.

「...If you want to slap me then do it. We're already parting after all...」

She smiled at Yukino sadly.

「A lot have happened...fun, painful...But, Yukino-san」

Yukino begins to tremble.

「You are just『Yukino-san』to me now...I'm someone unrelated to Shirasaka house already...!」

Mana's determination is hard.

「I really thank you for everything. But...I will forget about Yukino-san. I have to live as Onii-chan's 『slave』...as Yoshida Mana from now on. The memory of being Yukino-san's little sister will be an obstacle for me in the future...!」

Yukino cried from what Mana said.

「...Maika no bakaa!」

Mana shook her head slowly...

「...Shirasaka Maika is no longer here. The foolish girl who was born in Shirasaka house and thought that 『I am special』...must be completely erased. Therefore, I am Yoshida Mana...As a human being on the bottom as a 『slave』, I have to redo everything from scratch」

Mana...tries to bury her 『Shirasaka Maika』character...
For that reason...she has to be the reverse of the 『girl born to a wealthy distinguished family』existence.
She's trying to become my 『slave』...

That is Mana's resolution to throw her house away., 「Mana-san...you're free to have sex with Yoshida-kun in Maika's room」

Minaho-neesan tells Mana.

「If you want to break away from『Shirasaka Maika』...This is the last」

...Mana.

「I who have a status of a『slave』...cannot keep Onii-chan for herself...」

Mana looks at Misuzu and Megu.

「Please join the fun in Maika-san's room... I do not mind being last...!」

Misuzu approached Mana who's kneeling on the floor and hold her head kindly.

Mana's head got enveloped in Misuzu's soft chest.

「...Misuzu-san?」

Mana's surprised.

「...You really have become cute. I'm very happy...Mana-san」

Misuzu looks very happy.

「You see...Misuzu and Megumi-san wants Mana-san to become be Danna-sama's doll whenever we can't be with him」

「...Doll?」

「Whenever Danna-sama feels slightly turned on, you'll be a doll that takes the initiative...」

「...Like a toilet」

Mana laughs.

「You're not a toilet...Mana's so cute」

Misuzu pats Mana's cheeks kindly.

「I'm fine being a toilet...Mana is a 『Sex slave』after all. It is as Misuzu-san says...I'll become a woman that will serve Onii-chan immediately whenever he feels it and the others aren't present. Please use me like a toilet and let out a lot of semen inside Mana...Onii-chan!」

Mana looks up at me with moist eyes.

「That's right...Mana-san's job is to make Danna-sama feel good. Spend your daily life thinking about only Danna-sama...!」

「Yes...Misuzu-san」

「...Good girl. Mana」

Misuzu embraces Mana.

「You no longer need Yukino right?」

Megu said.

The stunned Yukino got startled.

「I will take care of Yoshi-kun in the school」

Megu smiles defiantly to Yukino.

「Misuzu too...if I have my time, I will come to meet Danna-sama...!」

Misuzu smiles at Yukino.

「If it's in the house, I'm present!」

Katsuko-nee wearing a suit comes down on the stairs at the side of the entrance.

It seems that she has been on the third floor...

「With this...if Mana-chan takes care of him too, it'll be perfect...」

Katsuko-nee grins...

「Yes...I will do my best to serve as a 『sex』slave」

Minaho-neesan speaks in addition to Mana.

「...My. With this, Yukino-san doesn't seem to be needed anymore, is that right?」

Minaho-neesan laughs.

It's exactly a ridicule.

「Right, Mana-san is here already...You don't need Yukino-san anymore do you?」

Misuzu laughs brightly.

「That's right. Yoshi-kun doesn't need to do someone like Yukino anymore...!」

Megu...rubs her body to me.

...Yukino.

「Y-You people...what did you do to Maika?」

...Err.

「In just one day...she has changed this much...what did you do to Maika?!!!」

Yukino shouts.

...I

「...The same thing that happened to Yukino」

...Yeah, that's right.

Raped...I stole her virginity...

Violating her multiple times at night...It's almost the same as Yukino's first experience night.

「...Experiencing the same thing...she has changed, Yukino-san didn't. That's the only difference」

Minaho-neesan said.

「...Is that so, Maika...have you...been raped...by this man...?!」

Yukino asks her former little sister.

「Yes, I have been raped! After that, Onii-chan has been loving me overnight...!」

「Maika...do you understand what are you saying?!」

...Maika

Has changed her expression.

「...I do. Yukino-san is the one who doesn't know anything...!」

「...What do you mean by that?!」

Yukino doesn't know the current situation with Shirasaka Sousuke and the surroundings of Shirasaka house.

「...Doesn't Yukino-san not know her own standing right now?!」

Mana...speaks harshly to her former older sister.

「...Maika?」

「I'm already on Onii-chan's side. I've become their ally...No, I had to throw everything away to become their ally!」

Mana throws all of her pent up emotions against Yukino!

「Shirasaka house, my name, my pride...unless throw everything and fall into a『slave』...there would be no other way to become an ally of people who are enemies of Shirasaka 『house』!」

That is what Mana learned through the night of regret.

「No...Even now I'm still being tested. They will be accepting me as their ally for the moment...but if I do something that makes them doubt me, these people would cast me away instantly...!」

...Mana?

「That's right...I intended to not forgive you if you called Yukino-san 『Oneechan』even once...!」

Minaho-neesan said with a dark smile.

「Same here...If Mana has said anything rude to Misuzu-san, I planned to slap her without mercy...」

Megu said.

Megu realizes that she must guide as Mana's 『Sister』

「Onii-chan is a straightforward and honest person so...he's easy to fool but...」

Mana looks at me.

Yeah...I think it's easy.

I'm a simple and stupid man after all...

「But...the other people...these people...I can't keep lying to them. Everyone's intelligent and scary people...!」

...Minaho-neesan. Katsuko-nee. Misuzu. Megu.

Yup...they all have good insight and observation skills.

Even those who aren't here...Margo-san and Nei-san...

Even Nagisa, she's soft but she looks at people properly.

Everyone's a 『woman』without gaps 「Therefore...I'd like to tell Yukino-san who took care of me until today...」

Mana speaks to her sister.

「If you want to come to this side...you should throw everything away...!」

Those words...seems to be the last affection she has for her sister.

「...I-I」

Flinched from it...Katsuko-nee handcuffed Yukino's arms.

「W-What are you doing!」

Katsuko-nee laughs.

「It doesn't look good to let the hostage remain free forever...」

...That's right.

Now that Mana is a member of our side...

Yukino is the only 『Hostage』...

「Have fun until 3 o'clock...!」

Minaho-neesan tells us.

3 o'clock...The report of Shirasaka Sousuke's arrest in Australia will flow to the mass media 「I will be helping out Katsuko」

...Help?

「We're going to search Shirasaka Sousuke's house」

Katsuko-nee makes a wry smile.

「We have to take away all the data about 『Kuromori』」

...I see,

Minaho-neesan thinks that the police will be searching this house eventually...

And she's trying to take out any indications of his relationship with 『Kuromori』 right now 「Should I help out too?」

「Help us carry the computer later」

...Computer?

「We don't have the time to examine the computer...Also, you can revive data erased from the hard disk. Therefore...We brought the same model from what Shirasaka uses from the mansion. We're only copying the trivial desktop parts to the new computer」

I see...they originally planned to carry Shirasaka's computer.

「Just say it if you need help with anything」

Minaho-neesan laughs.

「You can just have sex with everyone. They won't be having fun if you're not with them, you know?」

...But

「Also...one of your important task is to annoy Yukino-san」

...Annoy Yukino-san?

Minaho-neesan said.

「Go to Maika-san's room and embrace Mana-san. After that...Go to Yukino-san's room and embrace Megu」

Embrace Megu in Yukino's room?

「...N-No way! Not in my room!!!!」

Yukino seems to really don't want it!

Other people would make her room dirty.

Even including Megu to it...Her whole body shows disgust.

「Megumi...you're okay with that?」

Megu nods at Minaho-neesan's question.

「Yes...I'll receive Yoshi-kun's love in Yukino's bed...!」

Chapter 152: Inside Maika's room...

Mana...No, Maika's room is on the third floor.

The front is Yukino's room and the back is for Mana.

The other side of the corridor is said to be Shirasaka Sousuke's study.

「...Should we go back to work?」

Katsuko-nee and Minaho-neesan heads to the study.

「We'll be withdrawing by 3 o'clock...have that in your schedule too」

Minaho-neesan tells us.

「Yes...Understood」

Megu answers in behalf of everyone.

The press will be informed about the news of Shirasaka Sousuke being arrested in Australia by 3:00 PM...

After that...The reporters would be coming over here.

Therefore...we have to carry away items related to 『Kuromori』from Shirasaka Sousuke's room.

Either way...The police would be entering this house to make a search.

The chance is only now.

Shirasaka head house won't think that we will penetrate this chance and infiltrate Shirasaka Sousuke's house...

「...What about 3 o'clock?」

Yukino glares at me.

Of course I won't answer...

I shouldn't tell Yukino anything until that time comes.

「This is Maika-san's room」

Mana opens the door of the room.

「Please come in」

Mana calls us from inside the room.

I pushed Yukino's back.

「Look...get in!」

「Hey, don't push me!」

Kudou-chan comes close to Yukino who's making a noise.

「Please be a bit more quiet...you're a hostage!」

Kudou-chan...used the stun gun baton...no, what was it again?...Anyway, she took it out.

「...If you're going to resist, I will make you suffer a blow from this『Jupiter Thunderbolt』...」

The stun gun baton discharges electricity...『Jupiter Thunderbolt』!

「...I-I get it. I get it already!」

Yukino's hands are cuffed by Katsuko-nee.

Yukino stopped her rebellious attitude due to the electric spark.

「Then hurry up...please come inside the room」

Kudou-chan glared and pushed Yukino inside the room.

Megu and Misuzu comes...and I follow them.

Lastly, Kudou-chan comes in the room and closes the door.

The girlish like room has a lock on the door.

Kudou-chan locks the door...

With this...If ever Yukino tries to escape the room, she has to open the lock with her handcuffed arms...

She can't run away immediately...someone will catch her.

「My...it's wide」

Misuzu said her impressions of the room.

It is as she say...It's a large room with ten mats.

「Is Misuzu's room narrower than this?」

I asked it in curiosity.

「Misuzu's house is an apartment, therefore...」

It wasn't just an apartment...It was a super luxury condominium.

「Therefore...Misuzu's room is 6 mats」

「Is that so?」

Misuzu's doing dances.

She has a lot of hobbies...

Misuzu has the image of having a lot of things, but...

「But the room is quite wide as nothing much is put in the room. Misuzu's clothes are mostly in the walk-in closet」

Walk-in...?

「It is a storage kind of room」

「Oh...So there's such a storage room in a condominium」

「Yes...Mother and Misuzu has each of a walk-in closet」

...Hm?

「...You mean there's two storage rooms?」

「Yes, that's right...that is because father uses a built-in closet in his study」

Misuzu answered radiantly.

「That...How big is the walk-in closet?」

「I think it's around 6 mats. The clothes I don't usually wear are there」

At the stage of『Clothes you don't normally wear』...I don't get it anymore.

Why do you need clothes you don't wear everyday?

And, why are you using six mats space for such clothes...

...Hmm.

Let's stop thinking about it.

This girl is a super ojou-sama after all...

「But...this really looks like a middle school girl room」

Maika's room has a wooden bed, and a white wallpaper cleanly spread out.

There's also a wooden study desk.

White wardrobe and bookshelf...Shoujou manga and stuffed dolls in display.

The wall has some several posters of male entertainers.

This...is the guitarist of the rock band she was talking about before.

「I was told by Katsuko-sama to bring minimal luggage」

...Mana says.

That's right...if she brings everything, it'll be exposed that Mana left on her own. When they search this house afterwards, it would look strange.

「Megu-oneechan has brought three bags when she went out of Yamamine house...Therefore, Mana decided to bring three as well」

Mana's taking considerations that far.

「A change of underwear and everyday clothes...after that is a set of study tools. Even if I change schools I have to study...or else Onii-chan will hate Mana, right?」

Mana looks at me.

「You're right...I think you should study properly」

Instead of me, Megu has answered.

「Changing schools?...What are you saying?」

Yukino's surprised by Mana's remark but because we don't mind her, she ignored her like everyone.

「Then...Onii-chan, uhm...!」

Mana picked up a big dog stuffed animal from the top of the bookshelf.

「This...I received this from my aunt in Shizuoka. At least...Can Mana take this from Maika-san...?」

Mana looks up at me with anxious eyes.

「Yeah...sure. You can bring it」

Is what I said.

「...Wait, Yoshi-kun」

Megu walks to Mana's place graciously.

「...Mana, give it to me」

「...Yes」

Megu receives the doll from Mana...she took a look inside.

She seems to be checking whether there's any foreign substance in the stuffed animal.

「...Yup, doesn't look like anything's hidden」

Megu said and returned the stuffed toy to Mana.

「...Megu」

When I call her...Megu

「Yoshi-kun, you can stay like that...You can be the kind Onii-chan for Mana. I will be strict on Mana equally...」

Megu looks at Mana.

「It's okay to hate me you know...!」

Mana shook her head.

「Mana's a daughter of the 『Enemy』...so it's natural to be wary. Mana understands why Megu-oneechan is strict on her after all...!」

Megu embraces mana.

「It is for the sake of becoming everyone's ally...」

「Un...Thank you, Oneechan」

Yukino who had her sister robbed by Megu is having a glaring eye.

「Get away from that woman, Maika...You're Shirasaka Maika! You're not like this Yamamine house's daughter!」

Mana speaks to Yukino.

「I'm Yoshida Mana. Shirasaka house is no longer my house. Yukino-san is not my sister...!」

「Don't be ridiculous...!」

Yukino yells at her sister!

「House, family, and sister...is something you can't easily throw away!」

Mana answers calmly.

「Therefore...right now, I'm desperately separating myself from Maika-san...!」

...Mana.

Mana looks at me.

「Onii-chan...please violate Mana in this room where Maika has lived」

Mana invites me to the bed.

「Mana is Onii-chan's 『slave』...I will devote my body and soul to Onii-chan...」

She sits down on the bed and invites me with her eyes.

「Violate me here and please separate me from Maika-san completely...!」

...I

Misuzu speaks to Mana.

「...It is wrong for the 『slave』 to request the master...Mana-san」

Mana's surprised.

She stand up immediately and approached me.

「...Onii-chan」

Mana's small body clings to me.

Her small breast rubs against me.

Her hand goes to my crotch and stroked it .

「...Mana」

「I will serve you...!」

Mana...took off my belt and opens the zipper of my pants.

「...It has become hard」

My erection got exposed from my pants

「...Awa!」

Seeing a man's penis...Kudou-chan raises a voice.

「...Michi, take a good look. You should learn from this」

「Y-yes」

Kudou-chan answers the order of her Master, Misuzu.

Her eyes stare at my penis.

Mana...caresses my penis gently with her finger.

My erection even goes higher.

「So it becomes like that...」

Kudou-chan becomes speechless.

「Michi...Mana-san is one year younger than you. She has lost her virginity yesterday. But, she's already a wonderful 『sex slave』」

「...Y-Yes」

Misuzu whispers to Kudou-chan.

「M-Maika...Stop this! You're still 14 years old!」

Yukino screams.

That's right, Mana is still a 14 year old, a second year in middle school.

I violated such a young girl.

And, I made her my 『sex slave』...

「...I'll be sucking it」

Mana puts my glans in her mouth.

She licks it with her tongue.

「That's...licking his article...!」

Kudou-chan mutters unintentionally...!

「I've heard it from the rumors but...Who would've thought that such an act actually exists...」

「Everyone does fellatio... Misuzu loves doing it too!」

「...Misuzu-sama?」

Kudou-chan becomes speechless.

「I myself thought that the act of licking a man's article is an act done by perverted women」

「That is not true...Fellatio is a woman's modesty」

「Modesty」...

Misuzu...you're exaggerating.

「Look...take a view at Danna-sama's face. He looks like he's feeling very good. Misuzu's heart tightens when she sees that face. It makes my stomach melt

hotly...!」

Misuzu looks at my face and puts her hand in her skirt.

「Danna-sama...Misuzu's sorry for being so vulgar...!」

Misuzu's face is filled with lust.

I also like seeing that face.

「...Misuzu-san, would you like to accompany me?」

Mana...took her mouth from my penis and said.

A string of saliva bridges the tip of my glans and Mana's lips.

「...Is that okay?」

Misuzu asks Mana.

「Yes...Mana feels sorry to serve him just alone」

Then, she looks up at Megu...

「Megu-oneechan too...please join in」

Megu answers.

「I'm fine being next to Mana...I'm watching over Yukino for now」

Normally...Kudou-chan was the one asked to watch over Yukino, but...

This boxed warrior girl...has her eyes glued to my penis completely.

Therefore...Megu took over the watcher in her place.

Either way, according to Minaho-neesan's instructions...I will be embracing

Megu next in Yukino's room...

In the first place...Yukino herself is already stretching her fingers to her crotch...

「M-Maika...Stop that! That isn't something a Shirasaka daughter should do!」

She's grinding against her pussy while saying that...!

「...Misuzu-san can take the tip」

Mana said.

「Mana will be licking the bottom...I was taught by Nagisa-sama earlier this morning how to lick the lower one」

「...Then, what kind of method is that?」

Misuzu looks interested.
Then...Mana.

「Very well...I will explain it」

Mana smiles at me.

「...Onii-chan, please lie down on the bed」

「Ah...aaah」

「Mana will be taking off the pants and the underwear」

Mana's small hands took off my underwear and pants.
She took off the school uniform too...
My clothes are only the T-shirt and socks.
It's a bit embarrassing¹

「Onii-chan...lie down. Hurry up...!」

The cute middle school girl in her bunny suit whispers to me.

「I get it...I get it already...」

I lie down...
I feel a lot of gazes.
Especially Kudou-chan who's gaze is eating my penis that's standing magnificently...It hurts.
My glans is being stared by a scary face of a parent.

「Onii-chan...open your legs wide!」

The cute bunny girl orders me.
I spread my legs as I was told...!
Oh...Everyone sees my anus right now.
What's with this situation.
The bunny girl devotes herself in between my legs.
Her face approaches my penis...

「...You lick the bottom of the bag under the penis like this」

The small middle school girl licks my balls.

「...The man's semen is made here. Therefore, it will be good if you stimulate it here」

Yeah...The warm tongue stimulates my balls.
It feels good.

「It's true...Danna-sama looks like he's feeling really good」

Misuzu looks at me with melting eyes.

「...Then, Mana thought of this, What if someone licks the tip of the penis while the other does the bag...won't Onii-chan feel even better?...!」

...Mana.

Are you a genius?!

「You're right...Then, I think we should try it」

Misuzu's mouth approaches the tip of my glans.
Her fragrant breath sticks to my penis.

「...Misuzu will make you feel good too!」

「Angu!」her small mouth fills the glans.
picha...picha...picha...
Wet sounds come from my crotch.

...Feels good.

「...Yoshi-kun looks like he's feeling good」

I can hear Megu's voice from far away.

「Yeah...It feels good...Misuzu...Mana...!」

The top and bottom of the penis...so being attacked by tongues at the same time feels this good.

Furthermore...it's two beauties making their tongues crawl...!

「...How is it? Danna-sama...Want to release it?」

Misuzu asks me while licking the back of the glans.

「Or could you like to let it out inside Mana-san's stomach?」

...I

「...Let's show how a man ejaculates to Kudou-chan」

「...Are you sure?」

「Isn't Misuzu the one who talked about learning?」

「Ufufu...you're right」

I speak to Mana.

「Mana...that's enough. Stroke my penis with your hand」

「...Stroke?」

Oh...girls don't know it

「Hold here...in the root」

「Like this?...Is this okay, Onii-chan?」

Mana holds my penis.

「I-It's hot...it's pulsating!」

The feeling of her tongue and the feeling of her hand is different.

「Holding it with my hand like this...It's really big...and thick」

Mana speaks out her thoughts.

「Something like this enters my stomach」

I pile up my right hand on Mana's hand.

「Then you move it up and down like this」

I'm teaching Mana how to do handjob.

「It's okay to hold it stronger...!」

「Is this okay? Won't it break or crush?」

「...It's okay. There's no problem with it」

I hold down Mana's hand tighter and strokes my penis.

「Misuzu...continue licking the tip of my dick.」

「Yees~...Danna-sama」

Misuzu responded happily.

I stretch my empty left hand to Mana's breasts.

I turned over the chest part of the bunny girl outfit.

It's small...But a good shaped boobs comes out.

「Kyaaan~!」

Mana raised a voice of pleasure.
I massage Mana's elastic swelling breasts.
Then roll my finger on the nipple caved in...!

「Aaahn...It feels good, Onii-chan!」

Mana smiles at me.

「Mana, keep rubbing my penis」

「...Yes!」

I separate my right hand from my dick and head to Misuzu's chest.

「Ahn...Danna-sama!」

I thrust my hands inside the hem of Misuzu's uniform...!
I slip my fingers between her breasts and bra and raised it up.

「Ahn...Please do me violently!」

My left hand massages Mana's small breasts and the right hand pinches
Misuzu's nipple.
...It feels good!

「...I'm cumming...Mana...Misuzu...!」

Misuzu...sucks the glans with her lips!
Mana also strokes the penis up and down...!

「...K-Kudou-chan...can you see? I'm about to cum...I'm going to ejaculate
semen...!」

The hot lump surfaces from deep inside me...!

「...Yes, I'm watching! You can go on anytime!」

The warrior girl stares at my penis with passionate eyes.

「...I'm about to cum...Cumming...I'm cumming...Misuzuuu...!!」

At that moment...Misuzu released her mouth from my penis...!
The sperm flies out like a pulse!

「...Aahn!」

Misuzu has accepted the hot liquid in her face...!

...Byubyubyu!

...Byuu, byuuu!

Twice...thrice...It made Misuzu's face dirty...!

「Amazing...At the moment it jumps out, the penis twitches...!」

At the moment I ejaculated, Mana speaks in surprise while holding the base of my penis.

「Amazing...that force...there's a lot coming out!」

Kudou-chan's surprised.

「Misuzu-san...here, tissue」

She knows her own room well...

Mana holds out a box of tissue to Misuzu.

「Thank you Mana-san」

Misuzu pulls out several tissues and wipes the semen on her face.

「Mana will be cleaning up Onii-chan...」

Mana takes tissues and tries to wipe my penis.

「Ah...Mana-san, you don't need to do that... !」

Misuzu lightly wiped the semen and looks down on my penis.

「...Danna-sama, Misuzu will clean it up」

Saying that...she licks the glans once again.

Licking the semen that spilled out with her tongue...

「You have to suck out the semen that remained in the urethra too...!」

Misuzu puts the tip of my penis in her mouth and sucks out the semen in the urethra...

「...Megumi-san, please come here」

Misuzu calls Megu.

「...What's wrong Misuzu-san」

Misuzu smiled at Megu approaching her.

「Here...your share」

She pushed out her tongue towards Megu.
Misuzu's tongue is filled with my white semen.
Megu laughs.

「Yes...itadakimasu」

Megu sucks Misuzu's tongue...!
The beauties are having a french kiss.
The two of them are tasting my semen...
Both of them are my 『women』

「Megu will clean up Misuzu-san's face...!」

Megu calls herself 『Megu』only when she's extremely aroused...
Megu licks the semen sticking in Misuzu's face.

「Then...Mana will be cleaning Onii-chan」

Mana says that...then carefully licks my penis hanging towards my
abdomen...!

「...Is that okay to lick it off?」

Kudou-chan asks Misuzu.

「It's a bit bitter...It's not that dangerous. But, it is Danna-sama's seed...Misuzu
thinks that she has to accept all of it」

Misuzu answered.

「But not...I think it's great to share it to Megumi-san and Mana-san. We're
『Sisters』that love the same man after all」

Misuzu answers with a smile.
Megu kisses Misuzu who's making that kind of face...

「Misuzu-san...that's wonderful. I'm really glad I met Misuzu-san...!」
「Misuzu thinks the same. I'm really glad that I met Megumi-san...!」

The two of them look at each other...

「...Thank you, Yoshi-kun!」
「...Thank you very much, Danna-sama!」

...Eh?

...Why me?

「...The two of us come to know each other because Danna-sama is there」

「Un...I love you, I love you so much...Yoshi-kun!」

「Misuzu too...I love you, Danna-sama!」

...Misuzu

...Megu.

「...I love Mana-san too」

When Misuzu said that...Mana who's licking my penis got surprised.

「I also do...thank you for becoming my little sister...Mana」

Megu tells Mana.

「We'll love you forever along with Danna-sama. Please stay as a cute 『slave』
...!」

「I may be strict to you as your sister but...I love you. I love ever since before... !」

Misuzu, talks about Mana's future...

Megu talks about the past...

Mana...

「...Is it okay for me? Is it really okay for me to become everyone's ally?!」

Mana spills out tears.

「It's okay...You're my 『Mana』after all...」

I caress Mana's cheeks gently.

My fingers got wet with Mana's tears...

「I'm fine being a 『slave』forever! Please let me stay with Onii-chan, Misuzu-san, Megu-oneechan, Katsuko-san, Nei-san and Margo-san...! I want to be together with everyone...!!!」

Misuzu smiled at Mana and said.

「Now...Mana-san. Next will be having Danna-sama's sperm in your stomach along with us」

Misuzu takes off her clothes.

「Yes...Misuzu-san!」

Mana answers.

Megu smiled and backed off again

Oh right...What about Yukino?

...Yukino is.

She's looking at us with a stunned face.

「...Maika, you?!」

Even the slow Yukino finally realizes and understands.

The little sister...has already gotten away from herself...!

The one here is Mana.

Shirasaka Maika is no longer here.

Chapter 153: Family

Misuzu took off her uniform...

Then she draws her body close to me.

「Danna-sama...please take a look」

She took off her bra in front of me.

Her cute breast jumps out...

「...Ufufu...Danna-samaa!」

Misuzu pushes her naked breasts to my face.

She embraces my head tightly...

Her two warm meat mountain is wrapping my face.

「...I love you, Danna-sama」

She looks at me with enchanted eyes.

「...Please lick my nipple」

Misuzu pleads.

「...Sure」

I put Misuzu's left nipple in my mouth.

The already hard nipple is rolled by my tongue.

「Ahn...It feels good...!」

Misuzu pants.

「Danna-sama is like a child. This is Danna-sama's breasts so lick as you want... and even suck it...Aaahn!」

I massage her right breast while rubbing her left with my tongue...

Misuzu's not a kyonyuu but...it's a very beautiful binyuu...¹...

I think the size that fits with one hand comfortably is very Misuzu-like.

「Danna-samaaa...I will definitely make you happy...!」

Misuzu said while panting...

「...Misuzu?」

I unconsciously removed my face from her nipple and look up at Misuzu's face.

「...I want to make you happy. That's what I think. Of course...Misuzu wants to be happy together with Danna-sama however...Misuzu wants to make Danna-sama happy more than that...!」

Misuzu whispers to me with her moist eyes.

「...I'm very happy right now. Misuzu is here...everyone's here. I think that this moment is the happiest since I was born...!」

I answered with my honest feelings.

「Misuzu doesn't want to be just now...!」

Misuzu smiles.

「Misuzu wants Danna-sama to be happy all the time. I will do anything for that sake...!」

Misuzu caresses my face gently.

「I thank Danna-sama for liking him...When I came to like Danna-sama, it was the first time I understood the feelin of 『Love』」

...Love?

「...I want to make you happy...I don't care about myself but I just want to make you happy...That is the feeling of 『Love』」

...Misuzu.

「But...I'm happy enough already. I'll get retribution if I get even happier. I'm already satisfied, truly...!」

Loved by a beauty like Misuzu...Megu and Mana's here...Katsuko-nee and Nagisa too.

I have Minaho-neesan who's like my sister...And a kind and strong sister like Margo-san...

And Nei-san...I'm very happy meeting a person like Nei-san.

「...Danna-sama, please imagine this」

Misuzu said.

「...All of us living together. Misuzu, Megumi-san, and Mana too...everyone from the 『Kuromori』all together... Living together with everyone...bearing Danna-sama's child, everyone will raise the children together. Megumi-san's child and the other girl's child too. Everyone's working, everyone's living together, everyone's raising a child...How is it? Don't you think it would be fun?」

「Yeah...I think that's fun, but...」

There's so many obstacles before that.

If we do not win our fight with Shirasaka family...Megu and Mana won't be free in reality.

Nei-san, has to repel the former enemy, Cesario Viola.

And...Misuzu, I have to make Kouzuki『Kakka』accept our relationship.

To be honest...All of them are very hard.

Besides, how will we live together?

『Kuromori』will be disbanded...That is Minaho-neesan's will.

Nagisa's flower shop and Katsuko-nee's bakery...I wonder if I can earn enough for us to live together...

Even so...I also have to think on how to manage when Nagisa and Katsuko-nee are pregnant...

「...Please don't make that kind of face.」

Misuzu kisses my forehead...

「Danna-sama shouldn't shoulder everything alone...we should all think, and conquer all them one by one...!」

Misuzu looks at Megu.

「Isn't that right...Megumi-san!」

...Megu

「Yes...It is as Misuzu-san says. Let us all think together...and become happy. More, even happier...!」

Megu smiled at me.

「...Is it okay for me Even now, I'm too happy that I think it's a dream...」

Hearing what I said...Misuzu speaks.

「Does Danna-sama intend to abandon us?」

「No...That's not my intention though」

「Then...Let us become even happier...!」

Misuzu embraces my body.

「It's okay for Danna-sama to become even happier...!」

「...Misuzu」

「Please believe Misuzu...I will definitely make you happy...!」

Misuzu's eyes look determined.

「...Michi」

Misuzu turns to Kudou-chan.

「Yes...Misuzu-sama」

Kudou-chan answered immediately.

「Grandfather's order wasn't just to guard me but also to monitor, isn't that right?」

Misuzu said with a laugh.

「...Yes. I have received such orders.」

「What did grandfather tell you?」

「...That is」

「Please tell me the scope Michi can tell us」

Kudou-chan...looks like she can't help it then said.

「...In relationship of Misuzu-sama and Yoshida-sama's 『Copulation』, let Misuzu-sama do all she wants...however, I was instructed to let Misuzu-sama practice birth control」

Kouzuki『Kakka』...has no complaints about me having sex with Misuzu.

「...I'm properly drinking contraceptives. There is nothing for him to worry

about...!」

Misuzu answers.

Yukino's glaring from the the back.

Not only having sex with me without contraceptives...Yukino was made to drink a fertility drug.

「Kouzuki-sama's orders was strictly not to interfere even if Misuzu-sama drowns in sexual pleasure. It is common for men and women to dash to the emotions temporarily when they're drowning in the 『fornication』...therefore I must not interfere. Either way, the romance will cool down and Misuzu-sama will learn how foolish she has been drowning in sex, is what he said」

Kouzuki『Kakka』...really thinks of me as a man who has sex with a lot of women.

It seems that he thinks that Misuzu's just drowning in the feeling of sex with me and she'll notice how foolish she is soon enough.

Rather...after experiencing sex with such a man, she'll get cautious about sex from now on.

「After listening to Grandfather...what does Michi think?」

Misuzu asks Kudou-chan.

「I also thought that Misuzu-sama is deceived by a worthless man. It is said that Yoshida-sama has relationship with several other women than Misuzu-sama...」

...Yeah

True, it's inevitable to think it like that.

Even I think that this situation is abnormal...

「However...when I saw Yoshida-sama and the other women...It was completely different from what I had imagined...therefore I'm confused」

...Kudou-chan?

「...How different is it from your imagination?」

Misuzu asks further.

「That is...Yoshida-sama is a very humble and quiet person...!」

...Me?

...Humble?!

「Yoshida-sama doesn't act overly familiar with Misuzu-sama. He always touch her with a moderate attitude. Also...Yoshida-sama doesn't ask Misuzu-sama anything. Even in the current sexual act...Misuzu-sama is the one demanding and Yoshida-sama just accepts...」

...T-That's

「That is the problem troubling us...Isn't that right, Megumi-san?」

「Yes...I always think that I want Yoshi-kun to demand more from our bodies」

...Misuzu...Megu

「That's...well...I don't want to be hated by Misuzu and Megu...」

...Yeah

Because...Everyone's a beauty that's too good for me.

「We won't hate you for that...Yoshi-kun」

「That's right. Please be a bit more confident about yourself!」

The two beautiful girls got angry.

「Yoshida-sama isn't a playboy like Kouzuki-sama has thought」

...Playboy?

Why...?

「If it's a man belonging to the prostitution organization『Kuromori』...it's normally thought that he's a playboy who's job is to make women fall for him...!」

...Kudou-chan

That's true...now that she say it.

As a member of 『Kuromori』...made the favorites Katsuko-nee and Nagisa my own 『women』...and a man who had sex with several other girls.

For Kouzuki『Kakka』...far from being a man having sex with lots of women, he thinks that I'm an excellent sex mentor

Furthermore...my boss is Minaho-neesan.

Minaho-neesan is observing so it won't become an extreme relationship.

「Grandfather...thinks that I'm just obsessed with a playboy...」

Misuzu looks a bit angry.

「Furthermore...he thinks that if left for a while, I will break up with him and fear men...that's how it is」

In short...Kouzuki『Kakka』believes that my relationship with Misuzu is an opportunity to make her study about men.

Kouzuki『Kakka』doesn't care about Misuzu's virginity at all.

Since he was living freely about sex...he thinks that his granddaughter should enjoy sex

I think the tolerance of her grandfather is amazing...

But, I...

I'm not an a sex mentor...

「If ever I do not break up with Danna-sama...I think Grandfather will talk to Yuzuki-sama about breaking us apart. He thinks that she'll do it with pleasure when given money...!」

Misuzu's angry.

「...He's making a fool us! Misuzu and Danna-sama too...!~」

Misuzu is angry for my sake.

「Then...Michi. What can you see with your eyes? Am I just a girl who's drowning in sex?」

Kudou-chan shook her head.

「I think Misuzu-sama wants to become Yoshida-sama's 『family』...!」

Family...!

「Yoshida-sama...and Mana-sama too」

Kudou-chan said with a serious face.

「...You do get it Michi!!!!」

Misuzu happily shouted.

「That's right...Misuzu wants to be family with Danna-sama! Megumi-san, Mana-san, and the other people too!」

...Misuzu?

「...I'm the same! Misuzu-san!」

Megu shouts...

「I now understand why I'm fussing over being Yoshi-kun's 『lawful wife』...or the 『engagement』 I want to become family with Yoshi-kun!」

...Megu?

「When I heard Yoshi-kun's life story the other day...I thought『This person's much more pitiful than I am』 『He has experienced more suffering than me and yet he endured it』when I thought of that...I thought I want to become his『Family』...!」

Megu looks at me.

「Misuzu has it even before that. Misuzu was Nagisa-sama's pet at first. I felt strange when Nagisa-sama has ordered me to『Become her pet』however...I can understand it now Nagisa-sama...noticed that Misuzu wishes for a 『family she can trust』 But...we can't become 『family』easily therefore...Nagisa-sama made me her 『Pet』...」

Misuzu looks at me.

「When I was told by Nagisa-sama to become Danna-sama's pet...I was shocked to be honest. I don't know what to do becoming as a man's pet. But... Danna-sama has been really kind to Misuzu. At first he was being a pet owner... But he takes care of Misuzu and treasures me responsibly. It as if we're 『family』...!」

Is that so?

Did I treat Misuzu like a 『family』?

...I don't know.

Just what is 『family』...to me...

Since I don't know what's 『family』like at all...

「You're right...Yoshi-kun doesn't think of Mana and I as problems...」

Megu said.

「I've read something like this before...Love makes you able to endure no

matter how troublesome it is...」

...Megu?

「For example...it's normal to be handful with a child isn't it? They cry from something trivial, scream, and even rage. It's love that makes mother continue taking care of such children...

...Hmm.

I don't get it.

I never cried nor screamed in the house when I was a child...

On the contrary, I wasn't allowed to talk about anything to my mother...

My father has said. 「We're air in this house, always remove your presence」...

「Even if the others cannot endure it, you can endure it if it's a relative. You can make an effort to solve the problem after enduring it. Family can accept it even if the lover cannot...if it was your own child, parent's『love』mean throwing your own life for your own child, isn't that right?」

Megu said that but...

If it was my parents...They'll just abandon me and try to survive themselves.

No...Of course, there are people in the world who love their children as Megu says.

I think there is but...I have nothing to do with it.

My parents aren't like that.

「Yoshi-kun...don't make that kind of face, look this way」

Megu smiled at me.

「Yoshi-kun...You did your best for Mana's sake yesterday. Why?」

...Eh?

「Did you not have any intentions of abandoning Mana halfway? I did. Let me be honest. If there's a nuisance like Mana, it would cause trouble to everyone...so I thought I should give up on her...」

Mana looks at me with serious eyes.

「If ever...Yoshi-kun didn't do his best that much...if he did abandon Mana in the end...I don't think Mana would be here today」

...That's.

I just...

「Yoshi-kun...Why did you do your best not to abandon Mana? Why?」

...Mana looks at me.

「That is...I don't get it myself but anyway...I think it's definitely no good to abandon her...」

I don't get myself.

「...Then, speak your feelings right now. What does Yoshi-kun think of Mana?」

...My current feeling about Mana?

「That's right...tell us」

Megu asks me...

Mana...Misuzu...and Kudou-chan is looking at me seriously.

Yukino's the only one who has her mouth open absentmindedly.

「...I think she's cute」

「...That's all?」

「Err...I think that I have to protect her」

「...Protect?」

「Well...Mana has abandoned Shirasaka house so I have to protect her right?」

「...Protect, what will you do?」

「For the time being...I have to work part time」

「...Part time?」

「Yeah...there's a big disturbance right now but I have to earn a lot of money...!」

「...Why?」

「Well...I have to earn Mana's living expenses right? Mana's still a middle school student after all.」

「...Are you serious about that?」

「Serious. I want Mana to properly go to middle school...even in high school...

Mana looks intelligent so I think she can go even at a university」

「...Mana is Yoshi-kun's 『Slave』 Are you going to earn money for your 『slave』?」

「Well...She's my 『slave』isn't she?!」

「...Yoshi-kun?」

「She's my 『slave』...so I have no choice but to look after her.」

Tears spill from Mana's eyes.

「It's not just Mana...Megu's the same」

「...Me?」

「Megu...you said that you're going to work part time yourself but...Actually, I don't want you to do that」

「...Yoshi-kun?」

「I want Megu to do her best in club activities...Megu has good grades so I want you to go to a university...!」

「...It's okay, you don't have to」

「Don't say that! I intend to borrow money from Minaho-neesan for Megu's sake...」

「Yoshi-kun...what are you saying?」

「I will be working and repaying for everything in the future therefore...I thought of borrowing Megu's school fee with that promise...!」

「...Yoshi-kun...!」

「I think Minaho-neesan will lend for Megu's sake...But, she won't be lending anything for Mana. Mana...is Minaho-neesan's enemy's daughter. I have to be grateful that she's even letting her stay with us...therefore, I have to work part time to earn money for Mana...」

Misuzu looks at me.

「Therefore...I'm sorry Misuzu!」

「W-What is it, Danna-sama?」

Misuzu looks at me with a surprised face.

「Misuzu too...I'd like to buy you a lot of things but now...I don't have any money. I have to look at Misuzu lower than the other 『women』 Believe me...I'll also『repay』Misuzu properly...I will『return』even if it takes me a lifetime. I promise that...!」

「What...『repay』?」

Misuzu looks at me with a wondering face.

「Isn't that obvious?...It's 『favor』!」

I shouted.

「I...received favors from everyone, Misuzu, Megu, Katsuko-nee, Nagisa, Minaho-neesan, Margo-san, Nei-san...and pperhaps Mana too...! Therefore I have to repay it even if it takes me a lifetime!!!!」

Misuzu mutters...

「...Baka」

...Eh?

「Danna-sama is an idiot! A huge idiot!」

「Yeah...You're right, I'm not smart, and I'm always bothering everyone, but...」

「I didn't mean it like that! Bakaaaa!」

Misuzu shouts loudly...!

The room quiets down.

...Shit

I said something that made everyone angry.

「Uhm...this isn't something I should say but...」

Breaking the silence...Kudou-chan speaks out.

「In short...for Yoshida-sama, everyone's already his 『family』is that correct?」

...Family?

「Danna-sama...Danna-sama's wrong!」

Misuzu tells me angrily.

「...Y-Yes」

I just nod obediently.

「It's 『Love』that's between us not 『Favor』...!」

...Love?

「I finally understand why Danna-sama bears those words he just said alone. Please don't ever think of returning the favor again. It's unpleasant. I can't agree to that...!」

「...S-Sorry」

「We're already 『family』 we're 『family』...so please depend on us. Even if you are grateful, please never say something so distant like repaying a favor」

...Misuzu.

「I think so too. Misuzu-san and I are Yoshi-kun's 『wives』therefore, our husband doesn't have to mind it...!」

...Megu

「Megumi-san...Misuzu is...」

「Isn't it okay to have two lawful wives?...Our husband is a tolerant person!」

Megu smiled at Misuzu.

「...Michi」

Misuzu turns to Kudou-chan

「...Yes」

「Please tell me when you're going to report to Grandfather. Misuzu...can't be formally married to Danna-sama. I can't disgrace Kouzuki house's name. But...I won't have any other men than Danna-sama for the rest of my life. Misuzu's husband is this person...!」

「Understood...Misuzu-sama and Yoshida-sama, would like to tell that they love each other like a family」

「We're not like a family...we're 『family』² Misuzu is already Danna-sama's wife...!」

Misuzu declared.

「...Onii-chan, what about me?」

Mana looks at me with a teary face.

「Am I also your 『family』?」

...I

「What are you saying?...since when Mana become my 『slave』...you're already my 『family』. If not...you can't become a 『slave』...!」

Mana jumps to my arm!

「...I love you! Onii-chan, I love you!!!!」

I embrace Mana.

「I will be serving you a lot...please love me forever and ever!」

「Yeah...I know」

「Please love Misuzu too」

「Then...Should I be the one to love Yoshi-kun?」

When Megu says that, Misuzu...

「Ah wait...Misuzu wants to be the one that gives love!」

「Then...let's be together Misuzu-san」

「Yes...Together, Megumi-san」

The two of them smile at each other.

「Wait a moment you people!」

Yukino speaks out.

「You guy are speaking incomprehensible things...and getting heated up!」

Yukino...seems to be in panic.

「This is my house...That girl's my little sister...Don't make her your family member without permission!!!」

...Yukno!

「...Or rather...What am I?!」

Yukino shouts!

「What am I to you?! Raped forcibly and made was made a mess...?!」

Yukino looks at me.

The look of intense anger...

「...What will happen to me!?!?!」

Chapter 154: Sexual feast (Part 1)

machineslicedbread.xyz | 1 April 2017



Pure Love x Insult Complex Chapter 153 : Family

Pure Love x Insult Complex Chapter 155 : Sexual feast (Part 2) 「...Isn't that obvious already?」

Before I was able to answer...

Mana glares at her sister and speaks...

「...Maika?」

Yukino got startled.

「There's no Maika here already...I am Mana」

Mana rubs her small boobs against my chest.

「I'm Onii-chan's 『slave』...!」

Saying that...Mana kisses me.

「Maika! Don't be ridiculous, stop this already! I'll get angry!」

Hearing Yukino's words...Mana turned around with glaring eyes!

「What about you Yukino-san...even though you're the『enemy』, how about you shut up!」

「...『Enemy』?」

Yukino's shaken by the intense hostility of her little sister.

「Onii-chan had no choice but to rape Yukino-san for the sake of revenge of 『Kuromori』 If not, there's no way Onii-chan will have sex with a person like Yukino-san!」

Mana...doesn't know that Yukino's a『safe blanket』for me.
On top of that...Mana is desperately trying to deny her past.
She's trying to break out of 『Shirasaka Maika』

Therefore...she's creating her own『convenient reality』and believe in it.

「...Mana, that's wrong」

Even though I say that...Mana.

「You don't need to protect Yukino-san. Onii-chan is a diligent and a kind person therefore you're even kind to 『Enemies』like Yukino-san...Mana knows that well」

...Mana.

Her『belief』is strong...

Mana is Yukino's sister, she thinks: so what if I'm a daughter of 『Shirasaka house』...

「Therefore...Mana will tell Yukino-san in place of Onii-chan...!」

Mana looks at her sister.

「Yukino-san...You're nothing but a tool for the 『revenge』against Shirasaka Sousuke. Therefore Onii-chan raped you. That's all. Because...Yukino-san doesn't have any charm as a woman...!」

...Yukino

「...Maika, you」

「I'm not scared at all even if you make that kind of face...」

Mana confronts her sister calmly.

「...You don't get it? Yukino-san's kidnapped by the enemy right now you know? It's useless to rage or even try to escape...we will never let you escape...!」

「...Are you telling your sister that?!」

Yukino glares at Maika too.

「I...hated Yukino-san since I was a child...!」

Hearing Mana's words...

Yukino's angry face collapses.

「...W-What are you saying...!」

「Yukino-san always orders me...『Don't do that』, or 『You can't have this』...

always just ordering prohibition. Always being mean to me...aren't you always pleased to look at my displeased and troubled face don't you...?!」

「...That's,」

「...What?」

「...That's because your body is weak since you were young...as your sister...!」

「As my sister...you bully my weak body and ridicule me?!」

「Wrong...That's not true. I always think about you...and take care of you as your sister...!」

「...Liar!!!!」

Mana screams...!

「When I was being treated in Shizuoka...you never came to meet me...!」

Mana is trembling.

I hold Mana's hand.

「...Onii-chan」

I tell Mana.

「...Let it all out」

...All your feelings for your sister.

This chance might not come again anymore...!

「...Yeah」

Mana nods with teary eyes and turned back to her sister once again.

...Yukino 「...Because...I have no other choice! I had school and club activities...I was busy...!」

「...Even though you could've made a call!」

Mana's words pierced through Yukino.

「...That's」

「...Someone like you can't be my Oneechan!!!!」

Mana screams!

「...On the day I came back from Shizuoka...Yukino-san was looking at me as if the nuisance has come back...!」

「That's not true...!」

「Furthermore...this room of mine has been the place for Yukino-san's baggage not used usually...! When Mama said 『Bring it all back to your room』, Yukino-san looked at me with eyes of terrible hatred! It's as if she's saying 『You shouldn't have come back!』」

「You're misunderstanding it! I'm not that kind of person...!」

Yukino desperately denies it...!

「Because Yukino-san...was never kind to me at all!!!!!!」

Yukino got shocked.

「I'm not kind?!」

「...That's right!」

「...That's not true!」

Yukino's hatred explodes.

「Aren't I very kind to you?! Don't joke with me! Maika, who do you think you are...!」

「Aren't you always speaking badly and ridiculing me?! 『Maika's still a child so don't do that』or 『Maika's growth is slower than others so it's still too early for you』...all of are just to hurt me!」

「...I'm saying those because I'm worried about you! Even though you're a kid, aren't you being arrogant here!!!」

Inside Maika's room...

The sister's angry roars echoes...!

「You always, and always treat me like a child...make a fool out of me...I hate you...!」

「...Not understanding her sister's care, aren't you the child here?!」

「...Don't act like the adult here when we're only two years apart!」

「I'm an adult...at least more than you...!」

「...You're not my Oneechan!」

When Mana screamed that...Yukino lets out words that shouldn't be said...!

「You're just a premature baby...don't speak so proud of yourself...!」

...At that moment.

Kudou-chan...hits Yukino with the stun gun!

「...Kyaaaaa!!」

Trembling from the electric shock...Yukino fell on the floor.

Kudou-chan looks down at Yukino and said.

「...I also have a sister so I understand Mana-sama's feelings」

Kicking Yukino on her back...

「...My growth is slower than normal. However...it doesn't mean that our growth has stopped...」

Kudou-chan is worried about her being small.

Therefore...she's using such flashy and big techniques.

「I intended to stand in a neutral position as much as possible but...I see, I finally understood why this person is an 『enemy』」

Kudou-chan said.

「This person pushes her own self-righteous and selfish belief of 『family love』
...She's that kind of person」

Kudou-chan's analysis is precise...

「...She's just like my sister」

...Kudou-chan

Speaking of which...Kudou-chan has a sister.

Denying her father's Kudou style...her sister did Karate martial arts.

「Hmm...What about it, you're unrelated aren't you! This is my house's problem! Don't interfere with problems between sisters! Resorting to violence if you don't like it? You're the worst...you're like that man! You criminals!!!!」

Yukino speaks out her grudge while lying down on the floor...

「That's right...We're criminals...what about it?」

Megu looks down on Yukino and said.

「You people should just get caught and be executed...!」

Yukino glares at Megu.

「Does that mean that you also want your sister to die?」

Kudou-chan asks Yukino.

「...She is already your 『enemy』...!」

...Yukino.

Yukino who won't endure when she has to...

Yukino who doesn't choose her words when she has to...

Replies with the worst answer...

「...That's right! If she's going to shame 『Shirasaka house』...Then Maika should just die right now」

I embraced Mana tightly.

「...Mana, I'm here with you」

「Un...embrace me. Embrace me tighter...Onii-chan」

Megu speaks to Yukino.

「...Yukino, earlier you said 『Don't interfere with problems between sisters』... We're 『sisters』from different mothers...Then that means that I have the right to mane complains」

Yukino snarls at Megu.

「You're not my 『Sister』! I will never acknowledge you as such!」

Mana reacts to that.

「...Therefore, I'm no longer your sister too!」

Mana pierces Yukino's heart...!

「My Oneechan is Megu-oneechan...! I don't know Yukino-san anymore! I don't need you! We're no longer related...!!!」

...Mana.

「...Megu-oneechan...has been kind with me since the past. She always...no matter what...will send me a letter at Shizuoka...She even sends New Year's cards definitely...」

「...Because you're my 『little sister』...I always thought of you as my 『sister』...!」

Megu pats Mana's back kindly.

「...Megu-oneechan, sorry. I never noticed Oneechan's feelings all this time...!」

「...It's okay, I'm your 『Onee-san』so I can endure it...!」

Megu and Mana look at each other and hold hands.

「Hey...Maika, get away from her! She's an 『enemy』of Shiraska house...!」

...Yukino's agitated...and Mana!

「...You're the『enemy』!!!」

Yukino got shocked!!!

「...Maik?!!!!」

Mana...breathes deeply.

Suuhaa, suuhaa, suu...

Then...She looks at me and smiled feebly.

「Sorry...Onii-chan, I made you wait...!」

「...Eh?」

「Mana has never decided with her feelings. Mana is a sly kid...so I just say what's good at the moment but...I always worry in my mind. Is this okay to be like this...Can I do this?... Mana is an idiot so she misunderstood that she has the right to choose her fate...sorry」

...Mana.

「Mana fears of losing everything. Mana wants to protect a lot of things...Even though I declared that I'll be with Onii-chan forever...Even in those kind of situations...I have always thought slyly of...Is there any chance of me going back to 『Shirasaka』 house...and other things like that...!」

Mana...started changing.

The previous Mana had power in her speech and actions.

Hiding her true feelings...and always feeling strained somewhere in her body.

That strain has disappeared.

「Well...it can't be helped」

I tell Mana.

「Mana's scared right?」

It must've been scary to lose everything you protect
That said...she can't believe me or 『Kuromori』completely...
If there's a possibility of saving herself even a little...it's natural to want to cling to it.

Mana's smart unlike me...she's a girl with good observation power and insight.

「...Thank you, Onii-chan」

Mana smiled.

「I don't have anyone but Onii-chan. I don't have anything left but Onii-chan. I finally understood that...!」

Mana snuggled up with me...

「Then...Mana now understands that she has Megu-oneechan Misuzu-san and Katsuko-san and others too, Mana understands that they come to believe Mana is their ally, Mana finally understand...!」

...Mana.

「...Onii-chan's the same as Mana, right?」

...Eh?!

「Onii-chan also lost his real family...and doesn't have anyone but Mana and others, right? Therefore we become 『family』...!」

Mana's insight...

Has turned to me for the first time...

The girl named Mana is trying to analyze the human inside me.

...But.

「No...But, I still have a 『house』...my parents are alive too...!」

「...Is that so, Onii-chan?」

「...Yeah, my father has disappeared...I don't want to meet my mother again, I don't think she wants to meet me either, but...But I still have a 『house』I have to come back to!」

What am I saying?

「...In that 『house』, is there someone waiting for Onii-chan?」

Mana questions me.

「No...there's no one, but...」

...That『house』

...There

It has the sofa I have been sleeping on all this time...

Alone in the house...I round and warm myself with my own heat...the worn out sofa

That is a place I have to return to.

That 『house』...has me waiting for me...!

「...Onii-chan's so pitiful」

Mana said.

「...eh?」

「Onii-chan...doesn't know that him being alone is 『sad』...!」

Mana embraces me.

「But...It's okay already...!」

Mana smiled at me...

「Mana will be forever, forever with you...I'll be Onii-chan's 『slave』forever...!」

「...Mana?」

「...I love you. I really love Onii-chan...!」

Mana kisses me...!

「...Stop that, Maika! That's vulgar!」

Yukino's shout doesn't reach Mana's ears anymore.

「I will comfort you a lot...Mana's already an adult『woman』...a 『woman』Onii-chan has made...!」

Mana's thin fingers touch my penis.

「You really did rape Maika...are you not ashamed of yourself raping this small girl?! Have some sense of shame!!!!!」

We ignore Yukino's voice.

「...Embrace me on top of Maika-san's bed...Onii-chan. My Onii-chan...!」

I throw Mana down on the bed...

Her body lie down facing upwards...

I can smell Mana's scent from the pillow.

「...This smells like Mana

Mana who's below me, has smiled.

「Please smell more of Mana's scent...and, please fill Mana's body with Onii-chan's smell...!」

Mana kisses me again...

Mana is the one twining her tongue.

「...I love you, I love you, I love you...Onii-chaaan...!」

Mana...sucks my tongue violently...!

...Aaah!

Meanwhile...my penis is being wrapped by something hot and damp...!

Looking at it...Megu is sucking my penis...!

「...It's unfair that it's only Mana!」

Megu tells Mana while licking my glans...

「Ehehe...Sorry, Oneechan」

「...Yoshi-kun is everyone's Yoshi-kun...!」

「...Un」

Misuzu speaks to the two of them

「Mana-san...is our『sister』okay...!」

「...Misuzu-san?」

「Misuzu is also Mana-san's『Onee-san』...is that okay?」

Mana answers.

「Yes! Misuzu-oneechan!」

「...Can Misuzu join serving Danna-sama as well?」

「Of course!」

Even Misuzu will join the fray?

I lied down on the bed...

Mana kisses me.

Megu fellates my penis.

Misuzu is groping my shirt.

「I'll be licking Danna-sama's nipple...!」

...Ooooh!

I'm attacked by amazing pleasures...

The cute second year middle school girl.

My classmate...a first year high school girl.

And a lovely senior...a second year in high school girl.

The three beauties attack me at the same time...!

「Aren't you people perverts! Perverts...! All of you are perverts...!」

Yukino's screaming as usual...

Her hand is groping her crotch while her hands are cuffed...

Before I knew it...the 14 year old girl's room is filled with a lewd smell.

This has become a hall for a sexual feast...

「Michi...please watch over that woman」

Misuzu tells Michi...

「...Yes」

Is what Kudou-chan answered...but she's staring at our foolishness in blank surprise...

In the first place, Yukino started masturbating and doesn't lookin like she's going to escape...

「...Your penis is twitching」

Megu said.

「Mana-san...go on first」

Misuzu smiled at Mana.

「...Is that okay?」

When Megu asked, Misuzu...

「In exchange...please show it to Michi」

Show to Kudou-chan?

「S-Stop it Maika! You're still a child...you're still in second year of middle school...!」

Yukino shouts.

「...I'm no longer a child, Mana is a 『woman』...!」

Mana looks down at Yukino with eyes of scorn.

「Michi...This girl is on second year middle school, a year younger than you. She has lost her virginity yesterday but...she can already please a man wonderfully...!」

Kudou-chan stares at us.

「Danna-sama should just lie down...」

...Misuzu?

「Right...Mana goes on top and accept Yoshi-kun by herself...can you do it?」
「Yes...Megu, Oneechan...!」

Mana...reached for the belly region of her bunny suit.

「Onii-chan...this clothes is used for lewd purposes. You see...there's a zipper that can be opened from the navel to the end of my butt...!」

Mana's white fingers open the zipper in front of my eyes...!
Mana's navel...and her genital becomes exposed...!

「Ufufu...Mana has it good because she has no pubic hair. Katsuko-san told me. If you have a pubic hair, it may get caught by the zipper...that's funny」

Mana's vagina between the zipper is totally wet...
Her slit is slightly open...

「Michi can you see Mana-san's genital? It's wet isn't it? This small place will be accepting all of Danna-sama...!」

「...There's no way that will go in!」

Kudou-chan...speaks as she compare my penis erect to maximum to Mana's vagina.

「It will...It has accepted it a lot of times already...Mana is a woman...!」

Mana smiles bewitchingly.

「Maika...stop...that!!!」

Yukino's hand is holding her crotch, trembling bit by bit while she screams...!

「...I'll connect with Onii-chan while wearing a bunny girl outfit...!」

Mana's aroused...

I swallow my saliva...

Mana will ride my body while wearing a bunny suit...a long rabbit ear is attached but her breasts and genital is exposed...

She'll ride my penis on cowgirl position...and push it to her vagina by herself...!

「Now...it'll come inside Mana...Uuuuu!!」

The glans pushes her vagina open...!

「...Uaaaaaaaaaaaa!!!」

The insides dripping wet with love nectar...swallows my penis...!

「...M-Maikaaa!」

「...It really went in!」

The hot rod comes inside Mana's vagina...!

「Ah...It's in...Inside Mana...it's piercing through...Onii-chan...!」

Mana puts her weight on me and swallows my whole penis...

「Ah...Ah...aaaah!」

At the moment it completely inserts to the base...the love nectar inside Mana pushed out by the penis spills out...

Even though she doesn't get wet easily on our previous sex...

Mana's womb that has accepted me completely is dripping wet.

It's dripping out with a lot of warm liquid...!

「...Fuu...fuu...fuu...」

Pushing down my stomach...Mana took a deep breath.

「...Are you okay Mana? Are you in pain?」

I ask Mana from below...

「...It's okay to be painful. Mana wants it to be painful...」

Mana told me...

「I want Mana to feel good though...」

...Mana...

「...It does. Onii-chan is connected with me after all」

Mana twists her waist while connected with me and looked at Yukino.
Then, she opened zipper in the abdomen area and showed it to Yukino.

「Take a look Yukino-san...Onii-chan had this written on me...!」

The green tattoo floats in Mana's belly...

...『宝』

「Onii-chan said that Mana is his 『treasure』...therefore 『宝』was written. This won't disappear forever...!」

Mana exposes her tattoo happily...!

「...You, even Maika!」

Yukino looks at me with eyes of anger...!

「...Yukino-san has it too!」

Megu bind Yukino's arms from behind...!

Misuzu lifted her skirt.

「What is that...that's a big panty...disgusting!」

Mana laughs at Yukino's big panty while having sex with me.

「...L-Let me go!」

Yukino rages but Megu won't let go.

Misuzu then turned over the big panty and exposed the lower abdomen...!
What's written in there is...!

An emerald green tattoo...!

...『吉田』

「Ahahahahaha...What's that...looks funny!」

Every time Mana laughs...she clamps my penis...!

「Don't look...Don't look !」

Yukino cries with her face red in shame...!

「I won't...I'm not interested in you anymore...!」

Mana tells Yukino.

「...Onii-chan, I'll start moving」

Mana smiles looking down on me.

Then she slowly raised her waist...!

「N...un...nnn...!」

Zu, zu, zu...

My penis rubs up Mana's vagina...!

「...Mana, does your inside still hurt?」

Megu asked.

「But...Onii-chan feels good this way right?」

Mana looks at me.

「...I also want Mana to feel good too」

Misuzu intervenes.

「Mana-san...try to look for the places where it would feel good when it is touched by Danna-sama's penis」

「...places that would feel good?」

「Yes...for Misuzu, the place a bit above the entrance feels that...」

「...I-is that so?」

I never knew it...

「Ah...I haven't told Danna-sama yet」

「Tell me those kind of things」

「Sorry...It makes me feel a bit embarrassed」

「There's nothing to be embarrassed between us this late」

Misuzu laughs when I say that.

「You're right...Next time, I'll tell you everything」

「Next time?...do it now」

「...Danna-sama」

「...Misuzu would be next after Mana」

Misuzu's eyes...shine in joy.

「...Yes! Please!」

「I can have it later...Yoshi-kun...!」

Megu tells Misuzu.

She must be caring about Misuzu's curfew...

Certainly, Megu can even go at night...

「That's no good...Megumi-san can be together with Misuzu. Let's be embraced together...!」

...Together?

「Let's have our genitals be compared by Danna-sama...okay?」

...That's

...I want to do that!

「Okay, I'll do you two together next...okay , Megu?!」

「...Un, if that's what Yoshi-kun wants」

Although she says that...Megu's face is lustful.

Even Megu...is expecting to have 3P together with Misuzu.

While we're talking...

Yukino...is listening in hate.

While comforting herself...!

Meanwhile...Mana twists her waist and rubs my glans to various places in her vagina.

「Aah...It feels good here!

Mana's body trembled.

「That's great...when you try to look for it, you'll find a lot of pleasurable locations...!」

「Yes...Misuzu-san...ah, ah...it feels good...what should I do, this might become a habit...!」

Megu's small body is shaking up and down while squeezing my penis...!

「...It's okay to have it as your habit...I'll be cherishing you all the time forever...!」

I also pierce Mana's body from below.

「Ahaa!...Yes...that's good...Onii-chan what should I do?...Mana will love sex...I'm becoming a lewd girl...!!!」

「Then do it...become even more lewder...!!!」

Mana's waist moves a bit more intensely...

「...Ah...Aaah...It feels good...it feels goooooood!!」

The 14 year old girl pants.

「T-This child younger than me...S-She's copulating...S-She's pleasing a gentleman...!」

Kudou-chan mutters.

「She's not just pleasing him...the person herself is feeling good too, right?」

Misuzu smiles.

「Y-yes...certainly」

「...But, it feels unfair that it's only the two of them feeling good...」

Misuzu looks at Megu.

「Megumi-san...take care of Danna-sama. I will do Mana-san...!」

That alone was enough to tell what they intend to do.

「Yes...Misuzu-san!」

Mana and I are having intense cowgirl sex...!

Megu approaches my face...!

「Ufufu...Yoshi-kun!」

Saying that...she licks my nape and ears.

「...Meguu?!」

「Does it feel good?...Let me make you feel even better...!」

Megu opens her uniform...turned over her bra and exposes her nipple.

「Here...Megu will make Yoshi-kun drink from her breasts...!」

Holding my head...she presents her nipple as if a mother making her baby drink breast milk.

「...M-Megu...!」

I suck the pointy nipples.

My cheeks enjoy Megu's soft chest mountains...

「...Aaaah!」

Meanwhile...Mana is having her nipple sucked by Misuzu.

「...Ufufu...Mana-san's nipple is still sunken. It's okay...I will suck it out right away...!」

「...Y-You can't...Misuzu-san!」

「...There's no way I can't you know?」

「That's for Onii-chan...I want Onii-chan to have it...!」

Mana shouts...!

「That's regrettable...you're right, I shouldn't steal Danna-sama's pleasure...
Then I will be licking this place instead...!」

Saying that...Misuzu's tongue crawled on Mana's armpits...!

「Iya...iya...it tickles!」

Mana's love nectar spills again...!

「...Also...let's play with your clitoris...!」

Misuzu's long fingers head to Mana's crotch...!

「Aaaaaaah...Aaaaaaah!」

Mana opened her mouth wide and raised a voice of delight...!
Her vagina tightens...!

「...How is it...it's great isn't it... Mana-san...!」

Girls know very well how to touch each other's clitoris.
On top of that...Misuzu has lesbian experience from Nagisa...!
Mana's young body shrinks in from the pleasure...!

「...I'm...about, to cum...I'll fly, fly...I'm going to flyyyyy!!」

Mana's about to be swallowed by the big wave of pleasure...!

「.....Yoshi-kun、Yoshi-kun、Yoshi-kun..... ! 」

Megu kisses me intensely...!

「...Yoshi-kun's making a pleased face...Yoshi-kun, cute...cute...!」

I can't hold back anymore...!

「...Megu...I'm...about to cum...!」

「...You're cumming right...you're going to cum inside Mana...show it, show your cumming face to Megu...Yoshi-kun's ejaculating face is the cutest...show it, show it to Megu...!」

Megu's lustful eyes...is inviting me...!

「...Danna-sama, you're about to cum...Mana-san, how about you?!」

Misuzu...rubs Mana's clitoris with her right hand with her right hand...she rubs the breast with the left hand.

Licking Mana's ears with her tongue...she whispers softly.

「...M-Mana's about to cum too...Ah, it's going up...it's going up steadily...I'm scared...I'm scared...Onii-chan...Misuzu-san...!」

「...It's okay...everyone's here with Mana-san...we'll never let you go...!」

Misuzu holds Mana's left hand.

「...Aaah...don't let go...never let go...Aaaaah!」

「...We won't...we're 『family』after all...!」

Mana sheds tears of joy from Misuzu's whisper...!

「I love you all...I love youuu...!」

Mana's insides tighten!

「...Mana...My Manaaaa!!」

「...Onii-chan!」

「...Cumming...I'm going to pour it inside Mana's womb...!」

「...Un...pour it!...Please release a lot of your hot stuff inside Manaaa...!」

Mana screams...

And Yukino who's indulging herself in masturbation comes back!

「...Y-You can't!...Don't cum inside Maika!!!」

...Too late!

「Onii-chan...Mana's flying...flying!!...Aaaaaah...Onii-chaaaaaan!!!」

「...Mana, I'm cuming! I'm releasing it!...Manaaaaa!!!」

...Dooku!

...doku!

...Dokudokun!

「...Aaaah, I-It's coming in...T-The hot stuff is spreading inside Manaaaa!!」

My semen gushes up like fountain.

Mana's whole body convulses...she's squeezing my penis...!

「...Cumming, cumming, I'm cumming...Manaaa!」

I push up my waist multiple times...I made it reach her womb until the last drop...!

「...Cute, Yoshi-kun's so cute!」

Megu kisses me gently while I ejaculate.

Misuzu doesn't stop caressing Mana's clitoris.

「...Mana-san who's taking in Danna-sama's semen is also cute...!」

Then she kisses Mana's face.

「...H-He ejaculated? I-Inside the womb of a middle school girl...!」

Kudou-chan's eyes are round...!

And, Yukino...!

「...W-What have you done!」

Yukino screams!

「W-Won't Maika get pregnant!!!」

Pregnancy...The thing Yukino is most afraid of...

Yukino feels fear from seeing her sister being creampie'd...

「...Haa, haahaa...That's okay, Yukino-san」

Mana responds to Yukino while breathing heavily.

「...I'm drinking proper contraceptives」

Yukino's stunned by that answer.

「...M-Maika?」

「...I'm not the same as Yukino-san」

I pushed up my waist again.

I pushed the last drop remaining in my urethra to Mana's womb.

「...Ahn...Onii-chan...!」

「...Mana」

「...Did Mana's body feel good?」

Mana smiles at me while we're still connected.

「...Aah」

「You came a lot inside Mana...!」

Mana kisses me.

「...I love you, Onii-chan」

「...Me too」

「...Misuzu-oneechan and Megu-oneechan, I love you」

「...Me too, Mana」

「...Misuzu too」

The four of us exchange kisses.

We change partners of kisses multiple times...

「...It's not, you're wrong...」

Yukino muttered.

「This isn't Maika!」

Yukino's frightened.

「This girl isn't my little sister...!!!」

Chapter 155: Sexual feast (Part 2)

Mana's skin is wet with sweat...

A sweet smell of milk comes from her whole body.

「...Onii-chan, Onii-chan, Onii-chan...!」

She's greedily coveting my lip like a puppy...

I'm sweating severely too.

I just smell sweaty though...

「...Onii-chan!」

Mana licks the beads of sweat on my forehead.

「Hey...Mana」

I'm surprised.

「...It tastes salty」

「Let's see?」

Misuzu also licked the sweat on my neck.

Megu...goes for my chest 「Un...Danna-sama's sweat is salty!」

「It's slightly bitter...」

The two of them looked at each other and laughed...

「Misuzu-oneechan, Megu-oneechan...You see」

Mana smiles at her two 『sisters』

「What is it...Mana-san?」

「...Can I stay connected to Onii-chan for a bit longer?」

My penis is still stuck deep inside Mana.

「Mana...doesn't want to part from Onii-chan yet...!」

「It can't be helped...just for a while then」

Megu smiled and Mana nodded...

「Thank you...Oneechan!」

The three enjoys the pleasure of sex together...
They open up completely like true 『sisters』

「Onii-chaaaaaaan!...I love you!」

The 14 year old young body bounces up on me.
She hugged me tightly.
Her cute breasts rub into my chest.
She swings on my body while hugging.
My penis is clamped inside her vagina...

「Hey...Mana...!」

...I

「Hm?...What's wrong Onii-chan?」

Mana kisses my lips while grinning.

「If you shake your body that much...I'll get big inside Mana again...!」

Mana smiled.

「...Then get big~」

...Mana~!

「You can let it out inside Mana as much as you want! Mana is Onii-chan's
『sex slave』after all...!」

Mana licks my ears.

It's a bit ticklish.

Shit...I really got erect.

If this continues...I'll go for the second round without pulling out...

「Mana...loves sex! It feels really good」

Mana tells Misuzu.

「Mana-san...it's not sex that feels good!」

「That's right...Yoshi-kun feels good!」

Megu kisses my cheek from the side...!

「Or could it be that Mana loves sex that she'll do it with men other than Yoshi-kun?」

I...

...Got shocked.

But, that's possible...

A body that learned the pleasures of sex...

Mana, Megu, or even Misuzu...

They might want to have sex with adult men with more appeal than mine.

If ever that happens.

Someone like me has no power to hold them.

「Geez, that's not true, Megu-oneechan...!」

Mana said brightly...!

「W-Why?」

I asked instinctively.

「No way...Onii-chan, are you seriously worried?」

「Yoshi-kun's a worrywart」

「Really...I do hope that you're a bit more confident with yourself...!」

...Eh?

「Mana...won't have sex with anyone but Onii-chan forever...!」

...Mana?

「Mana won't have sex with anyone but 『family』...Onii-chan is Mana's 『family』...!」

Mana...sticks herself to me.

「Me too...I give my faith to Yoshi-kun」

...Megu whispers to my left ear.

「Misuzu will die than allowing someone other than Danna-sama have my body...!」

...Misuzu whispers to my right ear.,

「...W-Why?」

I asked instinctively.

I don't have confidence in myself.

Someone like me can't bind these beauties' lives...

「Why?...Because Mana is 『family』with everyone!」

...F-Family

「Un...Megu is Yoshi-kun's wife. I'll only have Yoshi-kun for the rest of my life.」

「Misuzu too...only Danna-sama!」

「Mana is your little sister, and 『sex slave』! I will do anything Onii-chan tells me!」

But...are you okay with that?」

「Danna-sama. Aren't we a 『family』without blood connections?...!」

Misuzu said.

「Therefore...we have no choice but have sex. Sex is makes a compact relationship between men and women...someday, we'll give birth to Danna-sama's child」

「Megu will give birth...I'll become a mama of Yoshi-kun's baby!」

「Then, Mana will bear a child too...Onii-chan!」

The two beauties laugh happily.

But...I

「...You people are insane!」

Yukino criticizes us.

Un...I can understand what she's criticizing at.

What we do is ethically strange...

「That's not human-like! You people are beasts!」

...Beast.

True...I'm nothing but a beast when I copulate with beauties without discrimination.

...But.

「Even if you tell us that while you're masturbating...」

Mana tells Yukino...

Right...

Yukino's still touching her crotch...

「...Maikaa, get away from that man!」

Yukino is grinding her vagina on top of her wet panty.

Mana is showing off our connection to that woman.

That place is dripping with love nectar and semen, it sticks to my penis tightly.

「...Look, look, Yukino-san. Look...it got hard again!」

Mana bends her waist...

She rubs my penis with her vagina...

「...You want it don't you, Yukino-san?」

Mana sneers at her real sister on top of the bed.

「...Sex feels good...Onii-chan is grinding inside my belly...!」

「...Maika, stop with the perverted talk!」

Yukino's breathing is rough.

「Isn't Yukino-san the pervert here?...Aren't you aroused seeing other people have sex? You want to be violated by Onii-chan too, don't you...try being honest here」

Yukino...!

「...T-That's right! Violate me!」

She screams while shedding tears of disgrace.

「...Making my body like this...I can't hold it anymore! Make a mess out of me!」

Yukino shouts while masturbating.

Yukino's really weak to her body's desire...

But...Mana.

Moved her waist up and down and shows my penis to Yukino...

「No way!...We won't give Onii-chan to Yukino-san anymore!」

...Yukino's surprised!

「...Don't joke with me! Maika!」

Yukino's hand movement becomes even more intense.

Those eyes is staring completely at the connection of our sexual organs....!

「A bad person like Yukino-san is a waste for Onii-chan...!」

Mana...resumes her piston and restarted seriously.

「...Ahn...Ufufufu...It feels good...I love you...Onii-chan...!」

...Mana!

「...Yukino-san, Yukino-san has a boyfriend right? If you want to have sex then shouldn't you have sex with that person...!」

Mana says while moving her waist up and down slowly....

「...I broke up with him」

Yukino said in a low voice.

「Eh, what is it?...Yukino-san, I can't hear you at all?」

Mana torment's Yukino's heart.

「...I broke up with him!」

Yukino shouted loudly!

「Hee...weren't you boasting to Maika-san that he's a sportsman and a cool person?!...You said that you'll bring him to the house next time so I shouldn't be rude to him...!」

For Mana...Maika seems to be completely in her past.

Mana...has already changed her personality to Yoshida Mana...!

「...He's unpleasant more than I thought! Even though he's an idiot and selfish, he loves bathing in other people's attention...he keeps boasting that his father is a president, and his relative is a councilor, he keeps saying trivial things, he's a disgusting man...!」

Once you wake up from the love...

You'll only see the faults of your partner...!

「Hee...He's like Yukino-san!」

Mana said while bending her body and accepting the glans to her uterus.

「...What?」

Yukino barks...

「Welll...He's an idiot and selfish, he loves bathing in other people's attention? Then, she's boasting about her parents and relatives...isn't that Yukino-san like!」

The little sister's words pierces Yukin heavily.

「They often say that a lover is someone similar to yourself but...Yukino-san and her boyfriend is a couple suited for each other...!」

Mana laughs at Yukino while moving her waist.

「W-What! Even though you're doing that with that disgusting man! Even though you're a shameless woman pleased being embraced by such a vile man!」

Yukino barks with the anger from her whole body!

「...Do we suit each other?」

Mana said while slowly moving her waist.

There's sweat dripping down her valley of cute breasts...

A sexy...lewd body.

This 14 year old's young body is dancing lewdly on top of me...!

「...Y-You do...You two are a perverted couple!」

Hearing Yukino...Mana

「Thank you...Yukino-san」

Yukino's surprised.

「...Onii-chan. Yukino-san said that we suit each other...!」

Mawna looks at my face.

She happily smiles.

「I'll do my best. I'll definitely become a girl suitable for Onii-chan...therefore please don't abandon Mana...!」

...Mana

「If Onii-chan abandons me...Mana can't live anymore. As a human...as a woman...」

Mana's eyes looking up at me are wet...

「Mana...you're too good for me. You're beautiful...cute...a very good girl」
「No...Mana has always been a bad girl...!」

Mana's tears pops on my cheeks.
But still, Mana's waist doesn't stop moving.

「No...Mana's a good girl. You'll be a good girl, won't you?」

...Mana

「...I will! I'll be a good girl...so please stay with me forever!」

Mana's waist strikes against me while her tears rain down!

「...We'll be together forever...I won't let you go...Mana...!」

...I thought she's lovable.

The young second year middle school girl...

My cute bunny girl.

...Mana.

I won't let you go...!

「Hey, Maika...turn back here...Maikaaaa!」

I can hear Yukino's voice from far away.
I can only see Mana right now.
But...Mana.

「...Onii-chan, can Mana cum earlier?」

...Mana?

「Onii-chan...can cum inside Oneechan afterwards...!」

Mana...is looking around properly.
She's not drowning on her pleasure...!

「Mana feels sorry for her to have it all in her stomach...!」

Mana's smiling while crying...

「Yeah...let's do that, Mana!」

「...Onii-chan」

「...Mana, my Mana...!」

I push my waist from below.

「Aaahn...good...Onii-chan...!」

Mana...pants.

「Danna-sama...we don't mind so you can pour it inside Mana-san once again」

Misuzu says from the side.

「...But, Misuzu-oneechan」

Megu speaks to Mana having a troubled face.

「It's okay...cum together with Yoshi-kun. This is an important sex in Mana's lifetime...!」

...Megu?

...Does that mean?

「Danna-sama too, please don't hold back...please cum inside Mana-san with all your might!」

...I

「...G-Got it!」

I concentrate on my penis to ejaculate.

「...Onii-chan...you're going to cum inside Mana again?!」

「...Yeah...I'm cumming...Manaa...!」

「...I'm happy!」

Then...

Mana rises up to the limit...!

「...O-Onii-chaaan...Aaaaah, I'm about to cum...Mana's going to fly agaain!!」

Megu speaks to Mana.

「...Mana...open your eyes wide...look at Yoshi-kun...don't ever close your

eyes...!」

Misuzu whispers to me...!「」

「Danna-sama too...Please take a look at Mana-san's pleased face...!」

...I

「...Yeah, I'm looking」

「Look...Look...Take a look as Mana fly...!」

Mana's face looks in pain...!

「Cum while looking at my face...Mana, cum and show me your face...!」

「Un...take a look...I'll be taking a look at Onii-chan's pleased face...!」

We shake our bodies violently!

Mana continues shaking her young body up and down.

I pierce her up from below.

But...we're looking at each other's face.

I can clearly feel my partner rising up in pleasure...!

Mana's skin is tensing up!

「Aah...Look...take a look...Ah...C-Coming...it's comiing!」

Huge waves run through Mana's body...!

「M-Me too...I'm going to cum...Mana!」

The hot lump rises from within me...!

「...Take a look...Look at me...Onii-chaaaaan!」

「...Look at me too...Manaaaa!」

...Mana bursts out first!!!

「...Aaaaah...C-Cumiiiiiiing!!!」

The 14 year old girl convulses on top of my body...!

Her vagina clamps up and tightens...!

I'm looking at her trembling face from climax...!

Mana's eyes doesn't close either...!

Reflected in my eyes is her own face trembling from the sexual pleasure...!

「...Embarrassing...this is embarrassing...I'm being seen...my cumming face is

being seeeeen...!」

...At that moment!

My penis explodes...!

「...I-I'm cumiing, Manaaa!!」

「...Let it out, let it out inside Manaaaaaaaaa!!!」

...The cloudy liquid

...Blows out!!!

「...Aaaaaah, it's hoooot!!!」

The hot liquid pours in the womb...as I look at Mana's grimaced face!
Mana's also looking at me as I ejaculate!!

「...O-Onii-chaaaaaaaaaaaan!」

「...Manaaa!!!!」

I push up and ejaculate repeatedly...
Inside the beautiful middle school girl...

「...It's coming out, the hot stuff is coming out...I can tell, I can feel iiit!」

Girl's faces when they take in semen...is very sexy.
Mana's looking only at me while accepting my life.
I'm also looking up only at Mana.

「...You're cute...Onii-chan's face while she cums inside Mana...is very
cuteee!!!」

Mana shouts.

「Cum, let out more of iiiit...please release all of Onii-chan's hot stuf inside
Manaaa...!」

Mana's body convulsed multiple times as if she's squeezing me.
Mana's sweat falls into my body.
We're united.

We unite into one...give each other...and scramble.
That is sex.

My sex with Mana...!!!

...Before long.

Mana's body stiffened...

Then she lay down her exhausted body on top of me...

「...Haa, haa, haa」

The small body breathes heavily like she has just finished a hundred meter race.

Mana's heartbeat is beating hard...her small body transmits it.

I embraced Mana softly...

「...it felt really goooood...Onii-chaaaan...!」

Mana seeks my lips while crying tears of delight.

「...I love you, I love you so muuch...no mooore...!」

I caress Mana's hair most from sweat gently...

...Then.

I can hear a voice of hate from afar.

「...Maikaaa...you're unfair! It's just you...!」

...Yukino.

Yukino's teasing her pussy while having a furious expression...

She wasn't able to cum from looking at her sister's foolishness.

The envy and hate must've won over her lewd emotions.

「...Mana-san, are you okay now?...Can you talk?」

Misuzu speaks out from the side of the bed.

Misuzu and Megu is looking over us kindly...

Kudou-chan looks completely petrified.

「...Y-yes...Misuzu-oneechan...I'm sorry for hogging Onii-chan all by myself」

Mana replies even though she's tired out.

「It's okay...This is an important sex for Mana's life」

Megu said.

「It is so Yoshi-kun can abandon Yukino after all...」¹

...Eh?

Me?

Abandon Yukino...?

Yukino looks at me in surprise...

She even stopped her hand from masturbating...

「If you have Mana, you no longer need Yukino don't you?」²

Megu said.

「Yoshi-kun...lost his parents, he was sad...that's why he wanted Yukino...」

Megu analyzes me.

I myself don't get what's inside of me.

「But...Yoshi-kun's no longer lonely. Yoshi-kun has us as his 『family』...!」

...Megu?

「If you want the warmth of a body...you can embrace us anytime. We'll embrace you tight...just like how Yoshi-kun embraces us tightly when we feel sad, we'll embrace Yoshi-kun too...!」

Megu tells me.

「We're already a 『family』 No matter how sad, painful...we can just endure it by overlapping our skins. If Megu can't embrace you alone, then Misuzu will embrace you too. If it's still not enough, Mana too...and the other 『women』... everyone will support Yoshi-kun...therefore, Yoshi-kun can feel relieved...!」

「That's right...Danna-sama. Just like how Danna-sama does his best on making Misuzu and others happy...we also want to make Danna-sama happy. If Danna-sama tries to carry all our burdens then...we'll embrace Danna-sama with all our best!」

...Girls

「...Onii-chan」

Mana calls me.

「Earlier...Mana said 『Don't abandon me』but...I was mistaken...!」

...Mana?

「...Mana will never abandon Onii-chan. I promise to be Onii-chan's 『slave』 until I die. I swear...You can even put 『slave』tattoo on my stomach...therefore,

Onii-chan please don't abandon Mana either...!」

Mana embraces my body tightly.

「Yoshi-kun's...a 50-50...!」

...Megu?

「Our relationship isn't just given, nor it will be stolen away. We're a 『family』 that support each other and embrace each other. We'll be together forever...!」

Megu's words...

Feels like melting something frozen hard in my heart.

Slowly...and gradually...

It's melting...!

「...Yoshi-kun, it's okay already」

Megu said.

「...I'm okay...?」

「That's right, Yoshi-kun!」

「Yes...Danna-sama」

「That's right...Onii-chan」

I feel my body losing strength.

I breathe in deeply...

Then breathe out from the bottom of my belly.

...I let it out.

「Danna-sama...has been exerting himself that much...」

「He's together with us...and even having sex with us...but still」

「He's that tense...」

I don't get it for some reason but...

I feel my mind became very peaceful.

The power in my whole body is relaxing.

「Huh?...Why am I feeling suddenly relieved about everyone?」

Mana speaks amazed at me.

「Geez...Onii-chan」

...Eh?

「Didn't Onii-chan give us that sense of security?!」

...That's.

...What does that mean?

「That's right. I feel safe when I'm with Danna-sama. I can expose myself to Danna-sama. No matter what Misuzu it is, I know that Danna-sama will accept it without fail」

「That's right...we can expose our body and hearts to Yoshi-kun, we're completely naked...!」

「Nfufufu. Therefore Onii-chan...you should get naked in front of us too!」

...I

Somehow...tears well out.

「...What's wrong, Danna-sama?」

「...Yoshi-kun?」

「...Onii-chan are you okay?」

I see...I'm no longer alone.

I have a 『family』...!

「...Misuzu」

「Yes?」

「...Megu?」

「Un」

「...Mana」

「What is it...Onii-chan」

The three beauties surround me.

「...P-Please...stay with me...forever...!」

...I don't want to let go!

My...my 『family』

...I don't want to let go!

「Geez...Danna-sama, you're saying it wrong...!」

Megu said kindly.

「When you feel like that...you say it like this」

Then...Misuzu looks at me with a serious face.

「...I love you, Danna-sama」

That Misuzu...

...Kisses me.

「...I love you, Misuzu」

This time...Megu looks at me.

「...I love you, Yoshi-kun」

I kissed Megu's lips.

「...I love you, Megu」

Lastly...Mana.

「...I love you okay, Onii-chan」

Mana kisses me strongly.

「...I love you, Mana」

The three beautiful girls embrace my body.

I also embrace the three., 「...I'm happy」

Those words come out of my mouth

「There's still more...let's become even happier!」

Misuzu said.

「That's right...Katsuko-san and Nagisa-san have to be included...!」

「Nei-san too」

When Mana say that...I

「No...Nei-san is you see」

「Eh, why? Nei-san is Onii-chan's sex partner isn't she? I'm looking forward to it...having sex with Onii-chan together with Nei-san」

...Now then, what should we do?

Should I just stay silent about Nei-san being a virgin forever?

「Rather than that...Danna-sama?」

Misuzu speaks.

「...What should we do with that person?」

...Eh?

...Oh right

...Yukino.

Yukino's looking at us feeling frustrated.

She closed up her heart in silence.

Chapter 156: Sexual feast (Part 3)

「...Yoshi-kun, you don't need Yukino anymore do you?」

「Isn't that right, Onii-chan! You don't need Yukino-san anymore do you...!」

Megu and Mana say while looking down on Yukino.

...I 「...Let's leave Yukino alone for now. Rather than that」

Before I was able to answer...

Misuzu changes the subject.

「...Michi!」

Kudou-chan who's staring at us in blank surprise...

Got startled and returned to her senses.

「Ah, yes...What is it, Misuzu-sama?!」

Misuzu speaks while embracing me, naked.

「I'll be frank...join our 『family』too...!」

...That means?

...Misuzu?!

「...Uhm, what do you mean?」

Kudou-chan's puzzled.

「Misuzu has always liked you since we were young」

Misuzu made a shocking confession...

「Misuzu's very cute...your earnest and hardworking attitude is very wonderful
I think...Misuzu has always wanted to make you her 『little sister』」

Hearing Misuzu...Kudou-chan.

「No way...I'm not cute」

Mana speaks to Kudou-chan who's looking down.

「What are you saying?...Kudou-san's very cute!」

「Un...I think so too」

...Megu also smiles at Kudou-chan.

Misuzu looks at me.

「...Un...I think that you're cute」

Kudou-chan looks at me...

「Even Yoshida-sama's saying that...!」

It's getting too long.

「No, it's true...If Kudou-chan's not a beauty then who's a beauty!」

「...Eh?」

「When I first saw you, I thought that you're really a cute girl! A very beautiful girl...!」

「Look, Michi...Even Danna-sama is saying that...!」

Kudou-chan's Japanese doll-like face turned red.

「But...I'm a woman of valor」

...I

「There's no problem living as a martial arts girl and a beauty. Rather, being a beautiful warrior...isn't that perfect?!」

Kudou-chan looks at me.

「...T-Those kind of things...are entrusted to my Ane」

...Ane?

「Michi's onee-san, Haruka-san is the top on Japan's high school Karate. As a beautiful Karate girl, she has been on the mass media multiple times」

Misuzu said.

Oh...I feel like I've heard about this.

『The beautiful Karate girl, Kudou Haruka』...so she's Kudou-chan's sister.

「But...Misuzu thinks that Michi is better than Haruka-san. As a warrior, and as a woman...」

「That's not...true...」

Kudou-chan looks down.

「No...Michi will rise up three years later...!」

Kudou-chan looks up when Misuzu said that.

「...Impossible!」

「...It's not!」

Misuzu smiles suspiciously at Kudou-chan.

「If Michi becomes our 『family』...then we'll polish you with all our power」

...Polish?

「...B-But」

Kudou-chan's puzzled

「I'm a...Kudou style¹」

Err...

Kudou-chan...does that mean?

「I'm sure I can't walk the road of a martial artist like mother, brother and sister」

She knows that Kudou style has various problems in it.

「That's Michi's belief...」

Misuzu said.

「Above all...Michi likes Kudou style don't you?」

Kudou-chan...

「I do love Kudou style...but I think I will be the last to practice Kudou style in my generation」

「...Why?」

Misuzu asks Kudou-chan further.

「Michi...can love only women?」

Surprised, Kudou-chan looks at Misuzu.

「...Yes, Misuzu-sama」

Kudou-chan's a lesbian?

「You see...Misuzu's the same」

...Eh?

...Misuzu?

「...Yes...I think that Misuzu-sama has the same sexual disposition as me...but」

Kudou-chan looks at me bitterly.

「Misuzu still likes women better...Michi」

Misuzu told Kudou-chan.

...That means?

Misuzu looks at me.

「Danna-sama...Misuzu is born under Kouzuki house...I do respect father and grandfather...but I can't accept their relationship with women by any means.」

Misuzu speaks to me while laughing.

「Therefore...Misuzu thought that she won't be loving men. The act of sex with man...is absolutely filthy, I thought」

I-Is that so?...

「When grandfather has decided Misuzu's fiance...I didn't look at the other party as a love partner but only as a partner to give me a child. To be honest...I'm still bad with men even now. I'm afraid to have them approach me. I feel nauseous when they touch me...even grandfather and my father...!」

Misuzu said while snuggling to me.

「...B-But, Misuzu」

Misuzu's white hand is firmly holding my body.,
Misuzu smiled then said.

「Danna-sama's an exception...Misuzu's not scared of Danna-sama. Danna-sama's very cute...I think of you dearly. I love you. I love you so much. I feel safe when I'm with Danna-sama」

...I

「...Misuzu won't have sex with anyone but Danna-sama. My body has become like that. Therefore...I won't bear any child but Danna-sama's!」

...Misuzu.

「...Megumi-san, Mana-san...Misuzu is actually that kind of woman. Can you accept Misuzu even if she's like this?」

...Megu.

「I'm just like you. I was born in a brothel...therefore...I was ready to become a prostitute someday...!」

Megu looks at me.

「But still...I'm really no good with men. Therefore, I never had any relationships with men until this year. Yoshi-kun's my first time on everything...! If it wasn't for Yoshi-kun, I think I won't have sex...」

「...Why me?」

「Because Yoshi-kun's kind」

...Me?

...Kind?

「You never pressure girls. And yet...you always try to answer to our hops with all your might. You don't lie...and you treasure us. I love it...there's no one like Yoshi-kun...!」

Megu rubs her body to me...

「I was interested in boys but, I was always in an all girl's school...I never met one until now.」

...Mana?

「I'm also no good. I want Onii-chan. I'm a 『slave』 that's to be embraced by Onii-chan forever after all!」

Mana turns her hand behind my back.

「Even if Misuzu-oneechan is a lesbian, that's completely okay! Misuzu-oneechan is beautiful...do you want Mana and Misuzu-oneechan do lewd things?」

Mana smiles.

「...We'll do it only in front of Onii-chan. We'll never cheat on you...!」

Mana looks at Misuzu.

「Mana...are you a lesbian too?」

When I asked, Mana...

「No way...But look...the『family』has to get together, right?! Mana...will do anything for the sake of the『family』」

Mana looks at Kudou-chan.

「Kudou-san, join the『family』too! We have Misuzu-oneechan, Megu-oneechan...lots of beauties. Oh, there's a very beautiful person like Nei-san too. Everyone will become Kudou-san's『family』let's love each other!」

Kudou-chan...

「...I'm really thankful for your offer, but...」

She looks at me.

「...are you scared of Danna-sama?」

Misuzu asks.

「...I'm bad with men」

「...Even Danna-sama?」

Kudou-chan trembles when Misuzu asked.

「Michi...do you understand? Danna-sama is naked right now He's revealing his male genitalia. And yet, why are you fine being on the same room with him?」

「...That is, I am Misuzu-sama's guard」

「...I wonder if that's true?」

Misuzu presses Kudou-chan.

「...Danna-sama's not scary isn't he?」

I'm not scary?

「Misuzu's Danna-sama will never harm Michi. He won't betray you either. He

doesn't lie. He doesn't hold any evil feelings...you do know that don't you?」

「...Yes」

Kudou-chan looks at me.

...Stare.

「...Why is it? Yoshida-sama?」

Kudou-chan asks me with serious eyes.

...I

「...I think of you as my ally, I guess?」

「...Eh?」

「I understand that Kudou-chan treats Misuzu importantly...you're an『ally』so I trust you...isn't that obvious?」

Yeah...Kudou-chan

Is a good girl,

「...What about Michi?」

Misuzu asks.

「I...I also trust Yoshida-sama」

She trusts me?

「As far as I can see...Yoshida-sama does love Misuzu-sama and the others seriously...and I can't sense any evil」

She glanced at Yukino...

「Only his feelings towards this 『enemy』...is what I don't understand」

Yukino's...on the floor closing her eyes.

Oh...I feel like I've seen this.

I remember now...Yukino and Mana's mother in the principal's room.

That auntie closed her mind like this way.

「Sorry...I myself don't understand what I feel about Yukino either...」

I answered honestly.

「...You're really an honest one」

Kudou-chan said.

「Then...what would you do, Michi?」

Misuzu asks once again.

「If you join our 『family』...I think we'll be solving the problem of Kudou style's successor」

...That means?

「...Misuzu-sama, are you saying that I should bear Yoshida-sama's child?」

「That's right...get pregnant, Michi. Of course...that will be for the years to come」

This cute small doll-like girl...
Will bear my child...?

「...Certainly, it's not a bad idea. I don't think I have any partner if I bear a child...and it's possible to deepen my relationship with Misuzu-sama, I think it is a very joyous offer...」

Misuzu interrupts Kudou-chan from speaking.

「...Michi, stop lying to yourself!」

Kudou-chan looks at Misuzu in surprise.

「Misuzu will also reveal her heart to you」

Misuzu stares at Kudou-chan with a serious look...

「Misuzu likes you...Michi does like Misuzu too, don't you?」

...Kudou-chan

「Yes...Misuzu-sama」

「...Do you want to embrace Misuzu's body?」

「...I...I want to be loved by Misuzu-sama」

She has admitted her thoughts to Misuzu.

「Misuzu also loves Michi, I always do」

「...Misuzu-sama!」

「Therefore...Michi should give her virginity to Danna-sama too」

...Misuzu!

「Become Danna-sama's 『woman』 just like Misuzu. That's an order...!」
「...Yes, certainly」

...I

「Wait a moment Misuzu! Don't make such orders!」

That's strange.

「Kudou-chan is Kudou-chan...being loved by Misuzu and becoming my 『woman』 is a completely different topic!」

Kudou-chan looks at me in surprise.

「Misuzu's hurrying up too much...you can take it slowly don't you?...We still don't know each other that much. We can just know each other slowly...then, if we really are interested in each other, that's when we make her join the 『family』...we can just take it easy. But still, we're 『allies』...I also think of Kudou-chan as my 『relative』 No no, there's no need to have sex!」

Misuzu laughs.

「...Misuzu?」

「How about that, Michi? Danna-sama's that kind of person」

Kudou-chan speaks.

「...So there's a man like him existing」

...Eh?

Was I being tested by Misuzu?!

「Lastly...I will ask Danna-sama」

Misuzu looks at me.

「Please answer honestly as a man. Please don't cover it up...just tell the truth」

...Misuzu?

「...Danna-sama, as a man, what do you think of Michi? Does Michi have the charm of a woman that makes Danna-sama want to have sex with her?」

...Sex with Kudou-chan?

I look at Kudou-chan again.

Petite...too cute, a beautiful girl...

「Isn't that obvious? I want to」

I answered honestly.

「...In what way do you want her? Does Michi have enough sex appeal as a woman?」

...That's just.

「...Isn't that obvious that she's well gifted of it? I want to embrace her! I want to have sex with Kudou-chan! I want Kudou-chan's virginity! I want to ejaculate a lot inside Kudou-chan!」

I let out my desires!

I want to penetrate this petite body!

I want to dye her white with my semen!

「...I want to make her a 『woman』only for me!!!」

Misuzu embraces my body tightly.

「Okay...That's enough!」

...Misuzu?

「You see...Michi. Danna-sama imagines having sex with Michi and his penis got erect...!」

...Right.

My penis is erect.

...Towering.

「This got hard because I thought of Michi!」

Kudou-chan looks at my penis.

The swelling maroon glans.

「...Michi got wet too, didn't you?」

Surprised...Kudou-chan holds down her crotch.

「...We'll stop here for now. It is as Danna-sama says...let's take it slowly. We'll postpone Michi's virginity offered to Danna-sama for later...!」

Misuzu looks at me, smiling suspiciously.

「Today...take a look at Misuzu and others be loved by Danna-sama. Then, imagine...if he does the same thing to you, how much it feels good...!」

Misuzu's leaning on me.

「...Danna-sama, pee」

...Eh?

「Misuzu wants to pee. Danna-sama...look at Misuzu peeing...I want you to look...!」

She doesn't seem to have the intention of holding back to Kudou-chan and other 『women』...

Misuzu's...fawning on me with all her best.

「Got it...Misuzu. Mana, where's the toilet?」

Mana...

「It's the end of the corridor...」

She's surprised at Misuzu fawning over me.

「Danna-sama...carry me. Carry me to the toilet...」

「Yeah...sure」

I lift Misuzu's soft body.

「...So it was okay to fawn over that much」

Mana mutters.

「So Onii-chan allows that」

No...It's nothing.

「Hurry up...Danna-sama, it's about to leak...!」

「Yeah...Got it」

It would be troublesome if it leaks out...!

「Wait, Yoshi-kun!」

Megu stands up

「I'll do it too. Look at Megu too...!」

...Megu?

「Ah, Onii-chan...Mana's going to pee too!」

...Mana?

They're even having rivalry on this kind of thing...

「Then...should we show off our peeing to Danna-sama together?!」

Misuzu told everyone while being carried by me.



In the end...the toilet is so narrow that we came to the neighboring toilet.
Me, Misuzu, Megu, Mana...Kudou-chan too, and for some reason, Yukino.

「...I brought here since I had the opportunity」

Is what Kudou-chan said.

「Then...Misuzu will start the show!」

Misuzu...took off her panty while smiling.

Naked...she leaned on the wall of the wash place and opened her legs wide.

「Can you see...Danna-sama?」

Misuzu speaks bashfully.

「Yeah...I can see it well」

Misuzu's soft and fluffy body.

I can see her plump cutely shaped mound of venus.

A slit with no hair.

「Then...I'll start peeing...Ahn!」

...Chorochochoro

Urine comes out of her slit releases a steam...

Before long, it makes a splendid arch.

「Aaahn...It's embarrassing, Danna-samaaa!」

Misuzu trembles in shame.

「Misuzu...loves being watched peeing right?」

「Danna-sama...it's just Danna-sama! Misuzu wants Danna-sama to see all of her embarrassing figures!」

Misuzu shouts while releasing hot urine.

「...Misuzu-sama looks so happy」

Kudou-chan mutters.

Before long...Misuzu's peeing is over.

「Aha...it felt good. I feel refreshed, Danna-sama!」

Misuzu said and kissed me.

「Next would be me」

Megu comes before me.

「...Yoshi-kun, please」

「...Yeah」

I kneel before Megu and took off her panty.

Megu looks down on me bashfully.

「...Why is Danna-sama taking off Megumi-san's panty?」

Misuzu who has a refreshed face from urinating asks Megu.

「Yoshi-kun's taking off my underwear. We'll definitely do it when we're together. It's also Yoshi-kun's job to put it on. Right...Yoshi-kun?」

Megu happily said.

「Ahn...That's great! Misuzu wants to do that too! Danna-sama!」

Misuzu fawns on me.

「Got it...next time」

The naked Megu opens her legs wide.

「This is so embarrassing...Yoshi-kun...!」

「Megu...you're cute」

「Want to see Megu pee?」

「...I want to」

「Then...I will do it」

Megu's body trained by the track and field is firm and tight.

She's exposing her vagina and anus before my eyes...

Megu's piss come out...!

「...aaaaaahn!」

Jororororororo!...The hot water spills out...!

The kind and honor student Megu...is peeing!!!

「...This is too embarrassing. This might become a habit」

Megu mutters.

「It's okay even if you do...I'll watch you everyday」

「Geez...baka」

「Misuzu is being seen everyday...Megumi-san」

「I don't want to become like Misuzu-san!」

Megu endures the shameful urination show with a red face...

「You're cute, Megu...do it from time to time」

「Un...I can show it to you if it's just once in a while」

I kiss Megu who's still peeing.

「...Love, I love you Yoshi-kun...I love you !」

Feeling too embarrassed...Megu clings to me.

「Geez Megu-oneechan...You'll pee on Onii-chan if you do that!」

「Ah...Sorry」

「I don't mind...I'm naked either way. This is the bathroom...also, Megu's pee isn't dirty」²

「...Yoshi-kun!」

Megu's peeing ends too.

「Next would be my turn!」

Mana comes in front...

Mana has been naked since a while ago.

「Should I not wear panties? Then wear miniskirts. Onii-chan can just always turn my skirt up and put his penis inside Mana anytime...!」

Mana smiles lewdly.

「Mana, you don't get Yoshi-kun's feelings」

Megu said.

「Yoshi-kun loves taking of panties.」 He always takes of my panty happily...!」
「Eh... Is that so?」

Mana looks at me.

「...Yeah, that might be the case」

I answered...

「Then, let's do half-half...Onii-chan can check whether Mana is wearing panties for the day...!」

...Mana

「If Onii-chan doesn't check it...I'll go to school without wearing any panties!」

That's a problem.

I need to check it...

「Onii-chan, put it on me when I don't wear one. Ah...violate me once before putting on my panty...Mana wants to go to school filled with Onii-chan's semen...!」

Mana...crawls on all fours in the bathroom.

「...I'll pee like a puppy!」

Mana lifts her leg and pees like a dog.

「...nnn!」

Pee comes out from her small slit.

「...Can you see, Onii-chan?!」

...Mana's young body.

Her 14 year old body is still growing.

Her breast and ass is starting to swell out softly.

Just a day after she lost her virginity...

An arc of water drips flies out from her little swollen vagina.

「I can see it...Mana!」

Her plump ass...and even anus...I can see it.

「...It's true, this is so embarrassing...!」

Mana's also aroused from her first urination show.

「You're cute...Mana.」

「I've really become a 『slave』after all...I'll do anything Onii-chan orders me...!」

Mana said.

Then...Mana's urination ends.

「Now...let's clean up」

When It try to flush with water...

...Kudou-chan.

「I haven't peed yet!」

Chapter 157: Sexual feast (Part 4)

「...My, Michi wants to show off her peeing too?」

Misuzu asks Kudou-chan.

「Yes...Please take a look at my urinating figure!」

...Kudou-chan?

「...Are you sure?」

「I am everyone's 『Ally』after all」

No...I don't think you need to show off something foolish because we're your 『ally』

「Also...I want to be seen by Misuzu-sama...!」

Kudou-chan looks at Misuzu with passionate eyes.

As expected...This girl loves Misuzu.

「Yes...Let's take a look」

Misuzu smiles at Kudou-chan like a master.

Kudou-chan goes in front.

She puts her hands under her skirt...

「Michi...let Danna-sama take off your panty」

Kudou-chan's hand stopped.

「...Misuzu-sama, that is」

Kudou-chan's frightened.

「If possible...I would like Misuzu-sama's hands」

Kudou-chan asks for salvation from Misuzu.

...But.

「Danna-sama's hand is Misuzu's hand...think of it like that」

Misuzu flatly said.

「...But」

「Misuzu's mind and body already belongs to Danna-sama...if you are prepared to belong to Misuzu...then know that Misuzu belongs to Danna-sama...!」

...Kudou-chan

「...Certainly」

Kudou-chan looks at me.

「...Yoshida-sama...please」

She lifted her own skirt.

...I'm surprised.

Contrary to her cute look...she's wearing a mature underwear.

A black lace panty...

Her thin thighs is wrapped by a garter stocking where the black leather case for the special baton is wrapped with.

The petite and cute Kudou-chan and the black panty's...is quite obscene.

「...Danna-sama, please!」

Misuzu's urging me to 『Hurry up and take it off』

...I 「...Oh, sure」

I stretch my hand on Kudou-chan's trembling waist.

「...Kudou-chan, I'm taking it off」

「...Yes」

I put my hand on her smooth looking lace panty.

Then...it goes beyond Kudou-chan's round ass...

The panty pulls down smoothly.

Kudou-chan's slit doesn't have any hair.

Pubic hair doesn't suit this petite beauty.

「...Please don't look」

Kudou-chan says with a trembling voice.

「Michi...you should say "take a look"」

Misuzu's 『instruction』 enters however.

「Y-Yes...P-Please take a look」

...I

「...It's very beautiful...Kudou-chan」

「Please don't say that...!」

Kudou-chan's face turns red in embarrassment 「...How is it? Danna-sama's not scary is he?」

Misuzu smiles at Kudou-chan.

「He's not scary...but it's embarrassing...」

Misuzu smiles.

「The embarrassment feels thrilling doesn't it? Michi...your pussy is wet isn't it?」

Kudou-chan...

「...It's wet」

Certainly...there's thick liquid shining in Kudou-chan's slit.

「You're a lewd girl...are you aroused?」

「...Yes」

Kudou-chan's trembling like a kitten...

「Kudou-chan...raise your right leg」

Getting across the leather case in her thighs...the panty has lowered until her ankle 「...Like this?」

First, she raised her right foot...then the left...

Kudou-chan's small black panty is now in my hand.

「Michi...when Misuzu is with Danna-sama, her peeing figure must definitely be seen by him. From now on, Michi will do it as well...okay?」

Misuzu tells Kudou-chan

「...Y-Yes」

Kudou-chan nods small.

「Also...just like Megumi-san, Misuzu's underwear management will be done by Danna-sama. Michi will do it as well」

「I'm going to leave putting up and down underwear to Yoshida-sama...?!」

Kudou-chan's surprised...

「...Any objections?」

Kudou-chan speaks to me with a red face.

「...Yoshida-sama, my best regards」

「Y-Yeah...got it. Leave it to me」

I answered that for now.

「Then...urinate」

Ordered by Misuzu...Kudou-chan crouches and makes an M shape...!

「...Excuse me」

...Then.

Water droplets spill out.

「...Michi, what are you getting nervous of!? You're holding down your stomach too much!」

Misuzu scolds her loudly...!

「Y-Yes...I'm very sorry...!」

She answers, but...her body's still stiff.

Her pee doesn't come out.

「...Kudou-chan, relax」

I tell her.

「...Yoshida-sama?」

Kudou-chan looks at me.

「Take a deep breath...breathe in...!」

Kudou-chan breathes in.

「Then...slowly breathe out...haaa...!」

Kudou-chan's pee comes out as she breathes out...

...Shaaaaaa!

Warm water draws an arch coming from Kudou-chan's slit...

「Aaaaah...embarrassing...it's embarrassing ...!」

Kudou-chan trembles in shame.

「I...can't be a bride anymore...」

Misuzu then told her.

「It's okay, Michi...I'll be having you...!」

「...Misuzu-sama!?」

Kudou-chan looks up at Misuzu.

「You'll become my 『little sister』...Danna-sama's 『woman』...Okay, Michi?」

...Kudou-chan doesn't answer.

Before long...she has finished urinating.

「...I-it's done」

Kudou-chan speaks in embarrassment but...Misuzu.

「Is it really done?」

「Y-Yes」

Kudou-chan's puzzled.

「Open your slit and let Danna-sama check it whether all of it went out...!」

...That's!

「...I can't」

「Why can't you do it?」

Misuzu smiles suspiciously...

「...It's embarrassing」

Misuzu goes to the trembling Kudou-chan.

「...Then, Misuzu will open it」

Misuzu kneels in front of Kudou-chan whose legs are M-shaped...

「You mustn't, Misuzu-sama...it's dirty...!」

Having Misuzu touch her crotch wet with pee...Kudou-chan's red to her ears...

「It's okay...there's nothing dirty on Michi's body. You're pure, Michi...!」

「Misuzu-sama」

「That's why...have Danna-sama stain you」

「...Stain?」

「That's right...you can't be an adult if you stay pure. Misuzu also got stained. Michi...don't you want to devote your purity on the same person Misuzu gave to?」

Misuzu suggests having sex with me again...

「...I」

「...Scared?」

「...Yes」

「It's okay...there's no need to hurry. But...Michi's purity is Misuzu's present to Danna-sama. Misuzu will be watching over. You'll be a 『woman』 in front of my eyes...earlier than Haruka-san...!」

「...Onnee-sama?」

「Didn't I tell you?...You are a much more wonderful woman than Haruka-san. No...Misuzu and Danna-sama will definitely make it...!」

Kudou-chan seems to have an inferiority complex against her sister...
Misuzu seems to know that very well.

「I...can't win against my sister」

Kudou-chan said sadly.

「Misuzu...thought of that as well. Towards Ruriko-san...」

Misuzu talks about her thought to her cousin.
Ruriko-san is a daughter of the brother of Misuzu's father.
She's the direct successor of Kouzuki family.
Misuzu seems to be holding an inferiority complex towards that girl.

「Ruriko-san's a perfect person...Misuzu has already given up on matching her.
But...It's different now」

「...Misuzu-sama」

「Misuzu has Danna-sama. Danna-sama has made me a 『woman』...and taught the pleasures of a 『woman』 I am confident now...」

「Why?」

Kudou-chan asks Misuzu.

「We have bonds...Danna-sama will never betray Misuzu. He'll always love Misuzu. Misuzu loves him too. My chest feels hot just with that thought. I'm not scared of anything...Ruriko-san doesn't have such a lovely bond...!」

...Misuzu.

「Misuzu has Danna-sama! No...because Danna-sama is here, I have a lot of 『Elder sisters』and『little sisters』 They're people I'm much more intimate, lovely, and trustworthy than Ruriko-san who's a blood relative...! Misuzu treasures and loves this 『family』more than Kouzuki house!」

Misuzu smiles at Kudou-chan.

「...Therefore, Michi should join in our 『family』too」

「...But」

Kudou-chan's still hesitating.

「I spoke too much...anyway, show me your purity, Michi」

Misuzu opens Kudou-chan's slit with her thin fingers.

Her vagina's hot and wet.

The love nectar is dripping down.

「...You're easy to get wet, Michi」

「...Please don't say it, Misuzu-sama」

Kudou-chan's too embarrassed.

「...I can see it. The proof of your purity」

Deep in her open vagina...I see a thin pink hymen.

「...aaaaah」

Kudou-chan's in disarray from the shame.

「Danna-sama...please take a look」

Misuzu opens and displays Kudou-chan's slit towards me.

「...I can see it」

「...I-It's embarrassing...It's so embarrassing I want to die...!」

「...Michi, have you ever shown your virginity to a man?」

「...There's no way I would」

「...Just Danna-sama?」

「...Just Yoshida-sama」

「Well then...you have no choice but to give your virginity to Danna-sama, right?」

「Aaaah...yes」

Kudou-chan looks down and nods.

...That girl

Misuzu kisses Kudou-chan...

「...Misuzu-sama?」

Kudou-chan's surprised.

「...You did your best. That's all for today」

She caress Kudou-chan's hair kindly.

「...Misuzu-samaaa...!」

Kudou-chan clings to Misuzu in tears.

Misuzu embraces that small body...

「...Cute. You're cute Michi」

「...I love you, I really love you Misuzu-samaaa

「Misuzu also loves you」

「...Aaaah...Misuzu-samaaaa!」

Misuzu gently caresses the crying girl...

...Hm?

Looking at the two, my penis went erect...

Mana's sucking it...?

「...Mana?」

Mana separates her lips from the glans she's sucking...

「Onii-chan...aroused? You want to cum again?」

The 14 year old small devil smiles suspiciously
...I 「...Please use me」

A dark voice comes from the bottom of the earth.
Yukino...holds down her crotch, trembling 「I can't hold it anymore! Rape me!...
Isn't it okay already! Don't tease me!」

Yukino's half-frenzied.
Crawling on the floor masturbating...her dark eyes look up at me.

「I beg you! Hollow out my insides! Violate me!...That's right, I'm no good if it's
not you! I dream of it every night! I always see a dream of being raped by you!
It's always you! Even when I touch myself, I imagine you making a mess out of
me! You made this body of mine like this so take responsibility! Do me with
your penis!!!」

I think she originally has a horny constitution.
Yukino...inherits the blood of Shirasaka Sousuke.
And because of the thorough rapes over the past few days...
Yukino's body has broken from the sexual pleasure...
Yukino can no longer go back.
She'll just drown in sex...
Furthermore, because Misuzu is 『training』 Kudou-chan...
Yukino's sexual feeling is set on fire...

「...Speaking of which, Yukino-san's the only one who haven't shown herself
pee?」

Mana said while touching my penis.

「No...I've seen Yukino pee before already」

I tell Mana...

「Eh...When?」

「Just days ago...Katsuko-nee forced Yukino to show herself pee, but before
that」

...Err

「...What's wrong, Onii-chan?」

Mana asks.

「Katsuko and I peed on Yukino」

「...You peed, on Yukino-san?」

「Yeah...we poured it on her rather than soaking」

「Amazing...as expected of Katsuko-san!」

Mana's impressed.

「Ah...Then, I should've peed on Yukino-san as well」

...Mana

Mana's feeling of being Yukino's sister has already become thin...

She only sees Yukino as 『enemy』

「...Maika, what are you saying!」

Yukino shouts at Mana...

「Huh?...Don't you want to be peed on? Perverted Yukino-san...?」

When Mana said...Yukino.

「...Eh, I'm not a pervert...!」

She shivers in humiliation from her sister's horrible words.

「So you're not a pervert...then, you don't need to be raped by Onii-chan then...!」

「...M-Maika!」

Yukino's at loss.

I look at Yukino's uniform.

Her uniform's not dirty with urine right now.

We have to make Yukino feel more humiliation in her uniform...

「Then...Next would be Megu-oneechan and Misuzu-oneechan's turn to receive Onii-chan's sperm! Shouldn't Yukino-san just be on the end of the line? Yukino-san's turn might not come at all though...!」

Mana laughs at her sister.

「But, it's okay isn't it...Yukino-san loves masturbating after all...!」

Yukino shouts!

「I can't be satisfied with my hands! No matter how many times I do it!」

...Yukino, you.

「...I want to be violated! I want a penis! I want to be made a mess by that man!」

Yukino wriggles on the bathroom floor.

Looking at Yukino...Megu 「...Stay in the line, Yukino. Next would be Misuzu-san and I」

Megu won't allow Yukino's selfishness

「You should just watch us make love with each other...!」



Now then...As ordered by Minaho-neesan, the plan is to have sex with Megu in Yukino's room, but...

「S-Stop! Don't enter my room without permission...!」

The woman who was shouting 「Rape me!」with such passion earlier is protesting in rampage as soon as we begin moving to her room.

「...Why does she hate it so much?」

When I ask Mana...

「Because...Yukino-san's room is dirty」

...Eh?

「I'm opening it...Onii-chan!」

Mana opens the door to Yukino's room...!

「...Stop it! Maikaa!」

...Gachari

...The door opens

「...The hell's this?!」

...What a disastrous scene

Or rather...it's filled with clothes.

Even though Yukino only has one body...

Why does she need this much clothes...?!

Also...bags.

The shoes and sandals are rolling around too...

「The one's on the floor are just bought but not worn...Yukino-san's the type that would buy without thinking」

Mana explains in an amazed tone.

Yeah...Yukino.

I think it's no good to waste money...

Also...what's all these clothes you took off?

「I want to clean up this room」

Megu mutters

For a girl who loves cleanliness as she has lived without making any waste...this room must be on a different dimension for her.

I look around this room.

As expected, on the desk, the study articles are there...

There's a mountain of fashion magazines on the wall...

There's a surprising amount of cosmetics in front of the mirror...

Err...Yukino, you're 16 aren't you?

「I never knew her appearance apart from school...」

She's only on her school uniform...and of course, cosmetics are forbidden」

「So Yukino's this kind of girl」

Mana answers my mutter.

「Yeah...she's a fashion idiot. Yukino-san always invests her pocket money and new year's money all on western clothing and cosmetics...she even has 4 times pocket money as Maika-san」

...4 times?

「...Why 4 times?」

She's having 4 times the pocket money of a second year middle school girl...?!

「Yukino-san's good at talking at her parents. 『I'm a high school student now so I have a lot of acquaintances』or something then she'll receive 80k yen every month since April...!

80 thousand yen...!

If it was Meiji era, you can buy a house with that...!

Or rather...

「...You also get 20k yen a month?」

「...Eh?!」

Mana looks at me.

「...I can't give you that much pocket money...!」

When I say that...Mana.

「...Onii-chan.」

She embraces my body tightly...

「I don't need money...just let me stay together with you」

...Mana

「...I love you, Onii-chan」

Mana kisses my cheeks...

「You even worry about me that much...Mana's already prepared for it」

「But...I don't want you to live an inconvenient life」

「Mana doesn't want to bother Onii-chan with that...!」

「...Mana」

Megu turns to me.

「Yoshi-kun...I'll also work part time. I'll work out Mana's pocket money」

「...Megu, But」

「Mana is my 『little sister』 Let me do something oneechan like...!」

...Megu

「...This room has a bad atmosphere doesn't it? Does it have proper ventilation?」

Misuzu said.

「I don't think so...Yukino-san has closed herself in this room and masturbated the whole day yesterday and the day before」

Mana answers.

「Let's go back to Maika-san's room...this room is filthy」

Yukino...your sister is saying 「filthy」...

...Ah

Yukino's already gone limp...

It must've been a shock to have this disastrous scene be shown...



Once again...we go back to Maika's room.

Mana brought drinks and glasses from kitchen.

Cold tea and orange juice.

「Here...drink some too, Yukino」

When I suggest it...

「I don't need it...leave me alone」

Yukino turned her face away.

「Danna-sama...」

Misuzu approaches me.

「...What's wrong?」

Misuzu...

「Can I do lewd things to Megumi-san?」

...Eh

「Misuzu wants to do Megumi-san. In front of Danna-sama...!」

Misuzu looks at Megumi.

「Then...afterwards, we line up and have Danna-sama ravish us. I would like Danna-sama to taste the difference between Misuzu and Megumi-san's body」

...I\

「...Megu, are you okay with that?」

「Does Yoshi-kun want to see it? Me and Misuzu having sex?」

Megu asks.

「...Yeah. I want to see. You two are my 『women』 I want to see my 『women』 making love with each other...!」

The two are different types of beauties...

「...Then, I'll do it」

Megu said bashfully

「Michi should take a good look too...」

Misuzu tells Kudou-chan

「When Michi becomes Danna-sama's 『woman』...Michi will be embraced in such a way as well. Let me tell you but Misuzu won't do anything shameful but in front of Danna-sama. I can embrace Michi too but only with Danna-sama watching over...!」

Kudou-chan

「Yes...Understood」

She nods small...

This must be a part of Misuzu's 『training』...



The naked Misuzu and Megu rides on Maika's bed...

Megu's under and Misuzu's on top.

「It's Megumi-san's first time on Yuri?...This time, please leave everything to Misuzu...!」

Misuzu tells Megu.

「Yes...my best regards...!」

Megu seems to be nervous

「...Megumi-san」

「...Yes?」

「When Misuzu first saw you...I thought I wanted to do Megumi-san...!」

「...Misuzu-san?」

「...I'm sorry for being a lewd girl」

「It's okay...We're both Yoshi-kun's 『women』aren't we?」

Megu said.

「...Let's get along」

Misuzu kisses Megu...!

「...Ahn!」

Misuzu rubs Megu's breasts.

「...Megumi-san's beautiful」

「...Misuzu-san's much more beautiful」

Megu also bites Misuzu's ear

「...Ahn!」

Misuzu pants.

「Yoshi-kun...can you see?」

「Yeah...I can see it」

I answered.

「Megu's not a lesbian...so if I don't feel Yoshi-kun watching, it would be unbearably shameful...!」

...Megu

「Misuzu's a bit of a lesbian but I feel aroused from Danna-sama's gaze... Danna-sama...!」

「What is it...Misuzu?」

「We're not cheating on you. We'll only do this in front of Danna-sama...」

「I know...both of you are my cute『women』...!」

My penis is already on it's maximum erection.

「...Mana will be sucking it!」

Mana sucks up my dick.
She wets it with her warm saliva...

「Megumi-san...I'll be licking your breasts」
「Yes...please」

Misuzu licks Megu's nipples.

「Aaahn...it feels good!」

Megu trembles in pleasure
Hearing that voice...Yukino crawls her fingers to her crotch again...
...It seems that she can't endure it.
She'll reap it no matter how much she's cornered.
Looking at Yukino's state...
She should be driven thoroughly now.
Make Yukino a real sex slave.
No...not just a sex slave.
Make her mad and fill her head with only being violated by me...
Unable to feel it on anything but rape, make her fall to a lewd girl...

...Her body remodeling was over.
...Next would be her heart.

That I think that is Minaho-neesan's revenge.
Minaho-neesan...wants to show Shirasaka Sousuke's beloved daughter...turning
to a perverted nympho that's beyond saving...
That's why she's making her fall that far.

「...Aaah, Misuzu-san...Aaahn!」

Misuzu is licking Megu's genital with her tongue.
As if a puppy licking milk...

「Does it feel good...Megumi-san?!」
「It feels good...Yoshi-kun!」

In Megu's heart...it's always me.
She's being embraced by Misuzu because I'm watching.
Misuzu is the same 「...Danna-sama, Megumi-san's juice is very delicious!」

Showing it to me...she attacks Megu with all her might 「...Onii-chan, it's delicious, Onii-chan's penis is delicious.」

Mana...tries to attract my attention while giving me a fellatio.
...Cute.

Everyone's my cute 『women』

「...Yamamine-sama is being loved by Misuzu-sama. If I give my purity to Yoshida-sama...!」

Watching Misuzu's foolery...Kudou-chan swallows her saliva...!
On the side...Yukino's comforting herself...!

「Help me...help meee...rape me...I want to be raped...I want a penis...!」
...!!!!

Chapter 158: Sexual feast (Part 5)

My beloved『women』intertwines with each other.

Misuzu is licking Megu's vagina...

She uses her tongue to stimulate the clitoris!

「...Ah...Ahn!」

Megu pants.

「Does Misuzu's tongue feel good...Megumi-san?...!」

She splashes her tongue like a puppy drinking milk...

「...It feels good, Misuzu-san」

Megu's face trembles in pleasure...!

「Please lick Misuzu too...」

Misuzu spreads her legs on top of Megu's face while licking her.

「...Misuzu's place is beautiful」

Megu...said while looking at Misuzu's wet slit.

「Megumi-san too, it's beautiful...」

Misuzu sucks on Megu's opening...

Megu also stretches her tongue...

The two beauties are making love in a 69 position.

「...They're amazing」

Mana says while caressing my penis.

「...Megumi-san's already dripping wet」

「...Misuzu-san as well」

Looking at each other's genitals...the girls smiled suspiciously.

「Megumi-san's body has some good proportion, it's tight...wonderful」

「Misuzu-san's body is so soft and fluffy and yet...your waist is thin, it's very

beautiful」

Megu and Misuzu touch each other's naked body.

「I'm not a lesbian but doing this thing with Misuzu-san feels good」

Megu said.

「Misuzu is a bit of a lesbian, but...No...Misuzu can't go back to being lesbian as expected」

Misuzu said that unexpectedly.

「Megumi-san's body feels very good of course too...」

Saying that...Misuzu looks at me with passionate eyes 「In the first place...my body wants Danna-sama...!」

...Misuzu?

「Misuzu's body became unable to be satisfied unless Danna-sama ejaculates inside...!」

She opens her vagina facing me...

Misuzu's vagina is dripping wet.

「Megu's the same...Megu's womb is itching to be violated by Yoshi-kun...!」

Megu also opens her vagina and show it to me...

「...Danna-sama, please come」

...Misuzu said.

「...Yoshi-kun, embrace us...!」

...Megu

「Now...Onii-chan, rape my oneechan!」

Mana said while wetting my glans with saliva.

...I 「...I'll be back」

The two of them are waiting on top of the bed.

「Misuzu...Megu...get on all fours...」

I told the two.

「I want to compare your bodies...!」

The two beauties look at each other...

「...I won't lose to Megumi-san!」

「...Megu won't lose!」

The two smile at each other and get on all fours...

Two cute asses are lined in front of me.

「First...I'll be violating Misuzu...!」

「Yes...please come!」

I grabbed Misuzu's elastic butt and push my glans to the mouth of her vagina...!

「Ah...Hurrrrrrry...please don't tease me...please violate Misuzuuuuu...!」

Misuzu's love nectar is coating my glans...!

...I

Thrust it inside Misuzu...!!!

「Aaaaah...this is iiiittt!! I wanted Danna-sama to coooooomeeee!!!!!!」

Misuzu curves her body and receives me...!

「...Misuzu!」

The warm vagina meat is wrapping up my dick...!

「...Aaaaaaah!」

Misuzu's pleased!

「...Danna-samaaa!」

Misuzu is embracing me to the deepest part.

「Misuzu's happiest moment is when Danna-sama is ravishing her...Misuzu is a pet born to be ravished by Danna-sama...Misuzu is Danna-sama's pet...!」

Misuzu shouts while having sex...

She's exposing her true nature to the other 『women』...

I...

Slowly move my waist...

「...I'm being violated from the back like a dog...Michi, can you see it? Can you see the part where Misuzu is being violated?!」

Kudou-chan...

「Y-Yes, I can see it. Misuzu-sama...!」

「How does it look like?...How does...Misuzu's pussy look like?!」

Kudou-chan is staring at the connection with passionate eyes...!

「Misuzu-sama's vagina is swallowing up Yoshida-sama's penis! Something that big...is all inside...up to the root...!」

I slowly put it in and out so Kudou-chan can see it well...!

「It feels good...being ravished by Danna-sama really feels good...!」

Misuzu talks about the pleasures of sex to Kudou-chan...

「Danna-sama's is knocking the door to Misuzu's womb...Aaah, it's grinding...rubbing, more...Danna-samaaaa!!!」

I use my waist and attack Misuzu's vagina...!

「...Does it feel that good, Misuzu-sama?!」

Kudou-chan asks Misuzu...

I can see the love juice dripping on Kudou-chan's thighs.

「...Mana, touch Kudou-chan」

I order Mana...

「...Yoshida-sama?」

Kudou-chan's surprised.

「Kudou-chan's a lesbian so it's okay if Mana touches you, right?」

When I ask, Kudou-chan...

「Do you not mind being comforted by Mana-sama?」

Kudou-chan's eyes is filled with desires.

「Yeah...get teased...!」

Hearing what I say...Mana hugs Kudou-chan...

「...Michi-oneechan...can I call you Michi-oneechan?」

「...Yes, Mana-sama」

Kudou-chan also stretches her hand towards the naked Mana...

「Mana doesn't need to be called 『sama』...Mana is Onii-chan's 『slave』after all...」

「But...Mana-sama...I want to call you Mana-sama!」

Kudou-chan and Mana makes love with each other while trembling.

「Ufufu...Michi-oneechan's really a masochist...!」

「...Mana-sama?」

Kudou-chan's puzzled as Mana saw through her own nature.

「Mana can tell it...Michi-oneechan, you're cute...!」

Mana's fingers goes through Kudou-chan's skirt...

「...Aaaah...Mana-sama...!」

「Michi-oneechan too...hurry up and be ravished by Onii-chan...Have Onii-chan's big penis pierce through your hymen...」

Mana whispers at Kudou-chan's ears...

「Receiving ejaculation from the depths of your stomach is amazing...the hot stuff spreads inside you...!」

「But...pregnant...I'll get pregnant!」

「Isn't that fine?...It's Onii-chan's child. Doesn't it thrill you? Imagine getting raped by Onii-chan and getting pregnant...imagine it, Michi-oneechan...!」

「Aaaah...If that happens...I'll fall to despair!」

「...Just despair?」

Mana's fingers crawl around.

「Aaaaah...I want to despair! I want to despair!」

Kudou-chan...that's...!

「I want to be like Misuzu-sama...be violated by Yoshida-sama on all fours...have my hymen break...the semen...have the semen pour in...pregnant...I want to...I want to get pregnant...!」

Her eyes are looking at me having sex with Misuzu...
Her vagina is being played by Mana...
Kudou-chan's drowning in her delusions...

「Ufufu...as expected. Michi-oneechan wants to be raped by Onii-chan, right?!
Right?!」

「Yes...I...want to be violated! I want to be tainted in front of Misuzu-sama...!!!!」

...Kudou-chan.

My penis bursts in arousal...!

「Aaah...Big...Danna-sama's penis is swelling inside Misuzu!」

I stretched my hand and reached out for Misuzu's breasts...
I stir around the nipples in my hands!

「...Aaaaah...Aaaaah...Aaaaaah!」

Misuzu pants.

I pull out my penis from Misuzu on purpose...!

「Iyaaaaan...Don't pull it ouuuut...Pierce me, please tease Misuzu's insides
more...!」

Misuzu pleads me.

「Nope...It's Megu's turn next!」

I grabbed Megu's ass this time...
Then thrust it in one go!

「...Yoshi-kun, I was waiting for thiiiis!!!!」

Megu's inside is already melting hot!

「Aaaah! Intense...violate me intensely! Please make a mess out of
Meguuu!!!!」

Then, I insert continuously...
I can tell the difference between Misuzu and Megu's body...
Above all...the feel of their skin is different.
Misuzu's skin is fine and thin like the finest silk cloth...
Megu's skin feels slightly thicker and stretched...

Soft and elastic...Misuzu's body is plump and glossy.
Megu's insides are packed, it's a healthy body that's shut tightly...
Both of them are wonderful.

「Does it feel good? Yoshi-kun...Does Megu's body feel good?」

Megu shouts while having my penis stick in her.

「Yeah, it feels good...Megu!」

I respond to Megu while my whole body sweats...!

「Which is better...Me or Misuzu-san?」

...Megu?

「Megumi-san or Misuzu...Which body do you prefer?」

...Misuzu?

As expected...they're curious...

「Both feels good...each have their own charm!」

I shouted!

「I love both of it! I'll keep embracing the two of you for the rest of my life!」

I embrace Megu's body from behind!

「...Ravish me forever. Together with Misuzu-san」

Megu looks at Misuzu.

「Misuzu too...will devote her life to Danna-sama forever!」

Misuzu hugs me...!

Oh...It feels good.

「I'm about to cum...!」

When I say that...Megu.

「Yoshi-kun...cum inside Misuzu-san...」

...Megu?

「Megu has been receiving a lot since last night...I feel sorry for Misuzu-san」

「That's...please don't think of it as a bad thing, Megumi-san」

Misuzu tells Megu.

「It's okay...cum inside Misuzu-san...」

...The two girls.

Have an inferiority complex at each other.

While holding respect and affection to each other...

At the same time, they feel a sense of inferiority complex and jealousy...

Though they're holding back to the other...

They also want to take my interest from the other...

It's a mysterious relationship.

「Okay...I'll cum inside Misuzu」

That's why...I have to take responsibility of making the final judgement.

That is my responsibility...

...for making these two beauties my 『woman』...

「Misuzu...lie down」

I pull my penis from Megu.

A white string draws from my penis using Megu's love nectar...

「Yes...Danna-sama」

Misuzu lies down as I ordered her and waits for my insertion.

「Michi...Misuzu will be taking in Danna-sama's semen right now...!」

Kudou-chan who's intertwining with Mana is told by Misuzu.

「Sooner or later, Michi will be experiencing it too...!」

「Yes...Misuzu-samaaa...!」

Kudou-chan is groping Mana's small body...

Her face is completely red...

Before we know it...Maika's room is filled with the sweat and love nectar of aroused women.

And here I am...adding the smell of a man's semen...!

「Here I go...Misuzu!」

I hang over Misuzu's body!

「...Danna-sama is comiiiiing iiiiin!!!」

The glans spreads Misuzu's vagina again and invades inside...!
I can't hold back anymore!
I pierce inside Misuzu with my full power!!!

「...Aaaaaaaah! Ahn! Ahn! Aaaah! Ravish meee! More! More!! Eat up Misuzu's body!!!! Aaah!! Gooood!!!!...It feels good! Sex is greaat!!!!...Aaaaah!!!!」

Misuzu's frenzied from the pleasures of sex!

「Misuzu-sama...is it that good?! Is Yoshida-sama that good?!」

Kudou-chan shouts at Misuzu while her body trembles!

「...Great! He's better than women! Being ravished by Danna-sama...it's great! I love it! I love it so much! Misuzu's having fun! Misuzu's body is feeling goooooood...!!!」

...Misuzu!

「Misuzu...is about to cum! I'm about to cum! Michi, what about you?...Michi, are you going to cum?!」

While I pierce her strongly...Misuzu shouts at Kudou-chan...
Misuzu's cute breast shakes up and down from the intense piston...
Her completely sweaty body is emitting out a lot of obscene smell...
Misuzu's body is starting to prepare to accept my semen...!

「I...I'm about to cum too! I'm going to cum! Misuzu-sama!」

Kudou-chan shouts!

「...Let's go together...cum together with Misuzu! Michi should also feel the moment Danna-sama pours in the smen inside Misuzu's body...!! Okay, Michi!」
「Yes...certainly!」

Our sex...!

Kudou-chan and Mana are groping each other...!
Megu is looking at me with a goddess like gentle smile.

「Megu will be watching over, Yoshi-kun」

「...Megu」

「Let out a lot inside Misuzu-san...!」

Megu kisses my lips.
She licks up my tongue.

「...Ogaaaaa! Nuaaaaaaa!!」

From the side...I can hear a beast moaning...!
Looking at it...Yukino's masturbating.
Yukino's completely drowning
in the smell of this room...

Oh right...This room...

It's completely ruled by the vibrations of sex...

...Aaaaaaaa

...Aaaaa 「...Misuzu's cumming! Danna-sama...Misuzu's cumming! humming!!」
「...Misuzu-sama..., me to... me too, I'll accompany you! Let me accompany you!
Ah...Aaaaaaah...!」

「Michi-oneechan, are you cumming?! Mana will be stirring you with all her
might...!」

「...Ugaaaaaa! Myaaaaaa!!」

「...I-I'm cumming...!」

「Yoshi-kun...Cum a lot! I'll be watching over...show it to Meguuuuuu!!!」

The sexual feeling of the six people accelerates towards the explosion!!!

「...D-Danna-samaaaaaa! Nnnnnn! I'm cumming! Cumiiiiiiiinnggg!!」
「...Misuzu-samaaaaaa! Misuzu-samaaa! Uu, Uu...Ahaaaaaaaa!!」
「...Ufufufufu, you came! Michi-oneechan, you're making a pained face!!」
「...Nuaaaaaaaaa!! gumiiiiiiinggg!」

The chain reaction goes one after another...
Misuzu's body convulses and embraces my body tightly!!!!

「...C-Cumiiiiing!!!! Misuzuuuuu!!」

I'm cumiiiiing!!!
I let out inside Misuzu's vagina in a dashhhhhhh!!!

「...H-Hoooooooooot!」

Misuzu's womb burns up with the scorching hot white liquid...!

I push my waist multiple times!

Dobyu!...Dobyu! I release the semen...!

「...Yoshi-kun, you're making a pleased face...!」

Megu kisses me gently.

「Aaaaah...Misuzu-samaaa! Misuzu-samaaa...is being defiled by a man...she's being tainted...!」

Kudou-chan...looks at Misuzu while trembling from the climax...

「That's right...Misuzu-oneechan's stomach has Onii-chan's baby seed spreading out...it feels good...Onii-chan's semen is very warm...!」

Mana whispers to Kudou-chan's ear...

「Don't say that...don't...Misuzu-samaaa...Misuzu-samaaa's being defiled...aaaaaah...!」

「...Michi-oneechan wants to be defiled too...right?」

「...I...Aaaaaaaaaaaa!」

Misuzu embraces my body that just finished ejaculating from below.
I bury my face in Misuzu's breasts...

「...Danna-samaaaa」

Misuzu's fawning over me.

「Misuzu's womb is drinking Danna-sama's semen...!」

Misuzu's vagina is still moving rhythmically...

It's holding my penis inside it...

It's wriggling...trying to swallow all of my semen...

「Danna-sama's semen...delicious, delicious, it's drinking it...」

Misuzu's drowning in the afterglow of sex...

「...I love youuu...I want to have sex with Danna-sama forever...I want to be ravished on various places...I want to be Danna-sama's toy...pet...a pet for sex!!!」

...Misuzu

「Misuzu...it felt good」

I kiss Misuzu.

Misuzu returned to her senses with that kiss.

「...Danna-sama...!」

Misuzu turned red.

「...It's embarrassing」

Misuzu tells Megu.

「You were very cute...Misuzu-san」

「...Megumi-san」

「You can always be strange anytime anywhere in front of Yoshi-kun...!」

「...Yes」

Misuzu made a cute response...
while my penis is still inside of her...

「...Please show me how Megumi-san looks strange too」

「Of course...I'll show it to Misuzu-san」

The two smile at each other

「Watch over Mana too, Oneechan!」

Mana tells Misuzu and Megu with a laugh...

「Yes...let's love each other a lot!」

Misuzu tells Mana.

「Yoshi-kun...are you okay with that?」

I...

「Of course...if everyone is okay with it」

「But...I also want to have sex with Onii-chan alone...!」

Mana said.

「Mana never had sex without anyone watching...!」

Mana said.

「No...we were alone on our first time weren't we?」

I tell Mana.

When I raped her in the rain...we should be alone back then.

There's a camera watching from the distance however...

「That wasn't Mana but Maika-san...」

They seem to be different for Mana.

「But...being raped by Onii-chan outside looks good. Lets do it next time...Onii-chan!」

Mana smiles at me.

「...Inside the crowded train...or in the toilet of a fast-food chain...please violate Mana in those kinds of places!」

Mana's brakes for her desires seems to have disappeared.

「Is there a 『sex slave』who begs to be raped herself...!」

I scold Mana...

「I'm sorry...Onii-chan」

Mana shrinks down...

「Mana...I will be watching over your athletic meet...」

I will give one suggestion for Mana's sake.

「Let's fuck somewhere in the school during the athletic meet. Okay?!」

Mana smiles happily!

「Un! Got it!」

Misuzu who's wet from sweat smiles from under.

「Please come to Misuzu's school festival too...!」

...Misuzu

「Misuzu's school usually forbids men...even in school festival, they absolutely don't let anyone who doesn't have the school-designated tickets enter...」

Of course...That's the super-oujou-sama school that's fighting on the first place

in Japan...

「Therefore...please rape me in the school festival on that day!」

...Misuzu?

「Perhaps, there's not a single school girl who had sex inside Misuzu's school throughout the history」

That's amazing...I guess.

「Misuzu...and Michi will be Danna-sama's partner...!」

Misuzu looks at Kudou-chan.

Then...

「Danna-sama...please let Misuzu show the moment Danna-sama's sperm drifts from Misuzu's inside to Michi」

「Yeah...got it」

「Michi...take a good look...!」

I...

Pull out my penis from inside Misuzu...

At the moment the glans separates from the opening...

The white semen drips down...

「Amazing...there's so much」

Kudou-chan stares at Misuzu's vagina filled with semen...

「Michi...lick it, clean it up...!」

Ordered by Misuzu...Kudou-chan gets stiff.

「I...have to lick a man's semen...?」

「It's not a 『man』...It's Danna-sama's priceless semen...!」

No...Misuzu

My semen's not 『priceless』...

「It'll be Michi's job to clean up after Misuzu and Danna-sama's sex. From now on, Michi will have to lick it clean...」

Kudou-chan...

「C-Certainly...Misuzu-sama」

Then...She faces Misuzu's crotch...

Misuzu opens her legs wide for Kudou-chan.

「Now...lick it」

「...Yes」

The beautiful doll-like petite girl...

Is licking up the semen that tainted Misuzu's vagina...

「...Suck out the sperm that's stuck inside too」

Misuzu orders Kudou-chan

「Yes...Misuzu-sama」

Kudou-chan puts her lips on the slit and sucks it....

「How is the taste of Danna-sama's semen?」

「B-Bitter」

「You have to answer 『delicious』at those times...let me ask you again Michi...
what's the taste of Danna-sama's semen?」

Kudou-chan answered with her ears turned red.

「...I-it's delicious」

...I

「Yoshi-kun...Megu will clean you up...!」

Megu licks my penis with her tongue.

「Ah...Mana too!」

「You're right...let's clean this up together!」

Megu and Mana...are doing clean up fellatio...

「Hey...Yoshi-kun」

Megu asks while licking up my glans.

「What kind of sex would you like to do with Megu?」

I...

「What does Megu want?」

Megu smiles.

「Megu said it before but I want you to rape me in the clubroom or the shower room. Also, do Megu at our school festival and athletic meet. Let's do it every night on the school trip...!」

Megu...proposes sex that can only be done as my classmate...

「Let's have sex at school tonight...!」

I proposed to Megu.

「Either way...we'll be staying on the school overnight...」

Perhaps that will be.

「You're right...let's enjoy tonight」

Megu smiles.

「Ah...Mana will join tonight too!」

Mana pleads me...

「Must be nice...Misuzu cannot join Danna-sama at night...!」

Misuzu says regretfully while having Kudou-chan lick her vagina.

Chapter 159: Quarrel sex

「My...were you in this room all this time?」

The door opens and Katsuko-nee came in.

「...Did you take a look at Yukino's room?」

Katsuko-nee smiles wryly when I asked her.

「I did...it was a bit of a jungle...」

It's a jungle of clothes, cosmetics and fashion magazines.

「Therefore...we had sex in this room」

When I say that...Mana who's licking my glans looked up.

「Is the job over?...Katsuko-san, have sex with Onii-chan too...!」

It's great that she's paying attention to people, but...

The content is devoted to sex...

Something like preparing tea or offering a chair...

Don't you think of those first...?

「...I-I should be the next...」

Yukino speaks in a low voice while lying on the floor carpet.

「Yukino-san is the 『Enemy』so isn't that obvious that you're the last...!」

Mana...looks down at her sister from the top of the bed...

「Megu-oneechan haven't received onii-chan's semen yet...Megu-oneechan then, Katsuko-san, then Mana will have another one, then Yukino-san's turn is after that...」

Mana...do you want to kill me...?

Just how many times do you intend to make me ejaculate...

「...Maika, stop that...don't tease me!」

Yukino shouts!

「...My fingers won't do anymore! Something thicker...I want something that stirs the depths of my pussy! I want to be violated intensely...!」

Yukino screams close to tears...!
Being shown a lot of women having sex...
Ignoring her existence thoroughly.
Yukino's the only one wasn't allowed to do 『piss show』
Yukino...is still in her uniform...
Nobody's looking at Yukino.
Not a single finger touched her.
Her confidence as a woman continues to be destroyed completely.

「Un...you look quite good now...!」
Katsuko-nee smiles looking at Yukino's state...
「It's about time we prepare to get out...we'll be escaping this house after 30 minutes...!」

Due to what Katsuko-nee said...I looked at the bedside alarm clock...
It's 2:26 right now...
Katsuko-nee...do you intend to get out of the house exactly at 3 o'clock when the news of Shirasaka Sousuke's arrest is reported...?

「...Me...My turn?!」
Yukino pleads to Katsuko-nee...!
「Please...I want to do it...I want it!」
Katsuko-nee smiles.
「If you want it that much, we'll let you have it...on the other room」

The other room...?
Shirasaka Sousuke's room...?
Is this Minaho-neesan's instructions?
Does she have another plan...?

「It's a waste to let Onii-chan have sex with that person...shouldn't you just do it Katsuko-san...?」

Mana speaks in an angry tone...

Mana has a hard prejudice...

In order to recognize that her own sister is the 『enemy』...She's treating Yukino with a harsh attitude

No...she's too harsh.

「...Mana, apologize to Katsuko-nee」

I tell Mana

「Onii-chan...but...!」

Mana looks at me.

「I don't need 『slaves』who talk back...I'll throw you away...!」

When I tell her that...Mana trembles...

「I-I'm sorry...Please don't throw me, please don't throw me away...I'll do anything...please...!」

Mana rubs against me while trembling...

「...What did I tell you to do?」

Mana got startled...

She flies from the bed...

Then she pressed her forehead on the carpet...

「Katsuko-san...I'm very sorry...Mana is a 『slave』and yet...I was very arrogant...I'm sorry...!」

She kneels in front of Katsuko-nee...

...Haa

Just how many times I've seen Mana's naked dogeza...

「Very well...I will be forgiving you this time...」

Katsuko-nee tells Mana with her SM play queen face...

「...It's his job to have sex with Yukino-san...Think that it's inevitable...!」

As expected...

There's a reason why we're going to have sex in Shirasaka Sousuke's room...

「Yes...I understand...I understaaand...!」

Mana desperately lowers her pale face.
When I tell her 「abandon」...it seems she responded quite well...
...I have to give a follow up.

「Mana...have you prepared all the bags you'll be taking out of the house?」

I change the topic on purpose.

「Y-Yes...There's three bags prepared at the entrance」

...I know

I saw it earlier...

「What will be the dress you'll wear tomorrow?」

Mana looks blank...

「...Tomorrow's dress?」

I smiled kindly.

「You're going to Misuzu's presentation tomorrow too...you need a beautiful dress don't you?」

...Mana.

「T-That means...Konpeki style headmaster's classroom presentation isn't it...?!」

Yesterday, when Maika came to the mansion...Mana has received an explanation from Misuzu.

「...That's right, I'm bringing you too」

Mana's expression turned cloudy.

「That's...maybe, Maika-san's friends will be coming to the venue as well...!」

...Maika's friends?

「Girls from good houses will be coming to watch Konpeki style's headmaster's presentation...Maika-san's friends too, surely...!」

...I see

Mana's school is not on Misuzu's level but, they're a 『girl's school』 who's name is also well known...

They must have friends learning Japanese dances too...

They need to have the level of a family social standing to be in the headmaster's class like Misuzu but...at least, there will be girls who would want to go see the presentation.

At the venue...Mana meeting her friends has a high possibility.

Mana...is afraid to see those girls as 『Shirasaka Maika』...

Tomorrow...Shirasaka Sousuke's evildoings will be known all over the Japan...

「...You should just disguise」

I answered calmly.

「...Disguise?」

Mana's surprised.

「That's right...You're already 『Yoshida Mana』...even if someone sees you, you should just disguise so they won't see 『Shirasaka Maika』...!」

Katsuko-nee laughs.

「You're right...it's easy. Should I give my help?」

Un...it's best if I leave it to Katsuko-nee.

「Un...I'll leave it to you, Katsuko-nee」

「Got it...we have a person who loves the word 『disguise』among us...!」

Oh...Nei-san

Is Nei-san okay?

I wonder if she's feeling lonely...

「...I reject Nei-san's cooperation. It's not laughable at all...I want her to be very cute. She's my Mana after all...!」

Mana looks up at me.

「I want everyone to be startled with her beauty. Can you make her a beauty that won't make them notice that she's 『Shirasaka Maika』?」

Katsuko-nee smiles...

「...I can」

「Then, that's decided」

I look at Mana again

「Mana...have you ever had a dress you never wore in public?」

Mana...

「There's one...the dress I bought at the end of the month for my relatives' wedding ceremony. I've never worn it outside yet...」

That relatives' wedding...

Mana's definitely wasn't able to attend...

Shirasaka Sousuke's family will be broken off from the relatives...

「Then, that dress will do...bring it, get it ready...!」

I ordered her.

「Yes...Onii-chan」

Mana replied...

Un...her expression is still stiff.

「Also...take another bag and bring your favorite clothes. You can even load it with accessories」

Mana...

「But...Katsuko-san has told me to take the same number of bags as Megu-oneechan...only until three...!」

Mana...seems to be really holding back from Megu.
It feels good as 『sisters』

「Then...bring the clothes that would please me. The amount filling a bag」

「Clothes that would please Onii-chan?」

「That's right I'd be happy if Mana wears cute clothes...!」

This way of speaking...

Mana will bring out her favorite clothes without care...

I thought so, but...

「Got it...I'll get the school swimsuit and the sorts!」

...M-Mana?!

「Yup...I'll look for clothes that will please Onii-chan when he feels horny!」

...E-Err

「Mana-san...if you have a yukata or something, you better include it!」

Misuzu tells Mana.

「Misuzu thinks of being embraced by him in kimono next time...!」

...M-Misuzu?!

「Winter coat too...naked under the coat...then look for a place where I can be alone with Yoshi-kun, walk outside...aim at the moment where nobody's passing through, and have him violate you in the back alleys」

M-Megu.

You want to try that...?!

「On the next summer...we'll wear thin clothes on purpose, then have him tear it off while having sex? I recommend outdoor sex wearing a white dress...!」

...K-Katsuko-nee too?!

「Wow, I want to try that! Onii-chan, I want to be raped outside again!」

...Mana...you

「Anyway...pick your clothes. You can consult the others for it...!」

Well fine...as long as Mana regains her vigor.

「Got it! Onii-chan!」

Mana replies with a bright face.

「After that...go to Yukino's room and get some uniform...and pick the most simple clothes...」

I asked Mana.

「...Most simple clothes?」

I answered only one word

「...Disguise」

The intelligent Mana understood it with just that.

「...Roger!」

Yukino doesn't get it.

「Haa?」...is what her face says.

「Misuzu-sama, please take a shower...you do have a practice for tomorrow's presentation don't you?」

Katsuko-nee tells Misuzu.

「...Got it. Michi...come with me, wash my back」

「Certainly...Misuzu-sama」

Kudou-chan bows her head and replies...



Megu and Mana remained in the room and prepared the dress and clothes.
Misuzu and Kudou-chan goes to the bathroom earlier.

Katsuko-nee and I...bring Yukino to Shirasaka Sousuke's room...

「...You're going to violate me in Papa's room won't you?」

Yukino speaks to me while going through the corridor.

「Yeah...Yukino likes Megu and others not present, don't you?」

Yukino has an inferiority complex towards Megu.
She must resist if she's going to have sex in front of her little sister.
And even being seen by Misuzu who's a daughter of a family that's far above herself...

「You're right...I feel more casual with just you people...」

Yukino said.

「...You're late. Please hurry up」

Entering Shirasaka Sousuke's room...
Minaho-neesan is waiting.
On the floor is a computer of the same model on the desk...
The replacement of the computer seems to have already ended.

「The desktop has copied everything from the original computer. The internet and mail is also set...!」

Anyway...even if the police confiscates Shirasaka's computer, they probably won't have any connection to 『Kuromori』

「Now, there's no time...start immediately」

Minaho-neesan tells Katsuko-nee.

Katsuko-nee...

「...Should we use video mode?」

「Images are just fine...I can't expect anything from Yukino-san's performance. We don't have time to edit...」

「...Got it」

Katsuko-nee holds a digital camera on hand...

That camera has a long cable connected to Shirasaka Sousuke's computer...

I finally noticed what Minaho-neesan intends...

Minaho-neesan...

We'll be leaving images of 『Yukino being fucked』on this computer...!

According to Minaho-neesan's plan...this house will be searched by the police in a few days...

Then...the police will also confiscate this computer of course.

Minaho-neesan should have copied the lewd images that's unrelated to 『Kuromori』to this computer

And if Yukino's sex images were in that folder...

If the father has the data of the scene of her daughter being violated...

The investigators will have the worst impression to Shirasaka Sousuke...

That's what she's aiming for.

「I don't care...hurry up...!」

Yukino's head is filled with sex that she doesn't notice anything.

I took the scissors from Shirasaka Sousuke's desk.

「...Minaho-neesan...should we make it a bit hardcore?」

Minaho-neesan...

「I'm glad that you understand...」

I stand in front of Yukino.

「...W-What...what are you going to do?」

Yukino's frightened.

「Yukino...I'll be tearing your uniform to pieces...!」

I grasped the collar of her blouse.

「Wait...s-stop it!」

Yukino's hating it...!

「It's okay...Mana's preparing a reserve...!」

I...pull her collar with all my strength!!

...Buchi, buchi, buchi, buchi!!!!

The buttons of her blouse flew away!

「I-Iyaaaaaaa...What are you doing!」

Yukino shouts!!!

I pushed Yukino in the bed.

I cut the hem of her skirt with the scissors...!

...It's torn apart!!!

Shuiiiiiii!!!

The skirt is torn along with the good sound!!!

This time...I opened a hole on the sleeve of her uniform...!

Zaku!...zaku!...zaku!

I changed Yukino's uniform to rags using the scissors...!

「...Iyaaaaaaa...iya...iyaaaa...!」

Yukino's screaming loudly, but she's extremely aroused...!

This lewd...pervert...!

This woman has changed to that kind of human...

I have changed her!

Lastly...I made holes in her bra and panty...!

I left her wearing her underwear...!

While wearing her school uniform...!

And yet...Yukino's nipples and genital...

It's exposed before my eyes...!

「...How about this?」

I separate from Yukino for a moment then take a look at her body from the distance.

Yup...Yukino having a miserable look is best for being raped.

Her pubic region is exposed while she wears a worn out clothes...

She's looking up at me while breathing heavily and eyes hot with desires...!

「Great...that's visually great!」

Looking at Yukino's figure...Katsuko-nee starts taking photos...!

「...Ufufu, isn't your pussy wet already? You want to be violated sooner don't you...?!」

I threw the scissors away

「Yukino...beg for it...!」

Yukino opens her legs wide...!

「...R-Rape me! H-Hurry up...!」

My penis is standing prosperously in front of Yukino...

Yukino is staring at my dark red glans with a painful face.

「Do you want this?」

「...I want it!」

「I'll cum inside...and make you pregnant...!」

「I don't care about that already! Hurry...hurry up...fill me up with that! Do me horribly!」

...Yukino.

「Didn't you do it to me a lot already! Didn't you rape me over and over again?! Do it...faster!」

Love nectar spills out from Yukino's vagina!

「Say that you want to get pregnant with my child! I won't do you unless you say it!」

...Yukino.

「If it's just pregnancy then I'll do it! I'll even bear your children...just hurry

up!」

Due to those words...
I dived to the bed...!

「...aaaaah!」

I embrace Yukino's body!
I massaged her tits on top of her bra strongly!
With all my strength...not minding any scars!
I will carve the marks of my violence in Yukino's body!
I lick Yukino's breasts!
With just that...Yukino reached her first orgasm...!!!!

「...Hiiiiiiiiiiiiiiiiiiii!!!! Agaaaaaa!!!!」

Yukino's body tremble...!

「I'm going to thrust it in!」

I pierce my penis in a dash!!

「...Uguuuuu!!! Ugu, uguguguguguaaaaaaa...!」

Yukino's body tremble in pleasure...!

「I wanted this, I wished for this...I've wanted this all my lifeeeeee...!!!!」

Yukino's body turn like a bow!!!!

「...I'm being rapeeeed!!! I wanted to be pierced by a man's hard penis on the deepest part of meeeeeee!!!!」

...Gucho! Gucho! Gucho...!

Yukino's vagina spouts love nectar every time I make a piston movement...!

「...It feels goooooood! Sex...sex feels goooooood!!!!」

Yukino's scream must've reached Mana who's on the other side of the corridor...!

「Look...Katsuko-nee's taking pictures! Yukino loves taking photos while being fucked, right?!」

The digital camera's shutter sound echoes in Yukino's ears...

「That's right...Loook...take a loook at Yukino's lewd photoooooos...!!!!」

Yukino who's been made to wait a lot has her thinking blown away by the pleasures of sex...!

「...Lewd! Pervert! Look...introduce yourself...Yukino!」

I shout at Yukino while ramming my waist...!

My sex with Yukino is like a quarrel.

No...This is a quarrel.

A fight between me and Yukino...a man and woman!

We're bumping our genitals instead of fists...!

We don't have any communication but that!!

「That's right! I'm a lewd pervert! Didn't you make me!?!」

Yukino looks at me with eyes of hatred...!

Even though her eyes are filled with hatred...her mouth is distorted from the pleasure of sex...!!!

「Do you hate me...Yukino!!」

「I hate you!...Hate, hate, hate...I hate you so much!」

Yukino's eyes have tears spilling out of it!

「Then, should we stop having sex?」

...Yukino!

「...I hate you! I don't want to be touched by you! I don't want to see your face! I don't want you near me!...I want you to die and sink on the bottom of the sea...I want to forget you forever! I don't want to remember anything about you!」

Yukino still doesn't stop moving her waist!!!

She's pushing up from below...!

Yukino's vagina that's trained by several degrees of rape is clamping me up tightly.

Yukino's vagina has gotten good!!

「And yet...I want to have sex! My body wants to have sex! I'm itching to have sex...! My stomach is tingling for it!」

...Yukinoooooooo!

「Then, shouldn't you just fuck Endou?! Weren't you his girlfriend?!」

Yukino's eyes opened wide then glared at me!!!

「Even I want to do that!!! I tried to masturbate imagining Kenji!!! I was able to do that before! Before you stole my virginity...I was masturbating everyday thinking of Kenji!!! I was masturbating while I was in call with Kenji!!!!」

Yukino throws everything at me, leaving everything to her anger...!!!

「But...not anymore! I can't cum unless I imagine myself being raped! I see it even in my dreams!!! It's always you! Being raped by you!!! You pouring out your disgusting stuff inside me!!!」

...Yukino?!

「I can't feel it unless it's rape! I'm no good unless you rape me!!! Pervert! Madman! You made a mess out of me...!!!!」

I continue to desperately pierce Yukino...!

Clawing my fingers in her breasts, I grasped it tightly...!

I stir her nipple with my fingers...!

...aaaaaaaaa!

「Return my body to it's former! Return my beautiful virgin body! You criminal! Degenerate! Rape demon!...Return the week ago me! I was happy a week ago...I was loving Kenji...it was very happy...!!!!」

...Yukino.

.....Yukino。

.....Yukino。

...I!!!

「...You're cumming?」

Yukino asked me.

「Yeah...I'm about to cum」

Yukin looks at me...

「W-Wait...Just a bit more...just a bit more and I'll cum...!」

...Yukino!!!

「Aaaaahn...What should I do...I can't cum unless it's rape...I can't cuuuuum... Furthermore...it's on the worst sum like you...!!!」

Yukino's body is rising...!

I can tell her vagina shrinking.

Her womb is lowering to swallow all the semen...!

「...I hate you...I hate you...I hate you to death...I hate you so much...You should just die...someone like you...someone like you...aaaaaaaaaaaaaaaaah...!」

Yukino's rising up while spitting out curses...!

「...I'm finally cumming...I'm cumiiiiiiing...I was waiting for this...I've been waiting for this all this timeeeeeee...!」

I can't hold back anymore...!

「...C-Cumiiiiiiing!!!」

Yukino's body splashed and jumped!!!

「I'm about to cum tooo!!!」

「Let it ouuut...Inside me...let it out inside meeeeeeeeeee!!!!」

...Doppu!!!!

「...Hoooooooooott!!!」

...Doppu!

「It's burning...my womb is burning hoooot!!!」

...Dopppu, doppu!!

「...It's coming in...it's coming iiiiin...I was waiting for this...I was waiting for thiiiiiiiiiiisss!!!」

...Yukinoooooooo!!!

「...I'm being defiled...my body is being defileeed...Aaaaahn...Cruel...you're crueeeel...I won't forgive you...I'll never forgive youuu...!!!」

Saying that...

Yukino's arm is embracing me.

Yukino's vagina is clamping me.

Yukino's womb is drinking my semen...

...She's being fertilized.

My sex with Yukino...

Is only aimed at pregnancy...!

「...You should just die...!」

While her convulsing body is bathing in semen...

Yukino mutters...

She's looking at me with eyes of despair.

「Yeah...I think the same」

I try to kiss Yukino's lips...

「...I don't like kissing. I gave my lips to Kenji...」

I hold Yukino's face with my hands...

Then kissed her forcibly.

「...Don't joke with me, Yukino」

I said.

「I've already violated your whole body...」

Yukino looks at me...

「...You're right There's nothing left untouched by you」

She muttered.

「As expected...I hate you, I really hate you so much. I'll hate you forever...!」

...I

Chapter 160: Tiger and horse

...The shutter keeps on pressing.

On top of Shirasaka Sousuke's bed...

Is Yukino who's uniform is torn to pieces and her vagina exposed...

She's opening her legs without any power...

White semen drips from her vagina...

The violated girl's making a tired out face...

But still, she's looking up the camera lens...

She's already used to...

Having her sex be photographed...

She's accepting it naturally.

「...Well, this will do」

Katsuko-nee...removed the camera from her face.

「There's not a photo where they can determine if it's Yoshida-kun?」

Minaho-neesan confirms it with Katsuko-nee.

「...There's no problem!」

Katsuko-nee answered brightly.

Katsuko-nee won't make that kind of mistake...

Katsuko-nee's photographs, my sex with Yukino...is all being copied to Shirasaka Sousuke's computer.

「The file name...『Daughter, rape』will do」

Minaho-neesan smiles.

「Since I changed the date and time setting...the date on the photos is still on January」

In short...as long as they take a look at the data on the photos...

They probably won't think that Yukino has been raped on this bed a month ago.

Also...the father Shirasaka himself...

What kind of impression will the police have towards Shirasaka Sousuke when they see this...

Raping his own daughter then saving the photos on his computer...there's no room for talking it out....

Minaho-neesan's plan is perfect.

「Seriously...well done. If Papa comes back from Australia and he sees that photos, he'll surely be shocked...you people are unfair...!」

Yukino...misunderstands that the file is going to be shown to Shirasaka Sousuke.

The report about Shirasaka's arrest that will happen...

Or even the conflict between 『Shirasaka main house』and 『Kuromori』is unknown to her...

She must be thinking that this photo is just also a form of small『harassment』...a retaliation against Shirasaka himself...

She's convinced that we're only showing the photos to Shirasaka.

Actually...

Yukino's rape photos will be seen by the police officials after this...

「...Would you like your father to see this?」

Minaho-neesan asks Yukino.

「Who cares...it's just Papa. I'm experiencing this because of Papa...I'd like him to feel bad at least...!」

Yukino speaks like vomiting.

「If ever this photographs get sold in the world...what will Yukino do?」

Yukino laughs.

「Lukewarm, stop making a fool of me...even I can imagine that...!」

...Yukino?

「I was completely deceived by you people until now but...Maika's a child so she was completely deceived it seems. But I'm different...!」

She rises from her bed.

「...What's different?」

Minaho-neesan's doesn't break her cold smile.
She's staring at Yukino.

「...I know that you people hate Papa...and you spent a lot of time preparing various things. But...that's as far as it gets?」

Yukino glares at Minaho-neesan, not even trying to hide her nipple or pussy.

「...What 『this far』?」

Minaho-neesan asks calmly.

「...If you step further than this...『Shirasaka』 house will step in...!」

Yukino says.

「If you were just harassing Maika and I without anyone knowing up until now, then it'll be a problem only of this house...if you take out the photos to the world, Shirasaka head family won't allow it. I'm uncle Moritsugu's favorite after all. Shirasaka house's newspaper company will make a move and you'll be crushed in an instant...!」

The rape victim speaks triumphantly.

「Even you people are scared of Shirasaka house's power aren't you...?! That's why it's only this far. You people are trying to fool me with empty mouths again but I now know. You people won't do anything like making that photos flow...!」

...Yukino

「You people aren't that much of an idiot aren't you...?! It's a suicide act to fight with Shirasaka house...!」

...Sadly.

We're idiots.

Or rather...we're not scared of Shirasaka house at all.

The war against Shirasaka house is already starting...

「Also...you may not know it but my grandfather on mother's side has a big advertising company...if they join Shirasaka house, all of the mass media will follow. They're also acquainted with a famous lawyer... If you step further from this...you people won't win...!」

...Sorry

Your maternal grandfather is...

I think he's trembling in his house right now...

「Also...that Kouzuki house's daughter. You people are swindling that girl...I can report to Kouzuki house you know...! NO...I will talk to Moritsugu-sama and grandfather and report a scandal of the Kouzuki family...!」

...Hmm.

Dumb people only knows things on the scope of what they see...so they reach such conclusions...?

「Yukino-san...I don't know what you're talking about but...」

Minaho-neesan asks Yukino while laughing.

「Could it be that you're threatening us...?」

...Yukino

「T-This is not a threat...I just want to give my 『proposal』to you.....」

...Proposal?

「...I won't care about everything that happened until now. I'll give up on Papa. You should just do what you want...」

Yukino...has abandoned her father quickly.

「But...I won't allow anything further than this. My pride won't allow this...!」

...Pride?

You...do you know how you look like right now...?!

Your uniform's torn apart...

Your breasts and crotch is fully visible...

Your slit is filled with love nectar and semen...

You were raped thoroughly that you don't have anything else...

But still...you're going to say something as ridiculous as 『my pride』?!

「...You're really honest...to be honest, I lost my interest in you but...it looks like I'm going to have more fun」

Minaho-neesan smiled happily.

「Then...please tell us about your 『proposal』...!」

...Yukino

「First...give me pregnancy abortion medicine」

Yukino says with earnest eyes.

「My...didn't you promise to bear Yoshida-kun's child while you were having sex...?!」

Minaho-neesan laughs at Yukino.

「...I can give birth. But it's a problem for now. At least, I have to graduate high school...or I will look bad in public...!」

...You?!

「...You won't resist on giving birth on Yoshida-kun's child?!」

When Minaho-neesan said that...Yukino...

「The main subject of my 『proposal』is just starting...!」

Yukino look at me...

「...I'm having this man!」

Me...?!

「This man had made me experience all the cruelties so I'll make this man my『slave』...I'll make him an absolute obedient slave that will only say yes on my orders...!」

Yukino's looking at me with passionate eyes.

「...I won't let her play with other women anymore...This man will only play with me whenever I want and I won't lend him to other women」

...Does that mean?

「Hmm, so Yukino-san finally noticed Yoshida-kun's value...!」

Minaho-neesan laughs.

「Not!...That's just...he only feels better than masturbating myself!...That's all. Just a tool to make me feel good...you will have to live for the rest of your life

only thinking about making me feel good...you'll be my『slave』 after all」

Yukino's eyes don't have 『love』

Just...『Lust』...『Monopoly desire』

Before I raped her...Yukino has been watching me have sex with other girls.

She felt that her own charm is ignored because of those women...

Therefore...She's trying to 『monopolize』 me

To protect her own pride...

In the end...Yukino doesn't look at me as a person.

Since the first...

「Hmm...With that said, Yukino-san intends to marry Yoshida-kun...!」

Minaho-neesan is making fun of Yukino.

Yukino...

「...Don't joke with me, who would marry this man!!」

She denied it immediately.

「I'm a member of Shirasaka house...I'll marry a man suitable for the family.

That is my duty being born under Shirasaka house...!」

「My...you didn't intend to marry Endou-kun?」

Yukino snorts.

「Isn't that obvious? I'm not a child or an idiot to marry a man who I first go out with! I just like to experience what is love with that man. He's only good with his face...he looked very manly and cool at first but I didn't expect that he was so stupid...!」

Yukino said like throwing up.

「But...you wanted to have sex with Endou-kun, didn't you?」

「That's...! I'm a high school student so I'll be interested in those. But, I don't intend to make a child with him...and I didn't intend to go out with that man. I want to try out various other men too...!」

...In the end.

...She's just horny.

Born to be lewd.

「But, I don't care...I'll be having that man from now on. I'll make him crawl as a 『slave』...and play with me. As promised...I'll give birth to a child...the second child. The first one have to be the child of the one I'll be marrying...!」

This is Shirasaka Yukino.

「You're going to make Yoshida-kun your sex『slave』for the rest of your life?」
「Isn't that obvious?! This man made me experience a lot of cruelty...I'll make him apologize for the rest of his life! I'll have his remaining life devoted to only me!!!」

...I

「It's your ambition isn't it? You do like me don't you? That's why you raped my virginity didn't you...answer now!? Say that 『I'll be happy to be Yukino-sama's slave』...you pervert」

...Then

Minaho-neesan laughed out loudly.

「Fufufufufu...ahahahahahaah...aahahahahahaha...!!!」

Yukino's surprised.

「W-What?!」

Minaho-neesan's laughing...

「...Then?...That's all?...Your 『proposal』...!?!!!」

...Yukino

「...I have another thing on my 『proposal』」

...Another?

「Give Maika back. She's a daughter of Shirasaka house...she's not a person to be made a toy by people like you...!」

Yukino looks at me.

「...Let's see, if it's her, I can lend her this 『slave』 If only that girl bows her head and says 『please lend him to me』... Maika's my cute little sister after all...!」

...At that time.

The door opens.

「...Maika?!」

Yukino's surprised at the appearance of her sister.

Mana changed her bunny girl costume to a cute clothing.

Miniskirt and T-shirt that shows her navel...

A look suitable for a 14 year old girl...

「...Is the work done?」

Mana asks me.

「Yes, it's already done...thank you, Yoshida-kun」

Minaho-neesan answered instead of me.

「...Mana」

I call her out...

「Yes...Onii-chan」

She gladly come inside the room.

「...Is the preparations done?」

「Un...Everyone's waiting at the front door. How does this clothes look?」

Mana stands in front of me.

「...It's cute」

「Ehehe...I thought『Onii-chan would be pleased to see me dressed normally after the bunny girl』Misuzu-oneechan chose this for me...!」

As expected of Misuzu.

The bunny girl was cute but...

It's my first time seeing Mana in this kind of clothes...

Trully cute.

「...You're getting along with everyone」

「That's not it. I'm not trying to get along with them but...Oneechan and others are being kind with Mana...!」

...Un

I think Mana has changed to a good direction after meeting with Misuzu and Megu.

She's looking at herself objectively...

「...Onii-chan, can I touch it?」

Mana looks out at my penis left out

「...Sure」

When I say that...Mana touches my penis while smiling...

「It looks like it's not cleaned up」

「...Could you do it instead?」

「...Sure!」

Mana puts my penis in her mouth.

She sucks it out...

She begins her cleanup fellatio...

「...Maika, stop that!」

Yukino scolds her sister!

「You're a daughter of Shirasaka house! Don't lick that man's thing...!」

Mana ignores those...

She looks up at me then said.

「Mana...is happy being Onii-chan's 『slave』」

...Mana

You were listening to Yukino earlier...

Outside the door...

「I'll devote the rest of my life to Onii-chan alone! I'll serve Onii-chan forever...!」

I asked Mana.

「Mana...do you know who she is?」

I point at Yukino...

Mana...

「I wonder...I don't know people on other families...!」

Mana plays stupid...

「...Maika...What are you saying...!」

Yukino's frightened because of Mana.

「Mana...introduce yourself」

「...I'm Yoshida Mana. Onii-chan's 『sex slave』...!」

Mana stands up.

She lifts up her own miniskirt.

Mana's not wearing underwear...!

「...Would you like to use Mana's pussy? Mana's always ready to be violated by Onii-chan!」

Her hairless slit is wet.

「Not now...let's do it later」

I kiss mana.

「Yes...Onii-chan」

Mana lowers her skirt.

Then...she turned to Yukino...

「Hey...you lady who's name I don't know...」

She smiled at Yukino.

「If Mana is abandoned by Onii-chan, there's no other choice but to die. I'm risking my life here to be loved by Onii-chan...!」

...Those eyes

No longer sees the sister in blood...

「If you try to say something selfish and try to monopolize Onii-chan...Mana will kill you. I hate selfish women like you...I hate you so much...!!!!」

I know about 『hating the same family』but...

I didn't think that it would turn out like this...

Mana...is a girl with a hard conviction...

She's a child above all of it...

The stress from the sudden turn of events in these two days...

She focuses on recognizing Yukino as the 『enemy』...

「What about you, what are you telling your sister! Even though you're a child! Even though you have a 『growth deficiency』you're speaking so proud!!」

Even Yukino...

She's blowing her anger to her blood related little sister without hesitation.

...But 「...Onii-chan...I don't have 『growth deficiency』...I...!!!!」

...Mana clings to my arm trembling!

...This won't do 「...Yukino!」

I shouted at Yukino

「...W-What!?!」

Yukino's surprised by my angry voice.

「Mana...No, what was Maika's future dream? You don't know? What did Maika want to become...?」

I asked with what I came up in the moment.

「...That is...you see」

「...You don't know?! Even though you're her sister?!」

When I say that, Yukino clicked...!

「...A fashion model!」

...Model?

「That's right!...She said that she want to be a super model on a European brand show before...!」

Mana's body twitched from Yukino's voice...

「...And yet...That person, told Maika-san 『It's impossible for you』...『There's no way a small girl who has a growth deficiency like you will become a model』...!」

Mana's trembling from the trauma of Yukino's words in the past.

...Yukino

Why are you always speaking so much...!

...I 「That's not true...Mana!!」

Mana looks up at me.

「...Onii-chan?」

「You will...do your best to aim to be a super model...I will cooperate on everything...!」

What Mana needs right now is...

A hope in the future...

...Dream 「What do you have to do to be a super model? What should you study? Let's study together...okay, Mana?!」

I hold Mana's hand tightly...!

「...Are you an idiot?」

Yukino shouts at me!!

「...You shut up!!」

...Mana

「It's impossible for me. A super model is very beautiful...and it's impossible unless you're tall...!」

...I

「You're beautiful...!」

「...Onii-chan?」

「I guarantee you...you're beautiful...very cute...!」

「...That's not true」

「I'm telling you that you're beautiful so you're beautiful! Look, try saying it...

『Mana will become a beautiful woman that can be a supermodel』...!」

「...That's!」

「Just say it...!」

Mana speaks to me with a half-crying face.

「...Mana...will become a beautiful woman that can be a super model」

...Un

「Tell me that five times...no, ten times a day, everyday. Look at my eyes when you tell that...!

「...Onii-chan

「Be confident...you're still young! You'll become even more beautiful...even your height will grow taller...!!!!」

「...But」

Mana's body has been weak, and she's smaller than other children since she was younger.

Then her sister has always been making a fool of her 「growth deficiency」... robbing of Mana's confidence.

...This can't go on.

...His isn't good!

「...If you want to grow tall, would you like my cooperation?」

Minaho-neesan asked me.

「You can thoroughly manage it with contents of the meal to daily exercise, but...!」

...That's?

「In『Kuromori』brothel...we have done various things for the management of prostitutes...there's some data and programs as well. I'll cooperate, there's a doctor too...」

That's right...the former『Kuromori tower』buys girls who doesn't get out of their area and were trained to be a prostitute...

They should've done various attempts on a beautiful growth of a girl.

「Also...Yoshida-kun knows it too don't you? I have educated a helpless perverted girl to become an educated lady who acts elegant in public...!」

We're in front Yukino...

Minaho-neesan won't give Iwakura-san's name.

「You can reproduce that program for Mana-san...」

If I recall...it was standing behavior, acting, speaking...were thoroughly driven in.

「Ojou-sama...if you aim for super model, you also need language education program...!」

Katsuko-nee tells Minaho-neesan.

「You're right...what would you do, Yoshida-kun? If that's what you want...we can start right away...!」

...I

「...What would you do, Mana? What do you want to do? If you aim to be a supermodel...I'll ask Minaho-neesan. I'll cooperate...!」

...Mana

「...It's impossible for Mana. Also...!」

「...Also?!」

「Mana is Onii-chan's 『slave』...! A 『slave』 can't become a super model...!」

...I see.

I can't talk to Mana this way.

It's quite hard for Mana to have 『her own choice』

She'll always 「Because **, I can't be but a ***」or 「I'm already **** so I can't be forgiven to do anything else」...she'll try to get stick on the limitations.

This is the weakness of her character...

Therefore...I 「Mana...It's an order. Become a super model」

「...Eh?!」

「Study how to become a super model as my 『slave』. Then become one! That's my order...!」

「...O-order?」

I smiled at Mana.

「If my 『slave』 becomes a super model...I'll be happy...very happy...super happy...!」

「...Onii-chan will be happy...?」

「That's right...become a super model for my sake! Do your best! Put an effort to it...!」

...Mana.

「...Got it. It it's for Onii-chan」

Mana embraces me.

「Then, Mana will do her best...will make an effort...!」

「...Good girl」

I kissed Mana.

「...Onii-chan!」

This time...Mana kisses me...

「...I love you...I won't let go forever...!!!!」

Mana and I...

Have a far superior relationship than a 『master and servant』

...Us right now

...Have a bond of trust

Chapter 161: Abandon House

「Now then...we're three minutes behind the schedule...let's go out sooner」

Minaho-neesan calls us out...

3:03 PM...

The expensive looking interior clock displayed.

「Hurry and dress up...you'll bring this computer down won't you?」

「Got it」

Following Katsuko-nee's instructions, I go to Maika's room to get my clothes.

「Ah...I brought Onii-chan's clothes」

Mana brought my clothes from the corridor.

...It's folded properly.

「Thanks, Mana」

I put on my underwear quickly.

「...Megu-oneechan folded it. Misuzu-oneechan told Mana 『Bring this to Onii-chan』...」

As expected...my 『women』are attentive...

「Wait a moment! I haven't heard your reply to my 『proposal』yet!」

Yukino complains in displeasure.

「Oh...there's that too」

Minaho-neesan is busy gathering the baggage with Katsuko-nee...

Disk, memory, photo materials...are packed in four large paper bags.

「You can go back but...leave that man and Maika! Okay?...!」

...Yukino

Do you know that you're making Minaho-neesan angrier...?

Minaho-neesan's the scariest when she's silent.

「...Here」

Katsuko-handed me a square object after I finished dressing up.
...Isn't this?

「...A stun gun. If you clamp it, electricity will flow」

I switched it on in front of Yukino.

...Jibababababababa!!

A pale spark flashes!

「...W-What...!?!」

Yukino speaks to me frightened.

「We'll have you come with us...」

That's right...it's a crucial time today

「W-Where are you taking me...!」

I speak.

「Is that something a kidnapper would tell...?!」

「...Kidnap?」

I have to tell Yukino her own standpoint clearly.

「...we're a far more dangerous people than you think」

Yukino trembles in fear.

「We're already in war with Shirasaka house. There were those people who attacked us on the baseball club ground, right? Those people were hired by your uncle...」

「...That's a lie!」

Yukino doesn't want to acknowledge reality, she tries to ignore it.

「It's true, Yukino-san...Ichikawa-san knows that Maika was kidnapped by Onii-chan last night. Ichikawa-san has contacted Shirasaka head house...Onii-chan is already confronting Shirasaka house already...!」

Mana speaks coldly to her sister.

「That's why...we'll take Yukino-san as a hostage too...!」

「Maika...What are you saying?!」

Yukino doesn't get what her sister is saying.

「You see...I was raped by Onii-chan in front of Ichikawa-san and Yukino-san's mother...!」

「...Maika?!」

「Ichikawa-san said 『Maika's no more』...It's funny. Yukino-san's mother desperately closed her eyes...she doesn't try to look at her daughter being raped. She closed her ears so she can't even listen to the voice...That's why I decided...!」

Mana speaks.

「I will devote my life to Onii-chan. Because, Onii-chan's the only one kind to me. He loves me...more than my real family...!」

...Family

「Therefore I made Shirasaka house and Ichikawa-san my 『enemy』 It can't be helped...I'm already Onii-chan's 『slave』 My 『family』 is Onii-chan...I'm Onii-chan's 『family』 Yukino-san is the 『enemy』!」

...I'm 『family』

Mana said that I'm 『Family』

Megu and Misuzu...are my 『family』

「What are you saying...aren't we sisters?...family?!」

But still, Yukino still tries to hold onto Mana.

...Mana 「...Onii-chan, lend me your stun gun」

I handed it to Mana.

「She won't die from only one hit, would she?」

Mana asks Katsuko-nee

「It's okay...her heart seems to be strong...!」

Katsuko-nee laughs.

「S-Stop...Maika!!!」

Yukino shouts at her sister approaching with the stun gun 「...Silenceeee!!!」

...Byushuyuyuyu!!

「...Gyaaaaaaaaa!!!!」

Yukino writhes from the pain of electric chock!

「...We'll never give Onii-chan to someone like you! Onii-chan is ours!...You pig!!!」

Mana spits on her sister...

Mana's saliva flew on Yukino's chest...



We go down the stairs in a hurry...

I hold the body of the system unit...Minaho-neesan and Katsuko-nee are holding the paper bags packed with discs and memory.

Mana's threatening Yukino with a stun gun from behind.

Yukino's still on her worn out uniform.

Misuzu, Megu and Kudou-chan were waiting at the entrance.

「The computer and the media will be on my car...I will be checking Shirasaka's room again...!」

Katsuko-nee handed the key to Megu.

「Got it...We'll be loading it ahead」

「The hostage will be on my car...!」

Minaho-neesan tells Mana.

Yukino's following while on the verge of crying.

It seems she's shocked from her sister's change.

「I will carry Mana's luggage...which car should we put it on?」

Mana asks Minaho-neesan.

「Bring that to Katsuko's car」

「Got it」

Megu grabs Mana's bag and heads to the parking lot.

「...Misusu will help out too!」

Misuzu and Kudou-chan helped carry the luggage too
They leave the big door...
Then goes to the parking lot down the stairway.

「Here...Yoshi-kun!」

Megu opens Katsuko-nee's car.
I placed the computer on the flat back seat...
Next to that, Minaho-neesan puts down the paper bags.

「Hey...get inside! Pig!」

Mana pushes Yukino into the car...
As expected...she's holding various feelings toward her sister.
She has received cruel treatment from Yukino far more than anyone...
Or rather...she's not『a pig』

「Let Mana-san watch over Yukino-san for a while」

Minaho-neesan tells me

「But...they're so stiff...」

I'm worried.

「That's better on the current situation...Mana-san will watch Yukino-san
without overlooking anything...she won't want to give room to Yukino to think
about other things」

...True

It's an emergency situation right now...
We should be thinking about our safety as whole than the stability of Mana and
Yukino's mind.
If I leave it to Mana...Mana will never go easy on Yukino. She doesn't have any
feelings of mercy. She'll strictly monitor Yukino
And...Yukino. She'll be shaken because she's monitored by Mana who should be
having a weaker position than herself.
She'll really lose the room to think about other things...

「In exchange...I'll get on that car」

But still...I have to be with Mana so she won't rampage.

「Right...please do so」

Minaho-neesan agrees.

「Megu, get on Katsuko-nee's car!」

I shouted...

I must not let Yukino and Megu be together any further.

Yukino will only battle Mana.

If Megu is there...Yukino will show unnecessary inferiority complex and it'll get complicated.

「...Got it」

Megu understands it immediately.

「Can Misuzu stay with Danna-sama?」

UN...Misuzu and Kudou-chan should be here to bind Yukino.

「Yeah...do that」

We get inside the car

「Michi...please monitor the 『enemy』with Mana-san」

「Yes...Ojou-sama」

With that said...

Minaho-neesan's on the driver's seat.

There's no one on the passenger's seat.

Second row it Misuzu and I.

The third row is Yukino between Mana and Kudou-chan.

That's the arrangement.

「...Excuse me」

Kudou-chan took out her electric baton

She presses it against Yukino's neck.

...I

Look at the frightened Yukino.

...Then 「...Please don't look only at her!」

Mana lifts her skirt and exposes her pussy to me.

「Even if Yukino-san's breasts are exposed...if you want to take a look then look at Mana!」

She turned her T-shirt up...
Her cute breasts jumped out.

「Y-You don't need to compete with her for that...!」

I say.

「Kudou-san...there's a blanket behind the seat, please put it on Yukino-san」

Minaho-neesan tells Kudou-chan.

「It's a sin to have that poor-looking body exposed to us forever...!」

「...Certainly」

Kudou-chan puts a blanket on Yukino as told by Minaho-neesan.,
...But

『Poor-looking body』...Yukino's the one who has the most volume in chest among the women inside this car...

Or rather...Minaho-neesan's the most flat.

No...Kudou-chan's quite flat too.

Kudou-chan's have only shown her hymen down but I didn't see her naked breasts.

I know Minaho-neesan's breasts when we took a bath together.

It's a level ground.

Everywhere and anywhere...it's flat to the horizon...

「Yoshida-kun...are you thinking of something rude...?」

Uwa...Minaho-neesan noticed...!

「I-I just think that women's proportions isn't everything...!」

When I was trying to make an excuse that won't sound an excuse...

「...That's right. Ojou-sama, proportions is the lowest class when it comes to women's charm...!」

Then...an explosive tits shake from outside the car.

...Katsuko-nee

Nobody can say anything in front of Katsuko-nee's superb body...

「...I've finished my final confirmation」

Katsuko-nee hands the key to Mana while reporting to Minaho-neesan.

「The front door's closed...thanks」

...Mana

「I don't need that key anymore. Mana's not a child of this family anymore...!」

She refuses to receive the key.

「...Is that so? Then I will be keeping this key!」

Katsuko-nee holds the key while smiling.

「Mana-san...please open the door at the parking lot」

Minaho-neesan tells Mana.

「...Got it」

Mana's about to leave the car...

「Kudou-san...I'll leave the monitoring of this 『hostage』for you...!」

Kudou-chan nods...!

「Please leave her to me...!」

Kudou-chan's shock baton is pointed at Yukino's neck.

「Since I can adjust the voltage of 『Jupiter Thunderbold』...it's possible to make her faint...!」

「...Michi, make her faint as last resort」

Misuzu said

「...Won't she pee herself if you put it on the maximum voltage?」

「Yes...She'll definitely pee herself」

「It's troublesome to leak inside the car...Also」

Misuzu looks at me.

「It's Misuzu's job to pee in front of Danna-sama」

...Misuzu

「Didn't everyone show off earlier?」

「That was a special one...Misuzu does it everyday!」

Misuzu smiles suspiciously.

「Even Mana can show it to Onii-chan if he wants to see it!」

Mana...stop with that rivalry

「Speaking of which...This 『enemy』didn't pee...」

Kudou-chan looks at Yukino.

「Therefore...she might really leak out. With that said, please don't use maximum voltage...also, Mana, hurry up and open the door!」

「Yes...Onii-chan!」

Mana goes out and presses the switch in the iron door...

When it half-opens...

「...Let's go」

Minaho-neesan comes out of the car

Katsuko-nee's car follows...

Mana waits on the road ahead of the house for the cars to go out...

Mana...closed the parking lot then went around inside and come out of the side gate...

She turned back to her house while heading to our car...

Perhaps...she'll never come back to this house 「...Mana, faster」

To cut her thoughts...I open the window and shout at Mana

...Then

Mana turned over her skirt and showed her pussy to me...smiling 「...Just come back here!」

I shouted...!

「It's much more exciting...I won't show it to anyone but Onii-chan!」

「Everyone's looking!」

「Only Onii-chan for the men! That's fine, everyone's Mana's 『ally』except for that『Enemy』over there...!」

On her census...there's only 『enemy』and 『family』...

Mana smiled happily...then rides the car.

「...I'm back, Onii-chan!」

「...Welcome back, Mana」

I welcome Mana

From now on...my place will be Mana's home...



Two cars are driving side-by-side...

「It's dangerous to separate so we'll be travelling parallel for a while」

Minaho-neesan said

The clock of the car shows 3:15

「...It's about time they begin to move」

The arrest of Shirasaka Sousuke will be delivered to the media at 3PM news...
The media will be informed at 3 o'clock so there will be some time difference until it's publicly announced.

「...Can Misuzu's phone view news?」

I ask Misuzu

「Yes...it can, but」

「Then...could you try looking at the top news?」

I ask.

I gave my phone to Minaho-neesan yesterday...

It doesn't have the internet function...

「Yes...it's here」

Misuzu...operates her phone immediately...

「Try reading the top news...just the titles will do」

I ordered her.

「Yes...A major advertising agency manager is arrested for raping a girl and child pornography law violation. It's in Australia...!」

It's a bingo on the first try!

「...That's it, open the details and read it」

Misuzu's fingers move smoothly.

I think it's hard to read sentences on mobile while the car is driving but...

「...May 1, around 11 o'clock...Shirasaka Sousuke (42), the director of Tokyo's leading advertising agency 『Lightning King Agency』is arrested by the police for catching him assaulting local middle school girls near Adelaide Australia. Shirasaka possesses a large amount of child pornography and the police has began investigating if he's also the culprit of the consecutive rape on site」

Yukino's face distorts in surprise.

「...As expected, internet is fast」

Minaho-neesan laughs.

「...You're lying?!」

Mana speaks to Yukino looking at Misuzu.

「It's not a lie...Yukino-san's really an idiot!」

「...Maika!」

The two glare at each other

「...Would you like to take a look?」

Kudou-chan gives the phone to the two

「Uwa, it's true!」

「...Papa」

The sisters checks their father's arrest in the news with their own eyes.

「...Raping local middle school girls overseas, having a mountain of child pornography...can Shirasaka Sousuke-san return to Japan? Don't you think 『National Disgrace』is the word used at such times?」

Minaho-neesan speaks happily.

Minaho-neesan's 『revenge』planned for more than 10 years is finally reaching the final stage.

It's normal to be excited.

「...National disgrace?」

Mana doesn't seem to understand what it means.

「It means that she's a 『shame of the country』...!」

Kudou-chan teaches Mana.

「I see...Yukino-san's father has become a 『shame of the country』...!」

Mana attacks her sister.

「What are you saying Maika...isn't he your Papa too?...!」

Yukino's changing her unease to anger...and throws it to her little sister!

「I'm no longer related to Shirasaka house!...It's a big problem for Yukino-san.
Starting tomorrow」

Mana tells Yukino in an ill-natured tone.

「Your real father raped middle school girls in the foreign country, and he's arrested for rape and child pornography. What kind of face will you show at school...?!」

Yukino's face turned dark.

「...That's」

「You're a daughter of a middle school girl rapist...there's nothing as embarrassing as this! Yukino-san...are you not ashamed?」

Yukino fell silent from her sister's words.

「...Misuzu-san, what is the next news written?」

Minaho-neesan asks Misuzu from the driver's seat?

「...Next news?」

「That's right...what's the article after the news about Shirasaka Sousuke's arrest?」

「...Yes」

Misuzu looks at the screen.

「...Illegal contribution of councilors exposed. A large-scale bribery scandal?」

Minaho-neesan grins.

「That's it...please read it」

Misuzu reads...

「Yes...May 1, 1:10 AM, the staff of fund management group of the city councilor Endou Eizo whistle-blow about receiving a large scale of illegal contributions, a press conference will be held by the journalists. According to the accusations, representative Endou is deeply involved in the public works of the city, politically planned so that the construction of the city's general sports center chose the construction company managed by his relative...」

...This is?

...Endou's?

『My uncle's a councilor』...that uncle?

The relative operating a construction company is Endou's father...

「...Yoshida-kun, have you ever had a surgery at a hospital?」

Minaho-neesan asked suddenly.

「No...never」

I'm fairly healthy

Far from surgery, I've never been taken to hospital for years.

「When you get a surgery at the hospital...there's sometimes a 『I've done it incidentally』 cases」

...Incidentally?

「That's right...while operating the liver...『I also cut the appendix』... The doctors do such strange service...!」

...Hee, is that so?

...But

What's the relation of that to our current topic...?

「Today...I just tried doing that 『incidentally』...!」

...What?

「In addition to Shirasaka Sousuke's case...I also destroyed Endou-kun's house...!」

Minaho-neesan laughed loudly.

...As expected.

This person will thoroughly beat down those who anger her...

The anger towards the first year high school student named Endou...

The councilor uncle and his father's company...

It's crumbling to pieces...!!!